



PE

197

C15 I4+

**Cornell University Library**

THE GIFT OF

*Carnegie Institution*

A.2769.32

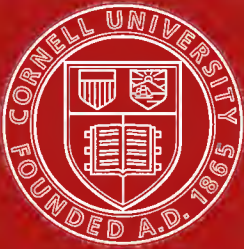
15/VIII/13

6561

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 063 523 645



## Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.



# THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS



WASHINGTON, D.C.

PUBLISHED BY THE CARNEGIE INSTITUTION OF WASHINGTON

1913







A. 276932

CARNEGIE INSTITUTION OF WASHINGTON  
PUBLICATION No. 167

The University Press, Cambridge, U. S. A.

## PREFACE.

AN attempt is here made to give a detailed history of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon and to treat some substitutes therefor. The study is based upon a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature with the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints. For a specific statement, see the bibliography. Moreover, in all the more definitely known translations, the Latin originals, duly noted in the bibliography, have been read statistically. I have endeavored to make my statistics complete,<sup>1</sup> but, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions are inevitable. I trust, however, that they will not prove so numerous or so serious as to invalidate this history of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. A chapter is added on "the Infinitive in the Other Germanic Languages," which of necessity rests upon the investigations of others, but which will, I hope, be found something more than a summary.

Perhaps a word concerning its general plan may facilitate the reading of my study. After a brief discussion concerning the nature and the classification of the infinitive, I have striven to give, first, the facts concerning its several uses in Anglo-Saxon; and, secondly, an interpretation of these facts. Accordingly, in the appendix, all occurrences of each use are recorded in alphabetic sequence; and, in the chapters dealing with the respective uses, copious illustrations are given in smaller syntactic groups, in which latter, again, the words are arranged alphabetically. Differences of opinion as to the classification of individual examples are inevitable, but I have tried in each use to distinguish the normal from the abnormal, and, without ignoring the latter, to base my classification and my discussion mainly upon the former. Readers and critics will be the more generous in their judgment of my classifications when they consider the large number of examples to be classified and the inherent difficulty of the task, — a difficulty aggravated by the fact that, in both the English and the Germanic fields, minute classification is not attempted in several of the special investigations made of the infinitive.

The comment is, for the most part, given in the sections headed "Differentiation of the Two Infinitives" and in the chapter on "the Origin of the Constructions of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon." In this latter chapter, too, are summarized the Latin correspondents of the infinitives in the closer Anglo-Saxon translations. Both in the historical and in the interpretative sections I have given, so far as I have been able to discover it, the history of opinion concerning the construction in question. As the table of contents shows, I have made the use rather than the form of the infinitive the determining factor in my chapter-division; but, while this is true, I have everywhere sharply separated the inflected infinitive from the uninflected. In a word, I have endeavored to preserve the due balance between form and function so much

---

<sup>1</sup> Except of the Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs, the full tabulation of which seemed unnecessary.

insisted upon by Professor E. P. Morris in his instructive work, *On Some Principles of Latin Syntax*; whether or not I have succeeded, must be left to others for determination. It is believed that the devices already named and the full table of contents render an index unnecessary.

In the chapter on "the Infinitive in the Other Germanic Languages," the same general plan is followed as far as is possible. As already stated, this chapter is based mainly upon the studies of others. What makes me hope that, despite this, the chapter may prove of interest to Germanic grammarians, is the fact that, with slight modifications for some of the individual languages, the theories that I have advanced for the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon seem to apply also to the infinitive in the other Germanic languages. It is hardly probable that, where so many different lines apparently converge, they should not more or less converge in reality.

This is the first attempt to treat the syntax of the Infinitive in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, prose and poetical. Portions of the field, however, have been treated hitherto. The accusative-with-infinitive construction has been discussed by Dr. Carl Krickau, in his Goettingen dissertation, *Der Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv in der Englischen Sprache, Besonders in dem Zeitalter der Elisabeth*, 1877; by Professor J. H. Gorrell, in his Johns Hopkins dissertation, *Indirect Discourse in Anglo-Saxon*, 1895; and by Dr. Jacob Zeitlin, in his Columbia dissertation, *The Accusative with Infinitive and Some Kindred Constructions in English*, 1908. But, as the titles of the first and the third of these monographs indicate, neither is restricted to the Anglo-Saxon period; and, as shown in their bibliographies, no one of the three attempts to cover the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature. The final use of the infinitive is briefly treated by Professor H. G. Shearin, in his Yale dissertation, *The Expression of Purpose in Old English Prose*, 1903, and in his pendant thereto, *The Expression of Purpose in Old English Poetry*, 1909. Less restricted in one way and more restricted in another is the scope of Dr. Karl Koehler's *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs und Particips im Beowulf*, Muenster, 1886; Dr. T. J. Farrar's *The Gerund in Old English*, a Washington and Lee dissertation of 1902; Dr. Georg Riggert's *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs in der Altenglischen Poesie*, a Kiel dissertation of 1909; and Dr. H. Willert's "Vom Infinitiv mit To," in *Englische Studien*, XLIII, 1910, pp. 100-104. Several uses of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon are touched on in the dissertations dealing with the syntax of the verb in a single monument, the full titles of which are given in my bibliography. Moreover, most of the uses of the infinitive are briefly discussed in these standard grammars of Anglo-Saxon: *A Comparative Grammar of the Anglo-Saxon Language*, by F. A. March, New York, 1873; *Angelsaechsische Grammatik*, by Theodor Mueller, Goettingen, 1883; *Die Syntax in den Werken Alfreds des Grossen*, by Dr. J. E. Wuefing, Bonn, 1894-1901; and in these standard grammars of the English language as a whole: *Historische Grammatik der Englischen Sprache*, by C. F. Koch, 2d ed., Cassel, 1878-1891; *Englische Grammatik*, by Eduard Maetzner, 3d ed., Berlin, 1880-1885; *Historical Outlines of English Syntax*, by Dr. Leon Kellner, London, 1892; *A New English Grammar*,



by the late Dr. Henry Sweet, Oxford, 1892-1898; and the "Syntax" by Professor Eugen Einenkel, in Kluge's *Geschichte der Englischen Sprache*, 2d ed., Strassburg, 1899. Naturally, too, I have examined the special treatises dealing with the infinitive in Middle English and in Modern English, all chronicled in my bibliography.

Of the special treatises dealing with the infinitive in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon, the most important for Gothic are Dr. Arthur Koehler's "Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Gothischen," in *Germania*, xii, 1867, pp. 421-462; and Dr. Otto Apelt's "Ueber den Accusativus cum Infinitivo im Gothischen," in *Germania*, xix, 1874, pp. 280-297. For the Scandinavian languages the only special study known to me is Dr. C. Grimberg's "Undersökningar om Konstruktionen Accusativ med Infinitiv i den Aeldre Fornsvenskan," in the *Arkiv for Nordisk Filologi*, xxi, 1905, pp. 205-235, 311-357. For Old Saxon the chief articles are Dr. R. Steig's "Ueber den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altniederdeutschen," in the *Zeitschrift fuer Deutsche Philologie*, xvi, 1884, pp. 307-345, 470-501, and Dr. H. Pratje's "Syntax des Heliand, I. Das Verbum," in the *Jahrbuch des Vereins fuer Niederdeutsche Sprachforschung* for 1885, xi, 1886, pp. 1-84. For High German the most important treatises are Dr. Otto Apelt's "Bemerkungen ueber den Accusativus cum Infinitivo im Althochdeutschen und Mittelhochdeutschen," in the *Weimar Jahresbericht* of 1875; Dr. Arthur Denecke's *Der Gebrauch des Infinitivs bei den Althochdeutschen Uebersetzern des Achten und Neunten Jahrhunderts*, a Leipzig dissertation of 1880; Dr. E. Herford's "Ueber den Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv im Deutschen," in the *Thorn Program* of 1881; and Dr. S. Von Monsterberg-Muenckenau's *Der Infinitiv in den Epen Hartmanns von Aue*, Breslau, 1885. Other special articles and the standard grammars for the several Germanic languages are noted in Chapters xiv and xvi.

From all these works, both general and special, I have striven to glean whatever is pertinent to my theme, in each instance to give credit therefor, and, whenever possible for me, to add a sheaf to the garnerings of my predecessors.

This monograph could not have been written but for the kindness of the library authorities at several of our older and larger universities, who have generously lent me rare books. For this kindness I wish to express my sincere thanks to the librarians of the following universities: Chicago, Columbia, Cornell, Harvard, and Johns Hopkins. To the authorities of our own library at the University of Texas, I am likewise indebted for many courtesies.

Professor Hermann Collitz, of the Johns Hopkins University, has kindly read the chapter dealing with the infinitive in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon, and has made helpful comments upon the same, especially upon the bibliographical side. Professor James W. Bright has again deepened my indebtedness to him, which began some years ago when I had the good fortune to study under his personal instruction at the Johns Hopkins University. He has read most of the proof, and has offered many valuable suggestions for the improvement of my study. And my esteemed colleague, Professor Killis

Campbell, of the University of Texas, has twice read the proofs, each time with the eye of a scholar and the heart of a friend.

To the Carnegie Institution of Washington, I am no less grateful than I am indebted for the publication of this monograph. But for this kindness, the work could not have appeared in so full or in so handsome a form.

To all these helpers and friends I tender my abiding gratitude. May they not have cause to regret their participation in the launching of this study!

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS,  
*Austin, Texas, February 15, 1913.*

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
I. The Nature and the Origin of the Infinitive in the Indo-Germanic Languages . . . . .	1
II. The Nature and the Origin of the Infinitive in the Germanic Languages, Especially in Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	1
III. The Uses of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	2
IV. The Position of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	6
V. The Voice of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	6

## CHAPTER I.

THE SUBJECTIVE INFINITIVE . . . . .	7
A. The Active Infinitive . . . . .	7
1. With Active Finite Verb . . . . .	7
Uninflected Only . . . . .	7
Inflected Only . . . . .	8
Uninflected and Inflected Each . . . . .	14
2. With Passive Verbs . . . . .	18
3. Differentiation of the Two Infinitives . . . . .	20
B. The Passive Infinitive . . . . .	26
C. Notes . . . . .	27

## CHAPTER II.

THE OBJECTIVE INFINITIVE . . . . .	28
A. The Active Infinitive . . . . .	28
1. With Active Finite Verb . . . . .	28
General Statement . . . . .	28
Uninflected Only . . . . .	31
General Statement . . . . .	31
With Verbs of Commanding . . . . .	31
With Verbs of Causing and Permitting . . . . .	33
With Verbs of Sense Perception . . . . .	34
With Verbs of Mental Perception . . . . .	35
With Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing . . . . .	35
With Verbs of Inclination and of Will . . . . .	36
Alphabetic List of Verbs . . . . .	36
Inflected Only . . . . .	37
General Statement . . . . .	37
With Verbs of Commanding . . . . .	37
With Verbs of Permitting . . . . .	37
With Verbs of Mental Perception . . . . .	38
With Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing . . . . .	40
With Verbs of Inclination and of Will . . . . .	41
With Other Verbs . . . . .	43
Alphabetic List of Verbs . . . . .	43
Uninflected and Inflected Each . . . . .	44
General Statement . . . . .	44
With Verbs of Commanding . . . . .	45
With Verbs of Permitting . . . . .	46
With Verbs of Mental Perception . . . . .	47
With Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing . . . . .	50
With Verbs of Inclination and of Will . . . . .	54
Alphabetic List of Verbs . . . . .	58



THE OBJECTIVE INFINITIVE — <i>continued.</i>	59
2. With Passive Verbs . . . . .	60
3. Differentiation of the Two Infinitives . . . . .	71
B. The Passive Infinitive . . . . .	72
C. Notes . . . . .	

## CHAPTER III.

OTHER SUBSTANTIVAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE . . . . .	73
The Active Infinitive . . . . .	73
As a Predicate Nominative . . . . .	73
As an Appositive . . . . .	75
As the Object of a Preposition . . . . .	78

## CHAPTER IV.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH AUXILIARY VERBS . . . . .	79
A. The Active Infinitive . . . . .	79
General Statement . . . . .	79
Uninflected . . . . .	80
Inflected . . . . .	80
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives . . . . .	82
B. The Passive Infinitive . . . . .	83
C. Notes . . . . .	88

## CHAPTER V.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF MOTION AND OF REST . . . . .	89
The Active Infinitive . . . . .	89
General Statement . . . . .	89
Uninflected Only . . . . .	89
With Verbs of Motion . . . . .	90
With Verbs of Rest . . . . .	91

## CHAPTER VI.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH “(W)UTON” . . . . .	93
A. The Active Infinitive . . . . .	93
B. The Passive Infinitive . . . . .	95
C. Notes . . . . .	96

## CHAPTER VII.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH “BEON” (“WESAN”) . . . . .	97
The Active Infinitive . . . . .	97
Denoting Necessity or Obligation . . . . .	97
Denoting Futurity . . . . .	104
Denoting Purpose . . . . .	105
Notes . . . . .	106

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT . . . . .	107
As Object . . . . .	107
A. The Active Infinitive . . . . .	107
Uninflected . . . . .	107
General Statement . . . . .	107
With Verbs of Commanding . . . . .	108
With Verbs of Causing and Permitting . . . . .	110
With Verbs of Sense Perception . . . . .	112
With Verbs of Mental Perception . . . . .	114
With Verbs of Declaring . . . . .	117
With Other Verbs . . . . .	118

# CONTENTS.

XI

PAGE

## THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT — *continued.*

Inflected	118
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives	119
B. The Passive Infinitive	120
As Subject	124
A. The Active Infinitive	124
B. The Passive Infinitive	125
Notes	125

## CHAPTER IX.

THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH DATIVE SUBJECT	127
The Active Infinitive	127
With Impersonal Verbs	127
Uninflected	127
Inflected	127
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives	129
With Personal Verbs	129
Uninflected	129
Inflected	130
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives	131

## CHAPTER X.

THE FINAL INFINITIVE	132
The Active Infinitive	132
1. With Active Finite Verb	132
General Statement	132
Uninflected Only	133
General Statement	133
With Verbs of Motion	134
With Verbs of Rest	134
With Verbs of Commanding and Requesting	134
With Other Verbs	134
Alphabetic List of Verbs	135
Uninflected and Inflected Each	135
General Statement	135
With Verbs of Motion	135
With Verbs of Offering and of Giving	140
With Verbs of Rest	142
With Other Verbs	143
Alphabetic List of Verbs	143
Inflected Only	143
General Statement	143
Alphabetic List of Verbs	143
2. With Passive Verbs	145
3. Differentiation of the Two Infinitives	146
Notes	147

## CHAPTER XI.

THE INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES	149
A. The Active Infinitive	149
General Statement	149
Uninflected	150
Inflected	151
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives	158
B. The Passive Infinitive	158
C. Notes	158

## CHAPTER XII.

	PAGE
OTHER ADVERBIAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE . . . . .	160
The Causal Infinitive . . . . .	160
The Infinitive of Specification with Verbs . . . . .	161
The Consecutive Infinitive . . . . .	162
The Absolute Infinitive . . . . .	169
The Conditional Infinitive . . . . .	171
The Modal Infinitive . . . . .	171
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives . . . . .	172

## CHAPTER XIII.

THE INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS . . . . .	173
The Active Infinitive. . . . .	173
Uninflected . . . . .	173
Inflected . . . . .	174
General Statement . . . . .	174
With Nouns Denoting Ideas . . . . .	176
With Nouns Denoting Things . . . . .	179
Differentiation of the Two Infinitives . . . . .	181
Notes . . . . .	181

## CHAPTER XIV.

ORIGIN OF THE CONSTRUCTIONS OF THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON . . . . .	183
I. The Subjective Infinitive . . . . .	183
II. The Objective Infinitive . . . . .	185
III. Other Substantival Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	193
IV. The Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs . . . . .	194
V. The Predicative Infinitive with Verbs of Motion and of Rest . . . . .	194
VI. The Predicative Infinitive with ( <i>W</i> ) <i>uton</i> . . . . .	199
VII. The Predicative Infinitive with <i>Beon</i> ( <i>Wesan</i> ) . . . . .	200
VIII. The Predicative Infinitive with Accusative Subject . . . . .	203
IX. The Predicative Infinitive with Dative Subject . . . . .	214
X. The Final Infinitive . . . . .	215
XI. The Infinitive with Adjectives . . . . .	217
XII. Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	218
XIII. The Infinitive with Nouns . . . . .	220

## CHAPTER XV.

SOME SUBSTITUTES FOR THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON . . . . .	221
1. The Predicate Nominative of the Present Participle for the Predicative Infinitive after Verbs of Motion . . . . .	221
2. The Predicate Accusative of the Present Participle for the Predicative Infinitive with Accusative Subject . . . . .	225

## CHAPTER XVI.

THE INFINITIVE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES . . . . .	231
I. The Subjective Infinitive . . . . .	231
II. The Objective Infinitive . . . . .	233
III. Other Substantival Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	236
IV. The Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs . . . . .	237
V. The Predicative Infinitive with Verbs of Motion and of Rest . . . . .	238
VI. The Predicative Infinitive with ( <i>W</i> ) <i>uton</i> . . . . .	239
VII. The Predicative Infinitive with <i>Beon</i> ( <i>Wesan</i> ) . . . . .	239
VIII. The Predicative Infinitive with Accusative Subject . . . . .	241
IX. The Predicative Infinitive with Dative Subject . . . . .	248
X. The Final Infinitive . . . . .	252
XI. The Infinitive with Adjectives . . . . .	256
XII. Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	258
XIII. The Infinitive with Nouns . . . . .	262



CHAPTER XVII.

	PAGE
RESULTS . . . . .	265

APPENDIX.

A. STATISTICS OF THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON . . . . .	275
I. The Subjective Infinitive . . . . .	275
II. The Objective Infinitive . . . . .	279
III. Other Substantival Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	288
IV. The Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs . . . . .	288
V. The Predicative Infinitive with Verbs of Motion and of Rest . . . . .	290
VI. The Predicative Infinitive with ( <i>W</i> ) <i>uton</i> . . . . .	292
VII. The Predicative Infinitive with <i>Beon</i> ( <i>Wesan</i> ) . . . . .	297
VIII. The Predicative Infinitive with Accusative Subject . . . . .	304
IX. The Predicative Infinitive with Dative Subject . . . . .	308
X. The Final Infinitive . . . . .	308
XI. The Infinitive with Adjectives . . . . .	315
XII. Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive . . . . .	318
XIII. The Infinitive with Nouns . . . . .	318
B. BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .	322
C. ADDENDA . . . . .	335
D. SYNOPTIC TABLES OF THE USES OF THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON .	<i>Folder</i>



# THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

## INTRODUCTION.

Age-long was the discussion as to the nature and the origin of the infinitive in the Indo-Germanic family of languages. For something over two thousand years, from Panini to Bopp, it was disputed as to whether the infinitive should be classed with the verb or with the noun. Of this discussion an excellent history is given by Professor Jolly in his *Geschichte des Infinitivs im Indogermanischen* (München, 1873), the main conclusions of which are accepted by Professor Delbrück in his chapter on the infinitive in his *Vergleichende Syntax der Indogermanischen Sprachen* (Strassburg, 1897). To recount the history of this discussion is not called for here. Suffice it to say that, by a careful study of the forms of the words used more or less as infinitives in the older Indo-Germanic languages, Bopp, in his *Conjugationssystem der Sanskritsprache* (1816), reached the conclusion, now almost universally accepted, that originally the infinitives were petrified cases of nouns of action,<sup>1</sup> — a discovery that, according to Delbrück, was in a sense the beginning of the science of comparative syntax.

The process by which these cases of nouns of action became petrified into infinitives is thus stated by Professor Delbrück:<sup>2</sup>

“Demnach dürfen wir uns die Genesis der Infinitive etwa so vorstellen. Zu den ältesten Zeiten der Ursprache konnten gewisse Kasus von nomina actionis verbale Konstruktion haben und dadurch eine innere Beziehung zum Verbum erhalten. Noch in der Ursprache war bei einigen derselben die Erstarrung so weit vorgeschritten, dass eine neue Kategorie, die des Infinitivs, in's Bewusstsein trat. Einige Exemplare dieser neuen Formgattung mögen schon in formal ausgeprägte Beziehung zu einzelnen Tempussystemen getreten sein. Viele andere Kasus waren erst auf dem Wege, sich zu Infinitiven umzubilden. Diesen Zustand erbten die Einzelsprachen. Im Arischen hat er sich nicht eben erheblich verändert. Im Griechischen aber hat sich die Erstarrung soweit vollendet, dass nur noch isolierte Formen vorhanden sind, und dass eine Auftheilung der gesammten Masse unter die Tempusstämme und unter die Genera des Verbums stattgefunden hat. Von dem letztgenannten Vorgang findet sich im Arischen noch keine Spur.”

In the foregoing quotation describing the evolution from noun of action to infinitive, Professor Delbrück states that various cases of the noun were involved. These cases, as we learn from Professor Delbrück<sup>3</sup> and from Professor Brugmann,<sup>4</sup> in the older Indo-Germanic languages, were largely the locative, the dative, and the accusative.

When we turn to our own branch of the Indo-Germanic family, the Germanic, we find a much simpler state of affairs. The history of the infinitive forms in the Germanic languages, including English, is succinctly given by Professor Joseph Wright, in his *Old English Grammar* (London, 1908), § 480:

---

<sup>1</sup> See Jolly, *l. c.*, pp. 47 f., 78; Delbrück, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, I, p. 50, and II, p. 440; Brugmann, <sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 351 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Delbrück, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 451.

<sup>3</sup> Delbrück, <sup>1</sup> II, pp. 451, 453, 475.

<sup>4</sup> Brugmann, <sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 351 ff. See, too, Brugmann and Delbrück, *l. c.*, p. 167; Fay, <sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 191-192; and Solmsen, *l. c.*, pp. 161-169.

"The infinitive was originally a *nomen actionis*, formed by means of various suffixes in the different Indo-Germanic languages. The suffix *-ono-*, to which was added the nominative-accusative neuter ending, *-m*, became generalized in primitive Germanic; thus the original form of *beran* was \**bhêronom*, the *-onom* of which regularly became *-an* in Old English, Gothic, Old Saxon, and Old High German. On the loss of the final *-n* in Northumbrian, see § 288. In primitive West Germanic the infinitive was inflected in the genitive and dative like an ordinary noun of the *ja*-declension (§ 355), genitive *-ennes*, dative *-enne*. The inflected forms of the infinitive are sometimes called the gerund. The genitive disappeared in prehistoric Old English. The dative to *berenne* generally became *-anne* through the influence of the infinitive ending *-an*. Beside *-enne*, *-anne* there also occur in late Old English *-ene*, *-ane*, and *-ende* with *d* from the present participle."

As to form, then, the Anglo-Saxon had two infinitives: (1) the uninflected, or simple, infinitive in *-an* (occasionally written *-on*, *-un*, *-en*, and in Northumbrian *-a*, with loss of *n*<sup>1</sup>), which in origin is the petrified nominative-accusative case of a neuter verbal noun; and (2) the inflected, or gerundial, or prepositional, infinitive, made up of the preposition *to* plus the dative case of a verbal noun ending in *-anne* (*-enne*, occasionally *-onne*; and, with simplification of the double consonant, *-ane*, *-ene*<sup>2</sup>), though occasionally the *to* is followed by an infinitive in *-an*<sup>3</sup> and occasionally by an infinitive in *-ende*<sup>2</sup> (by confusion with the form of the present participle), both of which forms are counted as inflected in this study. Very rarely, too, we have the *-anne* infinitive not preceded by *to*;<sup>4</sup> and twice preceded by *for to*.<sup>5</sup>

The origin of the infinitive as above given is suggested in the now generally accepted definition of the infinitive as a verbal noun, provided we remember that, as Professor Delbrück<sup>6</sup> tells us, the dual nature of the infinitive has been won, not inherited from the outset. This dual nature of the infinitive is manifested in the fact that in Anglo-Saxon the infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, of almost any transitive verb may at one and the same time perform the office both of a noun and of a verb. But, in most instances, one of these two natures (or tendencies), the substantival and the verbal, predominates in Anglo-Saxon, and, from this point of view, we may roughly divide all infinitives into two comprehensive classes: (1) substantival, when the substantive idea is dominant, as when the infinitive is used as the subject or the object of a verb; and (2) verbal (or predicative), when the verbal, or assertive, idea is dominant, as when an infinitive completes the sense of an auxiliary verb. But, as already stated, these two classes are not mutually exclusive, since, even when used as subject or object, the infinitive may likewise govern an object, and to this extent be verbal. But it will generally be allowed, I think, that, in *He will sing the song*, *sing* is more verbal than *to sing* in *He wishes to sing the song*. Nor does the fact that the more verbal uses of the infinitive were derived originally from the substantival invalidate the helpfulness of this classification.

Although, as just stated, most, if not all, infinitives may by nature be roughly classed as substantival or verbal, it is perhaps best for practical purposes to classify the infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, according to its dominant function in the sentence. From this consideration of function, we distinguish, as before, the substantival and the verbal (or predicative) uses of the

<sup>1</sup> Sievers,<sup>3</sup> l. c., § 363, anmk. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, § 363, anmk. 3.

<sup>3</sup> See *Ælf. L. S.*, xxxi. 980; *Laws* 442 (2); etc. For the abbreviations used here and elsewhere in this study, see the bibliography.

<sup>4</sup> See *Chron.* 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 *E*<sup>o</sup>.<sup>d</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, § 363, anmk. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Delbrück,<sup>1</sup> l. c., I, p. 50.

infinitive, but, also, two other uses, the adverbial and the adjectival. According to its dominant function, then, an infinitive is substantival, predicative, adverbial, or adjectival.

In the substantival function, as the name indicates, the infinitive is used as a noun. With a verb the infinitive occurs often as (a) its subject, or (b) its object, or, occasionally, as (c) its predicate nominative, in each of which uses we have both the uninflected and the inflected infinitive. With a noun or pronoun, the infinitive occurs (d) as an appositive, normally in the uninflected form. (e) As the object of a preposition I have found no clear example of the infinitive; but concerning a possible example see Chapter III below. Typical illustrations of these substantival uses are the following:—

(a) As subject:—uninflected: *Greg.* 279.6: *Æt ærestum lyst ðone monn unnytt spreca*n be oðrum monnum = 210.15: *ut prius loqui aliena libeat*;—inflected: *Greg.* 237.11: *sua dereð eac hwilum sumum monnum ðæt soð to gehierenne* = 178.26: *ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera nocuerunt*.

(b) As object:—uninflected: *Greg.* 55.12: *Ðonne ðæt mod ðenceð gegripan* him to upahefenesse ða eaðmodnesse = 32.2: *Cumque mens humilitatis culmen arripere ad elationem cogitat*; *Beow.* 101: *oð ðæt an ongan fyrene fremman*;—inflected: *Greg.* 53.3: *Be ðam ðe wilnað biscephad to underfonne* = 28.23: *De his, qui præesse concupiscunt*.

(c) As predicate nominative:—uninflected and inflected: *Ælf. L. S.* xxv. 310<sup>a</sup> b: *Nis nan earfoðnyss ðæm . . . gode on feawum mannum oððe on micclum werode to helpenne* on gefeohte and *healdan (sic!)* ða ðe he wile.

(d) As an appositive:—uninflected: *Bede* 78.22<sup>a</sup> b c d e: *forðon hynggran, ðyrstan, hatian, calan, wærigian*,—*al ðæt is of untrymnesse ðæs gecyndes* = 55.32<sup>a</sup> b c, 33<sup>a</sup> b: *Esurire namque, sitire, aestuare, algere, lassescere ex infirmitate naturae est*;—inflected: *Solil.* 16.16, 17: *forðam me ys egðer ðara alyfad, ge ðæt good to lufianne ge ðæt yfel to hatianne* = *Licet enim mihi in quovis amare rationem, cum illum jure oderim qui male utitur eo quod amo*.

(e) As the object of a preposition: see below, Chapter III.

In the predicative (or verbal) function, the infinitive approaches nearest to a finite verb, and is used to complete the assertion of a verb of incomplete assertion, specifically: (a) the auxiliary verbs, after which we have habitually the uninflected infinitive; (b) verbs of motion (and occasionally of rest) other than in the (*w*)*uton* locution, likewise followed by the uninflected infinitive; (c) (*w*)*uton*, also with the simple infinitive; and (d) the verb *beon* (*wesan*), which is habitually followed by the inflected infinitive of obligation or of necessity. Under the predicative function, also, I should put the use of the infinitive (e) as a quasi-predicate to an accusative subject, or the so-called accusative-with-infinitive construction, in which we have habitually the simple infinitive. Some hold that we have (f) a predicative infinitive with a dative subject, but to me the infinitive in such locutions seems more substantival than predicative,—a topic that is discussed somewhat at length in Chapter IX. The following are typical examples of these predicative uses:—

(a) With auxiliary verbs:—uninflected: *Beow.* 51: *Men ne cunnon seegan . . . hwa etc.*; *Beow.* 191: *ne mihte snotor hæleð wean onwendan*; etc.;—inflected: *Rid.* 37.13: *Ðu wast gif ðu const to gesecganne, ðæt we soð witan hu ðære wihte wise gonge*.



(b) With verbs of motion other than (*w*)*uton*: — uninflected: *Beow.* 234: *Gewat* him ða to waroðe wicge *ridan* ðegn Hroðgares; *Mart.* 26.10: *culfre com fleogan* of heofonum ond gesæt ofer his heafde.

(c) With (*w*)*uton*: — uninflected: *Greg.* 415.6: *Wuton cuman* ær his dome andettende = 336.4: *Præveniamus faciem Domini* in confessione.

(d) With *beon* (*wesan*): — uninflected: *Ælf. L. S.* 336.223: ðas feower ana *syndon* to underfonne on geleaffulre gelaðunge and *forlætan* (*sic!*) ða oðre ðe lease gesetnysse gesetton; — inflected: *Greg.* 315.23: *Ac* us is suiðe geornlice to *gehieranne* hwæt Dryhten . . . cuæð to Iudeum = 244.1: *Solerter namque audiendum est*, quod etc.; *Greg.* 13.20: Ðætte on oðre wisan *sint* to *manianne* was, on oðre wiif = 130.6: *Aliter namque admonendi sunt viri*, atque aliter *feminæ*.

(e) With an accusative subject: — uninflected: *Bede* 34.25: Ða *het* he . . . his ðegnas hine *secan* 7 *acsian* = 18.25: *iussit milites eum* . . . *inquirere*; *Greg.* 139.13: *ne* eft hi *ne* scoldon hira *loccas lætan weaxan* = 100.9: *neque comam nutrient*; *Bede* 156.21: Ða *gehyrde* he *sumne* ðara broðra *sprecan*, ðæt etc. = 130.19: *audiret unum* . . . *disposuisse*; *Wærf.* 203.25: hwæt *cweðe* wit ðis *beon?* = 248 D: *Quidnam, quæso te, hoc esse dicimus?* — inflected: for possible examples see Chapter VIII.

(f) With a dative subject: see Chapter IX.

In the adverbial use, the infinitive modifies a verb or an adjective (occasionally an adverb) as does an ordinary adverb. Of the adverbial uses of the infinitive, the most common is (a) to denote purpose, with verbs, in which the infinitive is sometimes uninflected (especially after verbs of motion, of rest, and of giving), but is usually inflected except in the poetry. Frequent, too, is the use of the infinitive (b) to denote specification, or respect wherein, with adjectives (occasionally with adverbs), in which the infinitive is habitually inflected. Less frequent and less clear uses of the adverbial infinitive, discussed in the chapter entitled "Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive," are to denote (c) cause, in which the infinitive is more commonly inflected; (d) specification with verbs, in which the infinitive is always inflected; (e) result, with adjectives and with verbs, in which the infinitive is always inflected; and (f) the absolute relation, in which the infinitive is habitually inflected. Of these adverbial uses, the following are typical illustrations: —

(a) Of purpose: *Greg.* 309.14: *eodon* him *plegean* = 238.10: *surrexerunt ludere*; *Gen.* 526: *me* her *stondan* het his bebodu *healdan* 7 *me* ðas bryd for-geaf (?); *Greg.* 329.3<sup>b</sup>: *Me* ðyrste, & *ge* *me* *ne* *sealdon drincan* = 254.4: *sitivi, et non dedistis mihi bibere*; — inflected: *Mk.* 4.3: *Ut eode* se sædere his sæd to *sawenne* = *Ecce exiit seminans ad seminandum*; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 542<sup>m</sup>: *he* him behet . . . ðæt hi . . . ofer twelf domsetl *sittende beoð* to *demenne eallum mannum*; *Greg.* 319.1: ða mettas ðe God self *gesceop* to *etanne geleaffullum monnum* = 246.1: *a cibus, quos Deus creavit ad percipiendum* . . . *fidelibus*. That some consider the infinitive in *sealdon drincan* objective rather than final is discussed in the chapter on "the Final Infinitive."

(b) Of specification with adjectives: — uninflected: *Ælf. Hom.* I. 534<sup>bs</sup>: *ic eom gearo* to *gecyrrenne* to munuclie drohtnunge, and woruldlice ðeawas ealle *forlætan* (*sic!*); — inflected: *Greg.* 281.5: *Sie æghwælc mon suiðe hræd & suiðe geornful* to *gehieranne* = 212.9: *Sit omnis homo velox ad audiendum*.

(c) Of cause: — uninflected: *Bede* 484.15: mynstres, on ðam ic gefeo ðiowian ðære uplican arfæstnesse = 359.13: in quo supernae pietati *deservire gaudeo*; — inflected: *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 18.189: ic nu forsceamige to secganne mine ungeleafulness.

(d) Of specification with verbs: — inflected: *Wærf.* 180.26: ðæt he gelæred wæs wyrta to begangenne = 217 C<sup>1</sup>: Quod vir gentilis valde libenter accepit, cum in nutriendis oleribus quia peritus esset audivit.

(e) Of result: — inflected: *Bede* 174.22: wundro . . . , ða ðe nu to long to secgenne syndon = 143.30: sed haec nos ad alia tendentes, suis narrare permittimus; *Bede* 468.7<sup>a</sup>, b: he hine 7 his ðeode gelædde to mærsianne 7 to weorðianne ða . . . tide = 332.19: se suosque omnes ad . . . tempus celebrandum perduxit.

(f) Of absolute relationship: — uninflected: see Chapter XII, section vi; — inflected: *Wulf.* 115.3: ðider sculan ðeofas . . . and, hrædest to secganne, ealle ða manfullan.

In the adjectival use, the infinitive, habitually inflected, modifies a noun or pronoun. A few examples will suffice for illustration: — uninflected: *L.* 12.5: adrædað ðone ðe anweald hæfð, seððan he ofslȝhð, on helle asendan = timete eum qui, postquam occiderit, habet potestatem mittere in gehennam; — inflected: *Greg.* 307.9: us salde bisne urne willan to breccanne = 234.27: ut exemplum nobis frangendæ nostræ voluntatis præbeat; *Greg.* 127. 1, 2: Gif ðær ðonne sie gierd mid to ðreageanne, sie ðær eac stæf mid to wreðianne = 88.14, 15: Si ergo est districtio virgæ, quæ feriat, sit et consolatio baculi, quæ sustentet; *Bede* 100.2: ðisses geleafa 7 wyrnīs seo lefed God (*sic* for *Gode* ?) onfenge 7 allum to fylgenne = 82.2: huius fides et operatio Deo deuota atque omnibus sequenda credatur.

This classification does not differ greatly from that current in most of the treatises on Anglo-Saxon syntax. The chief variations, adopted here primarily for the sake of simplicity, are (1) the limitation of the term *adverbial* to those uses in which the infinitive is an adverbial modifier of verb, adjective, or adverb, — which excludes the objective use, though the latter is included in the wider sense given to *adverbial* in many Germanic treatises; (2) the extension of the term *predicative* so as to cover, not simply, as with Professor Delbrück,<sup>1</sup> the infinitive complementary to the verb *to be*, but also the infinitive complementary to the auxiliaries and to certain other verbs (of motion and of rest), as well as the infinitive quasi-predicative to a subject accusative, the aim being to put under the one head all the uses in which the verbal (or assertive) power of the infinitive is strongest. As a separate chapter is given to each of these subdivisions of the predicative infinitive, the discussion will be equally clear to those who may prefer not to adopt the classification suggested. Nor, I believe, will the fact that the predicative use of the infinitive is, in some instances, of substantival (objective) origin, as when complementary to the auxiliary verbs, and, in others, of adverbial (final) origin, as when complementary to *beon* (*wesan*) and to (*w*)*uton*, invalidate the usefulness of the proposed classification.

Finally, it should be added that, while for the sake of clearness my discussion is arranged according to the function of the infinitive, under each use account is taken as to whether the infinitive is uninflected or inflected, and the ground of differentiation and of subsequent confusion of the two forms is sought.

<sup>1</sup> Delbrück, *J. L. G.*, II, p. 460.

Of the imperative use of the infinitive I have found no clear example in Anglo-Saxon. The alleged examples of this idiom cited by Dr. K. Köhler<sup>1</sup> and by Dr. Jacob Zeitlin,<sup>2</sup> I, in common with most students of Anglo-Saxon, interpret otherwise. Nor have I found any clear example of the so-called historical infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. Messrs. Roethe and Schroeder, the editors of Grimm's *Deutsche Grammatik*, hold that we have a historical infinitive in the Anglo-Saxon *Exodus*: "Ags. Cædm. Exod. 158 auf *blicon*, *sungon*, folgt *ðunian*, *tredan* (sc. *ongunnon*); vgl. *galan* Exod. 577."<sup>3</sup> To me, however, *ðunian* and *tredan* are predicative, each, to a subject accusative; and, instead of *galan*, I read, with Grein and with Professor Blackburn, *golan*.

As the position of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon varies considerably in the different uses, the matter is treated in the chapters dealing with the several uses.

In form each of the two infinitives so far considered (the one in *-an* and the one made up of *to* + the dative in *-ne*) is active; and in my judgment each of these infinitives is active in sense except when the inflected infinitive is used with the verb *beon* (*wesan*) to denote necessity or obligation, in which construction the Anglo-Saxon infinitive is habitually passive in sense, though occasionally it is active in sense: for further details see the chapter on "the Infinitive with *Beon* (*Wesan*)."<sup>4</sup> Perhaps, too, the adjectivized inflected infinitive with nouns is passive in sense: see Chapter XIII. Some, however, hold that the uninflected infinitive in *-an* is passive in sense after certain verbs (chiefly of commanding, of causing, and of sense perception), but to me this infinitive seems regularly active in sense after this group of verbs as after all other groups, the reasons for which belief are stated in the chapter on "the Objective Infinitive." Once more: some hold that the inflected final infinitive and the inflected infinitive with adjectives are each sometimes passive in sense, — a topic discussed in Chapters X and XI. Finally, it should be added that a brief paragraph concerning the voice of the infinitive is given under the respective uses.

But we do have in Anglo-Saxon, though relatively seldom (especially in the poetry), a true passive infinitive, which is made up of the present infinitive active of the verb *beon* (occasionally of the verb *wesan* or of the verb *weorðan*) plus the past participle of a transitive verb, as in: *Bede* 372.34: *geearnode onfongen beon* = 275.21: *meruisset recipi*; *Læce*. 152.19: *mæg seo wund wesan gehæled*; *Greg.* 399.18: *ðonne magon hie ðeah weorðan gehælede suiðe iðellice ðurh forgiefnesse & ðurh gebedu* = 318.4: *et tamen venia salvantur*. In this compound passive infinitive, the strictly infinitive part of the phrase is not inflected; the participle part is sometimes inflected and sometimes not. In each of the chapters on the several uses of the infinitive, the passive infinitive is treated after the active infinitive.

<sup>1</sup> *L. c.*, p. 63: *Beow*. 1860: *wesan*, *ðenden ic wealde widan riceas, maðmas gemæne, manig oðerne godum gegretan ofer ganotes bæð*. — *Wesan* and *gegretan* may be considered as subjunctives, as by some; or as complements to *aculon* (*secal*), as by others.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, p. 154: *Met. Ps.* 74.5: *Ne ahebbað ge to hea eowre hygeðancas ne ge wið gode æfre gramword sprecan*; *ib.* 94.6: *Cumað him fore ond cneow bigeað on anynas ures drihtnes, ond him wepan fore, ðe us worhte ær* = *Venite, adoremus, et procidamus; et ploremus ante dominum, qui fecit nos*. — As Dr. Zeitlin states, most other scholars consider *sprecan* and *wepan* to be subjunctives.

<sup>3</sup> See Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 99.

# CHAPTER I.

## THE SUBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

The active infinitive as the Subject of a finite verb is less common than I had anticipated, despite the fact that I include under this head sentences having *hit* as the grammatical subject and the infinitive as the logical subject. As the subject of an active verb the active infinitive occurs about 356 times; as the subject of a passive verb, about 48 times. Despite the relative infrequency of the subjective infinitive, my number is appreciably larger than that of previous investigators, chiefly because of my inclusion of the inflected infinitive in clauses introduced by a pronoun, — a matter discussed on pages 9 f. below.

#### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

I consider first the active infinitive as the subject of active verbs. Contrary to what one is led to expect from most of the Anglo-Saxon grammars, the subjective infinitive is usually inflected: of the 356 subjective infinitives found, 252 are inflected, and 104 are uninflected. In the prose 322 examples occur, of which 226 are inflected; in the poetry 34 examples occur, of which 26 are inflected. The subjective infinitive is found in Early West Saxon, in the *Chronicle*, in the *Laws*, in Late West Saxon, and, as we have seen, in the poetry.

Usually the subjective infinitive follows its verb, as in *Gu.* 1039 (*nīs me earfeðe to geðolianne ðeodnes willan*) and *Bede* 2.10 (*hit is god godne to herianne 7 yfelne to leanne* = no Latin), but occasionally it precedes, as in *Mat.* 20.23 (*to sittanne on mine swiðran healfe, oððe on wynstran, nys me inc to syllanne* = *sedere autem ad dexteram meam vel sinistram non est meum dare*). The postposition of the infinitive is largely due, no doubt, to the fact that, as already stated, the clause is often introduced by the pronoun *hit*, and that the infinitive occurs as the subject chiefly of impersonal verbs and of impersonal verb phrases. Possibly, too, the postposition of the infinitive is due in part to the fact that in the Latin originals of the Anglo-Saxon translations this order often occurs. As will be seen later, the frequent postposition of the infinitive, especially in phrases made up of the verb *to be* plus an adjective, tends to cause the use of the inflected infinitive instead of the uninflected; or, rather, this tendency results from the greater proximity of the infinitive to the adjective consequent upon the postposition.

The subjective infinitive that is active in form seems to me habitually active in sense.

I. The uninflected infinitive only is found as the subject with the following verbs, each of which occurs only a few times in this construction: —

*becuman, happen.*

*beon, be, plus an adjective*

*gelystan, please.*

*geðyncan, seem good.*

*geweorðan, happen.*

#### (1) Of Pleasantness:

*softe, soft, pleasant.*

The examples in full are: —

**becuman, happen:**

*Chad, Anhang, 11:* Ðam cilde ne *becymð* næfre into heofonan rice *becuman*.

**beon, be, plus an adjective of Pleasantness:—**

**softe, soft, pleasant:**

*Ælf. Hom. I. 164<sup>1</sup>:* Him *bið* swiðe *softe*, and nan geswinc ðæt he fyller his galnysse, and druncennysse, and gytsunge begange and modignysse, and ða unstrangan berype, and *don (sic!)* swa hwæt swa hine lyst.

**gelystan, please:**

*Læce. 69.31<sup>a, b</sup>, 32:* hwilum hie wel *gelyst utgangan* 7 him ða byrðenne fram *aweorpan* 7 georne *tilian*, ac ne magon.

**geðyncan, seem good:**

*L. 1.3:* me *geðuhte*, geornlice eallum [fram fruman gefylgdum], on endebyrðnesse *writan* ðe = *Visum est et mihi, assecuto omnia a principio diligenter, ex ordine tibi scribere.*

**geweorðan [-u-], happen:**

*Gen. 1692:* Ne meahte hie *gewurðan* weall stænenne up forð *timbran*, ac hie earmlice heapum tohlodon hleoðrum gedælde.

II. The inflected infinitive only is found as subject with the following verbs:—

**aðreotan, weary.**  
**behofian, behoove.**

**beon, be, without an adjective.**

**beon, be, in predicative combination with:—**

(1) Adjectives<sup>1</sup> of Ease and Difficulty, and the like:

*deoplic, profound, difficult.*  
*earfoð(e) [-feð(e)], difficult.*  
*earfoðlic, difficult.*  
*earfoðre, more difficult.*  
*eaðe [e-, ie-, y-], easy.*  
*eaðelicor, more easily.*  
*eaðelicre, more easy.*  
*eað(e)re [e-, ie-], more easy.*  
*efneðe, equally easy.*

*hefig, heavy, unpleasant.*  
*ieðe: see eaðe.*  
*ieðre: see eað(e)re.*  
*lang [-o-], long, tedious.*  
*langsum [-o-], long, tedious.*  
*langsumlic [-o-], long, tedious.*  
*leng, longer.*  
*uneaðe [-ie-, -y-], not easy, difficult.*  
*unieðe: see unaðe.*

(2) Adjectives of Goodness, Usefulness, Necessity, and the like:

*betst, best.*  
*fulfremedlic, perfect.*  
*god, good.*  
*nyttre, more useful.*

*nyttwierðe [-y-], useful.*  
*sel, excellent.*  
*selest [-ost], most excellent.*

(3) Adjectives of Pleasantness and Unpleasantness, and the like:

*æðryt, troublesome*  
*arwierðlicost [-y-], honorable.*  
*deorwierðe, precious.*  
*dyslic, foolish.*  
*earmlíc, distressing.*  
*egeslicost, most terrible.*  
*gedwolsum, misleading.*  
*geomorlic, sad.*  
*hefi(g)tyme, troublesome.*

*lað, loathsome.*  
*leofost [-ast], most dear.*  
*leofre, more dear.*  
*lustbærre, more pleasant.*  
*pleolic, dangerous.*  
*sar, grievous.*  
*scandlic [-o-], disgraceful.*  
*sceamu, shame.*  
*sorhlic, grievous.*

<sup>1</sup> Instead of an adjective we occasionally have a noun or an adverb in these groups with *beon* and with *ðyncan*.

## (3) Adjectives of Pleasantness, etc. — continued.

<b>strang</b> [-o-], <i>distressing</i> .	<b>weorc</b> , <i>hardship</i> .
<b>unacumendlic</b> , <i>intolerable</i> .	<b>weorce</b> , <i>grievous</i> .
<b>unaræfnedlic</b> , <i>intolerable</i> .	<b>wynsumere</b> , <i>more pleasant</i> .
<b>waclic</b> , <i>mean</i> .	

## (4) Adjectives of Right and Wrong, Suitability and Unsuitability, the Customary and the Strange, and the like:

<b>gecopust</b> , <i>most suitable</i> .	<b>rihtre</b> , <i>more proper</i> .
<b>gecynde</b> , <i>natural</i> .	<b>sweetol</b> , <i>clear</i> .
<b>gelimplicor</b> , <i>more suitably</i> .	<b>treowlicre</b> , <i>safer</i> .
<b>genoh</b> , <i>enough, sufficient</i> .	<b>unaliefedlic</b> [-e-, -y-], <i>unlawful</i> .
<b>gewunelic</b> , <i>customary</i> .	<b>ungelifedlic</b> , <i>incredible</i> .
<b>manfullic</b> , <i>sinful</i> .	<b>unriht</b> [-y-], <i>wrong</i> .
<b>riht</b> [-y-], <i>right, proper</i> .	<b>wundorlic</b> , <i>wonderful</i> .
<b>rihtlic</b> , <i>right, proper</i> .	

(5) Other adjectives: **feorr**, *far*; **min**, *mine*.

<b>dafenian</b> , <i>be fitting</i> .	<b>helpan</b> , <i>help</i> .
<b>derian</b> , <i>injure</i> .	<b>sceamian</b> , <i>shame</i> .
<b>gelustfullian</b> , <i>delight</i> .	<b>ðyncan</b> , <i>seem</i> , in predicative combination
<b>genihtsumian</b> , <i>suffice</i> .	with: —
<b>gerisan</b> , <i>befit</i> .	

## (1) Adjectives of Ease and Difficulty, and the like:

<b>eaðre</b> [-e-, ie-], <i>easier</i> .	<b>lang</b> [-o-], <i>long, tedious</i> .
<b>ieðre</b> : see <b>eaðre</b> .	<b>langsum</b> [-o-], <i>long, tedious</i> .

## (2) Adjectives of Goodness and the like:

<b>selest</b> [-ost], <i>most excellent</i> .	<b>selle</b> , <i>more excellent</i> .
---	--

## (3) Adjectives of Pleasantness and Unpleasantness, and the like:

<b>æðryt</b> , <i>troublesome</i> .	<b>hefigtime</b> , <i>troublesome</i> .
<b>dyselīg</b> , <i>foolish</i> .	<b>leoфра</b> , <i>dearer</i> .
	<b>sceamu</b> , <i>shame</i> .

## (4) Adjectives of Right and Wrong, the Customary and the Strange, and the like:

<b>sellic</b> [-y-], <i>strange</i> .	<b>wierse</b> [-y-], <i>worse</i> .
---------------------------------------	-------------------------------------

The subjective infinitive occurs far more frequently with *beon* and with *ðyncan*, plus an adjective, than with the other verbs mentioned. It is possible that, in some of the examples with these two verbs, the infinitive is a modifier of the adjective rather than the subject of the verb plus the adjective, and should be put in Chapter XI. Especially doubtful are the sentences introduced by the demonstrative pronoun *ðæt* or *ðis*, as in *Boeth.* 118.7 (*Ðæt is . . . earfoðlic dysegum monnum to ongitanne* = 101.30: *Mira quidem, inquam, et concessu difficilis inlatio*) and *Bede* 366.2 (*ðis an . . . is genog to gemýngienne* = 271.10: *hoc tantum . . . commemorare satis sit*); or by *hwæt*, as in *Greg.* 401.16 (*Ic eow secgge hwæt eow arwyrðlicost is to beganne* = 320.6: *ad id quod honestum est*); or by a neuter noun, as in *Ælf. Hom.* II. 386<sup>t</sup> (*ðis fers is swiðe deoplic eow to understandenne*). In such sentences, the infinitive seems to me, as a rule, to be subjective; but it is possible, of course, that the pronoun or noun is subjective instead of objective, and that the infinitive is adverbial and modifies the adjective instead of being the subject of the verb. Less doubt-

ful seems to me the infinitive in the clause introduced by a relative pronoun (*ðæt* or *ðe*), as in *Wærf.* 303.1 (*eac oðre wisan hi rehton to ecan ðæs wundes be ðære ylcan byrgene, ðæt us is nu lang to asecganne* = 365 B<sup>1</sup>: *miraculi, quæ nunc narrare longum æstimo*) and in *Solil.* 39.9 (for *ðæs ðinges lufum ðe ðe rihtre ys to lufianne ðonne ðæt* = 0). Less doubtful, too, seems to me the infinitive in clauses in which the demonstrative pronoun, *ðæt* or *ðis*, comes, not at the beginning, but at the middle, of its clause, as in *Oros.* 74.7 (*Swa ungeliefedlic is ænigum menn ðæt to gesecganne, hu etc.* = 75.8: *utrumque pene incredibile apud mortales erat*). The different interpretation of the infinitive occurring in the several pronominal clauses above described accounts for many of the divergences in my statistics of the inflected infinitive as subject from those of Drs. Wülfing, Farrar, K. Köhler, and Riggert: with me the two former consider the infinitive in such pronominal clauses sometimes subjective and sometimes adverbial; while the two latter apparently consider it adverbial only. Besides this, however, Dr. Riggert puts under the adverbial use (with adjectives) the infinitive in sentences like the following, in which the infinitive seems to me clearly subjective: *Ps.* 83.10: *Betere is micle to gebidanne anne dæg mid ðe ðonne oðera on ðeodstefnum ðusend mæla* = *quia melior est dies una in atriis tuis super millia*; *Gu.* 1039: *nis me earfeðe to geðolianne ðeodnes willan*; *Beow.* 2445: *Swa bið geomorlic gomelum ceorle to gebidanne*; *Ps.* 117.8<sup>a</sup> b: *God is on dryhten georne to ðenceanne, ðonne on mannan wese mod to treowianne* = *bonum est confidere in Domino quam confidere in homine*; *Ps.* 117.9<sup>a</sup> b: *God ys on dryhten georne to hyhtanne, ðonne on ealdormen ahwær to treowianne* = *bonum est sperare in Domino quam sperare in principibus*; *Rid.* 40.22: *Long is to secganne hu etc.*; *Chr.* 597: *geceosan mot . . . swa lif swa deað, swa him leofre bið to gefremmanne*; *El.* 607: *Ðe synt tu gearu, swa lif swa deað, swa ðe leofre bið to geceosanne*. Indeed, Dr. Riggert<sup>1</sup> finds only three examples of the inflected infinitive as the subject of an active verb in all Anglo-Saxon poetry; one of these is *Beow.* 2093 (*To lang ys to recenne, hu etc.*), which does not differ essentially from *Rid.* 40.22 quoted above, though in the latter, we are told, the infinitive modifies the adjective.

Typical examples are:—

*aðreotan, weary:*

*Oros.* 42.13: *Eac me sceal aðreotan . . . ymb ealra Troiana gewin to asecganne* = 43.12: *Tædet etiam . . . referre certamina*.

*behofian, behoove:*

*Solil.* 27.12: *Ælces licuman ægan behofað ðreora ðinga on hym silfum to habbane (sic!) = Ergo animæ tribus quibusdam rebus opus est ut oculos habeat quibus jam bene uti possit, ut aspiat, ut videat.*

*beon, be, without an adjective:—*

*Mat.* 20.23: *to sittanne on mine swiðran healfe, oððe on wynstran, nys me inc to sylenne, ac ðam ðe hyt fram minum Fæder gegearwod ys = sedere autem ad dexteram meam vel sinistram non est meum dare vobis, sed quibus paratum est a Patre meo.*

*beon, be, in predicative combination with:—*

(1) Adjectives of Ease and Difficulty, etc.:

*earfoð(e) [-feð(e)], difficult:*



*Greg.* 51.5: hit swa earfoðe is ænegum menn to witanne hwonne he geclænsod sie = 28.3: valde *difficile est*, purgatum se quemlibet posse *cognoscere*.

*Oros.* 212.30: is me nu swiðe earfoðe hiera mod to ahwettanne = 0.

*Chron.* 170<sup>b</sup>, 1050 D: hit is earfoð to witane ðara biscopa ðe ðæto comon.

*Laws* 455, Gerefa, c. 18: Hit is earfoðe eall to gesecganne.

*Bened.* 67.1: ðæm unandgytfullum ðæt gastlice angyt (*sic!*) is earfoðe to understandende (*sic!* but MSS. TF: -enne) butan haligra manna trahtnunge = 126.10: infirmis intellectibus non erit utile illa hora hanc Scripturam audire.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 466<sup>b</sup>: Eac ðæs dæges godspel is swiðe earfoðe læwedum mannum to understandenne (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

earfoðre, more difficult:

*Greg.* 453.12: hit is ðeah earfoðre ealle ætsomne to læranne = 384.5: longe tamen laboriosus est auditores innumeros . . . admonere. — *Ib.* 455.6: ðeah bið giet earfoðre ælcne on sundrum to læranne = 386.11: multo tamen acriori labore fatigatur, quando uni contrariis vitiis servienti prædicare compellitur.

eaðe [e-, ie-, y-], easy:

*Beow.* 1003: No ðæt yðe byð to befleonne (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

*Ps.* 76.16: ne bið ðær eðe ðin spor on to findanne = 76.20: vestigia tua non cognoscentur.

*Boeth.* 145.5: Hwæs wundrast ðu ðær swa swiðe, swa eðe swa hit is to ongi-tanne = 0.

*Bened.* 124.12: Eaðe is to understandenne of hwylcum antimbre ðeos unðæslicu asprincð ðisse miclam (*sic!*) toðundennesse = 190.2: Quod quam sit absurdum facile advertitur.

*Chron.* 239<sup>m</sup>, 1104 E<sup>a</sup>: Nis eaðe to asecgenne ðises landes earmða.

eaðelicor, more easily:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 236<sup>1, 2, 3</sup>: Nu is geðuht ðæt him sy sumera ðinga eaðelicor to arærenne ðone deadan of ðam duste, ðonne him wære to wyrçenne ealle gesceafta of nahte (or predicative with *beon?*)<sup>1</sup>.

eaðelicre, more easy:

*Mat.* 19.24: eaðelicre byð ðam olfende to ganne ðurh nædle eage, ðonne se welega on heofona rice ga = *facilius est camelum per foramen acus transire*, quam divitem intrare in regnum coelorum.

eað(e)re [e-, ie-, y-], more easy:

*Boeth.* 81.13: nis hire ðeah ðonne eðre to feallanne of dune ðonne up = 0.

*Greg.* 203. 17, 18: him is micle ieðre to gestieganne on ðone ryhtan wisdom ðonne ðæm lytegan sie to anbuganne = 152.14 : 0.

*Mk.* 10.25: Eaðere ys olfende to farenne ðurh nædle ðyrel = *Facilius est camelum per foramen acus transire*.

efneðe, equally easy:

*Mel.* 20.168: Hwæt! hi ðeah eorðlices auht ne haldeð, is ðeah enfeðe up 7 of dune to feallanne foldan ðisse.

uneaðe [-e-, -ie-], difficult:

*And.* 206: Nis ðæt uneaðe eallwealdan Gode to gefremmanne on foldwege, ðæt etc. (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

*Greg.* 355.21: forðæm he wisse ðæt hit bið swiðe unieðe ægðer to donne, ge wið ðone to cidanne ðe yfel deð, ge eac sibbe wið to habbenne = 276.1: *Difficile quippe erat ut si male acta corripere, habere pacem cum omnibus possent*.

*Oros.* 52.8: Hit is *unieðe to gesecgenne* hu monege gewin siððan wæron = 53.4: *quæ per ordinem disserere nequaquam aptum videtur.*

(2) Adjectives of Goodness, Usefulness, etc.:—

**betst, best:**

*Solil.* 3.6, 7: Ða reahte he . . . hwilc good him were *betst to donne*, and hwilc yfel *betst to forletende (sic!)* = mihi . . . *quaerenti memetipsum ac bonum meum, quidve mali evitandum esset* (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

**god, good:**

*Greg.* 151, 8<sup>b</sup>, 9<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: Eac is to wietanne ðætte hwilum *bið god* wærlice to *miðanne* his hieremonna scylda & to *licettanne* suelce he hit nyte; hwilum eft to *se[c]ganne* = 108.18<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>: *Sciendum quoque est, quod aliquando subjectorum vitia prudenter dissimulanda sunt, sed quia dissimulantur, indicanda.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 564<sup>t</sup>: Gif god is and halwendlic to *forhæbbenne* fram unalyfedlicum styrungum.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 2.18<sup>a</sup>: *Nis na god* ðisum men ana to *wunienne* = *Non est bonum hominem esse solum.*

*Mat.* 17.4<sup>a</sup>: *god ys us her to beonne* = *bonum est nos hic esse* (according to Stoffel, l. c., p. 53, accusative and inflected infinitive in Anglo-Saxon: see Chapter VIII, p. 119).

*Læce.* 28.41: Eft wið ðon eac *bið god* lustmoca crop to *lecganne* on gebrocen heafod.

**sel, better:**

*Bened.* 10.3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: be . . . drohtunge *sel is to swigienne* ðonne embe to *spre-cenne* = 16.13: *melius est silere quam loqui.*

**selest [-ost], best, most excellent:**

*Prayers* IV. 11: Getacna me . . . ðær *selast sy* sawle minre to *gemearcenne* meotudes willan.

*Bl. Hom.* 205.27: ðonne is hit ealles *selest* to ðæm dæge to *secenne* hwæt ðæs willa sie.

(3) Adjectives of Pleasantness and Unpleasantness, etc.:—

**lað, loathsome:**

*Oros.* 122.16: nellað geðencan hu *lað* eow selfum wæs to *gelæstanne* eowre aðas = 0.

*Chron.* 173<sup>m</sup>, 1048 E<sup>b</sup>: for ðan him wæs *lað* to *amyrrene* his agenne folgað.

*Wulf.* 257.13: him wæs *lað* ðearfendum mannun mete to *syllenne*.

**leofost [-ast], dearest, best:**

*Laws* 78, Alfred, c. 43: ðeowum monnum eallum sien forgifen, ðam ðe him *leofost sie* to *sellanne* æghwæt.

**leofre, dearer, preferable:**

*Greg.* 217.12<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: him *bið leofre* scande to *ðolianne* ðonne ðæt god to *cyðanne* = 164.7, 9: *eligit patiens quælibet mala perpeti, quam . . . bona sua occulta cognosci.*

*Oros.* 44.14<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: Heton . . . seegan, ðæt him *leofre* wære wið hiene to *feohtanne* ðonne gafol to *gielðanne* = 0.

(4) Adjectives of Right and Wrong, etc.:—

**riht, right, proper:**

*Bede* 268.4: swa *riht is to gelyfanne* = 210.6: *ut credi fas est.* — *Ib.* 398.18: swa swiðe swa monnum *riht is to eahtienne* = 289.11: *quantum hominibus aestimare fas est.*

*Greg.* 283.7: Se slawa ongit hwæt him *ryht bið to donne* = 214.5: Piger enim recte sentiendo quasi vigilat (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

**unaliefedlic** [-e-, -y-], *unallowable*:

*Pr.* Ps. 16.14<sup>a</sup>: hi eton swynen flæsc, ðæt Iudeum *unaliefedlic ys to etanne* = saturati sunt porcina.

*Wærf.* 334.22, 23: ðæt is unrihtlic 7 *unaliefedlic* ænigum men *to geðæncanne* oððe *to cweðanne* = 401 D: quod dici nefas est (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

**unriht**, *not right, improper*:

*Wærf.* 308.18: on ðære ylcan niht, ðæt is *unriht to secganne*, he forspilde hie ðurh forligre = 372 C<sup>1</sup>: eamque nocte illa (quod dictu nefas est) perdidit (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

(5) Other Adjectives: —

**feor(r)**, *far*:

*Beow.* 1922: næs him *feor ðanon to gesecanne* since bryttan. [But, instead of being subjective, the infinitive may be predicative, as Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 50, seems to think. Cf. *And.* 424.]

**min**, *mine*:

*Mk.* 10.40: Soðlice nis hit na *min inc to sylenne* ðæt gyt sitton on *mine swyðran healfe* = Sedere autem ad dexteram meam vel ad sinistram, *non est meum dare*. [But, instead of being subjective, the infinitive may modify *min*.]

**dafenian**, *be fitting*:

*Solil.* 32.17: me *dafenað to andsweorianne* ðes ðe ic ongyte = 0.

**derian**, *injure*:

*Greg.* 237.11: sua *dereð eac hwilum sumum monnum* ðæt soð *to gehierenne* = 178.25: ita nonnunquam quibusdam *audita vera nocuerunt*.

**gelustfullian**, *delight*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 360<sup>b</sup> 3: Us *gelustfullað gyt furður to sprecenne* be ðan halgan were.

**genihtsumian**, *suffice*:

*Bened.* 90.15: To beddreafe *genihtsumige to hæbbenne* meatte and hwitel etc. = 158.13: Stramenta autem lectorum *sufficient matta, sagum*, etc.

**gerisan**, *be fitting*:

*Oros.* 54.30: cwæð ðæt ðæm weorce nanum men ær ne *gerise bet to fandianne* ðonne ðæm wyrhtan ðe hit worhte = 0.

*Ælf. Æthelw.* 2: Her ongynð seo endebyrdnyss, hu munecum *gerist to healdenne* ðone regollican ðeaw = Incipit ordo qualiter . . . regularis mos a monachis per anni circulum *obseruari conueniat*.

**helpan**, *help*:

*Ælf. L. S.* xxxvi. 183: unc bam mæg *helpan to hæbbenne* ðis an.

*Læce.* 41.12: Wið fefre eft *hylpð syndrigo marubie to drincanne*.

**sceamian**, *shame*:

*Chron.* 170<sup>m</sup>, 1050 D: swa ðæt us *sceamað hit nu mare to tellanne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 370.100: Us *sceamað to secgenne ealle* ða . . . wiglunga.

**ðyncan**,<sup>1</sup> *seem*, plus an adjective: —

**æðryt**, *wearisome*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 374<sup>b</sup>: him ðincð *æðryt to gehyrenne* ymbe ða clænnysse.

<sup>1</sup> As the construction with *ðyncan* plus an adjective is quite similar to that with *beon* (*wasen*) plus an adjective, I give only a few examples.

**selest** [-ost], *best, most excellent*:

*El.* 533: Nu ge geare cunnon, hwæt eow ðæs on sefan *selest* ðince to gecyðanne (or the infinitive may modify the adjective). — *Ib.* 1165: frignan ongan, hwæt him ðæs on sefan *selost* ðuhte to gelaestenne (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

**selle**, *better, preferable*:

*Ju.* 408: ðæt him sylfum *selle* ðynceð leahtras to fremman (*sic!*) ofer lof Godes.

III. The uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive are each found as the subject of the following verbs:—

**aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *be allowed*.  
**beon**, *be*, plus an adjective

(1) Of Goodness:

**betere**, *better*.  
**selre**, *better*.

**fremman** [*fremian*], *benefit*.

**gebyrian**, *be fitting*.  
**gedafenian**, *be fitting*.  
**gelician**, *please*.  
**lician**, *please*.  
**lystan**, *please*.  
**onhagian**, *please*.

With four exceptions (*aliefan*, *beon* + *selre*, *fremman* (*fremian*), and *lystan*) the inflected infinitive is the commoner with each verb of this group: with *aliefan* and with *lystan* the uninflected infinitive is the more usual, while with *beon* + *selre* and with *fremman* (*fremian*) the usage is evenly divided.

The following are typical examples:—

**aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *be allowed*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 74.15: æfter hu feola daga *alefað* him ðæm geryne *onfoon* fulwihtes bæðes? = 53.29: quod genuerit, post quot dies hoc *liceat* sacri baptismatis sacramenta *percipere*? — *Ib.* 74.18<sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup>: hwæðer *alefað* hire in circan *gongan* oððe ðæm geryne *onfoon* ðære halgan gemænsumnesse? = 53.32<sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup>: an ecclesiam *intrare* ei *liceat* aut . . . sacramenta *percipere*? — *Ib.* 78.17: ne *alefað* hire in . . . circan *gongan*? = 55.28: ei non *liceat* . . . ecclesiam *intrare*?

*Gosp.*: *Mk.* 3.4<sup>b</sup> <sup>c</sup>: Ða cwæð he, *alyfð* restedægum wel to donne, hweðer ðe yfele? sawla *gehælan*, hweðer ðe *forspillan*? = dicit eis: *Licet* sabbatis *benefacere*, an male? animam salvam *facere*, an *perdere*. — *Mk.* 10.2: Pharisei . . . hine axodon hwæðer *alyfð* ænegum men his wif *forlætan* = interrogabant eum: Si *licet* viro uxorem *dimittere*. — *L.* 6.9<sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup> <sup>c</sup>: *alyfð* on restedægum wel *don*, oððe yfele; sawle hale *gedon*, hwæðer ðe *forspillan*? = si *licet* sabbatis *benefacere* an male, animam salvam *facere*, an *perdere*?

(2) Inflected:

*Pr. Gu.* XX. 85: geryno . . . ða nanegum men ne *alyfað* to *secganne* = mysteria, quæ non *licet* homini *narrare* (on *alyfað* for *alyfeð*, see Gonser's note).

*Mk.* 3.4<sup>a</sup>: quoted above under "Uninflected." — *Mk.* 12.14: *Alyfð* gaful to *syllanne* ðam Casere? = *Licet* dari *tributum* Cæsari?

**beon**, *be*, plus an adjective of Goodness, etc.:—

**betere**, *better*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Mk.* 9.47: *betere* ðe is mid anum eagan *gan* on Godes rice = 9.46: *bonum est* tibi luscum *introire* in regnum Dei. [Concerning the positive here, see Professor J. W. Bright's "An Idiom of the Comparative in Anglo-Saxon," in *Modern Language Notes* for June, 1912, pp. 181–183.]

## (2) Inflected:

*Gen.* 660: His *hyldo is unc betere to gewinnanne* ðonne his wiðermedo (or the infinitive may modify the adjective).

*Solil.* 36.8: ðæh hwa cwæðe ðæt hyt *si betere to habbenne* for bearna gestreone = no Latin.

*Mat.* 18.9: *betere* ðe *ys* mid anum eagan on life to *ganne* ðonne ðu *si* mid twam asend on helle fyr = *bonum tibi est cum uno oculo in vitam intrare, quam duos oculos habentem mitti in gehennam ignis.*

**selre, better:**

## (1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 144<sup>b</sup>: *Selre* us is to sweltenne and soðlice *anbidian (sic!)* ðæs ecan æristes.

*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 101.322<sup>1</sup>: *selre* ðe *bið* anegede *faran* to heofonan rice, ðonne mid twam eagam beon aworpen on ece susle.

## (2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 486<sup>b</sup>: Salomon cwæð, ðæt *selre* wære to *wunigenne* mid leon and dracan ðonne mid yfelum wife and oferspræcum.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 144<sup>a</sup>: quoted under "Uninflected" above.

**fremman (fremian), benefit:**

## (1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 394<sup>m</sup>: ac hit ne *fremede* him swa *gedon*.

## (2) Inflected:

*Mat.* 19.10: ne *fremað* nanum menn to *wifienne* = non *expedit nubere*.

**gebyrian, be fitting:**

## (1) Uninflected:

*Gosp.: Mat.* 18.33: hu ne *gebyrede* ðe *miltsian* ðinum efenðeowan swa swa ic ðe gemiltsode? = Nonne ergo oportuit et te misereri conservi tui, sicut et ego tui misertus sum? (possibly, but not probably, accusative and infinitive: see examples below in which the noun is clearly dative; also Chapter VIII, p. 124). — *L.* 11.42<sup>b</sup>: ðas ðing eow *gebyrede* to donne, and ða ðing ne *forlætan (sic!)* = hæc autem oportuit facere, et illa non *omittere*. — *L.* 12.12: Halig Gast eow lærð on ðære tide ða ðing ðe eow *specan gebyrað* = Spiritus . . . sanctus docebit vos in ipsa hora quid oporteat vos dicere (see note to *L.* 11.42 above). — *L.* 15.32<sup>a</sup>: ðe *gebyrede gewistfullian* and *geblissian* = *Epulari autem et gaudere oportebat*. — *L.* 24.26<sup>a</sup>: Hu ne *gebyrede* Criste ðas ðing *ðoligean*, and swa on his wuldor *gan*? = Nonne hæc oportuit pati Christum, et ita intrare in gloriam suam?

## (2) Inflected:

*Laws* 446, Rectitudines, c. 3, § 3: Him *gebyriað (sic!)* V æceres to *habbanne* — *Ib.* 477, Episcopus, c. 2<sup>a</sup>: ðæt heora ælc wite, hwæt him mid rihte *gebyrige* to *donne*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 492<sup>t</sup>: us ne *gebyrað* to *ameldigenne* ða scyldigan.

*Ælf. Hept.: De N. T.* 20.30: hwæt *gebyrað* us embe ðis to *smeagenne*?

*Ælf. Gr.* 245.9: nu hæfð se *bene* ða ðing, ðe adverbio *gebyrað* to *hæbbenne*.

*Gosp.: Mat.* 26.54<sup>b</sup>: for ðam ðus hyt *gebyrað* to *beonne* = quia sic oportet fieri. — *Mk.* 14.31: ðeah me *gebyrige* mid ðe to *swellenne* = si oportuerit me simul commori tibi. — *L.* 2.49: nyste gyt ðæt me *gebyrað* to *beonne* on ðam ðingum ðe mines fæder synt? = nesciebatis quia in his quæ Patris mei sunt oportet me esse? — *L.* 11.42<sup>a</sup>: quoted under "Uninflected" above. — *J.* 9.4: Me *gebyrað* to *wyrceanne* ðæs weorc ðe me sende = Me oportet operari opera ejus qui misit me.

*Wulf.* 279.4: ne *gebyreð* æt cyrican ænig ðing to *donne*.

*gedaf(e)nian*, *be fitting*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 74.22: All ðas ðing ðære . . . ðeode . . . *gedafenað* cuð *habban* = 54.2: *Quae omnia rudi Anglorum genti oportet haberi conperta*. — *Ib.* 342.18: efne ða an ða ðe to æfestnesse belumpon, 7 his ða æfestan tungan *gedeofanade singan* = 259.12: ea . . . quae . . . religiosam eius linguam *decebant* (or accusative and infinitive in Anglo-Saxon?).

*Pr. Gu.* V. 67, 68, 69: swa ðonne *gedafenað* ðam men [*Vercelli MS.*: ðane man] gelice ðurh six daga fæsten ðone gast *gefrætwan*, and ðonne ðy seofodan dæg mete ðicgan and his lichaman *restan* = ita etiam hominem decet sex diebus per jejunii plasma spiritu *reformari*, et septimo die *comedendo* carni requiem dare.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 318<sup>m</sup> 2: Us *gedafenað* to *donne* dugeðe on sibbe, mid estfulum mode menniscum gesceafte, and eft on ehtnysse ure lif *syllan* (*sic!*) for ðone soðan God.

*Ælf. L. S.* 240.31: us *gedafenað* swyðor mid geswince to campigenne for ðam undeadlicum cyninge and ðe *oferswiðan* (*sic!*). — *Ib.* XXIII B. 261: ðe *gedafenað* . . . for me and for eallum *gebidan*.

*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.34<sup>2, 3</sup>: ne *gedafonode* Criste swa ðrowian and swa *faran* into his wuldre?

*L.* 4.43: Soðlice me *gedafenað* oðrum ceastrum Godes rice *bodian* = Quia et aliis civitatibus *oportet me evangelizare* regnum Dei (possibly but not probably accusative and infinitive: see examples in which the noun is clearly in the dative case).

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 2.13: ðe *gedafenað* ðine ðeode to *læranne* = 0. — *Ib.* 196.17: Hwæt woldest ðu . . . ðæt . . . hors ðæm ðearfan *syllan*, ðe ðe *gedafenade* agan (*sic!*) to *habbanne*? = 156.18: Quid uoluisti . . . , equum . . . , quem *te conueniebat proprium habere*, pauperi dare?

*Solil.* 32.16<sup>a, b</sup>: ðe *gedafenað* to *lerenne* and me to *hlisenne* = no Latin.

*Laws* 248, VI Æthelred, c. 5, § 2: Cristenan mæn ne *gedafenað* to *donne*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 124<sup>b</sup>: ðær ðe bið gesæd hwæt ðe *gedafenað* to *donne*. — *Ib.* I. 386<sup>1, 2</sup>: ðær ðe bið gesæd hwæt ðe *gedafenige* to *donne*. — *Ib.* II. 318<sup>m</sup> 1: quoted under "Uninflected."

*Ælf. L. S.* 228.131: us Iudeiscum ne *gedafenað* to *genealecenne* eow hæðenum mannum. — *Ib.* 240.30: quoted under "Uninflected." — *Ib.* 314.127: Us *gedafenað* to *offrigenne* ðam . . . gode. — *Ib.* XXIII B. 228<sup>a, b</sup>: ðe *gedafenað* abbud Zosimus to *biddenne* and to *bletsigenne*. — *Ib.* XXX. 124: swa ðe eac *gedafenað* to *efstenne* . . . and beon gecostnod.

*Wulf.* 227.22: swa *gedafenað* ælcum men to *habbenne* restendæg. — *Ib.* 269.24: swa ænigum cristenum men ne *gedafenað* to *donne* ne huru ðam gehadedum.

*gelician*, *please*:

(1) Uninflected:

*L.* 12.32: for ðam eowrum Fæder *gelicode* eow rice *syllan* = quia *complacuit* Patri vestro dare vobis regnum.

(2) Inflected:

*Oros.* 106.24: siððan *gelicade* eallum folcum ðæt hie Romanum underðieded

wære, 7 hiora æ to behealdanne = 107.24: universarum terrarum orbem . . . Romanis paruisse legibus . . . iudices.<sup>1</sup>— *Ib.* 250.19: ænigum folce his ægenu æ *gelicade to healdenne* = 0.

*Chron.* 182<sup>t</sup>, 1052 C<sup>b</sup>: ðæt ðam cyng *gelicode* mid him to hæbbenne ðe him getreowe wæron.

*lician, please:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 276.12: *licade* us *efencuman* = 214.31: *placuit conuenire nos* (possibly but not probably accusative and infinitive: see examples with *gelician* in which the noun is clearly dative).

*Ælf. L. S.* 308.32: me bet *licað* to forlætenne nu ðisne . . . wurðmynt and ðæs . . . godes cynedome *gehyrsumian* on haligre drohtnunge.

(2) Inflected:

*Pr. Ps.* 43.5: for ðam hy ðe ða *licodon*, and ðe *licode* mid him to *beonne* = 43.4: *quoniam complacuisti* in eis.

*Laws* 46, *Ælfred*, *Intr.*, c. 49, § 10: hie ða cwædon, ðæt him ðæt *licode eallum to healdanne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 308.30: quoted under "Uninflected" above.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 18.293: Gif ðe ðonne *licige to sweltenne*.

*lystan, please:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow.* 1793: Geat ungemetes wel, rofne randwigan *restan lyste*.

*Met.* 9.19: Næs ðæt herlic dæd, ðæt hine swelces gamenes *gilpan lyste*. — *Ib.* 10.20: Eala ofermodan! hwi eow a *lyste* mid eowrum swiran selfra willum ðæt swære gioc symle *underlutan*. — *Ib.* 19.16: Hwæðer ge nu willen wæðan mid hundum on sealtne sæ, ðonne eow *secan lyst* heorotas 7 hinda? — *Ib.* 19.33, 34: forðæm hi æfre ne *lyst* æfter *spyrian*, *secan* ða gesælða. — *Ib.* 19.39: swa me hit *don lysteð*.

*Bede* 398.7<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: cwæð ðæt hine *lyste* mid him *etan 7 drincan* = 288.26, 27<sup>a</sup>: *dicens quia ipse . . . delectaretur manducare et bibere cum eis*.

*Boeth.* 1.11: he halsað ælcne ðara ðe ðas boc *rædan lyste* = 0. — *Ib.* 91.8: ðe . . . *lyste forweorðan* = 78.46: *ad interitum sponte festinent*.

*Greg.* 279.6: *Æt* ærestum *lyst* ðone monn unnyt *sprecan* be oðrum monnum = 210.15: *ut prius loqui aliena libeat*.

*Oros.* 50.17: ðeah swa hwelcne mon swa *lyste* ðæt *witan*, ræde on his bocum = 0.

*Wærf.* 60.7: me *lysteð acsian* = 192 B<sup>1</sup>: *libet inquirere*.

*Bened.* 126.17, 18: ðæt hine ne *worian* ne *scriðan lyste* = 194.2: *cujus maturitas eum non sinat vagari*.

*Ælf. Hom. II.* 220<sup>b</sup>: Se leahtor deð ðæt ðam men ne *lyst* nan ðing to gode *gedon*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 356.297: ðonne ðam menn ne *lyst* on his life nan god *don*.

*Ælf. Gr.* 211.5: ðonne cymð of ðam *lecturio* me *lyst rædan*. — *Ib.* 214.9: me *lyst geseon* = *uiso*.

*Wulf.* 141.8<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>: stingað hine scearplice on ðone muð, forði, swa hwæt swa hinc *lyste etan* oððe *drincan* oððe on unnyt *sprecan*.

*Læce.* 49.35: hu man *lyste utgan* 7 ne mæg.

<sup>1</sup> See Note 2 at the end of this chapter.

(2) Inflected:

*Oros.* 102.25: ic gehwam wille ðærto tæcan ðe hiene his *lyst* ma *to witanne* = 0.

*Solil.* 14.23: Ne *lyst* me ðeah nanes ðinges swiðor *to witanne* ðonne ðises = 0.

— *Ib.* 59.33<sup>a, b</sup>: ac me *lyste* hyt nu bet *to witanne* ðonne *to gelyfanne* = 0.

*onhagian*[an-], *please*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Greg.* 289.16: ðæt hie ne *anhagað* nane wuht nyttywyrðes *don* = 218.19: *Sæpe ergo mansueti dissolutionis torpescunt tædio.*

(2) Inflected:

*Greg.* 341.13: gif he . . . cann gemetgian hwæt hine *anhagige to sellanne* = 264.6: audiant, quomodo quæ habent misericorditer *tribuant*. — *Ib.* 417.17: Forðæmðe ðæt ðætte hine ne *onhagode* utane forð *to brenganne* mid weorcum, innanne he hit geðafode = 338.21: quia etsi rerum tarditas foras peccatum distulit, intus hoc consensionis opere voluntas implevit.

*Solil.* 26.7: ic eom seo racu ðe me *onhagað* ðe *to gerihtreccenne* = Promittit enim ratio . . . ita *se demonstraturam* Deum tuæ menti. — *Ib.* 65.10: Me ne *onhagað* nu ða boc ealle *to asmæganne* = 0.

*Chron.* 175<sup>b</sup>, 1052 D<sup>c</sup>: Ða ne *onhagode* him *to cumenne* to wiðermale.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 448<sup>t 3</sup>: Nu ne *onhagað* us na swiðor be ðam *to spreccenne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 4. 37: halgena ðrowunga, ðe me *to onhagode* on englisc *to awendenne*.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

The active infinitive is found as the subject of passive verbs about 48 times. The infinitive is inflected about 39 times.

I. The uninflected infinitive only, as subject, is found twice (once preceding and once following the chief verb) with the passive of *bewerian*, *prohibit*: — *Bede* 76.19: *Fulwian* ðonne ðæt . . . wif . . . nænige gemete *is bewered* = 54.31: *Baptizare* . . . mulierem . . . nullo modo *prohibetur*. — *Ib.* 78.31: ne sceal him *bewered beon* ðæm geryne *onfon* = 56.9: *mysterium* . . . *percipere non debet prohiberi*.

II. The inflected infinitive only is found as the subject with the passive of the following verbs: —

*forgiefan*, *give, grant*.

(ge)sellan, *give, allow*.

læfan, *leave*.

ðencan, *consider*, plus *halwende*, *salutary*.

ðyncan, *seem, consider* (?), plus *wierðlicor*, *more worthily*.

The examples in full are: —

*forgiefan*, *give, grant*:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIX. 134<sup>a, b</sup>: beo ðe *forgifen to bindene* and *to alysenne*.

*gesellan*, *give, allow*:

*Gosp.: Mat.* 13.11: For ðam ðe eow *is geseald to witanne* heofena rices gerynu = *Quia vobis datum est nosse mysteria regni cœlorum*. — *Mk.* 4.11: Eow *is geseald to witanne* Godes rices gerynu = *Vobis datum est nosse mysterium regni Dei*.

læfan, *leave*:

*Boeth.* 42.9: ðonne meaht ðu ongitan ðætte ðæs ealles *nīs monnum* ðonne



mare *læfed to bugianne* buton swelce on lytel cauertun = 44.18: uix angustissima *inhabitandi* hominibus area *relinquetur* (or final?).

**ðencan**, *consider*, plus **halwende**, *salutary*:

*Ælf. L. S. XXV. 479*: Hit is halig geðoht and halwende to gebiddenne for ðam forðfarendum.

**ðyncan**, *seem, consider* (?), plus **wurðlicor**, *more worthily*:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 48<sup>t</sup> 4*: ðonne ðe is geðuht wurðlicor be Criste to cweðenne Godes Bearn ðonne mannes Bearn.

III. The uninflected and the inflected infinitive are each found as the subject of the passive of the following verbs:—

**aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *allow*.

**bebeodan**, *command*.

With each of these verbs the inflected infinitive is commoner than the uninflected, with *aliefan* far commoner.

The following are typical examples:—

**aliefan**<sup>1</sup> [-e-, -y-], *allow*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede 84.20*: mid ðy him eac *alyfed bið*, swa we ær cwædon, in cirican *gongan* = 59.20; cum ei . . . ecclesiam *licuerit intrare*. — *Ib. 278.10, 11*: nænegum biscopum *alefad seo* in ængum ðinge heo *unstillian*, ne owiht of heora eahtum . . . *ongenman* = 216.7, 8: nulli episcoporum *liceat* ea in aliquo *inquietare*, nec quicquam de eorum rebus uiolenter *abstrahere*. — *Ib. 278.22*: nængum heora *alefed sy* ænge sacerdlíce ðegnunge *don* = 216.22: nulli . . . *liceat* . . . officium . . . *agere*. — *Ib. 280.1*: nængum *alefed sy* nemne ælice gesinscipe *habban* = 217.1: nulli *liceat* . . . *habere* conubium.

(2) Inflected:

*Gu. 1223*: giefte . . . , ðe me *alyfed nis* to gecyðenne cwicra ængum on foldwege fira cynnes.

*Boeth. 121.19<sup>a</sup>*: ðæt men *sie alefed yfel* to *donne* = 103.93<sup>a</sup>: uel *licentiam* uel *impunitatem scelerum* putant *esse felicem*.

*Wærf. 39.21*: ðæt us nu *nære alyfed* to *farene*? = 176 A: *pergere* minime *liceret*? — *Ib. 156.3*: ðæt him *wære alyfed ut* to *farenne* = B. 182 B<sup>1</sup>: atque importunis precibus *ut relaxeretur* immineret. — *Ib. 214.8*: to ðon ðæt him *nære na alyfed ofer* ðæt furður to *ganne* = 261 A: ne ei ultra *liceret progredi*.

*Bened. 86.6*: secggende ðæt him *alyfed nis* wið cuman to *spreccenne* = 154.7: *dicens* sibi non *licere colloqui* cum hospite.

*Bl. Hom. 137.15*: us is *alefed edhwyrft* to ðæm ecean life, & heofena rice to *gesittenne* mid . . . halgum.

*Ælf. Hom. II. 40<sup>m</sup>*: Dis *nis* nu *alyfed nanum* men to *donne*.

*Ælf. L. S. XXV. 684*: On ðam dagum *wæs alyfed* to *aleccenne* his fynd.

*Mat. 12.2*: Nu ðine leorningcnihtas doð ðæt him *alyfyd nys* restedagum to *donne* = Ecce discipuli tui faciunt quod non *licet facere sabbatis*. — *Ib. 12.10*: ys hyt *alyfed to hælenne* on restedagum? = Si *licet sabbatis curare*?

*Wulf. 210.17*: cwæð, ðæt six dagas syndon, 'ðæt eow is *alefed eowre* weorc on to *wyrcenne*.' — *Ib. 227.12<sup>a</sup>, b, 13*: ne mylnum *nis alyfed* to *eornenne* ne on huntað to *ridenne* ne nan unalyfedlic weorc to *wyrcenne*.

**bebeodan**, *command*:

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 382.

## (1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 398<sup>b 1, 2</sup>: forðan ðe us *is beboden*, ðurh gewrite ðære ealdan æ, ofsittan and fortredan ða gewilnigendlican lustas.

## (2) Inflected:

*Bede* 206.16: of eallum ðon, ðe on halgum bocum beboden *is to healdanne* = 161.27: nil ex omnibus, quae in . . . literis *facienda* cognoverat (or final?).

*Boeth.* 40.10: to ðam weorce ðe me *beboden wæs to wyrccanne* = 0 (or final?).

— *Ib.* 40.24: Ne mæg he . . . nan ðara ðinga wyrccan ðe him *beboden is to wyrccenne* = 0 (or final?).

## Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.†

If now we seek to discover what determines the use of the inflected or of the uninflected form of the infinitive as the subject of active verbs, the answer is clear in the case of the verbs having only the inflected form as subject. In the majority of instances the finite verb is made up of the appropriate form of *beon* or *ðyncan* plus an adjective (or occasionally plus an adverb or a noun) that is usually followed by the dative (or occasionally by the genitive) case of nouns and naturally by the inflected infinitive when the adjective is modified by an infinitive; hence, even when not immediately modifying the adjective, but when used as the subject of a finite verb, the infinitive is by the indirect influence of the adjective attracted from the logically expected nominative form, that is, the uninflected infinitive, into the dative form, that is, the inflected infinitive. In the prose *Gen.* 2.18<sup>a</sup> (*Nis na god ðisum men ana to wunienne* = *Non est bonum hominem esse solum*) and in the *Chron.* 173<sup>m</sup>, 1048 E<sup>b</sup> (for ðan him *wæs lað to amyrrenne* his agenne folgað), for instance, we see the transforming influence of the dative-governing adjectives, *god* and *lað*. Of course, as already stated, at times it is difficult to decide whether the infinitive was intended by the writer to modify the adjective or to be the subject of the finite verb. Most of the remaining verbs of the group are such as habitually govern a dative (or occasionally a genitive), and this oblique regimen is, as in the case of *beon* or *ðyncan* plus an adjective, strong enough to cause the infinitive to be inflected when used as a subject, — a result the more easily brought about by the circumstance that these verbs are in most instances impersonal, and that the infinitive usually follows rather than precedes the finite verb. For example, in *Greg.* 237.11 (*sua dereð eac hwilum sumum monnum ðæt soð to gehierenne* = 178.25: *ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera nocuerunt*) and in *Ælf. L. S.* XXXVI. 183 (*unc bam mæg helpan to hæbbenne ðis an*), we see the same sort of transforming influence exercised by the dative-governing verbs, *derian* and *helpan*. Moreover, because of its frequent postposition, the infinitive is often in close proximity to the transforming adjective or verb. Occasionally, too, out of analogy to these dative-governing verbal phrases, a verb that does not govern a dative has an inflected infinitive as its subject, as has *beon* in *Mat.* 20.23, owing to the influence of the frequently recurring *beon* plus a dative-governing adjective.

As to the verbs having only the uninflected infinitive as subject, it seems natural that *becuman* in the sense of 'happen' and *geweorðan* with the same meaning should have the uninflected infinitive as subject, since there is no factor to cause inflection.

That we have an uninflected infinitive as subject to *beon* plus *softe* is probably due to the great distance separating<sup>1</sup> the infinitive from the verbal phrase.

That *geðyncan* in the sense of 'seem good' has for its subject the uninflected instead of the inflected infinitive seems to contravene the general explanation given of the inflected infinitive above; and it may be an exception that proves the rule, though I doubt this. To me the explanation seems rather this: 'seem good' is only occasionally the sense of *geðyncan*; moreover, the infinitive both in the Latin original and in the Anglo-Saxon is separated from the principal verb by a number of words; in brief, *geðyncan* had but slight datival force to transmit to the infinitive, and this little was evaporated in the distance between it and the infinitive.

*Gelystan*, we may suppose, merely follows the general rule of the simplex, *lystan*, which latter habitually though not invariably has an uninflected infinitive as its subject.

When we turn to the group of verbs having now the inflected and now the uninflected infinitive as the subject, we find that the group as a whole is true to the general principles already stated, with only two apparent, if not real, exceptions, *aliefan* and *lystan*, each of which is, as stated, found oftener with the uninflected than with the inflected infinitive, *lystan* far oftener. The datival sense in *aliefan*, though not so strong as in *derian*, *helpan*, etc., is still so strong that its having an uninflected infinitive for subject occasions surprise each time until I place the examples with uninflected infinitives side by side with those having the inflected, and discover that, with one exception (*L.* 6.9<sup>a</sup>), in the former examples, the infinitive, in the Anglo-Saxon, is perceptibly farther removed from the finite verb (*aliefan*) than in the latter examples; and that, of the ten examples of the uninflected infinitive, five (*Mk.* 3.4<sup>b, c</sup>, *L.* 6.9<sup>a, b, c</sup>) occur in two series of three infinitives each, in one of which series the first infinitive (*Mk.* 3.4<sup>a</sup>) is inflected, — a fact that seems to indicate that the degree of separation<sup>1</sup> from the principal verb is an appreciable factor as to the inflection of the infinitive. Of course, it is open to one to claim that, in a series of the sort under discussion, the *to* is carried over as it were to the succeeding infinitives, or, to put it differently, that the presence of *to* with the first infinitive accounts for the lack of inflection in the succeeding infinitives rather than the distance of the latter from the finite verb. This claim seems improbable, however, in view of the fact that in eighteen<sup>2</sup> series the inflected infinitive is followed by the inflected, while in only six<sup>2</sup> series is the inflected followed by the uninflected; and that in the former series, as a rule, the co-ordinated infinitives are appreciably closer to each other and, therefore, to the principal verb than in the latter series. Again, this claim seems improbable in view of the fact that, with the verb under discussion, *aliefan*, we habitually find the single

<sup>1</sup> Separation from its governing verb, its adjective, or its noun, as we shall see later in Chapters II, XI, and XIII, likewise tends to the loss of inflection on the part of the infinitiva. We thus have four additional illustrations of the principle so happily stated by Professor C. Alphonso Smith, in his *Studies in English Syntax*, p. 60: "Other illustrations of the general principle that I have endeavoured to outline will suggest themselves to the reader. Enough have been given, I believe, to show that a dominant characteristic of English syntax, a characteristic that differentiates it sharply from the syntax of Latin, is its insistent tendency to operate at close quarters, to span only limited areas, and to make its laws of concord depend not so much on logic as on proximity. English syntax is essentially a syntax of short circuits."

<sup>2</sup> Given in the notes at the end of this chapter.

infinitive uninflected if remote from the principal verb, but inflected if near it. One exception does occur with *aliefan*: it is difficult to see why we have the uninflected infinitive, *don*, in *Luke* 6.9<sup>a</sup> (*alyfð* on restedægum wel *don*, oððe yfele; sawle hale gedon, hwæðer ðe forspillan? = si *licet* sabbatis *benefacere* an male, animam salvam facere, an perdere?), but the inflected infinitive, *to donne*, in the almost identical passage of *Mark* 3.4<sup>a</sup> (*Alyfð* restedagum wel *to donne*, hweðer ðe yfele? sawla gehælan, hweðer ðe forspillan = *Licet* sabbatis *benefacere*, an male? animam salvam facere, an perdere?); for, while the infinitive is one word further removed from the principal verb in the former than in the latter passage, that alone hardly accounts for the difference in translation. Perhaps the confusion is partially due to the disturbing influence of the adverb *wel* in Anglo-Saxon or of the datival verb, *benefacere*, in Latin. Another probable factor in the twofold construction with *aliefan* is its double regimen (with an accusative and a dative) when transitive, for, as we shall see in the next chapter, double regimen is, with many verbs, a prolific source of confusion between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive in the objective function.

In the single example of the uninflected infinitive as subject of *beon* plus *betere* (*Mk.* 9.47) and in the two of *beon* plus *selre* (*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 101.332<sup>1</sup>, *Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 144<sup>b</sup>), the distance of the infinitive from the verb phrase doubtless contributes to the lack of inflection, for, with *selre*, the first of the two infinitives in a series (*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 144<sup>a</sup>) is inflected, while the second, with an adverb preceding, is uninflected. It is only fair to state that in *Matthew* 18.9 we have the inflected infinitive with *beon* plus *betere* although the infinitive is as far removed from the verb phrase as in *Mark* 9.47; but in the other examples the infinitive is very near the verb.

In the example of *fremman* (*fremian*), 'help,' with an inflected infinitive as subject (*Mat.* 19.10), we have what we should naturally expect. That, contrary to expectation, we find the uninflected infinitive, *gedon*, in *Ælf. Hom.* I. 394<sup>m</sup>, with only two words intervening between it and *fremede*, is probably due to the confusion of meaning between *fremman* (*fremian*) in the sense of 'effect' and in the sense of 'benefit,' and to the consequent double regimen of *fremman* (with an accusative or a dative). In the two passages in question, *fremman* (*fremian*) clearly has the latter of the two meanings.

Of the seven examples of the uninflected infinitive with *gebyrian*, one (*L.* 11.42<sup>b</sup>) is the second of a series of two infinitives with several words intervening between the infinitives. One (*L.* 12.12) precedes the finite verb in Anglo-Saxon, and corresponds to an accusative and predicative infinitive in the Latin original. Two (*L.* 24.26<sup>a, b</sup>) are appreciably separated from the finite verb. One (*Mat.* 18.33) is near the finite verb, but translates a Latin accusative and predicative infinitive, and may itself be considered an instance of the predicative infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, as may the remaining two (*L.* 15.32<sup>a, b</sup>). Personally, however, I believe that, in *Mat.* 18.33 and in *L.* 15.32<sup>a, b</sup>, the Anglo-Saxon infinitive is subjective, but I doubt not that the Latin accusative-with-infinitive construction, present in the passage from *Matthew* and in three other passages with *gebyrian* in *Luke*, may have had something to do with the absence of inflection in Anglo-Saxon. Perhaps, also, the twofold meaning of *gebyrian* ('happen' and 'be fitting') in part accounts for the use of the two infinitives.

Of the eleven examples of the uninflected infinitive as subject of *gedafenian*, two (*Bede* 74.22, 342.18) are very near the finite verb, but correspond, the former to a Latin accusative and infinitive and the latter to a Latin noun in the accusative, and the latter may be a predicative infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. Two (*Ælf. Hom.* II. 318<sup>m2</sup> and *Ælf. L. S.* 240.31) are each the second in a series of two infinitives in each of which series the first infinitive is inflected, and the second is appreciably separated from the first. The remaining seven are separated from the finite verb. But the datival force of the verb, *gedafenian*, occasionally is stronger than the influence of separation, as in *Ælf. L. S.* 240.30, XXIII B. 238<sup>b</sup>, in each of which we have the inflected infinitive despite the separation of infinitive from finite verb. In the remaining sixteen examples of the inflected infinitive, the infinitive is very near the finite verb, usually in immediate juxtaposition therewith.

In the single instance of an uninflected infinitive as the subject of *gelician* (*L.* 12.32), the infinitive is separated from the verb, but by only two words. In one of the three instances of the subjective inflected infinitive (*Oros.* 106.24), the infinitive is separated from the verb by ten words; in the other two the infinitive is in close proximity.

In one instance of the uninflected infinitive as subject of *lician* (*Bede* 276.12), the infinitive phrase corresponds to a Latin accusative and infinitive, and we may possibly have the same idiom in Anglo-Saxon. In another instance of the uninflected infinitive (*Ælf. L. S.* 308.32), the infinitive is the second of a series of two infinitives the first of which is inflected, and is considerably removed from the second. In the four instances of the inflected infinitive, the infinitive is near the finite verb, in two instances in immediate juxtaposition.

That the original idiom with *lystan* was the uninflected infinitive is evident. Only the uninflected infinitive is found in the poetry (7 examples). In a total, in prose and in poetry, of about 65 examples, 61 are uninflected, and this despite the fact that in a majority of these cases, in both poetry and prose, the infinitive is in close proximity to, in many instances in juxtaposition with, the finite verb (*lystan*). But why have we with this verb the uninflected rather than the inflected infinitive, especially when the infinitive is so often so near the finite verb, and when, on a first glance, *lystan* seems in sense so closely akin to what for lack of a better word I have termed the datival verbs? The answer seems to be that the kinship is in reality not so close as it appears, for, while the datival verbs often govern a dative, *lystan* seldom does so: on the contrary, as is well known, it governs habitually the accusative of the person and the genitive of the thing. It is not unnatural, therefore, that its subjective infinitive should be, as it almost always is, uninflected. The surprise is rather that we find, in four instances (*Oros.* 102.25; *Solil.* 14.23, 59.33<sup>a, b</sup>), the inflected infinitive as subject, — a fact that may be partially due to the disturbing influence of the comparative adverb<sup>1</sup> immediately preceding the infinitive in each example, but more largely, perhaps, to the double regimen of *lystan* (an accusative, occasionally a dative, of the person and a genitive of the thing).

In the single example of an uninflected infinitive as the subject of *anhagian* (*Greg.* 289.16), the infinitive is removed by three words from its verb. Even greater separation, however, fails to withstand the datival force of *anhagian* in

<sup>1</sup> The comparative adverb has no such disturbing influence in *Solil.* 42.4<sup>a, b</sup>.

*Solil.* 65.10 and in *Ælf. Hom.* I. 448<sup>†3</sup>. In the remaining examples the inflected infinitive is in close proximity to *anhagian*.

To sum up the matter: verbs and verbal phrases that govern a dative (or occasionally a genitive) normally have the inflected infinitive as subject, especially if the infinitive is near its principal verb. But occasionally even with these verbs we have an uninflected infinitive as subject, the lack of inflection being due partly to remoteness of the infinitive from the finite verb, whether the infinitive occurs singly or in a series; partly to the appearance of the accusative with an infinitive in the Latin original; and partly to the analogical influence of the verbs that naturally take an uninflected infinitive as subject. Other verbs than these habitually take the uninflected infinitive as subject; but here, too, the analogical influence is at times strongly at work, *beon*, for instance, having as subject the inflected infinitive out of analogy to *beon* plus a dative-governing adjective. Still other disturbing factors are diversity of meaning in the principal verb, as in *fremman*, *gebyrian*, *geweorðan*, *geðyncan*; and double regimen of the principal verb, as in *aliefan*, *fremman*, and *lystan*.

With the passive verbs the differentiation between the two infinitives seems to rest upon the same principle as with the active verbs. As before, the inflected infinitive occurs dominantly with the datival verbs: *aliefan*, and *ðencan* or *ðyncan* plus an adjective or adverb. In the few instances in which the uninflected infinitive occurs as subject of these verbs, the infinitive is appreciably removed from the principal verb. When the inflected infinitive is used, in nearly all cases the infinitive is in close proximity to, usually in juxtaposition with, the chief verb, the exceptions to the last statement, with *aliefan*, being *Bl. Hom.* 137.15 and *Mat.* 12.12, 19.3, in which several words intervene between infinitive and verb; and *Wulf.* 227.12<sup>b</sup>, 13, and 285.13, in which we have the second and third infinitives of a series inflected as well as the first. The passive verb seems, therefore, to project its influence, in the case of *aliefan*, somewhat further than does the active.

The inflected infinitive after *læfan* (*Boeth.* 42.9) may be final rather than subjective; in either case the inflection is doubtless due to the presence of a gerund in the Latin original.

That in Late West-Saxon the inflected infinitive is found with *forgiefan* (*Ælf. L. S.* XXIX. 134<sup>a, b</sup>) and (*ge*)*sellan* (*Mat.* 13.11) is not surprising.

That both infinitives are found as subject with *bebeodan* may be due to the double regimen of this verb, which governs a dative of the person and an accusative of the thing, and, as we shall see in the next chapter, has as object each infinitive. But each of these inflected infinitives may be considered final; and one (*Bede* 206.16) was doubtless suggested by the gerundive of the Latin original.

This theory that the inflected infinitive as subject in Anglo-Saxon is largely due to attraction, seems to me supported, if not confirmed, by what happened to the infinitive in New Testament Greek. In his *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses in New Testament Greek*, Professor E. D. Burton devotes §§ 404-405 to "The Infinitive with *τοῦ* as Subject or Object." Here we read: "The Infinitive with *τοῦ* is used even as the subject of a finite verb or as the object of transitive verbs which regularly take a direct

object. This is a wide departure from classical usage, and indicates that the sense of the genitive character of the article τοῦ before the Infinitive was partly lost in later Greek. . . . The origin of this use of the Infinitive with τοῦ is (*sic!*) perhaps in such usages as appear in Luke 17:1; 1 Cor. 16:4; and still more in such as that in Luke 4:10. In Luke 17:1 the genitive is apparently suggested by the idea of *hindering* or *avoiding* in the adjective ἀνένδεκτον; in 1 Cor. 16:4 it is the adjective ἄξιον which gives occasion to the genitive; but in both cases the Infinitive seems to be logically the subject of the copulative verb, the adjective being the predicate. Whether this construction represents the thought in the mind of the writer, or whether the expression is rather to be regarded as an impersonal one, the Infinitive being dependent on the predicate adjective, cannot with confidence be decided. Such usages as Luke 4:10 and 5:7 doubtless owe their origin to the same mental process by which a clause introduced by ἵνα came to stand as the object of a verb of *exhorting*. Ps. Sol. 2:28 compared with Luke 12:45 is also suggestive. It is doubtless the idea of *hindering* in χρονίζω that gives rise to the genitive in the former passage; in the latter the Infinitive is a direct object."

Again, this explanation of the Anglo-Saxon inflected infinitive as subject seems to me supported by the fact that, in the Slavic languages, after verbs and verbal phrases that govern a dative, we frequently have a dative-with-infinitive instead of an accusative-with-infinitive construction: see Chapter IX and section ix of Chapter XVI.

The chief support of the theory, however, is to be found in the fact that, as we shall see in Chapter XVI, section i, the theory applies to the Germanic languages as a whole.

The foregoing attempt at differentiating the two forms of the infinitive as subject is, I believe, almost entirely my own. Of the influence of attraction upon the infinitive in New Testament Greek and in the Slavic languages, I did not become aware until after I had worked out the theory above given as to the subjective infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, while I was hunting for confirmation of that theory in the kindred Indo-Germanic languages. Dr. Van Draat, in his "The Infinitive *with* and *without* Preceding *to*," says nothing of the Anglo-Saxon period. Dr. Kellner, in his "Abwechselung und Tautologie," gives several examples of the interchange of uninflected and inflected infinitive in Middle English, which he believes due to a more or less conscious striving after variety, but he says nothing of the interchange in Anglo-Saxon. Professor C. A. Smith, in his *Studies in English Syntax*, pp. 41-42, has an interesting note on the interchange of simple and prepositional infinitive after auxiliaries in Shakespeare, in which he discusses the influence upon the infinitive of proximity to the chief verb, but he says nothing of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon or of the subjective infinitive in Shakespeare. Professor Einenkel, in his "Der Infinitiv im Mittelenglischen," p. 84, speaks of the confusion between a subjective infinitive and an infinitive dependent on an adjective in Middle English as follows: "Ist das infinitivische subject eines adjectivs von einem objectsnomen begleitet, so tritt in den meisten fällen eine kreuzung ein mit dem unter dem infinitiv des zweckes verzeichneten belege: *he is good to see* (*love* etc.), das heisst, das objectsnomen wird zum subject gemacht, während das frühere infinitivische subject eine function erhält, die einem gewöhnlichen zwecksinfinitiv zum verwechseln ähnelt;"

but he does not discuss the confusion in Anglo-Saxon. Professor Kenyon, in his *The Syntax of the Infinitive in Chaucer*, pp. 49-50, quotes the preceding statement by Einkenkel, and adds this interesting comment: "Einkenkel does not here distinguish very clearly between the simple and prepositional infinitive, but his examples show that he has the latter in mind. My collections from O. E. [= A. S.] are not sufficient to test thoroughly his assumption that the prepositional infinitive as subject in this construction is the original syntax (or, what is equivalent, the simple infinitive, later replaced by the prepositional). But certain considerations seem to point to the *zwecksinfinitiv* as the original construction." Dr. Kenyon then details his reasons for his belief in the priority of the final use of the inflected infinitive with adjectives to the subjective use with verbal phrases, which are too long for quotation in full, but which may be briefly summarized as follows: (1) "The original function of the prepositional infinitive in O. E. was to denote purpose, and (according to Köhler, p. 47, § 10) it was so used first with nouns and adjectives." (2) The use of the uninflected infinitive as subject is rare in *Beowulf* and in Alfred. (3) The inflected infinitive with verb phrases is so often ambiguous in *Beowulf* and in Alfred that the number of examples in which the infinitive is clearly subjective is, Dr. Kenyon thinks, decidedly smaller than that of the examples in which the inflected infinitive is complementary to adjective or noun. I am not sure that the complete statistics given by me will enable one confidently to decide the question propounded by Dr. Kenyon. But my own belief is that the use of the inflected infinitive as subject of verbal phrases is probably contemporaneous with the use of the inflected infinitive as the complement of an adjective, for in each use it is found in the poetry and in the more original prose as well as in the translations and in the later prose. Moreover, while, as stated at the outset of Chapter I, the use of the infinitive is ambiguous in a number of examples, the number of ambiguous examples seems smaller to me than to Dr. Kenyon.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive is occasionally found as the subject of these active verbs:—

*beon*, *be*, plus an adjective.  
*gebyrian*, *be fitting*.  
*gedafenian*, *be fitting*.

*gelimpan*, *happen*.  
*lystan*, *please*.

As the examples quoted below show, the passive infinitive is made up of *beon* plus the past participle, and the infinitive part of the phrase is never inflected, although the participle part occasionally is.

The examples in full are:—

*beon*, *be*, plus an adjective:

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 438, 439: rihtlic is me swa besmitenre fram ðinre clænan ungewemmednysse beon ascirod and fram aworpen.*

*Napier's Ad. to Th. 101.322<sup>12</sup>: selre ðe bið anegede faran to heofonan rice, ðonne mid twam eagam beon aworpen on ece susle. [Cf. Mat. 18.9<sup>b</sup>: betere ðe ys mid anum eagan on life to ganne, ðonne ðu si mid twam asend on helle fyr, = bonum tibi est cum uno oculo in vitam intrare, quam duos oculos habentem mitti in gehennam ignis.]*



**gebyrian, be fitting:**

*L.* 13.16: ne *gebyrede* hyre beon unbunden of ðissum bende on restedæge? = *filiam . . . non oportuit solvi a vinculo isto die sabbati?* — *Ib.* 17.25: Æryst him *gebyreð* ðæt he fela ðinga ðolige, and beon fram ðisse cneorysse aworpen = *Primum autem oportet illum multa pati, et reprobari a generatione hac.*

**gedafenian, be fitting:**

*Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 125: swa ðe eac *gedafenað* to efstenne . . . and . . . beon gecostnod.

**gelimpan, happen:**

*Bede* 382.13: ða *gelamp* him . . . ðurh reliquias . . . *gehæledne* beon = 280.3: *contigit eum . . . per . . . reliquias sanari.*

**lystan, please:**

*Wærf.* 287.14: ða ðuhte hire, ðæt hire *lyste* beon to ðam mægdenum *geðeoded* = 348 C: *Quibus illa cum admisceri appeteret.*

For the subjective infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section i.<sup>1</sup>

#### NOTES.

1. *The Subjective Infinitive in a Series.* — In the following passages, quoted on the pages indicated, we have a series of infinitives in which the first is inflected, but the succeeding is not: *Ælf. Hom.* II. 318<sup>m 1, 2</sup>, p. 16; *Ælf. L. S.* 240.30, 31, p. 16; *ib.* 308.30, 32, p. 17; *ib.* XXV. 144<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 15; *Mk.* 3.4<sup>a, b, c</sup>, p. 14; *L.* 11.42<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 15. In the following passages we have a series of infinitives in which each infinitive is inflected: — (1) with active verbs: *Boeth.* 139.29, 30; *Greg.* 151.8<sup>b</sup>, 9<sup>a, b</sup>; *ib.* 203.17, 18; *ib.* 217.12<sup>a, b</sup>; *Oros.* 44.14<sup>a, b</sup>; *Solil.* 32.16<sup>a, b</sup>; *ib.* 59.33<sup>a, b</sup>; *Wærf.* 334.22, 23; *Bened.* 10.3<sup>a, b</sup>; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 362<sup>b 1, 2</sup>, II. 444<sup>b 1, 2</sup>; *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 228<sup>a, b</sup>; *Wulf.* 211.24<sup>a, b</sup>; *ib.* 241.21<sup>a, b</sup>; Minor Prose: *Cato* 63<sup>a, b</sup>; Poems: *Ps.* 117.8<sup>a, b</sup>; *ib.* 117.9<sup>a, b</sup>; — (2) with passive verbs: *Wulf.* 227.12<sup>a, b</sup>, 13; *ib.* 285.12, 13. — It seems useless to give the series in which each infinitive is uninflected.

2. *The Infinitive Occasionally Alternates with a Clause*, as in *Oros.* 106.24, quoted on p. 16 above; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 164<sup>1</sup>, quoted on p. 8; *Mat.* 19.24, quoted on p. 11; and *L.* 17.25 (passive infinitive), quoted on p. 27. Dr. Kellner, in his "Abwechselung und Tautologie," p. 6, cites the passage from *Orosius* (but not the others), and seems to consider it an example of conscious variation for the sake of variety, and it may be; but to me the variation in each of the examples that I here cite seems due to chance rather than to conscious art.

3. *The Infinitive Alternates with a Noun* in *Wulf.* 196.7 (*ðas lyfta and windas he astyrað to ðan swiðe, ðæt mannum ðincð heora deað leofra, ðonne ðone egesan to gehyranne*) and in *Bl. Hom.* 137.15 (quoted on p. 19).

## CHAPTER II.

### THE OBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

##### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

The active infinitive as the Object of an active verb occurs about 3238 times. The objective infinitive is more commonly uninflected than inflected, there being 2709 examples of the former to 529 of the latter. Of the total of 3238 examples of the objective infinitive, about 508 occur in the poetry, of which 491 examples are uninflected and 17 are inflected. As to the prose, the objective use of the infinitive is found in Early West Saxon and in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose as well as in the translations from the Latin.

The objective infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, normally follows the finite verb, but in each form occasionally precedes it, both in prose and in poetry. With the uninflected infinitive, pre-position is found nearly 150 times in the prose out of a total of 2216 and about 115 times in the poems out of a total of 491. In the prose, pre-position is not infrequently due to the fact that in the Latin original the infinitive precedes the finite verb, as in *Bede* 412.26 (he ða his geferum . . . *brytlan gemde* = 298.25: *prodesse curabat*) and *ib.* 426.3 (ic oft *sæcgan herde* = 305.16: *de . . . tormentibus . . . narrari . . . audiri*); occasionally to the fact that the infinitive occurs in a dependent clause, as in *Ælf. L. S.* 286.62 (ðonne we bec rædað oððe rædan *gehyrað*) and *ib.* 502.255 (ða halgan ðe he ealre worulde . . . *onwreon gemynte*). But neither of these two influences is strong enough to counteract the general tendency to post-position, which is frequently found under such conditions, as in *Wærf.* 207.4 (se bera . . . , ðone he *gewunode* for bilewitnesses broðor *cigan* = 252 C<sup>4</sup>: *vocare consueverat*) and *ib.* 84.18 (he *ongan* . . . *weopan* = 209 A<sup>5</sup>: *flere . . . cæpit*). In the poetry, pre-position is relatively more frequent than in the prose, and seems to be due in many cases to the exigencies of meter, the infinitive often carrying the alliterating letter, as in *Beow.* 3095 (worn eall gespræc gomol on gehðo and eowic *gretan het*) and in *Gen.* 1856 (oð ðæt he *lædan heht* leoflic wif to his selves sele). No doubt, at times, both in poetry and in prose, pre-position is used merely for the sake of variety.

The following is a complete list of the passages in which pre-position of the uninflected infinitive occurs, arranged in alphabetic sequence of the governing verb, which is here cited in the infinitive form:—*aginnan*: *Laws* 310, II Cnut, c. 4;—*bebeodan* [*bi-*]: *Ju.* 232;—*don*: *Ælf. L. S.* 214.90;—*gehieran* [*-e-*, *-i-*, *-y-*]: *Wærf.* 186.1; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 350<sup>6</sup>, 460<sup>7</sup>; *Ælf. Hept.*: *Pref. to Gen.* 22.10; *Judges*: *Epilogue*, p. 265, l. 6; *Ælf. L. S.* 286.62, 500.225, XXIII B. 215; *Læce.* 153.9; *Ps.* 131.6;—*gemed(e)mian*: *Laws* 410, *Judic. Dei*, IV, c. 3, § 2; *ib.* § 4;—*gemyntan*: *Ælf. L. S.* 502.255;—*geseon*: *Ælf. Hom.* II. 186<sup>4</sup>;—*geswican*: *L.* 5.4;—*gieman* [*-e-*, *-y-*]: *Bede* 364.1, 412.26, 442.2;—*hatan*: *Bede* 238.27, 308.14; *Greg.* 3.2; *Oros.* 44.8, 96.18, 114.33, 122.1, 164.32, 168.27, 228.8<sup>a</sup>; *Chron.* 91<sup>m</sup>, 897 A<sup>c</sup>; *Laws* 46, *Ælfred*, *Intr.*, c. 49, § 9<sup>a</sup>; *Bened.* 15.8, 86.15; *Mart.* 24.27, 46.25, 152.21, 218.23; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 442<sup>4</sup>, 470<sup>4</sup>, 478<sup>1</sup>, 484<sup>2</sup>, 508<sup>b</sup>; II. 122<sup>b</sup>, 304<sup>b</sup>, 384<sup>1</sup>, 480<sup>m</sup>; *Ælf. L. S.* 114.420, 154.112, 190.365, 414.6, 484.194, XXV. 130, 380; *Minor Prose*: *Nic.* 514.14; *Beow.* 674, 3095; *Gen.*

1060, 1856; *Dan.* 229; *El.* 129, 862; *Ju.* 161, 254, 303, 575, 579; *Gu.* 1344, 1348; *And.* 587; *Ps.* 50.18<sup>a</sup>; *H. L.* 12; *S. & S.* 275; — *hieran* [-e, -i, -y-]: *Bede* 348.26, 426.3, 430.12; *Oros.* 156.9, 236.7; *Chron.* 64<sup>b</sup>, 851 A; *Wærf.* 2.16; Minor Prose: *Cato*, *Zusätze*, p. 53, l. 21; *Beow.* 273, 582, 875; *Chr.* 73; *And.* 1176; *Höl.* 83; — *lætan*: *Oros.* 258.18, 19; 296.29; *Bened.* 110.19; *Wulf.* 45.25; — *myntan*: *Bl. Hom.* 223.11, 16; *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 13.167, 251; — *onginnan*: *Bede* 24.23, 34.19, 56.1, 56.16, 148.30, 154.34, 174.12, 182.8, 256.24, 286.22, 288.10, 362.29, 454.15, 462.17, 466.22; *Boeth.* 25.9, 91.2, 104.31; *Oros.* 60.30, 62.2, 94.34, 106.6, 110.6, 116.28, 218.14, 262.16; *Laws* 306, I Cnut, c. 26, § 1; *Wærf.* 14.14, 32.18, 290.7; *Bl. Hom.* 105.6, 221.8, 18; *Pr. Gu.* IV. 27, 34; XX. 33; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 138<sup>b</sup>, 472<sup>b</sup>, 502<sup>b</sup>; 518<sup>t</sup>; *Ælf. L. S.* 32.118, XXIII B. 275, 532, 723, XXXI. 1365; *A. S. Hom. and L. S. II.* 18.152; *Wulf.* 191.9, 250.17, 255.9, 262.11; Minor Prose: *Apol.* 27.12<sup>b</sup>, 28; *Beow.* 244; *Gen.* 275, 298, 995, 1355, 1681, 2811, 2887; *Dan.* 49, 170, 190, 539, 750; *Ju.* 298; *El.* 157, 303, 306, 311, 570, 697, 849, 1067, 1163; *Gu.* 533; *And.* 1419; *Met.* 25.69, 26.80; *Ps.* 68.27, 76.10, 77.2, 101.6, 106.36, 118.161, 138.16; *Rid.* 29.11, 32.9, 55.10; *Jud.* 42, 81; *Ph.* 188; Minor Poems: *Cal.* 73; *Doomsday* 97; *D. R.* 73, 116; *Fallen Angels* 78; *Har.* 279; *Pharao* 3; *Prayers* III. 16; — *secan*: *Bl. Hom.* 167.2; *Wald. A.* 18, 20; — *tilian*: *Bl. Hom.* 165.31<sup>a, b</sup>; *Met.* 10.22, 11.79; — *ðencan*: *Bede* 36.8; *Boeth.* 93.31, 103.20; *Greg.* 343.21; *Oros.* 44.32, 54.21, 78.30, 132.12, 150.12, 200.17, 230.2, 242.6, 258.15, 258.29; *Wærf.* 239.6; *Bened.* 23.3; Minor Prose: *Bened. Of.* 62.24; *Beow.* 355, 448, 541, 739, 800, 964, 1535; *Gen.* 1274, 2891; *Ex.* 51; *Ju.* 637; *El.* 296; *Gu.* 260, 274, 277, 298; *And.* 150, 693; *Ps.* 63.3, 88.22, 88.30, 93.20<sup>a</sup>, 107.8, 118.91, 118.107, 118.109, 131.15, 149.7<sup>a</sup>, 149.8<sup>a</sup>; *Charms* V, C, 16, 17; *D. R.* 121; *Fallen Angels* 183, 208, 364; *Gnomic Sayings* (Exeter MS.) 116; *L. P.* II. 25; *Maldon* 258, 316, 319.

Pre-position of the inflected infinitive is found only about half a dozen times, all in prose: *Bede* 258.8: Ond he rehte endebyrðnesse lifes æteawde, 7 rihte Eastran to weorðianne lærde = 204.20: rectum uiuendi ordinem, ritum celebrandi paschae canonicum . . . disseminabat; *Laws* 102, Ine B, c. 30: Gif man cyrliscne mannan flymanfeormienne teo, be his agenon were geladige [he] hine; *Ælf. L. S.* 530.704: on ðam fyrmestan dagan ðe decius se casere to rixianne begann; *Ælf. Hept.*: *Ex.* 16.23: gearwiað to morgen, ðæt ge to gearwienne hæbbon = quæ coquenda sunt, coquite; *Mat.* 20.22: Mage gyt drincan ðone calic ðe ic to drincenne hæbbe? = Potestis bibere calicem quem ego bibiturus sum? *Læce.* 58.27: æfter ðam spiwað, sona him to gifanne biddað. In some of the foregoing examples (*Bede* 258.8 and *Ex.* 16.23) the pre-position of the infinitive is probably due to the fact that its Latin equivalent precedes the finite verb; in some (*Ælf. L. S.* 530.704), to the fact that the infinitive occurs in a dependent clause; but, as a rule, neither of these two influences overthrows the normal postposition, as is evident from sentences like the following, which are not infrequent: *Bede* 372.12: ðu wast ðæt ic . . . teolode to lifigenne to . . . bebode = 275.1: ad . . . imperium . . . uiuere studui; *Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 36: mete, ðe moyses forbead godes folce to ðicigenne.

I have given the full lists of the pre-positive infinitives because it has been claimed by some that pre-position strongly tends to the use of the uninflected infinitive, and postposition to the use of the inflected form, but, as it seems to me, without much ground for the claim: see the section on the differentiation of the two objective infinitives, especially of the infinitive after *ðencan*.

The objective infinitive that is active in form, whether uninflected or inflected, seems to me prevallying, if not exclusively, active in sense. Some,<sup>1</sup> however, hold that the uninflected infinitive, though active in form, is passive

<sup>1</sup> Among them are Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 61–63; Wilhelm, *l. c.*, p. 36; Jolly, *l. c.*, pp. 163–164; Bernhardt, *l. c.*, pp. 383–384; Steig, *l. c.*, p. 311; Wulffing, *l. c.*, II, pp. 47, 189, 191; Zeitlin, *l. c.*, pp. 44–45; K. Köhler, *l. c.*, p. 7; Kellner, *l. c.*, pp. 85, 97; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, pp. 163–167. On the whole, these scholars contend that the infinitive after the verbs named is not necessarily but preferably to be considered passive in sense.

in sense, after verbs of commanding, of causing, and of sense perception, in sentences like the following: *Beow.* 1920: *Het* ða up *beran* æðelinga gestreon; *Bede* 344.21, 22: him ondweardum *het secgan* ðæt swefn 7 ðæt leoð *singan* = 260.17<sup>a, b</sup>: *iussus est . . . indicare somnium et dicere carmen*; — *And.* 397: *Læt* nu *geferian* *flotan* userne, lid to lande; *Boeth.* 133.25: sume he *læt ðreagan* mid heardum broce = 113.142: quosdam remordet, ne longa felicitate luxurient: *alios duris agitari*, ut uirtutes animi patientiae . . . confirment; *Ælf. L. S.* 512.417: se . . . man *let* ðær *ræran* . . . *cytan*; — *Bl. Hom.* 15.28: we nu *gehyrdon* ðis . . . godspell beforan us *rædan*; *Chron.* 199<sup>i</sup>, 1066 E: Ða ðe cyng W. *geherde* ðæt *secgen*. The advocates of the passive interpretation hold, of course, that the accusative case in the above examples is the subject of the infinitive, while their opponents<sup>1</sup> consider it the object of the infinitive. In favor of the passive interpretation of the infinitive are these facts: that, as the examples in this chapter show, very frequently the Anglo-Saxon infinitive active in form, with or without an accompanying accusative, translates a Latin passive infinitive (with or without an accusative subject) and not infrequently a passive indicative; and that, in most if not all such instances of the infinitive after these verbs in Anglo-Saxon, the infinitive, though active in form, may in modern English be appropriately rendered by the passive infinitive, and the accusative rendered as the subject instead of the object, — a rendition likewise possible in most of the Germanic languages. But, despite this, I must hold that, to the Anglo-Saxon, the infinitive in this idiom habitually seemed active in sense as in form. As we shall see later, for the infinitive that is passive in form as well as in sense, in nearly all its uses, the Anglo-Saxon at first had next to no feeling, and was very slow in borrowing it from the Latin. The same thing is true of the Germanic people as a whole, as will be shown in Chapter XVI. Again, in a very large number of instances the Anglo-Saxon active infinitive after these verbs translates a Latin accusative and predicative active infinitive or a Latin active finite verb. In hundreds of passages, in the poems, in the more original prose, and in the translations, we find these verbs followed by an accusative subject to an infinitive that has at the same time an accusative object, — a fact that proves that there at least the infinitive is of necessity active in sense. Of less weight, but worthy of consideration is the fact that, in the alleged instances of the active infinitive used in a passive sense, very often (except with pronouns) the accusative has postposition — the place for the object accusative — rather than pre-position, as is usual with the subjective accusative. Noteworthy, too, is the survival, in the colloquial “I never heard tell of such a thing,” of this objective infinitive active in English, and its very frequent use, both in speech and in writing, in modern German. In a word, the possibility of the passive interpretation of these infinitives is not denied; but it is contended that the active interpretation is more consonant with all the facts so far discovered as to the infinitive, and is truer to the genius of Anglo-Saxon and of the Germanic languages in general.

At times it is difficult to decide whether an infinitive is objective or whether it is adverbial or, occasionally, adjectival. These doubtful cases are indicated

<sup>1</sup> Among these may be mentioned: Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, I, pp. 200, 205; Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 5-6; Wunderlich,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 125; and Smith,<sup>2</sup> *C. A.*, who, p. 72, writes: “*Het* ða bære *settan*, ‘He bade set down the bier,’ not ‘He commanded the bier to be set down.’ The Mn. E. passive in such sentences is a loss both in force and in directness.”

in the examples, and can not easily be grouped here for collective treatment. Students and critics of my study will generously bear in mind the inherent difficulty of the subject itself, a difficulty enhanced in the present instance by the large mass of examples to be considered and by the fact that many previous investigators, in both the Anglo-Saxon and in the Germanic fields, have not sought to separate the objective infinitives from the adverbial uses in the narrower sense of the latter term.

I. The uninflected infinitive only is found as the object of the following groups of verbs: —

1. Oftenest with certain Verbs of Commanding and the like, of which group the chief representative is *hatan*, 'command,' 'order.' The complete list is as follows:

<i>abiddan</i> , <i>bid</i> , <i>command</i> , which occurs only once.	<i>hatan</i> , <i>command</i> , <i>order</i> , which occurs over a thousand times.
--	--

2. Next most frequently with certain Verbs of Causing and Permitting, of which the chief representative is *lætan*, 'allow,' 'cause':

<i>don</i> , <i>do</i> , <i>cause</i> .	<i>lætan</i> , <i>allow</i> , <i>cause</i> .
<i>forgiefan</i> , <i>grant</i> , <i>allow</i> .	

3. Less frequently with the following Verbs of Sense Perception:

<i>gehieran</i> , <i>hear</i> .	<i>ofseon</i> , <i>see</i> .
<i>geseon</i> , <i>see</i> .	<i>seon</i> , <i>see</i> .
<i>hieran</i> , <i>hear</i> .	

4. Occasionally with the following Verbs of Mental Perception:

<i>gefrignan</i> , <i>learn by inquiry</i> .	<i>hogian</i> , <i>think</i> , <i>intend</i> .
<i>gehogian</i> , <i>think</i> , <i>intend</i> .	<i>tweogan</i> [ <i>tweon</i> ], <i>doubt</i> .
<i>geteon</i> , <i>determine</i> .	

5. Occasionally with the following Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing:

<i>blinnan</i> , <i>cease</i> , <i>stop</i> .	<i>ginnan</i> , <i>begin</i> .
<i>forieldan</i> , <i>delay</i> , <i>defer</i> .	

6. Occasionally with the following Verbs of Inclination and of Will:

<i>behealdan</i> , <i>take care</i> .	<i>geðyrstigan</i> , <i>presume</i> , <i>undertake</i> .
<i>cunnian</i> , <i>attempt</i> .	<i>lystan</i> , <i>desire</i> , <i>yearn</i> .
<i>forefon</i> , <i>presume</i> , <i>undertake</i> .	<i>onmedan</i> , <i>presume</i> , <i>undertake</i> .
<i>ge-eaðmodigan</i> , <i>deign</i> , <i>vouchsafe</i> .	<i>wunian</i> , <i>use</i> , <i>be wont</i> .
<i>gegiernian</i> , <i>desire</i> .	

The following are typical examples: —

1. Verbs of Commanding etc.: —

*abiddan*, *bid*, *command*:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 422<sup>b</sup> 3*: se apostol *abæd* him wæter *beran*.

*hatan*, *command*, *order*:

*Beow. 199*: Het him yðlidan godne *gegyrwan*. — *Ib. 674*: *gehealdan* het hildegeatwe.

*Gen. 1856*: oð ðæt he *lædan* heht leoflice wif to his selves sele.

*Dan. 242*: *het* hie hraðe bærnan.

*Chr.* 253: *ða gyldnan geatu . . . hat ontynan.*

*El.* 104: *Heht . . . Constantinus Cristes rode gewyrcean.*

*Ju.* 142<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 143: *het hi ða swingan, susle ðreagan, witum wægan.*

*Gu.* 1344: *ðe secgan het, ðæt etc.*

*And.* 1272: *Heton ut hræðe æðeling lædan in wraðra geweald.*

*Bede* 36.3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: *Het hine ða teon 7 lædan to ðam deofolgyldum = 19.6: eum iussit pertrahi. — Ib. 40.18: het ða sona blinnan fram ehtnysse cristenra manna = 21.21: cessari mox a persecutione praecepit. — Ib. 44.8: ðam dice . . . , ðe we gemynegodon ðæt Seuerus . . . het ðwyras ofer ðæt ealond gedician = 25.10: intra uallum, quod Seuerum . . . fecisse commemorauimus. — Ib. 46.5<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: ðær Seuerus . . . iu het dician 7 eorðweall gewyrcean = 27.19: ubi Seuerus quondam uallum fecerat. — Ib. 90.20: se cyning weorðlice cyrcan heht getimbran = 70.20: eius hortatu Aedelberet ecclesiam . . . construxit. — Ib. 110.12: gesetennisse . . . heht on Englisc gewritan = 90.12: quae conscripta Anglorum sermone . . . habentur. — Ib. 136.12: Ða het se cyning swa don = 112.25: Quod cum iubente rege faceret. — Ib. 166.28: Ða het se papa hine to biscope gehalgian = 139.16: in episcopatus consecratus est gradum. — Ib. 440.2<sup>a</sup>: heht me beran to rædanne = 312.16<sup>b</sup>: iussit uni . . . mihi ad legendum deferre.*

*Boeth.* 37.8<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: *ða het he hi bindan 7 on balcan lecgan = 41.35: Regulus plures . . . in uincla coniecerat. — Ib. 39.19: Se het . . . forbærnan æalle Romeburg = 43.2<sup>a</sup>: urbe flammata.*

*Greg.* 3.1: *Ælfred kyning hateð gretan Wærferð biseap his wordum lufice & freondlice = 0.*

*Oros.* 44.8: *ærendracan . . . asende to ðære ðeode, 7 him untweogendlice secgan het ðæt etc. = 45.6: missis . . . legatis, qui . . . dicerent. — Ib. 52.24<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: hu se cyning het his sunu ofslean, 7 hiene siððan ðam fæder to mete gegierwan = 53.19: cum filium ejus interfecit, epulandumque patri adposuit. — Ib. 120.33: ðæt se æðeling, . . . Pontius . . . , het acsian ðone cyning his fæder, . . . hwæðer etc. = 121.26: Pontius . . . ut Herennium patrem consulendum putaret, utrum etc. — Ib. 288.12: he het oflsean Percopiosus = 289.8: Procopium . . . occidit.*

*Chron.* 25<sup>m</sup>, 626 E<sup>a</sup>: *ðær he ær het getimbrian cyrcan of treowe. — Ib. 91<sup>m</sup>, 897 A<sup>c</sup>: he hie ðær ahon het.*

*Laws* 182, VI *Æthelstan*, c. 12, § 1: *ðæt se cyng . . . het cyðan ðam arce-biscope.*

*Wærf.* 50.29, 30: *ða heht he ða gesomnian 7 don on bydene = 185 A: eas colligi praecepit. — Ib. 202.7: heom ða sona het syllan ða andlyfne = 245 C<sup>1</sup>: Quibus illico alimenta quæ detulerat præbuit.*

*Bened.* 86.15: *Gif hit . . . se abbod underfon hate = 154.17: Quod si jusserit suscipi.*

*Bl. Hom.* 175.1: *ða heht he Simon ðone dry infeccan.*

*Mart.* 26.3: *he het hine mid strælum ofscotian.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 58<sup>b</sup>, <sup>1</sup>: *se het afyllan ane cyfe mid weallendum ele. — Ib. I. 464<sup>b</sup>: Ða het se apostol tolysan ða rapas.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 448: *het abrecan ðone weall. — Ib. XXXII. 122: het hine ða beheafðian.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 40.19: *hæt Pharao ðe ahon = Pharao suspendet te. — Gen. 41.10: het sceofan me . . . on cweartern = me retrudi jussit in carcerem. — Jos. 2.1: het sceawian ðæt land = dixit eis: Ite et considerate terram.*

*Gosp.: Mat. 27.58: Ða het Pilatus agyfan him ðone lichaman = Tunc Pilatus iussit reddi corpus. — L. 8.55<sup>a</sup>: he het hyre syllan etan = iussit illi dari manducare.*

*Wulf. 99.8: Ða het æt nyhstan se casere seccan ðæne Symon to him. — Ib. 237.1: hy heton byrigean ðone godan lichaman.*

*Læce. 88.7: Ðis eal het ðus secgean ælfrede cyninge.*

## 2. Verbs of Causing and Permitting:—

*don, cause, make:*

*Ælf. L. S. 214.90: gif ðu me unwillas gewemman nu dest (or accusative and infinitive?).*

*Ps. 118.25: do me æfter ðinum wordum wel gecwician (or accusative and infinitive?).*

*forgiefan, grant, allow:*

*Bede 486.4: ic ðe bidde, duguða Hælend, ðæt ðu me milde forgife swetlice drincan ða word ðines wisdomes = 360.4: Teque deprecor . . . ut cui propitius donasti uerba tuæ scientiæ dulciter haurire, dones etiam etc. [The infinitive may be final, but is more probably objective: see Chapter XI for examples of drincan in final use after verbs of giving.]*

*lætan, allow, cause:*

*Ps. 103. 13: Swylce ðu of foldan fodder neatum lætest alædan.*

*Whale 65: læteð hine beswican ðurh swetne stenc, leasne willan, ðæt he bið leahtrum fah wið wuldorecning.*

*Boeth. 38.12: Ðæt gecynd nyle næfre nanwuht wiðerweardes lætan gemengan = 42.53: agit enim cuiusque rei natura quod proprium est nec contrarium rerum miscetur effectibus.*

*Greg. 229.1: hie lætað gebindan = 172.16: capiuntur. — Ib. 349.12: fer ærest æfter him; læt inc geseman ær ðu ðin lac bringe = 270.3: vade prius reconciliari fratri tuo.*

*Oros. 258.18, 19: he ðæt folc costigan let . . . , ða he hie fardon ne let = 0. — Ib. 296.29: Ða ða he hiora misdæda wrecan let = 297.27: ultima illa Urbem poena consequitur.*

*Chron. 37<sup>b</sup>, 675 E<sup>b</sup>: Ða leot he rædon Ða gewrite. — Ib. 115<sup>b</sup>, 963 E<sup>a</sup>: se biscop . . . leot macen ðone mynstre. — Ib. 157<sup>b</sup>, 1023 C<sup>b</sup>: he let ferian . . . Ælfeges reliquias.*

*Wærf. 341.36: gif hi letað hi selfe bebyrgan on haligre stowe = 416 B: si in sacro loco sepeliri se faciant.*

*Bened. 110.19: hine gehadian læte = 0.*

*Bl. Hom. 13.9: ðonne ne læteð he us no costian ofer gemet.*

*Ælf. Hom. I. 150<sup>b</sup>: we sceolon . . . lætan hi ðær bletsian.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex. 12.23: he . . . ne læt slean nanne mann on eowrum husum = non sinet percussorem ingredi domos vestros et ledere. — Deut. 32.39: ic ofslea and ic læte libban = occidam et ego vivere faciam. — Judges 16.18: heo let Ða swa [fetian Philistea ealdreas] = Misitque illa ad principes Philistinorum ac mandavit.*

*Mat. 5.45: he læt rinan ofer Ða rihtwisan and ofer Ða unrihtwisan = et pluit super justos et injustos. — Ib. 27.26<sup>a</sup>: ðone Hælynd he let swingan = Jesum autem flagellatum tradidit eis.*

*Wulf. 125.13: ne læt ðu us costnian ealles to swyðe.*

*Læce.* 138.2, 3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>, 4: *læt nīman ænne greatne cwurnstan 7 hætān hine 7 lecgan hine under ðone man 7 nīman wælwyr̥t . . . 7 lecgan uppan ðone stan.*

### 3. Verbs of Sense Perception:—

**gehieran, hear:**

*El.* 661: *We . . . ðis næfre ðurh . . . mannes muð gehyrdon hæleðum cyðan butan her nu.*

*Gu.* 1095: *swa he ær ne sið . . . lare gehyrde ne swa deoplice drihtnes geryne ðurh . . . muð areccan.*

*Ps.* 131.6: *Efne we ðas eall on Eufraten sæcgean gehyrdon.*

*Bede* 330.17: *men ða ðe ðas ðing gehyrdon secgan* = 252.4: *Multique haec . . . audientes, accensi sunt in fide.*

*Boeth.* 98.26: *ðu geherdest oft reccan on . . . spellum* = 84.64: *Accepisti . . . in fabulis.* — *Ib.* 142.26: *we geherað hwilum secgan* ðæt etc. = 0.

*Greg.* 427.17: *ac ðonne hi hit heriað, ðonne lærað hi hit ælcne ðara ðe hit gehierð herian* = 350.22: *quot audientium mentes iniqua laudantes docent.*

*Solil.* 50.6: *we gehyrað reden (sic!) on ðam godspelle* ðæt *Crist cwæde* = 0. [Professor Hargrove considers *reden* a past participle, but I take it to be an infinitive.]

*Pr. Gu.* IV. 2: *swa swa ic gehyrde to me cweðan* = 41.4: *dum dicitur mihi.*

*Wærf.* 11.17: *wæs gewuna, ðæt man hwilum ymb fisc gehyrde sprecan* = 153 D: *pisces audiri consueverant, non videri.* — *Ib.* 186.1: *swa swa he ær secgan gehyrde* = 225 C: *sed probare studuit quod audivit.* — *Ib.* 338.1<sup>b</sup>: *he . . . gehyrde eft cweðan to him on andsware* = 408 A<sup>2</sup>: *responsum protinus audivit, dicens.*

*Pr. Gu.* IV. 2: *swa swa ic gehyrde secgan* = *sicut . . . audivi.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 284<sup>t</sup>: *ðonne ðu gehyrst nemnan ðone Fæder.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 286.62: *ðonne we bec rædað oððe rædan gehyrað.* — *Ib.* XXXI. 694: *ða gehyrdon hi motian wið martine lange.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 42.1: *ða gehirde Iacob secgan, ðæt etc.* = *Audiens autem Iacob, quod etc.* — *Ex.* 19.13: *ðonne ge gehiron mid ðam byman blawan* = *cum coeperit clangere buccina.*

*L.* 19.48: *eall folc wæs abyrgod ðe be him gehyrde secgan* = *populus suspensus erat, audiens illum.*

*Wulf.* 250.15: *we gehyrdon oft sæcgan be ðam . . . tocyme ures drihtnes.*

*Læce.* 153.9: *ðæs ðe we secgan gehyrdan.*

**geseon, see:**

*Beow.* 231: *ða . . . geseah weard Scildinga . . . beran . . . beorhte randas.* — *Ib.* 1024: *maððumsweord manige gesawon beforan beorn beran.*

*Greg.* 49.25: *se ðe wolde ðæt hine mon sende, he geseah ær hine clænsian* ðurh ða colu ðæs alteres = 26.28: *is, qui mitti voluit, ante per altaris calculum se purgatum vidit.*

*Oros.* 138.26: *ða hie gesawan ða deadan men swa ðiclice to eorðan beran* = 0.

*Wærf.* 273.20: *hi gesawon sumes . . . ðeowes sawle beran upp to heofonum* = 33 A<sup>2</sup>: *cujusdam servi Dei . . . ad coelum ferri animam viderunt.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 184<sup>m</sup>: *geseah . . . sawle lædan to heofenan.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 112.399: *ða geseah se arleasa aidlian his smeagunge.*

*L.* 12.55: *ðonne ge geseoð suðan blawan, ge secgað* = *quum videritis . . . austrum flantem, dicitis.*



**hieran, hear:**

*Beow.* 273: swa we soðlice *secgan hyrdon*, ðæt etc. — *Ib.* 38: ne *hyrde* ic cymlicor ceol *gegyrwan*.

*Chr.* 73: ðæs ðe æfre sundbuend *secgan hyrdon*.

*El.* 671: we ðæt *hyrdon* ðurh halige bec hæleðum *cyðan*.

*And.* 1176: ðone ic Andreas *nemnan herde*.

*Bede* 190.7: ðone hlisan . . . *herde secgan* = 152.18: *rumorem . . . percrebuisse ferebat*. — *Ib.* 430.12: be ðam ic oft *sæcgan herde* = 307.26: *de quo praedicari saepius audiui*.

*Oros.* 138.18: ic *hierde* to soðum *secgan* = 139.18: *ut sæpe dictum est*. — *Ib.* 286.7: swa we hit eft *secgan hierdon* = 287.7: *sicut a majoribus nostris comperit habemus*.

*Chron.* 64<sup>b</sup>, 851 A: wæl . . . ðe we *secgan hierdon* oð ðisne . . . dæg.

*Wærf.* 2.16: cyninga ðara ðe he sið oððe ær fore *secgan hyrde* = 0.

**ofseon, see:**

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 184<sup>b</sup>: *ofseah . . . lædan . . . sawle* to heofenum.

**seon, see:**

*Rid.* 14.1: Ic *seah turf tredan*. — *Ib.* 53.1: Ic *seah ræpingas* in ræced *fergan* under hrof sales *hearde twegen*.

#### 4. Verbs of Mental Perception:—

**gefrignan, learn by inquiry:**

*Beow.* 74: ic wide *gefrægn* weorc *gebannan* manigre mægðe geond ðisne middangeard.

*And.* 1094: Ða ic lungre *gefrægn* leode tosomne burgwaru *bannan*.

**gehogian, think, intend:**

*Beow.* 1989: Ða ðu . . . *gehogodest* sæcce *secean*.

**geteon, determine:**

*Bede* 332.9: Gode anum *geteode* ðeowigan = 253.1: *illi soli seruire decreuisset*.

**hogian, think, intend:**

*Gen.* 691, 692<sup>a, b</sup>: leode *hogode* on ðæt micle morð men *forweorpan, forlæran*, 7 *forlædan*.

*Jud.* 274: *Hogedon* Ða eorlas *awecc[an]* h[i]ra win[e]dryhten.

*Solil.* 35.19: ðæt ðæt ðær ofer byð ic *hohgie (sic!)* swa ændebyrdlice *gedelan* swa ic . . . mæg = mihi . . . *persuasit, nullo modo appetendas esse divitias, sed si provenerint, sapientissime atque cautissime administrandas*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXVI. 363: Mid ðam ðe ic *hogode helpa*n ðinum wife.

**tweogan [tweon], doubt:**

*Bede* 308.26: deað, ðurh ðone heo ne *tweodon* ferende *beon* to ðam ecan rice = 238.7: *per quam se ad uitam . . . perpetuam non dubitabant esse transituros*.

#### 5. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing:—

**blinnan, cease, stop:**

*Bede* 44.2: Romane *blunnun ricsian* on Breotene = 25.7: *regnare cessarunt*.

— *Ib.* 338.16, 17<sup>a, b</sup>: heo næfre *blon* . . . ðoncunge *don*, ge . . . heorde . . . *monian* 7 *læran* = 256.19, 20: *numquam . . . gratias agere uel . . . gregem . . . docere praetermitterbat*. — *Ib.* 474.9<sup>a, b</sup>: he ne *blinneð mærsian* 7 *weorðian* = 347.32: *celebrare . . . non desinit*.

**forieldan [-ældan], delay, defer:**

*Bede* 440.19: *ða hreowe ða he . . . forælde doan (sic!) = 313.2: facere supersedit.*

**ginnan, begin:**

*Bede* 60.23: *ða gunnon heo ðæt . . . lif . . . onhyrgan = 46.32: coeperunt . . . uitam imitari.*

## 6. Verbs of Inclination and of Will:—

**behealdan, take care:**

*Ex.* 110: *syllie æfter sunnan setlrade beheold ofer leodwerum lige scinan, byrnende beam.*

**cunnian, attempt:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 450<sup>b</sup>: *uton cunnian, gif we magon, ðone reðan wiðersacan on his geancyrre gegladian.*

**forefon, presume, undertake:**

*Laws* 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 4, § 4: *gif hwoelc synnig . . . gistiðia forefenge uel hond gisende (sic!) = si quis culpabilis . . . indurato presumpserit manum mittere.*

**ge-eaðmodi(g)an, deign, vouchsafe:**

*Bede* 98.28: *ðæt he [= God] ge-eaðmodige us togetacnian (sic!) . . . hwelc gesetenes to fylgenne sy = 81.30: ut ipse nobis insinuare . . . dignetur, quae etc.*

**gegiernian (-gyrn-), desire:**

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 497: *ic gegyrnode ða . . . rode geseon.*

**geðyrsti(g)an, presume, undertake:**

*Bede* 70.16: *se ðe geðyrstigað onwreon ða sceondlicnesse his steopmeder = 51.8: reuelare praesumserit. — Ib.* 78.33<sup>a</sup>: *ne geðyrstgað onfon = 56.10<sup>a</sup>: percipere non praesumit.*

**lystan, desire, yearn:**

*Wærf.* 45.22: *manige men hine geornlice lystan [MS. H.: lyston] geseon = 180 B<sup>1</sup>: multi hunc . . . anxie videre sitiebant.*

**onmedan, presume, undertake:**

*Rid.* 56.16: *Nu me gieddes ðisses ondsware ywe, se hine onmede wordum secgan hu se wudu hatte.*

**wunian, use, be wont:**

*Bede* 230.23: *mæn wunedon wildeorlice lifigan = 175.9: homines bestialiter uiuere consuerant.*

The following is a complete alphabetic list of verbs having only the uninflected infinitive as object:—

**abiddan, bid, command.**

**behealdan, take care.**

**blinnan, cease.**

**cunnian, attempt.**

**don, do, cause.**

**forefon, presume, undertake.**

**forgefian, grant, allow.**

**forieldan, delay, defer.**

**ge-eaðmodi(g)an, deign, vouchsafe.**

**gefrignan, learn by inquiry.**

**gegiernian, desire.**

**gehieran, hear.**

**gehogian, think, intend.**

**geseon, see.**

**geteon, determine.**

**geðyrsti(g)an, presume, undertake.**

**ginnan, begin.**

**hatan, command.**

**hieran, hear.**

**hogian, think, intend.**

**lætan, allow, cause.**

**lystan, desire, yearn.**

**ofseon, see.**

**onmedan, presume, undertake.**

**seon, see.**

**tweogan [tweon], doubt.**

**wunian, use, be wont.**

II. The inflected infinitive only is found as the object with the following groups of verbs: —

1. Very rarely with this Verb of Commanding:

*gedihtan*, *direct, order*.

2. Occasionally with the following Verbs of Permitting: —

*liefan*, *allow*.

*lofian*, *praise*, but here = *allow* (?).

3. With the following Verbs of Mental Perception: —

*æteowan*, *show*.

*anbidian*, *expect*.

*aðencan*, *intend*.

*behatan*, *promise*.

*bodian*, *preach*.

*cyðan* [and *beodan*], *make known*.

*geceosan*, *choose*.

*gehyhtan*, *hope*.

*geliefan* [-e-, -y-], *believe*.

*geswutelian* [-eot-], *show, explain*.

*geteohhian*, *think, determine*.

*geðencan*, *think, strive for* (?).

*læran*, *teach*.

*mynnan*, *direct one's course to, intend*.

*ongietan*, *understand*.

*sirwan*, *plot*.

*smeagan* [smean], *think upon, meditate*.

*tacan*, *take (to)*.

*tæcan*, *teach*.

*tellan*, *account, consider*.

*teohhian* [tīh-, tīoh-], *think, determine*.

*ðeahti(g)an*, *think upon, meditate*.

*understandan*, *understand*.

*weddian*, *contract, agree*.

*witan* [nytan], *know* [know not].

4. With the following Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing: —

*anforlætan*, *abandon*.

*elcian*, *delay*.

*forwiernan*, *prevent from, prohibit*.

*gælan*, *hinder from*.

*gefon*, *attempt, undertake*.

*ieldan*, *delay*.

*onfon*, *undertake, begin*.

*underfon*, *undertake*.

*wiernan*, *desist from*.

5. With the following Verbs of Inclination and of Will: —

*adrædan*, *fear*.

*anðracian*, *fear*.

*beoti(g)an*, *threaten*.

*fleon*, *shun*.

*forgieman*, *neglect*.

*forgiemeleasian*, *neglect*.

*forsacan*, *refuse*.

*forseon*, *despise*.

*gedyrstlæcan*, *presume, dare*.

*getilian*, *strive for, attempt*.

*giernan*, *desire, yearn for*.

*higian*, *strive for, be intent on*.

*murnan*, *care for, lament*.

*oferhogian* [and *forgieman*], *despise*.

*onscunian*, *shun, fear*.

*reccan*, *care for*.

*swerian*, *swear*.

*teon*, *accuse*.

*wandian*, *hesitate, be neglectful of*.

*warenian*, *shun*.

*wiðcweðan*, *refuse*.

*wiðsacan*, *refuse*.

6. With *habban*, *have*.

The following are typical examples: —

1. Verbs of Commanding: —

*gedihtan*, *direct, order*:

*Wulf.* 10.10: *ðæt wæs ðæt an scyp, ðe godd sylf gedihte Noe to wyrccanne* (or final?).

2. Verbs of Permitting: —

*liefan* [-e-, -y-], *allow*:

*Greg.* 451.29: *Be ðæm cwæð . . . Paulus . . . , ða ða he sumum liefde to ðicgganne* *ðætte he nolde ðæt hi ealle ðigden* = 382.10: 0.

*Mat.* 19.8: *Moyse for eower heortan heardnesse lyfde eow eower wif to*

*forlætenne* = Quoniam Moyses ad duritiam cordis vestri *permisit* vobis *dimittere* uxores vestras.

*Wulf.* 174.7: is mæst ðearf, ðæt man fram unrihte gebuge to rihte, . . . ðæt he æfre *life* ænigan men ðis fæsten to *abrecenne*.

*lofian* in the sense of *allow* (?):

*Chron.* 185<sup>b</sup>, 1054 D: he *lofode* Leofwine biscope to *halgianne* ðæt mynster æt Eofeshamme.

### 3. Verbs of Mental Perception:—

*æteowan*, *show*:

*Bl. Hom.* 169.9: hwylc *æteowde* eow to *fleonne* fram ðon toweardan Godes erre?

*anbidian*, *expect*:

*Laws* 438, Excom. VII, c. 2, § 3: geniðrode ða men, . . . ðe ðær ænig dæl habbað oððe . . . get *anbidiað* to *habbanne*.

*aðencan*, *intend*:

*Beow.* 2644: ðeah ðe hlaford us ðis ellenweorc ana *aðohte* to *gefremmanne*.

*behatan*, *promise*:

*Chron.* 226<sup>t</sup>, 1091 E: Se cyng him ongear ða manige *behet* . . . *gebygle* to *donne*. — *Ib.* 236<sup>t</sup>, 1100 E<sup>b</sup>: he . . . eallan folce *behet* ealle ða unriht to *aleggenne* . . . 7 ða betstan lage to *healdene*.

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Deut.* 10.11: lande, ðe ic *behet* hira fæderum to *syllanne* = quam juravi patribus eorum *ut traderem* eis.

*Gosp.*: *Mat.* 14.7: Ða *behet* he mid aðe hyre to *syllenne* swa hwæt swa heo hyne bæde = Unde cum juramento *pollicitus est* ei *dare* quodcumque postulasset ab eo. — *Mk.* 14.11: *behton* him feoh to *syllanne* = *promiserunt* ei *pecuniam se duros*.

*Wulf.* 172.14: is mæst ðearf, ðæt man . . . gelæste eall, ðæt man *behate* on godes est to *donne*.

*bodian*, *preach*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 344<sup>b</sup>: *Boda* nu eallum mannum *dædbote* to *donne*, and andet-nyse to sacerdum (or the infinitive may modify the noun, *dædbote*?).

*cyðan*, *make known*:

*Laws* 483, Wilhelm I, Prol.: Wilhelm cyng gret ealle ða ðe ðys gewrit to cymð . . . freondlice 7 beot 7 eac *cyð* . . . to *healdenne* (or final?).

*geceosan*, *choose*:

*Ælf. L. S.* 200.73: Ðu cwyst ðæt Ðu *gecure* ða tingregu to *ðrowigenne*.

*gehyhtan*, *hope*:

*Bede* 164.21: ðæt he æt him geleornade, ðæt he ða uplican ricu *gehyhte* heofona to *onfonne* = 138.1: regna caelorum *sperare didiciti*.

*geliefan* [-e-, -y-], *believe*:

*Bede* 330.25<sup>a, b</sup>: ic hit . . . *gelyfde* ðam . . . stære to *geðeodenne* 7 in to *gesettenne* = 252.13: *eam* . . . *inserendam credidi*.

*geswutelian* [-sweet-], *show, explain*:

*Mat.* 3.7: hwa *geswutelode* eow to *fleonne* fram ðam toweardan yrræ? = quis *demonstravit* vobis *fugere* a ventura ira?

*geteohhian* [-tioh-], *think, determine*:

*Boeth.* 117.21 God *hæfð getiohhod* to *sellanne* witu 7 ermða ðam yflum monnum = 0. — *Ib.* 139.29<sup>a</sup>: of ðam wege ðe wit *getiohhod* *habbað* on to *farennne* = 121.10: a *propositi* nostri *tramite* . . . *auersa sunt*.

*Greg.* 251.24: gif he ðam gehiersuman mannum næfde geteohchad his eðel to sellanne = 190.22: Nisi enim correctis hæreditatem dare disposeret. — *Ib.* 419.13: Ðæt ilce ðæt he getiohchod hæfde to biddanne he cwæð ðæt him wære ær forgiefen = 340.23: Qui dum se adhuc petere promittit, hoc quod petere se promittebat, obtinuit. — *Ib.* 445.7: ðonne ðonne hie forlætað . . . Ða god ðe hi getiohchod æfdon (*sic!*) to ðonne (*sic!* for to donne), ðæt etc. = 372.19: quia dum proposita non perficiunt, etiam quæ fuerant cæpta convellunt.

*Solil.* 37.5: me lyst ðara ðe ic getiohhod habbe to ætanne = 0.

*Pr. Ps.* 10.3: hi wilniað . . . ðæt hi toweorpen ðæt God geteohhad hæfð to wyrccanne = 10.4: Quoniam quæ perfecisti, destruxerunt.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 198<sup>b</sup>: Ic geteohode min lif on mægðhade to geendigenne.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 677: ðone ðe he ær geteohhode mid teonan to forseonne. geðencan, think, strive for:

*Ælf. Hept.:* Job, XII (= 6.27): ge logiað eowere spræce and geðencað to awendenne eowerne freond = eloquia concinnatis, et subvertere nitimini amicum vestrum.

**læran**,<sup>1</sup> teach:

*Bede* 258.8: he rehte endebyrdnesse lifes æteawde, 7 rihte Eastran to weorðianne lærde = 204.20: rectum uiuendi ordinem, ritum celebrandi paschæ canonicum . . . disseminabat. — *Ib.* 276.6<sup>b</sup>: ongon læran to healdenne . . . Ða ðing = 214.27<sup>b</sup>: coepit obseruanda docere.

*Boeth.* 79.17: ne ðe nan neodðearf ne lærde to wyrccanne ðæt ðæt ðu worhtest = 71.3: 0.

*Læce.* 35.10: Sume an word wið nædran bite lærað to cweðenne, ðæt is faul, ne mæg him derian.

**mynnian**, direct one's course to, intend:

*And.* 295: to ðam lande, ðær ðe lust myneð to gesecenne.

*Gu.* 1062: ðær min hyht myneð to gesecanne.

**ongietan**, understand:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 801: Iohannes soðlice ongeat sume ða mynsterwisan to gerihtanne swa swa seo halige ær foresæde.

**sirwan**, plot:

*Apol.* 31.34: he . . . me ða sirwde to ofsleanne = 48<sup>b</sup> 2: me machinabatur occidere (or final?).

**smeagan** [smean], think upon, meditate:

*Greg.* 55.22: smeagað ðeah & ðeahtigað on hiera modes rinde monig god weorc to wyrccanne = 32.10: operaturos tamen se magna pertractant.

*Pr. Ps.* 18.12: ne eac ðinne willan ne mæg smeagan to wyrccanne = 0.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 146: ðær he sylf smeade ðæt hus to arærenne.

**tacan**, take to:

*Chron.* 263<sup>m</sup>, 1135 E: Daid King of Scotland toc to uuerrien him.

**tæcan**,<sup>2</sup> teach:

*Greg.* 165.10: Ða isernan hierstepannan he tæhte for iserne weall to settanne betuh ðæm witgan & ðære byrig = 120.12: Sartago enim ferrea murus ferreus inter prophetam et civitatem ponitur.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 216<sup>b</sup>: Ðus tæhte Crist on ðære Niwan Gecyðnyssse eallum cristenum mannum to donne.

**tellan**, account, consider:

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 375.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 370.

*Ælf. Hom. I. 158<sup>b</sup>*: For nahte he *tealde ænig ðing to biddenne* buton gesihðe. *teohhian* [tīh-, tīoh-], *think, determine*:

*Boeth. 51.6*: hwider ic ðe nu *tiohige to lædenne* = 51.15<sup>b</sup>: si quonam te ducere aggrediamur agnosceres. — *Ib. 116.12*: for ðære wræce *tihodon hine to forlætenne* = 0. — *Ib. 143.19*: ne *tiohhode to wyrccanne* = 0.

*Greg. 305.4*: forðæm he *tiohhode him ma to fullemanne* = 232.12: solatium petivit ut daret. — *Ib. 305.5*: he sohte hine him to latðeowe on ðæm wege, forðæm he *teohchode hine to lædanne* on lifes weg = 232.13: ducem requirebat in via, ut dux ei fieri potuisset ad vitam. — *Ib. 445.8*: forðæm, gif ðæt ne wexð ðæt he *tiohhiað to donne* = 372.20: Si enim quod videtur gerendum, . . . non crescit.

*Solil. 36.12*: Ic gehyre nu ðæt ðu ne *tiohhast nan wif to hæbbenne* = 0.

*Pr. Ps. 39.16*: ða ðe ehtað mine sawle and hy *teohhiað me to afyrrene* = 39.15: qui quærunt animam meam, ut auferant eam.

*ðeahti(g)an*,<sup>1</sup> *think upon, meditate*: see *Greg. 55.22* under *smeagan*.  
*understandan, understand*:

*Apol. 19.19*: ðone deað hi oferhogodon and ðone rædels *understodon to arædenne* = 0.

*weddian, contract, agree*:

*L. 22.5*: him *weddedon feoh to sylленne* = *pacti sunt pecuniam illi dare*.

*witan* [nytan], *know* [know not]:

*Gen. 243*: *nyston sorga wiht to begroornianne*.

*Ju. 557*: *wiste* he ði gearwor, manes melda, magum *to secgan* (*sic!*), *susles ðegnum*, hu etc.

*Oros. 220.9*: Hwæðer Romane hit *witen* nu ænegum men *to secganne*, hwæt etc. = 0.

*Chron. 224<sup>m</sup>, 1087 E<sup>d</sup>*: ða Englisce men . . . adrengton ma ðonne ænig man *wiste to tellanne*.

*Laws 166, V Æthelstan, Prol., 3*: we *nytan* nanum oðrum ðingum *to getruwianne* (or with noun?). — *Ib.*: 180, VI Æthelstan, c. 8, § 8: Gyf he *nyte* spor *to tæcenne* (or with noun?).

*Ælf. Hom. II. 506<sup>b</sup>*: Ða *nyste* heora nan his naman *to secgenne*.

#### 4. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing: —

*anforlætan, abandon*:

*Wærf. 337.2*: heo byð deadlic, ðonne heo *anforlæt syngiende* (*sic!* but for *syngienne?*), ðæt heo eadiglice 7 rihtlice lifige = 405 B: Anima itaque et mortalis esse intelligitur, et immortalis. Mortalis quippe, quia beate vivere amittit.

*elcian, delay*:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 282<sup>t</sup>*: Ne *elca* ðu *to gecyrrenne* to Gode. [Cf. *Ælf. Hom. II. 26<sup>t</sup>*: Ðæt he leng ne *elcode* to his geleafan.]

*forwiernan, prevent from, prohibit*:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 604<sup>m</sup> 1*: Swa swa dæges leoht *forwyrnð* gehwile to *gefremmenne* ðæt ðæt seo niht geðafað.

*Ælf. L. S. 380.249*: god . . . ne eac us *forwyrnð* yfel *to wyrccenne*.

*gælan, hinder from*:

*Greg. 445.30*: ðonne ne *gælð* us nan ðing *te* (*sic!*) *fullfremmanne* ða godan weorc = 374.14: erga cœptum studium nullo torpore languerunt.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., p. 475.

**gefon**, *attempt, undertake*:

*Ælf. L. S. XXV. 148*: hi *gefengon to dreccenne* ðone fiftan broðor.

**ieldan** [*eldan*], *delay*:

*Bede 132.16*: Mid ðy . . . se cyning *elde* ða gyt *to gelyfanne* = 110.24: Cum . . . rex *credere differet*. — *Ib. 430.33<sup>a, b</sup>*: ða ðe *eldende wæran to andetenne* 7 *to betenne* heora synna = 308.13<sup>a, b</sup>: qui *differentes confiteri et emendare* scelera.

*Wærf. 119.2*: ða wæs he lange *eldende* ðone *to nimanne* = B. 148 C<sup>1</sup>: Quem diu *demoratus* etc.

*Bl. Hom. 7.33*: to hwon *yldestu middangeard to onlyhtenne?*

**onfon**, *undertake*:

*Bede 334.4, 5*: ðæt heo *onfeng* mynster *to timbrenne* 7 *to endebyrdienne* = 254.3: contigit eam *suscipere etiam construendum siue ordinandum* monasterium.

*Wærf. 75.33*: hwæt ðæt sy ðæt se . . . feond *onfeng* swylcere bylde *to acwyllane* in ðæs huse = 204 A: Quidnam hoc esse dicimus, ut *occidendi ausum* in ejus hospitio antiquus hostis *acciperet*.

*Bened. 14.17*: Wite eac se abbod, ðæt se ðe *onfehð* saula *to ræccænne* = 26.1: qui *suscipit animas regendas* (or final?).

**underfon**, *undertake*:

*Greg. 77.4*: ða ðe oðerra monna saula *underfoð* *to lædanne* on ða treowa hira agenra gearnunga *to ðam innemestan halignessum* = 50.6: qui . . . animas ad æterna sacraria *perducendas* in suæ conversationis fide *suscipiunt* (or final?). — *Ib. 161.12*: ðonne hie ðara eorðlicra monna heortan *underfoð* *to læronne* = 116.25: quando terrenum auditorum cor, ut *doceant, apprehendunt* (or final?). — *Ib. 293.3<sup>a, b</sup>*: he *underfeng* ða halgan gesomnunga *to plantianne & to ymbhweorfanne*, sua se ceorl deð his ortgeard = 220.26: 0.

*Wærf. 113.22*: ðas stowe se Gota *underfeng* *to clænsienne* = B. 144 C: Locum autem ipse quem *mundandum* Gothus *susceperat* (or final?). — *Ib. 325.10*: se me hæfde *underfongen* *to forswelgenne* = 392 B<sup>4</sup>: Gratias Deo, ecce draco qui me *ad devorandum acceperat* fugit (or final?).

**wiernan**, *desist from*:

*Greg. 381.6*: Swa eac se ðe ne *wirnd* ðæs wines his lare ða mod mid *to oferdrencan[n]e* ðe hine gehieran willað, he bið etc. = 296.9: et dum vino eloquii auditorum mentem *debriare non desinit*, etc.

## 5. Verbs of Inclination and of Will: —

**adrædan**, *fear*:

*Mk. 9.32*: hi *adredon* hine *ahsiende* (sic! but for *ahsienne*?) = 9.31: timebant interrogare eum.

**anðracian**, *fear*:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 554<sup>1</sup>*: Hi *anðraciað* *to gefarenne* lifes wegas.

**beoti(g)an**, *threaten*:

*Chad. 193*: swa swa he *beotige* us *to slenne* 7 ðonne hweðere ðonne gyt ne slæð = quoties . . . quasi *ad ferendum minitans* exerit nec adhuc tamen percutit (or final?).

**fleon**, *shun*:

*Greg. 33.12*: Forðæm se wealhstod [self] Godes & monna, ðæt is Crist, *fleaħ* eorðrice *to underfonne* = 14.4: regnum *percipere* vitavit in terris.

**forgieman** [-y-], *neglect*:

*Laws* 453, Gerefa, Inscr., c. 3, § 1<sup>a</sup> d: oferhogie he oððe *forgyme* ða ðing to *beganne* 7 to *bewitanne*.

**forgiemeleasian** [-y-], *neglect*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 102<sup>b</sup>: Gif ðu *forgymeleasast* to *dælenne* ælmessan.

**forseon**, *despise*:

*Wærf.* 180.17: he *forseah* to *donne* ðæt heo hine bæd = 217 B<sup>1</sup>: non solum *facere*, sed etiam *audire despiceret*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 374<sup>t</sup>: *forsihð* to *cumenne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 290.96: Sume fæston eac swa ðæt hi *forsawon* to *etanne*.

*Wulf.* 296.28: forðan hig *forsawon* ær to *healdenne* ðone halgan dæg mid rihte.

**gedyrstlæcan**, *presume, dare*:

*Bened.* 15.13: ðæt nan ne *gedyrstlæce* . . . his agenne ræd to *bewerigenne* = 28.3: ut non *præsumant* . . . *defendere* etc. — *Ib.* 106.4: ne *gedyrstlæce* he na ða ðenunga to *beginnenne* = 172. 12: nullatenus aliqua *præsumat*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 392<sup>t</sup>: He *gedyrstlæhte* to *ganne* up on ðære sæ ðurh Crist.

**getilian**, *strive for, attempt*:

*Solil.* 35.17: ne æac maran *getilige* to *haldenne* ðonne ic gemetlice bi beon mage = mihi . . . *persuasit, nullo modo appetendas esse divitias*.

**giernan** [-y-], *desire, yearn for*:

*Bede* 480.11: monige . . . hi seolfe 7 hira bearn ma *gyrnað* in mynster ond on Godes ðeowdomhad to *sellenne* ðonne etc. = 351.21: plures . . . se suosque *liberos* . . . *satagunt* magis . . . monasterialibus *adscribere* uotis quam bellicis *exercere studiis*.

*Bl. Hom.* 53.25: swa ða halgan dydon ðe on ðyssum life naht ne sohton ne ne *gyrndon* to *hæbbenne*.

*Pr. Gu.* I. 7: ða *gyrnde* he him his gemæccan to *nymanne* = *adoptata* sibi *coætanea virgine* inter . . . *puellarum agmina* etc. — *Ib.* II. 93: ða *girnde* he his sealmas to *leornianne* = Dum enim *litteris edoctus psalmorum canticum discere maluisset*.

**higian**, *strive for, be intent on*:

*Greg.* 105.14: ðætte sua hwelc sua inweard *higige* to *gangerne* on ða duru ðæs ecean lifes = 72.18: ut quisquis *intrare* æternitatis *januam nititur*.

*Wærf.* 178.3<sup>a</sup> b: gif we *higiað* to oðra æðelra wera wundrum ða to *gereccanne* 7 to *asecganne* = B. 204 C<sup>2</sup>: ut si *ad* aliorum *miracula enarranda tendimus*.

**oferhogian** [and **forgieman**], *despise*:

*Laws* 453, Gerefa, Inscr., c. 3, § 1<sup>a</sup> b: quoted under *forgieman* above.

**onscunian**, *shun, fear*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 346<sup>t</sup> 3: Hwi *onscunast* ðu to *underfonne* ðisne lichaman?

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Ex.* 8.26: ða ðing, ðe Egiptisce *onscuniað* to *offrianne* = *abominations enim Ægyptiorum immolabimus domino deo nostro?*

**reccan**, *care for*:

*Laws* 40, Ælfred, Intr., c. 40: Leases monnes word ne *rec* ðu no ðæs to *gehieranne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 440.122: gif ge rohton hit to *gehyrenne*.

**swerian**, *swear*:

*Chron.* 268<sup>m</sup>, 1140 E<sup>t</sup> s: Ðis . . . *suoren* to *halden* (*sic!*) ðe King 7 te eorl; . . . alle . . . *suoren* ðe pais to *halden* (*sic!*).



**teon, accuse:**

*Laws* 102, Ine B, c. 30: Gif man cyrliscne mannan *flymanfeormienne teo*, be his agenon were geladige [he] hine. [MS. E: . . . *flymanfeorme teo*; MS. H.: . . . *flyman feormie*, 7 hine mon *teo*.]

**wandian, hesitate, be neglectful of:**

*Chron.* 178<sup>t</sup>, 1052 E<sup>b</sup>: he ne *wandode* na him metes *to tylienne*, eode up.

*Laws* 138, I Eadweard, Prol.: Ne *wandiað* for nanum ðingum folcriht *to geregeanne* [MS. B: *to gerecenne*].

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 554<sup>t2</sup>: swa-ðeah ne *wandiað to licgenne* on stuntnysse heora asolcennysse.

*Ælf. L. S. XXXI.* 699: ða *wandode* he lange him ðæt *to secgenne*. — *Ib.* XXXI. 1036: He eac ne *wandode* on ðam . . . felda ða hæðenan *to cristnigenne*.

*Wulf.* 191.6: bydelas . . . , ðe . . . *wandiað godes riht to spreccanne*.

**warenian, shun:**

*Bede* 474.20: ðone hie . . . *warenedon to anfonne* = 348.9: quem . . . *uitabant*.

**wiðcweðan, refuse:**

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 516<sup>b</sup>: Ne *wiðcweðe* ic, Drihten, *to deorfenne* gyt.

**wiðsacan, refuse:**

*Greg.* 383.19: hu, ne *wiðsacð* se ðonne eallunga Godes ðegn *to bionne*, se ðe *wiðsacð ðæt* etc.? = 298.17: profecto *esse se Dei denegat*, qui etc.?

## 6. Habban,<sup>1</sup> have.

Most of the examples are doubtful. In some examples it is difficult to tell whether the infinitive depends on *habban* or on a neighboring noun or adverb. In some examples the infinitive seems to denote futurity; in others, necessity. The examples in full are: —

*Boeth.* 52.27: Nære hit no ðæt behste god gif him ænig butan wære, forðæm hit ðonne *hæfde to wilnianne* sumes godes ðe hit self nærde = 52.10: quoniam relinqueretur extrinsecus, quod *posset optari* (?).

*Laws* 106, Ine, c. 42: Gif ceorlas gærstun *hæbben* gemænne oððe oðer gedaland *to tynanne* (or final?).

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 78<sup>m</sup>: gecyrrað nu huru-ðinga on ylde *to lifes wege*, nu ge *habbað* hwonlice *to swincenne*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 16.23: gearwiað *to morgen*, ðæt ge *to gearwienne* *hæbbon* = quodcumque operandum est, facite, et quæ *coquenda sunt*, coquite. — *Judges* 3.20<sup>a</sup>: ic *hæbbe ðe to secganne* ures godes ærende = Verbum dei *habeo ad te*.

*Mat.* 20.22: Mage gyt drincan ðone calic ðe ic *to drincenne* *hæbbe?* = Potestis bibere calicem quem ego *bibiturus sum?*

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II:* 15.149: Geswiga ðu earminge, ne *hæfst* ðu nan ðinge on me *to donne* (or with noun?).

The following is a complete alphabetic list of the verbs having only the inflected infinitive as object: —

**adrædan, fear.**

**æteowan, show.**

**anbidian, expect.**

**anforlætan, abandon.**

**anðracian, fear.**

**aðencan, intend.**

**behatan, promise.**

**beoti(g)an, threaten.**

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Buchtenkirch, *l. c.*, p. 32; Wülfing, *l. c.*, II, p. 209; Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 109.

bodian, *preach*.  
 cyðan (and beodan), *make known*.  
 elcian, *delay*.  
 fleon, *shun*.  
 forgieman, *neglect*.  
 forgiemeleasian, *neglect*.  
 forsacan, *refuse*.  
 forseon, *despise*.  
 forwiernan, *prevent from, prohibit*.  
 gælan, *hinder from*.  
 geceosan, *choose*.  
 gedihtan, *direct, order*.  
 gedyrstlæcan, *presume, dare*.  
 gefon, *attempt, undertake*.  
 gehyhtan, *hope*.  
 geliefan, *believe, hope*.  
 geswutelian [-eot-], *show, explain*.  
 geteohhian, *think, determine*.  
 getilian, *strive for, attempt*.  
 geðencan, *think, strive for (?)*.  
 giernan, *desire, yearn for*.  
 habban, *have*.  
 higian, *strive for, be intent on*.  
 ieldan, *delay*.  
 læran, *teach*.  
 liefan, *allow*.

lofian, *praise, allow (?)*.  
 murnan, *care for, lament*.  
 mynnan, *direct one's course to, intend*.  
 oferhogian [and forgieman], *despise*.  
 onfon, *undertake, begin*.  
 ongietan, *understand*.  
 onscunian, *shun, fear*.  
 reccan, *care for*.  
 sirwan, *plot*.  
 smeagan [smean], *think upon, meditate*.  
 swerian, *swear*.  
 tacan, *take (to)*.  
 tæcan, *teach*.  
 tellan, *account, consider*.  
 teon, *accuse*.  
 tih(h)ian, *think, determine*.  
 ðeahti(g)an, *think upon, meditate*.  
 underfon, *undertake*.  
 understandan, *understand*.  
 wandian, *hesitate, be neglectful of*.  
 warenian, *shun*.  
 weddian, *contract, agree*.  
 wiernan, *desist from*.  
 witan [nytan], *know (know not)*.  
 wiðcweðan, *refuse*.  
 wiðsacan, *refuse*.

III. The uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive are each found as the object with the following groups of verbs: —

1. With the following Verbs of Commanding and the like: —

bebeodan, <i>command</i> .	biddan, <i>request</i> .
beodan, <i>command</i> .	forbeodan, <i>forbid</i> .
bewerian, <i>prohibit, forbid</i> .	gehatan, <i>order</i> .

2. With the following Verbs of Permitting: —

aliefan, <i>allow</i> .	sellan, <i>grant, allow</i> .
geðafian, <i>allow</i> .	

3. With the following Verbs of Mental Perception: —

findan, <i>find</i> .	leornian, <i>learn</i> .
geleornian, <i>learn</i> .	myntan, <i>think, intend</i> .
gemyntan, <i>intend, determine</i> .	ðencan, <i>think, attempt</i> .
gestihhian, <i>determine, decide</i> .	wenan, <i>hope, expect</i> .

4. With the following Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing: —

ablinnan, <i>cease, desist from</i> .	forlætan, <i>abandon, omit</i> .
aginnan, <i>begin</i> .	geswican, <i>stop, desist from</i> .
beginnan, <i>begin</i> .	onginnan, <i>begin</i> .
fon, <i>undertake, begin</i> .	

5. With the following Verbs of Inclination and of Will: —

forhogian, <i>despise, neglect</i> .	gewunian, <i>use, be wont</i> .
forhyccan, <i>despise, neglect</i> .	gieman, <i>care</i> .
ge-earnian, <i>deserve, earn</i> .	ondrædan, <i>fear</i> .
gemed(e)mian, <i>deign, vouchsafe</i> .	secan, <i>seek</i> .
geðristlæcan [-y-], <i>presume</i> .	tilian [teolian], <i>attempt, strive for</i> .
gewil(l)nian, <i>desire</i> .	wil(l)nian, <i>desire</i> .

Typical examples are the following: —

**1. Verbs of Commanding: —**

**bebeodan** [bi-], *command*:

(1) Uninflected:

*El.* 1018: Ða seo cwen *bebead* cræftum getyde sundor asecean.

*Ju.* 232: *gelædan bibead* to carcerne. — *Ib.* 295: ðæt he Iohannes *bibead* heafde biheawan.

*Bede* 36.31<sup>a, b</sup>: het ða 7 *bebead* hraðe swingan 7 tintregian ðone Godes andettere = 19.31: *caedi* . . . Dei *confessorem* a tortoribus *praecepit*. — *Ib.* 388.20: Ða *bebead* se biscop ðeosne to him *lædan* = 283.27: *Hunc* . . . *adduci praecepit* episcopus.

*Laws* 46, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49, § 7: he *bebead* ðone hlaford *lufian* swa hine.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 380<sup>b 1, 2</sup>: Nero *bebead* Petrum and Paulum on bendum *gehealdan*, and ða sticca Simones hreawes mid wearde *besettan*.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 412.1: ða ðing, ðe ic *bebead* him to *secganne* = 297.30: quae tibi *dicenda praecepi* (or final?).

*Oros.* 292.27: ðær Maximus mid firde bad æt Aquilegia ðære byrig, 7 his ealdormen Andregatia *hæfde beboden* ða clusan to *healdanne* = 293.28: Aquileiae tunc Maximus victoriae suae spectator insederat. Andragathius comes ejus summam belli *administrabat* (or final?).

*Chron.* 206<sup>t</sup>, 1070 A<sup>b</sup>: se arcebisceop . . . *bebead* ðam biscopan . . . ða serfise to *donde* (*sic!* for to *donne*).

*Laws* 42, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49<sup>a</sup>: Ðis sindan ða domas ðe se . . . God self sprecende wæs to Moyse 7 him *bebead* to *healdanne*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 316<sup>b</sup>: gif ge wyrccende beoð ða ðineg ðe ic *bebeode* eow to *gehealdenne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 22.203: foresceawige hwæt heo gehwylcum lime *bebeode* to *donne*.

*Wulf.* 294.28: ða godan weorc, ðe god us *beboden hæfð* to *adreoganne* on ðam drihtenlican dæge. — *Ib.* 296.5: wite ge . . . ðæt ic æfre fram frymðe *bebead* ðone drihtenlican dæg to *healdenne*.

**beodan**, *command*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 262<sup>t</sup>: bædon ðæt he *bude* ða byrgene *besettan* mid wacelum weardum.

(2) Inflected:

*Greg.* 47.13: ðonne he for nanre anwielnesse ne wiðcuið ðam nyttan weorcum ðe him mon *beodeð* to *underfonne* = 24.24: cum ad respuendum hoc, quod utiliter *subire praecepitur*, pertinax non est.

*Pr. Ps.* 39.7: Ne *bud* (*sic!*) ðu me na ælnessan to *syllan* (*sic!*), ne for minum synnum = holocaustum et pro peccato non *postulasti*.

*Laws* 42, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49, § 3<sup>a</sup>: we geascodon ðæt ure geferan sume . . . to eow comon 7 eow hefigran [wisan *budon*] to *healdanne* ðonne we him budon.

*Wulf.* 231.1: behealdað . . . ða fæstendagas, ðe men eow *beodað* to *healdenne*.

**beweri(g)an** [bi-], *prohibit, forbid*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 82.24: we him ne sculon *biwerigan* ðam halgan geryne onfon = 58.27<sup>b</sup>: a nobis *prohiberi* non debet *accipere*.

## (2) Inflected:

*Bede* 80.7: mid ðy seo æ monig ðing bewereð to etanne swa swa unclæne  
 = 56.32: Nam cum multa lex uelut immunda manducare prohibeat.

**biddan**, request, demand:

## (1) Uninflected:

*Versuchung Christi* 9: brohte him to bearme brade stanas, bæd him for  
 hungre hlafas wyrcan.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 182<sup>m</sup>: se ðe bitt æræran his sunu.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 15.152<sup>c</sup>: bæd wyrcan scearpa piles = 0. — *Ib.*  
 15.288<sup>a, b</sup>: bæd ðære fæmne (*sic!*) fet and handan (*sic!*) tosomne gebindon (*sic!*)  
 and innen ðone weallende cetel gesetton (*sic!*) = 217.320<sup>a, b</sup>: Tunc iubet prae-  
 fectus afferi vas magnum plenum aqua et ligari manus et pedes beatae Marga-  
 retae et ibi eam mortificari.

*Apol.* 23.34<sup>a</sup>: Apollonius hi bæd ealle gretan and on scip astah = 42<sup>b</sup>: vale  
 dicens omnibus conscendit ratem.

## (2) Inflected:

*Læce* 58.27: æfter ðam spiwað, sona him to gifanne biddað.

**forbeodan**,<sup>1</sup> forbid:

## (1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 70.8: seo . . . æ bewereð 7 forbeodeð ða scondlicnesse onwreon  
 mægsibba = 50.34: lex prohibet cognitionis turpitudinem reuelare.

## (2) Inflected:

*Greg.* 369.3: Godes æ, ðe us forbiet diofulum to offrianne = 286.5: legem  
 Dei, quæ idcirco data est ut sacrificia satanæ prohibeat.

*Laws* 214, Krönungseid, Prol.: ða hine man halgode to cinge, 7 forbead him  
 ælc wedd to syllanne.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 122<sup>b</sup>: Moyses æ forbead to hrepenne ænigne hreoflan. — *Ib.*  
 II. 534<sup>b</sup>: se Drihten ðe forbead ðam bydelum to berenne pusan oððe codd.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 89: moyses forbead swyn to etenne.

*Ælf. Hept.*: De V. T. 4.43: he forbead se ðeah blod to ðicgenne.

*Ælf. Gr.* 242.7: de intus wiðinnan, de foris wiðutan forbead Donatus to  
 cweðenne.

*Wulf.* 200.3<sup>a, b</sup>: he forbyt ælcum men aðor to bycganne oððe to syllanne.

**gehatan**, order, promise:

## (1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 144.27, 28: he gehet . . . stapolas asetton (*sic!*) 7 . . . ceacas ona-  
 hon = 118.11: erectis stipitibus, aereos caucos suspendi iuberet.

## (2) Inflected:

*Bede* 316.22: se cyning him geheht ge lond ge micel feoh to gesyllenne  
 = 243.16: promiserit se ei terras ac pecunias multas esse donaturum.

*Bl. Hom.* 181.26: se ðe englas gehet wið me to sendenne.

## 2. Verbs of Permitting:—

**aliefan**, allow:

## (1) Uninflected:

*Gosp.: Mat.* 8.21<sup>b</sup>: Drihten, alyfe me ærest to farenne and bebyrigean  
 minne fæder = Domine, per mitte me primum ire, et sepelire patrem meum (or

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., pp. 373, 475.

predicative?). — *L.* 9.59: *alyf* me æryst *bebyrigean* minne fæder = *permittere* mihi primum ire, et *sepelire* patrem meum (or predicative?).

(2) Inflected:

*Mat.* 8.21<sup>a</sup>: quoted above.

*Ælf. L. S.* 102.227: *ðam alyfde* se casere heora cristendom *to healdenne*.

**geðafian**, allow, consent:

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 606: him ne *geðafode* fulfremodlice on ða eorðan *astreccan*.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 276.31: hwæðer heo *geðafedon* ða domas *to healdenne* = 215.24: si consentirent ea . . . *custodire*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 4<sup>b</sup>: Se . . . God *geðafað* ðam arleasan Antecriste *to wyrcente* tacna.

**sellan**, grant, allow:

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow.* 3056: nefne god sylfa . . . *sealde*, ðam ðe he wolde (he is manna gehlyd) hord *openian*.

(2) Inflected:

*Schöpfung.* 30: ðonne him frea *sylle* *to ongieltanne* godes agen bibod.

### 3. Verbs of Mental Perception: —

**findan**, find, strive:

(1) Uninflected:

*El.* 1255: swa ic on bocum fand wyrda gangum, on gewritum *cyðan* be ðam sigebeacne.

(2) Inflected:

*Dan.* 544: bæd hine areccan, hwæt seo run bude, hofe haligu word 7 in hige *funde* *to gesecganne* soðum wordum, hwæt etc.

**geleornian**, learn:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 404.22: he *geleornode* . . . ingong *geopenian* ðæs heofonlican lifes = 292.17: *didicerat* . . . *patere* . . . *introitum*.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 210.31: eall ða ðe he *geleornade* *to donne* = 164.22: quae *agenda* *didicerat*.

**gemyntan**, intend, determine:

(1) Uninflected:

*Ex.* 199: hæfdon hie *gemynted* *to* ðam mægenheapum *to* ðam ærdæge Isra-hela cynn billum *abreotan* on hyra broðorgyld.

*Chron.* 22<sup>b</sup>, 616 F<sup>a, b</sup>: he hæfde *gemynt* eal ðis land *forlætan* 7 ouer sæ *faran*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 154.127<sup>b</sup>: se hæfde *gemynt* mynster *to* arærenne and mid munecum *gesettan*. — *Ib.* 502.255: ða halgan ðe he ealre worulde . . . *onwreon* *gemynte*.

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 414<sup>t</sup>: ðaða God *gemynte* his yfelnysses *to geendigenne*. — *Ib.* II. 578<sup>t, 2</sup>: ðæt tempel ðe his fæder *gemynte* *to arærenne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 154.127<sup>a</sup>: quoted under "Uninflected" above. — *Ib.* 212.51: swa hwæt swa ðu *gemyntest* on forðsiðe *to donne*. — *Ib.* XXV. 769: Heliodorus ða *gemynte* ða maðmas *to genimenne*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Num. 24.11: ic hæfde gemynt ðe to arwurðienne = decreveram . . . honorare te.*

*Wulf. 277.26: Daid cyning hit hæfde gemynt ær to donne.*

**gestihhian, determine, decide:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede 218.9: gestihhade his life geendian = 168.2: uitam finire disposuit.*

(2) Inflected:

*Solil. 38.1: be ðam ðingum ðe ðu me ær sedest ðat ðu gestyohhod hæafde to forletanne = 0.*

**leornian, learn:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 416<sup>b</sup>: ðæt men leornion agyldan god for yfele.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 246.7: Ða Ða he in wreotum leornade to donne = 194.29: quae in scripturis agenda didicerat.*

*Greg. 441.17: Ðonne hi leorniað mid fulre estfulnessse Ða soðan god to secanne = 368.15: Tunc igitur pleno voto discunt vera bona discere. — Ib. 441.28: Leornað ðonne to lufianne ðæt he ær forhogde = 368.25: discat diligere quæ contemnebat.*

*Ælf. L. S. 132.242: Ða ðe habbað geleafan and leornodon to campienne. — Ib. 344.127<sup>b</sup>: Ne het he us na leornian heofonas to wyrcente.*

**myntan, think, intend:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 713: Mynte se manscaða manna cynnes sumne besyrwan in sele Ðam hean.*

*Chr. 1058: Ær sceal geðencan gæstes ðearfe, se ðe Gode mynteð bringan beorhtne wlite.*

*Met. 26.72: mynton forlætan leofne hlaforð.*

*Bede 392.20: mynte heo for hiere to abbuddissan gesettan = 286.1: abbatis-sam eam pro se facere disposuerat.*

*Wærf. 12.11: oð ðæt hit [= clif] com ðær hit mynte feallan ofer ðæt mynster = 15 A<sup>2</sup>: 0. — Ib. 123.1: stan . . . , ðone hi mynton hebban upp = B. 154 A: lapis . . . , quem in ædificium levare decreverant. — Ib. 254.35: mynte slea ðone Godes wer = 312 A<sup>1</sup>: 0.*

*Bl. Hom. 223.7: mynte hine slea; — so: 223.11. — Ib. 223.16: he hine stingan mynte.*

(2) Inflected:

*Chron. 265<sup>m</sup>, 1137 E<sup>f</sup>: alse he mint to don (sic!) of ðe horderwycan.*

**ðencan,<sup>1</sup> think, attempt:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 800, 801: on healfa gehwone heawan ðohton, sawle secan.*

*Gen. 2437: Wit be ðisse stræte stille ðencað sæles bidan. — Ib. 2891: hwær is ðæt tiber, ðæt ðu torht gode to Ðam brynegielde bringan ðencest?*

*Ex. 51: Ðæs ðe hie wideferð wyrnan ðohton Moyses magum.*

*Ju. 637: ðær hi stearcferðe ðurh cumbolhete cwellan ðohtun.*

*El. 296: ðe eow . . . lysan ðohte.*

*Gu. 260: gif ðu ure bidan ðencest.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., p. 423.

*And.* 150, 151, 152: *ðæt hie banhringas abrecan ðohton*, . . . *tolysan lic and sawle, and ðonne todælan* etc.

*Met.* 1.12: *sceotend ðohton Italia ealle gegongan.*

*Ps.* 61.4: *Swa ge mine are ealle ðohton wraðe toweorpan* = *honorem meum cogitauerunt repellere.*

*Jud.* 59: *ðohte ða* . . . *idese mid widle and mid womme besmitan.*

*Seaf.* 52: *ðam ðe swa ðenceð on flodwegas feor gewitan.*

*Bede* 36.8: *gif ðu gewitan ðencest fram ðam bigange ure æfæstnysse* = 19.11: *si . . . discedere temptas.* — *Ib.* 456.2: *ðæt he ðohte hine him to yrfewearde gedon* = 324.32: *ut heredem sibi illum facere cogitasset.*

*Boeth.* 93.32: *ðencð ætgædere bion* = 80.100: *id unum esse desiderat.*

*Greg.* 55.12: *ðonne ðæt mod ðenceð gegripan him to upahefenesse ða eaðmodnesse* = 32.2: *arripere . . . cogitat.*

*Oros.* 54.21: *for ðon he him cweman ðohte* = 55.18: *adfectans tyranni amicitiam.* — *Ib.* 150.12: *ða ðæt ða oðre geascedon ðæt he hie ealle beswican ðohte* = 151.7: *cum decipi se ab Antigono sigillatim viderent.* — *Ib.* 200.17: *to ðon ðæt hie hit acwencan ðohton* = 201.9: *ad extinguendum ignem concurrerunt.*

*Bened.* 23.3: *caffice cuman ðencað* = 46.4: *volumus velociter pervenire.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1059: *ðohte* . . . *ætherstan ðam deaðe.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 48.17<sup>b</sup>: *ðohte hi to ahebbanne of Ephraimes heafde and gesettan ofer Manases heafod* = *manum patris* . . . *levare conatus est de capite E. et transferre super caput M.*

*L.* 1.1: *For ðam ðe witodlice manega ðohton ðara ðinga race geendebyrdan ðe on us gefyllede synt* = *Quoniam quidem multi conati sunt ordinare narrationem* etc.

## (2) Inflected:

*Ps.* 118.59: *Swa ic wegas ðine wise ðence to ferenne fotum minum* = *Cogitavi vias tuas, et converti pedes meos in testimonia tua* (or with adjective?).

*Charms V. C.* 4<sup>a</sup>. b. c. d, 5<sup>a</sup>. b: *swa ic ðence ðis feoh to findanne næs to oð-feorrganne and to witanne næs to oðwyrceanne and to lufianne næs to oðlædanne.*

*Boeth.* 53.11: *ðeah hi* . . . *ðencan to cumanne* = 0.

*Greg.* 11.14: *ðonne hit ðencð fela godra weorca to wyrccanne* = 32.6: *Quod mens præsee volentium plerumque sibi ficta bonorum operum promissione blanditur.*

*Oros.* 282.9<sup>a</sup>: *ðohte his sunu [to] beswicanne, 7 him siððan fon to ðæm onwalde* = 283.8: *Maximianus . . . confirmatum jam in imperio filium potestate regia spoliare conatus* etc. — *Ib.* 292.28<sup>b</sup>: *ðuhte* (should be *ðohte*?) *him self on scipum to farenne east ymbutan, 7 ðonne bestelan on Theodosius hindan* = 293.29: *dum navali expeditione hostem praevenire et obruere parat.*

*Chron.* 224<sup>m</sup>, 1087 E<sup>o</sup>: *se eorl* . . . *ðohte to gewinnan* Engleland.

*Laws* 206, IV Eadgar, c. 1, § 2: *gif he* . . . *hit ðencð to ætstrengenne.*

*Wærf.* 119.9: *ðohte to acwellane ða sawla* = B. 148 C<sup>o</sup>: *se ad extinguendas discipulorum animas accendit.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 454<sup>b</sup> 2: *ge ðencað to awendenne eowerne freond.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 37.21: *he ðohte hine to generianne of hira handum* = *nitebatur liberare eum.* — *Gen.* 48.17<sup>a</sup>: quoted above under "Uninflected."

*wenan, hope, expect:*

## (1) Uninflected:

*Beow.* 934: *Ðæt wæs ungeara, ðæt ic ænigra me weana ne wende to widan feore bote gebidan.*

*Met.* 1.83: ne *wende* ðonan æfre *cuman* of ðæm clammum.

(2) Inflected:

*Chron.* 267<sup>b</sup>, 1140 E<sup>c</sup>: Eustace . . . nam ðe Kinges suster of France to wife, *wende to bigæton* (*sic!*) Normandi ðærðurh.

#### 4. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing:—

**ablinnan**, *cease, desist from*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 39: beheold ðone heort and wundrode his micelnysse and *ablan* his æhtan.

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 74<sup>t</sup>: he . . . ne *ablinð to asendenne* bydelas and lareowas to lærenne his folc.

**aginnan**, *begin*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Pr. Ps.* 9.30: ðonne *aginð* he sylf *sgan*, oððe *afylð* = 9.10: *inclinabit se et cadet*.

*Chron.* 206<sup>m</sup>, 1070 A<sup>c</sup>: Ða *agann* se arcebiscop Landfranc *atywian* mid openum gesceade.

*Laws* 310, II Cnut, c. 4: we beodað, ðæt man eard georne *clænsian aginne* on æghwylcum ende.

*Gosp.: Mat.* 24.49: *agynð beatan* hys efenðeowas = *Et cæperit percutere conservos suos*. — *L.* 14.29: *agynnað hine tælan* = *incipiant illudere ei*.

*Wulf.* 85.1: he *aginð leogan* deoffice swyðe.

Minor Prose: *Apol.* 19.28: *agan rowan*, oð ðæt he becom to Antiochiam = 38<sup>m</sup>: *navigans attigit Antiochiam*. — *Apol.* 25.9: Ða *agan* se cyngc *plegan* wið his geferan = 43<sup>m</sup>: *dum cum suis pilæ lusum exerceret*.

(2) Inflected:

*Chron.* 6<sup>b</sup>, 40 F: Matheus on Judea *agan* his godspell *to writen* (*sic!*). — *Ib.* 8<sup>b</sup>, 49 F: Her Nero *agann to rixiende* (*sic!* for to *rixienne*). — *Ib.* 8<sup>b</sup>, 116 F: Her Adrianus se casere *agann to rixienne*. — *Ib.* 8<sup>b</sup>, 137 F: Her Antoninus *agann to rixienne*. — *Ib.* 137<sup>m</sup>, 1006 E<sup>b</sup>: *Agan* se cyng georne *to smeagenne* wið his witan.

**beginnan**, *begin*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Creed* 37: he xl daga folgeras sine runum arette 7 Ða his rice *began*, ðone uplican eðel *secan*.

*Chron.* 201<sup>m</sup>, 1067 D: Ða *begann* se cyngc Malcholom *gyrnan* his sweostor him to wife.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 142<sup>m</sup>: Ða *begann* se wer dreorig *wepan*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 216.96: *begunnon* hi *teon* to . . . galnysse huse. — *Ib.* 230.186: Ða *began* se halga petrus him eallum *secan*.

*L.* 7.49: Ða *begunnon* Ða ðe Ðar sæton betwux him *cweðan* = *Et cæperunt qui simul accumbabant dicere* intra se.

*Wulf.* 214.24: ðæt gelamp iu, ðæt an halig ancere . . . *began* hine ðreatigan.

(2) Inflected:

*Chron.* 243<sup>t</sup>, 1110 E<sup>b</sup>: Ðises geares me *began* ærost *to weorcenne* on Ðam niwan mynstre.

*Bened.* 32.1: *beginð to healdenne* = 60.1: *incipiet custodire*.



*Ælf. Hom. I. 22<sup>b</sup>*: and *begunnon* ða to *wyrcenne*. — *Ib. II. 196<sup>b</sup> 1*: ða ðær *begann* to *bræstligenne* micel ðunor, and liget sceotan on ðæs folces gesihðe.

*Ælf. L. S. 36.184*: *begann* hi to *wrægenne*. — *Ib. 530.704*: on ðam fyrmestan dagan ðe decius se casere to *rixianne* *begann*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen. 8.3*: Ða wæteru . . . *begunnon* to *wanigenne* = *coeperunt minui*. — *Gen. 18.27*: Nu ic æne *begann* to *sprecanne* to minum drihtne = *Quia semel coepi, loquar ad dominum meum*. — *Num. 3.10*: gif hwa . . . *beginne* to *ðenienne*, swelte he deaðe = *externus, qui ad ministrandum accenderit, morietur*. — *Judges 10.6*: folc *begunnon* to *geeacnienne* heora . . . synna = *Filii . . . peccatis veteribus jungentes nova*.

**fon, undertake, begin:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Wulf. 133.14<sup>a, b</sup>*: ðonne *fehð* seo wealaf sorhful and sarigmod *geomrigendum* mode synna *bemænan* and sarlice *syfian*.

(2) Inflected:

*Wærf. 197.6*: ðæt ða ðe in ðone biscop *fengon* to *healdenne*, ðæt hi ne mihton adreogan ða mycelnesse ðæs regnes = 240 D: ut hi qui eum *custodiendum acceperat*, immensitatem pluviæ ferre non possent (or final?).

*Ælf. L. S. 70.345*: *fengon* on . . . mærgen ealle to *clypienne* *kyrrieleyson*. — *Ib. XXXIV. 64*: he *feng* to *rædene* (*sic!*).

*Ælf. Hept.: Judges 3.6*: *fengon* to *lufienne* heora fulan ðeawas = 0. — *Judges 13.1*: hig *fengon* eft to *gremienne* ðone . . . god = *fecerunt malum in conspectu domini*.

*Wulf. 105.33*: ða hæðenan . . . *fengon* to *wurðienne* æt nyhstan mistlice entas.

**forlætan, abandon, omit:**

(1) Uninflected:

*And. 802<sup>b</sup>*: *forlætan* moldern *wunigean* open eorðscræfu.

(2) Inflected:

*Greg. 393.28*: ðæt hie ne *forlæten* to *wilnianne* ðara ðe Godes sien = 310.26: ut tamen *appetere*, quæ Dei sunt, non *omittant*.

**geswican, stop, desist from:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. L. S. XXXIII. 206*: Ic bidde ðe ðæt ðu ne *geswice gebiddan* me ðæt ic mote findan etc.

*L. 5.4*: Ða he *sprecan geswac*, he cwæð to Simone = *Ut cessavit autem loqui, dixit ad Simonem*.

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 46<sup>t</sup>*: Ne *geswicð* ðes man to *sprecenne* tallice word ongean ðas halgan stowe and Godes æ. — *Ib. II. 156<sup>t</sup>*: se . . . munuc ne *geswac* na ðe hraðor ðam oðrum to *ðenigenne* on gedafenlicum tidum.

*Ælf. L. S. XXXI. 497*: se fæder ne *geswac* hine to *biddenne* mid wope.

**onginnan [-y-], begin (occasionally attempt):**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 101*: oð ðæt an *ongan* fyrene *fremman*. — *Ib. 244*: no her cuðlicor *cuman ongunnon* lindhæbbende!

*Gen. 1316*: *ongan* ofostlice ðæt hof *wyrcan*. — *Ib. 1355*: *stigan onginneð*.

*Ex. 584*: *ongunnon* sælafe segnum *dælan*.

*Dan. 49*: ðæt he *secan ongan*. — *Ib. 599*: *Ongan* ða *gyddigan*.

*Chr.* 1363: *Onginneð ðonne to ðam yflum ungelice wordum mæðlan.*

*Ju.* 27: *ongon fæmnan lufian.* — *Ib.* 298: *sacan ongon.*

*El.* 157: *fricggan ongan.* — *Ib.* 1205: *ongan lëran.*

*Gu.* 261: *Ongin ðe generes wilnian.* — *Ib.* 533: *secan onginnæð.*

*And.* 450: *ongan clypian.* — *Ib.* 671: *Huscworde ongan ðurh inwitðanc ealdorsacerd herme hyspan.*

*Bede* 28.17: *ongunnon eardigan ða norðdælas = 12.10: habitare . . . coeperunt.* — *Ib.* 56.2<sup>a</sup>: *ða ongunnon heo forhtigan 7 ondredan him ðone siðfæt = 42.25: perculsi timore.* — *Ib.* 106.19: *taltrigan ongunne = 86.29: uacillare inciperet.* — *Ib.* 106.25: *ða ongon . . . ða staðolas . . . ecan = 87.6: augmentare . . . curauit.* — *Ib.* 148.30: *cirican . . . , ða he timbran ongon = 125.22: ecclesiam . . . , quam ipse coepit.* — *Ib.* 154.34: *dagian ongan = 129.11: incipiente diluculo.* — *Ib.* 180.3<sup>a</sup>: *ongunnon . . . seofian = 146.17<sup>a</sup>: cum . . . quererentur.* — *Ib.* 180.29: *ongon . . . byrnan = 147.17: contigit culmen domus . . . flammis impleri.* — *Ib.* 200.12: *Ða ongunnon . . . oneras upp teon = 158.13: temptabant . . . nauem retinere.* — *Ib.* 352.21: *ongan hatlice 7 biterlice wepan = 264.18: solutus est in lacrimas.* — *Ib.* 438.4: *ongon ðrowian = 311.17: acri coepit dolore torqueri.*

*Boeth.* 3.6: *hine ongan frefrian = 0.* — *Ib.* 34.11: *ða eorðan ongan delfan æfter golde = 40.30: primus . . . fodit.* — *Ib.* 91.2: *hit wanian onginnæð = 78.39: cum uero unum esse desinit.* — *Ib.* 127.2: *Ða ongon he smearcian 7 cwæð = 107.5: arridens.*

*Greg.* 25.20: *ðeah ða woroldlecan læcas scomað ðæt hi ong[i]nnen ða wunda lacnian = 6.9: videri medici carnis erubescunt.* — *Ib.* 213.8: *ða ongon he æresð herigean etc. = 160.2: laudat.*

*Oros.* 56.32<sup>a</sup>: *ongan ða singan 7 giddian = 59.1: carmine . . . recitato.* — *Ib.* 60.18: *ongon ricsian = 61.19: regnare coepit.* — *Ib.* 182.7: *ða ongunnon Sardinie, swa hie Pene gelærdon, winnan wið Romanum = 183.6: Sardinia . . . rebellauit.*

*Solil.* 10.6: *hy eft onginnæð searian = 0.*

*Pr. Ps.* 3.4: *Ða ongan ic slapan and slep, and eft aras = 3.6: Ego dormivi et somnum cepi, exsurrexi.* — *Ib.* 31.3: *min ban and min mægn forealdode; ða ongan ic clypian ealne dæg = inveteraverunt ossa mea, a clamando me tota die.*

*Chron.* 20<sup>m</sup>, 597 A: *Her ongon Ceolwulf ricsian.*

*Laws* 306, I Cnut, c. 26, § 1: *gyf ðær hwylc ðeodsceaða sceaðian onginnæð.*

*Wærf.* 11.14: *hine ongunnon ða his magas bysmrian = 153 C<sup>2</sup>: coeperunt eum parentes ejus irridere.* — *Ib.* 64.34, 65.1: *he ongan . . . andswarian . . . 7 cweðan = 196 A<sup>1</sup> 2: coepit . . . respondere, dicens.* — *Ib.* 73.21: *ða ongunnon hi helpan hire lichaman = 201 B<sup>1</sup>: cujus carni magicis artibus ad tempus prodesset conarentur.* — *Ib.* 145.17<sup>a</sup>: *he ongan . . . earfoðnyssa gebetan . . . 7 . . . hi hyrtan = B. 172 C<sup>2</sup> 3: studuit . . . corrigere et . . . sublevare.* — *Ib.* 207.3: *ða ongan he beon sarig = 252 C<sup>3</sup>: affligi coepit.* — *Ib.* 266.28: *se man onginnæð . . . neowlinga lifigean = 325 B: hic vero tunc vivere inchoat.* — *Ib.* 317.2: *se gewunode, ðæt he me ongan secgan = 381 C<sup>1</sup>: mihi narrare consueverat.* — *Ib.* 321.27: *se gewunode, ðæt he ongan sceos wyrcan = 388 B<sup>2</sup>: qui calceamenta solebat operari.*

*Pr. Gu.* II. 105: *ðæt he ða ongan wilnian westenes and sundersetle = petere meditabatur.* — *Ib.* III. 17: *ealand . . . ðæt . . . eardian ongunnon = insulam . . . , quam multi inhabitare tentantes.* — *Ib.* IV. 34: *Sona ðæs ðe he westen eardigan ongan = Sub eodem . . . tempore . . . eremitare initiavit.*

*Bl. Hom.* 55.10<sup>a</sup>: *ongan smeagan & ðencan*. — *Ib.* 105.6: *ðingian ongan*. — *Ib.* 151.1: *hie ða ongunnon mid sweordum & mid strengðum ðyder gan*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 62<sup>b</sup>: *he ongan Godes geleafan openlice bodian*. — *Ib.* I. 380<sup>m</sup>: *ongan fleogan*. — *Ib.* II. 138<sup>b</sup>: *he his geferan befrinan ongan*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 32.118: *ða gebroðra sona ceosan ongunnen eugenia to abbude*. — *Ib.* 124.118: *ða ongunnon heora magas myccelum behreowsian*. — *Ib.* 426.199: *absalon . . . ongan winnan wið ðone fæder*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 4.26: *Enos ongan ærest onclypian drihtnes naman = coepit invocare nomen domini*.

*Mat.* 4.2: *ða ongan hyne syððan hingrian = postea esuriit*. — *Ib.* 11.7<sup>a</sup>: *ða ongan se Hælynd secgan be Iohanne = Cæpit Jesus dicere*.

*Wulf.* 44.26, 27: *ongan ða singan and ðus secgan*. — *Ib.* 191.9: *gif ðar hwilc ðeodscaða scaðian onginneð*.

(2) Inflected:

*Boeth.* 127.23: *ic sceal ðeah hwæthwugu his onginnan ðe to tæcanne = 108.16: aliquid deliberare conabimur (or final?)*.

*Greg.* 423.8: *for ðæm lytlan gode ðe hi geðenceað, & no ne anginnað to wyrceanne = 344.29: ut et illi dum de bono aliquid agunt, quod tamen non perficiunt*.

*Pr. Ps.* 48.7: *gif he sylf na ne onginð to tilianne ðæt he ðæt weorð agife to alysnesse his sawle = 48.8: Non dabit Deo propitiationem suam, et pretium redemptionis animæ suæ*.

*Chron.* 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>a</sup>: *se abbot . . . ongan to wircene*. — *Ib.* 147<sup>t</sup>, 1016 E<sup>a</sup>: *ða ongan se æðeling Eadmund to gadrienne fyrde*.

*Bened.* 62.5: *onginne to rædenne = 116.9: audeat legere*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 50<sup>m</sup>: *hine ongunnon ærest to torfienne*. — *Ib.* I. 140<sup>m</sup>: *ðonne onginð he to murchienne*. — *Ib.* I. 150<sup>t</sup>: *swa hraðe swa he ongan man to beonne*. — *Ib.* I. 314<sup>t</sup>: *ongunnon to sprecenne mid mislicum gereordum*. — *Ib.* I. 448<sup>b</sup>: *Iulianus ða ongan to lufigenne hæðengyld*. — *Ib.* II. 78<sup>b</sup>: *Witodlice . . . ongan se hiredes ealdor to agyldenne ðone pening*. — *Ib.* II. 128<sup>b</sup>: *Ongann ða Augustinus mid his munecum to geefenlæcenne ðæra apostola lif*. — *Ib.* II. 160<sup>t</sup>: *Ongunnon ða ða æðelborenan on Rome-byrig him to befæstenne heora cild to Godes lareowdome*. — *Ib.* II. 178<sup>b</sup>: *Ongann to flowenne mid ele*. — *Ib.* II. 486<sup>b</sup>: *ða ongunnon ða apostoli hi to lærenne, and to secgenne hu etc*. — *Ib.* II. 488<sup>b</sup>: *hi ðærrihte ongunnon to ceowenne heora lichaman*. — *Ib.* II. 488<sup>b</sup>: *ða ongunnon ealle ða næddran to ceowenne heora flæsc and heora blod sucen*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 228.154: *Ongan ða to secgenne ðone soðan geleafan*. — *Ib.* 328.112: *cwæð . . . ðæt . . . menn ongunnon godspel to writenne*. — *Ib.* 538.820: *nebwlite ongan to scinenne swilce seo . . . sunne*. — *Ib.* XXVI. 45: *ongan embe godes willan to smeagenne*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Jos.* 3.7: *ic onginne ðe to mærsigenne = incipiam exaltare te*. — *Jos.* 3.16: *swa ætstod se stream and ongan to ðindenne ongan = steterunt aquæ descendentes*. — *Judg.* 13.5: *he onginð to alysenne his folc = incipiet liberare Israel*.

*Ælfric's Minor Prose: Ælf. Gr.* 212.3: *ic onginne to wearmigenne = calesco*. — *Ib.* 212.4: *ic onginne to anðracigenne = horresco*. — *Ib.* 212.7: *ic onginne to blacigenne = pallesco*. — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.31<sup>b</sup>: *ða ongunnon hi to ceorigenne ongan ðam hiredes ealdre*. — *Ib.* 102.37<sup>b</sup>: *ongan to forhtienne*.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 12.143: *Sume men onginnað god to donne*. — *Ib.* 12.146: *sume men onginnað yfel to donne*.

*Wulf.* 195.1: *ðonne onginð he hy to pinsianne on mistlicre wisan.* — *Ib.* 199.8: *ðonne onginð he to winnanne togenes ðam twam godes ðegnum.* — *Ib.* 200.1: *he onginð deoflice to wedanne.*

*Nic.* 416.25: *ongan ða cnyhtas to axienne etc.*

### 5. Verbs of Inclination and of Will: —

**forhogian, despise, neglect:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 464.10: *hine forhogde onfon* = 329.29: *eum suscipere contempsit.*

*Wærf.* 34.6: *ðæt he forhogode togenes gretan* = 172 A: *resalutare despiceret.*

(2) Inflected:

*Chr.* 1288: *hu hi fore goddædum glade blissiað, ða hy, unsælge, ær forhogdun to donne, ðonne him dagas læstun.*

*Wærf.* 180.18: *he . . . forhogode hit to gehyrenne* = 217 B<sup>2</sup>: *sed etiam audire despiceret.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 376<sup>b</sup>: *Sume sind gelaðode, and forhogiað to cumenne.*

**forhyrgan, despise, neglect:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 76.30<sup>a</sup>: *ðætte wiif forhyrgað heora bearn fedan* = 55.9: *nutrire contemnunt.* — *Ib.* 76.33: *heo forhyrgað fedan ða ðe heo cennað* = 55.12: *despiciunt lactare.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bl. Hom.* 41.36: *ða ðe . . . forhyrgað ða Godes dreamas to geherenne.*

**geearnian, deserve, earn:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 350.23: *ðu gearnie hine ðe mildne metan* = 263.20: *propitium eum inuenire merearis.* — *Ib.* 470.9: *ðæt he gearnode swylce gife onfon* = 345.29: *quod tale munusculum . . . mereretur accipere.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 446<sup>b</sup>: *forðan ðe hi gearnodon ðæt beon ðæt hi heriað.* — *Ib.* II. 598<sup>m</sup>: *ðæt we gearnion, on naman ðines leofan Suna, genihtsumian on godum weorcum.* — *Ib.* II. 600<sup>b</sup>: *ðæt we gearnion beon wurðful wunung etc.*

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 431: *ðæt we . . . moston . . . gearnian to onfone ðone gemanan ðara haligra.*

**gemed(e)mian [gi-], deign, vouchsafe:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Laws* 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 3, § 2<sup>a</sup>: *we biddað, gisende ðu gimeodumia Gast ðin halig = quesumus, mittere digneris Spiritum tuum sanctum.* — *Ib.*, § 4: *ah ðu soð 7 halig dom bifora allum on ðassum uel in ðissum ædeawa ðu g[i]meodum = sed tu uerum et sanctum iudicium coram omnibus in hoc manifestare digneris.* [See Note 2 at the end of this chapter.]

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 50<sup>a</sup>: *Done deað soðlice ðe se Hælend gemedemod for mannum ðrowian.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 713: *ic bidde . . . ðæt ðu lytles hwæthwegu gemedemige underfon me ðæs ðe ic hider brohte.* — *Ib.* XXIII B. 738: *goldhord, ðe ðu me sylfum ær gemedemodest æteowan.*

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Æthelu.* 51: *ðu ðe gemedemodest met (sic! for me?) to gehealdene on ðissere nihte = qui me dignatus es in hac nocte custodire.* [With this compare

the following passages, in which the infinitive is probably consecutive after *gemedemian*, used reflexively in the sense of 'humble one's self':—*Greg.* 301. 13: ure Aliesend . . . hine *gemedomode to bionne* betwiux ðæm læsðum 7 ðæm gingestum monnum = 228.5: Redemptor . . . *fieri* inter omnia *dignatus est* parvus;—*Ælf. Hom.* II. 464<sup>1</sup>: ðurh ðæt se . . . Godes Sunu hine sylfne *gemedemode* ðæt gecynd to underfonne;—*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIII. 210: biddan we god ðæt he hine *gemedemige to ætywenne* hwæt sy gedon be his dehter. Compare, too, *Ælf. Hom.* I. 32<sup>1</sup>, in which *gemedemian* (*hine*), 'humble one's self,' is followed by a consecutive clause introduced by ðæt.]

**geðristlæcan** [-y-], *presume, undertake*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Laws* 46, *Ælfred*, Intr., c. 49, § 9<sup>o</sup>: Forðam ic ne dorste *geðristlæcan* ðara minra awuht fela on gewrit settan.

*Wærf.* 207.24: ðy læs se halga wer . . . *geðristlæhte* ofer ðæt ænigne man wyrgean = 253 A<sup>1</sup>: ne vir . . . *intorquere* ultra *præsumeret* jaculum maledictionis.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 277: naht *geðrystlæhte* *specan*.—*Ib.* XXIII B. 645: [ne] *geðrystlæcende* aht *secgan*.—*Ib.* XXIII B. 745: ne *geðrystlæhte* he . . . nan oðer ðæs lichaman oðhrinan.

(2) Inflected:

*Laws* 414, *Judicium Dei* VII, c. 13 A<sup>1</sup> 2: ic halsige ðe (eow) . . . ðæt ðu (ge) na *geðristlæce* (-læcon) natestohwi to ðisum husle to ganne ne furðon to ðisum weofude to *genealæcenne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 721: he ne *geðrystlæhte* æniga ðinga heo to lettenne.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S.* II. 11.122: næfre nan man ne *geðristlæce* ænigne deofles bigencg to *donne*.

*Wulf.* 34.14, 15: ac se . . . man . . . , se ðe *geðristlæcð* to *mæssianne* oððon husl to ðicganne.

**gewilnian**, *desire*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Wærf.* 208.14: se *gewilnode* *feran* to him = 253 C<sup>2</sup>: *pergere studuit*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 608<sup>1</sup>: Drihten . . . us *gewilnað* gearwe *gemetan*.—*Ib.* II. 588<sup>2</sup>: swa eac nu of eallum ðeodum *gewilniað* men to geseonne ðone . . . Crist ðurh geleafan, and ðone . . . wisdom *gehyran* (*sic!*).

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 187: he *gewilnode* hine *geðeodan* ðam ðe ðær fleah.

*Mat.* 13.17<sup>b</sup>: managa . . . *gewilnuden* ða ðing to geseonne ðe ge geseað (*sic!*), and hig ne gesawon; and *gehyran* ða ðing etc. = multi . . . *cupierunt* videre quæ videtis . . . ; et *audire* quæ auditis.

(2) Inflected:

*Chron.* 219<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>b</sup>: Gif hwa *gewilnigeð* to *gewitane* hu gedon mann he wæs.

*Laws* 45, *Ælfred*, Intr., c. 49, § 3<sup>b</sup>: ða *gewilniað* hira sawla (to) *syllanne* for Dryhtnes noman.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 550<sup>1</sup>: forðan ðe hi *gewilniað* fela to hæbbenne.—*Ib.* I. 552<sup>1</sup>: *gewilniað* God to geseonne.—*Ib.* II. 588<sup>1</sup>: quoted under "Uninflected" above.

*Ælf. L. S.* 196.22: *gewilnode* to ðrowigenne for cristes naman.—*Ib.* XXIII B. 358: ic *gewilnode* mid him to farenne.

*Mat.* 13.17<sup>a</sup>: quoted under "Uninflected" above.

Minor Prose: *Apol.* 18.17: he . . . ðæt gefremede man *gewilnode* to *bedigianne* = 37<sup>b</sup>: perpetratoque scelere . . . impietatem . . . *cupit celare*.

**gewunian**, *use, be wont*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 62.4: in ðære cirican seo cwen *gewunade* hire *gebiddan* = 47.13: *orare consuemat*. — *Ib.* 172.16: monige *gewunedon* . . . *secan* . . . *mynster* = 142.19: *monasteria adire solebant*.

*Laws* 38, *Ælfred*, *Intr.*, c. 30: Ða fæmnan ðe *gewuniað onfon* *gealdorcraeftig* . . . ne læt ðu ða libban.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 164<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 165: he *gewunode* . . . ðone ryne his siðfætes *gefæstnian* and standende *singan* and mid *gebigedum cneowum gebiddan*.

(2) Inflected:

*Greg.* 273.17: ðæt ðæt hit ær *gewunode to fleonne* hit *gemet* = 206.14: *cor quod fugere consuevit invenitur*.

*Oros.* 34.5: Ða sæde . . . ðæt he *gewunode* monige wundor *to wyrccenne* = 35.3: *Nam et prodigiorum sagacissimus erat*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 368: Ic . . . ða swingle me fram awearp, ðe ic seldon *gewunode on handa to hæbbenne*.

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Num.* 22.4: swa swa oxa *gewunað to awestenne gærs* = *quomodo solet bos herbas* . . . *carpere*.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S.* II. 12.45: *gewuniað of to drincanne*.

**gieman** [-e-, -y-], *care*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 364.1: degolnesse *witan* ne *gymde* = 0. — *Ib.* 412.26: he ða his *geferum* . . . *brytian gemde* = 298.25: *prodesse curabat*. — *Ib.* 442.2, 3: Ðær he . . . ða *gedwolan* . . . *gereccan gemde* 7 . . . *from* . . . *eagum ahwerfan* = 313.19, 20: *Qui si . . . errores . . . corrigere . . . ac . . . a . . . oculis abscondere curasset*.

(2) Inflected:

*Beow.* 2452: oðres ne *gymeð to gebidanne burgum* in innan *yrfeweardes*.

*Bede* 208.16: ma *gemde* for ðam ecan rice *to compienne* = 162.28: *militare curaret*. — *Ib.* 362.10: folc . . . *to lufan* . . . *gemde to gehwyrffenne* = 269.16: *uulgus . . . ad . . . conuertere curabat amorem*.

**ondrædan**, *fear*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 72.9<sup>b</sup>: ða ðe him ne *ondrædað* *weotonde syngian* = 52.2: *qui non metuunt sciendo peccare*. — *Ib.* 326.15: ða *ondred* he *ondettan* = 250.8: *timuit se militem fuisse confiteri*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 552: ða ic me *ondræde eft genydan* to ðam *geligre*.

(2) Inflected:

*Greg.* 49.18: Ðæt ilce ðæt he *untælwyrdlice ondred to underfonne* = 26.23: *hoc . . . expavit*.

*Solil.* 43.3: ða ðing ic *ondrede* æac *to forleosenne swiðor* = *caetera . . . deesse timeo*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 104<sup>b</sup>: ne *ondræt (sic!)* ðu ðe *to dælenne*.

*Mat.* 1.20: nelle ðu *ondrædan* *Marian* ðine *gemæccan to onfonne* = *noli timere accipere Mariam*. — *Ib.* 2.22: he *ondred* ðyder *to faranne* = *timuit illo ire*.

*Wulf.* 248.14: ðisses ic me *ondræde swyðe to gebidanne*. — *Ib.* 286.27: ne *ondræt (sic!)* ðu ðe *to dælenne*.

*Nic.* 500.15: hwæt *ondrætst* ðu ðe ðone *hælend to onfonne*?

**secan, seek:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Wald. A. 18:* Ðu . . . *feohtan sohtest* mæl ofer mearce. — *Ib. 20:* Ðy ic ðe metod ondred, ðæt Ðu to fyrenlice *feohtan sohtest*.

*Bl. Hom. 167.2:* he . . . *feðan sohte*.

*Gosp.: Mat. 12.46:* Ða stod hys modor and his gebroðra ðær ute, *secende spæcon (sic!)* to him = *querentes loqui ei*. — *L. 20.19:* Ða sohton ðara sacerda ealdras and ða boceras hyra handa on ðære tide on hine *wurpan* = *quærebant* . . . *mittere in illum manus*.

(2) Inflected:

*Pr. Ps. 34.4:* Ða ðe *secað* mine sawle to *fordonne* = *querentes animam meam*. — *Ib. 36.32:* *secð* hine to *fordonne* = *querit mortificare eum*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex. 2.15:* Ða Pharao . . . *sohte* Moises to *ofsleanne* = *quærebat occidere* Moysen.

*L. 6.19:* eal seo menigeo *sohte* hine to *æthrinenne* = *quærebat eum tangere*.

**tilian [teol-], attempt, strive for:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Met. 10.22:* hwy ge ymb ðæt unnet ealnig swincen, ðæt ge ðone hlisan *habban tiliað* ofer ðioda ma, ðonne eow ðearf sie? — *Ib. 11.79:* ðe we mid ðæm bridle *becnan tiliað*.

*Bede 230.26:* Ða *teolode* se . . . wer . . . stowe . . . *clænsigan* = 175.23: *Studens* . . . *locum* . . . *purgare*.

*Greg. 233.22:* ðæt he *tiolode* menn *forlæran* ðæt hie wurden eac forlorene = 176.20: *damnationem suam perditus adhuc alios perdendo cumulavit*.

*Pr. Ps. 25.5:* ic næfre ne *teolade sittan* on anum willan mid ðam arleasum = *cum impiis non sedebo*.

*Bl. Hom. 165.31<sup>a</sup>, b:* hine ær monnum *gecyðan & gesecgan teolode*, ærðon ðe he sylfa lifde & mennisc leoht gesawe.

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 403<sup>a</sup>:* *teolode* toforan ðam temple *becuman*.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 210.32:* eall . . . he bighygdlice *teolode* to *healdanne* = 164.23: *cuncta* . . . *sollicitus agere curabat*. — *Ib. 372.12:* Ðu wast ðæt ic . . . *teolode* to *lifigenne* to . . . *bebode* = 275.2: *ad* . . . *imperium* . . . *uiuere studui*.

*Boeth. 43.15:* hu nearo se . . . hlisa bion wile ðe ge ðær ymb swineað 7 unrihtlice *tioliað* to *gebrædanne?* = 45.33: *gloria quam dilatare ac propagare laboratis?*

*Greg. 61.18:* He sceal *tilian* sua to *libbanne* swa etc. = 36.20: *Qui sic studet vivere, ut etc.* = *Ib. 463.5:* him self ne afealle, ðær ðær he oðre *tiolað* to *ræranne* = 398.11: *ne alios erigens cadat*.

*Pr. Ps. 25.3:* ic symle *tilode* mid rihtwisnesse ðe and him to *licianne* = *complacui in veritate tua*.

*Bl. Hom. 219.18:* *teolode* to *arisenne*.

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 686:* *teoligende* his cneowu to *bigenne* hire ongeanweardes.

**wil(l)nian, desire, be desirous of:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Met. 29.3:* Gif Ðu nu *wilnige* weorulddrihtnes heane anwald hlutre mode *ongitan* giorne.

*Bede 182.17:* heo *wilnade* *gehealdan* . . . *ban* = 148.9: *desiderabat* . . .

ossa *recondere*. — *Ib.* 218.6: Ða *wilnade* he hine seolfne from eallum bigongum Ðisse worulde fremðne *gedon* = 167.31: *cupiens* se . . . *alienare*. — *Ib.* 418.28: he *wilnade* from him *onfon* . . . *reliquias* = 301.26: *reliquias* . . . *se sperans accipere*.

*Boeth.* 14.19: gif ðu *wilnige* on rihtum geleafan Ðæt soðe leoht *oncnawan* = 23.22: si uis lumine claro *cernere* uerum. — *Ib.* 52.19: hi *wilniað* ealle ðurh mistlice paðas *cuman* to anum ende = 52.5: *ninitur peruenire*.

*Greg.* 17.19: Ða ðe Ðan [ne] git *will[ni]að* oðerra monna *gereafian* = 246.11: qui *rapiunt* aliena. — *Ib.* 43.1: Ðara goda ðe hie *wilniað* synderlice *habban* = 20.25: quæ privata *habere appetunt*, bonis privant.

*Sohl.* 13.1: ic *wilnege cuman* to ðe = ad te *ambio*.

*Pr. Ps.* 13.9: Ða ðe *wilniað fretan* min folc = 13.4: qui *devorant* populum meum.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 432<sup>b 1, 2</sup>: We *wilniað* mid urum hlaforde clænlice *sweltan*, swiðor ðonne unclænlice mid eow *lybban*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIII. 142: ic . . . *wilnode* to munuclicum life *gecyrran*.

*L.* 23.8: mycelre tide he *wilnode* hine *geseon* = *Erat enim cupiens ex multo tempore videre eum*.

(2) Inflected:

*Met.* 19.44: Hi *wilniað welan* 7 æhta 7 weorðscipes to *gewinnan*.

*Bede* 68.13: *wilniað* him to ærfeweardum to *habbenne* = 50.12: *habere* heredes *quaerunt*.

*Boeth.* 42.12: ge *wilniað* eowerne hlisan ungemetlice to *brædanne*? = 44.20: *de peruulganda fama* . . . *cogitatis*? — *Ib.* 55.23: *wilniað* to *begitanne* = 53.52: qui nihilo *indigere nituntur*. — *Ib.* 56.4: *wilnað* to *begitanne* = 53.58<sup>b</sup>: *adipisci* . . . *laborat*. — *Ib.* 56.19: *wilnað* to *begitanne* = 54.67: quod *habere* fruique *delectet*. — *Ib.* 56.20: *wilniað* to *begitanne* = 54.68: *adipisci* . . . *uolunt*.

*Greg.* 25.9: *wilniað* ðeah lareowas to *beonne* = 4.8: *docere concupiscunt*. — *Ib.* 145.12: Se ðonne ðe *wilnað* woh to *donne* = 104.17: Qui ergo et prava *studet agere*. — *Ib.* 203.8<sup>b</sup>: Ðæt hie *wielnien* to *wietanne* Ðæt etc. = 152.6: ut *appetant scire*. — *Ib.* 399.3: Ðeah ne bioð na gemengde buton ðonne hi *wilniað* bearn to *gestrienanne* = 316.20: sed tamen extra *suscipiendæ* prolis admixtionem *debitam*, nulla carnis voluptate *solvuntur*.

*Oros.* 54.16: *wilnade* sum æðeling to *ricsianne* in Argentine = 55.16: *arrepta* tyrannide.

*Sohl.* 32.20: *Wilnast* ðu maran to *witanne* ðonne be Gode and be ðe silfum? = *Amasne* aliquid præter tui Deique *scientiam*? — *Ib.* 37.1: simle swa ic ma *wilnige* Ðæt leoht to *geseonne* = nam quanto augetur spes *videndæ* illius . . . *pulchritudinis*. — *Ib.* 56.5: Hwæs *wilnast* ðu ma to *witanne*? = quid *scire* prius *mavis*?

*Pr. Ps.* 41. Intr.: Ða he *wilnode* to hys eðle to *cumanne* of his wræcsiðe = 0.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIII. 253: ic *wilnode* ðe *geseonne* (*sic*, without to).

*Mat.* 20.28<sup>a</sup>: Ge *wilniað* to *geðeonne* on gehwædum ðinge = 0.

The following is a complete alphabetic list of the verbs having both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive as object: —

**ablinnan**, cease, cease from.  
**aginnan**, begin.  
**aliefan**, allow.

**bebeodan**, command.  
**beginnan**, begin.  
**beodan**, command.



bewerian, *prohibit, forbid.*  
 biddan, *request, demand.*  
 findan, *find.*  
 fon, *undertake, begin.*  
 forbeodan, *forbid.*  
 forhogian, *despise, neglect.*  
 forhycgan, *despise, neglect.*  
 forlætan, *omit.*  
 ge-earnian, *deserve, earn.*  
 gebatan, *order, promise.*  
 geleornian, *learn.*  
 gemed(e)mian, *deign, vouchsafe.*  
 gemyntan, *intend, determine.*  
 gestihhian, *determine, decide.*  
 geswican, *stop, desist from.*

geðafian, *allow.*  
 geðristlæcan [-y-], *presume, undertake.*  
 gewil(l)nian, *desire.*  
 gewunian, *use, be wont.*  
 gieman, *care.*  
 leornian, *learn.*  
 myntan, *think, intend.*  
 ondrædan, *fear.*  
 onginnan, *begin (occasionally attempt).*  
 secan, *seek.*  
 sellan, *grant, allow.*  
 tilian [teolian], *attempt, strive for.*  
 ðencan, *think, attempt (?)*.  
 wenan, *hope, expect.*  
 wil(l)nian, *desire.*

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

At times the Modern English *John told me the story* is, in the passive, rendered, unhappily I think, by *I was told the story by John*, in which latter the direct object, *story*, of the active is illogically retained in the passive. This objective in the passive construction is by not a few grammarians called "the retained objective,"—an awkward name, but, despite his objurgatory remarks thereon, not inferior, I think, to that proposed by Professor C. Alphonso Smith,<sup>1</sup> "the objective by position." Similarly, at times, an active infinitive is found as the retained object of a few passive verbs which, when active, take a dative and an accusative as objects or an accusative and an infinitive as an objective phrase. This construction with the infinitive after passive verbs is by many, especially in Germany, called, not "the retained objective," but "the nominative with the infinitive." Both terms seem to me infelicitous, but, as I am unable to suggest a good substitute, I adopt the former as the less objectionable of the two. See, further, Einkenkel,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 257, who discusses this idiom in Middle English, and Erckmann, *l. c.*, pp. 10–11, who discusses it in Modern English.

I. This objective infinitive is uninflected only with the passive of the following verbs:—

aliefan, *allow.*

(ge)fremman, *make.*

(ge)seon, *see.*

hatan, *command.*

The examples in full are:—

aliefan [-y-], *allow:*

Ex. 44: *Wæron hleahtorsmiðum handa belocene, alyfed laðsið leode gretan.*

(ge)fremman, *make:*

Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 38: *Wel oft eac swilce ðæs ðe hi rehton ðæt he wære gefremed wyrðe beon ðære godcundan onlihtnysse ðurh æteowednyss fram gode ðære gastlican gesihðe (or consecutive?).*

(ge)seon, *see:*

Bede 68.14, 15<sup>a</sup>: *heora weoruldgod, ða heo agan, him healdað ða ðe heo geara gesegene beoð eahtan 7 witnian = 50.13: quae possident, ipsis seruunt, quos irati insequi uidentur. — Ib. 142.5: ðæt he wæs gesewen Criste ðeowian*

<sup>1</sup> See his interesting discussion of this idiom in his *Studies in English Syntax*, pp. 66–71.

7 eac deofolgeldum = 116.7: Christo *servire uideretur* et diis. — *Ib.* 338.3: Ða *wæs heo gesegen* mid . . . beorhtnesse leohtes *scinan* = 256.6: *refulgere uidebatur*.

*Chron.* 235<sup>m</sup>, 1100 E<sup>a</sup>: to Ðam Pentecosten *wæs gesewen* . . . æt anan tune blod *weallan* of eorÐan. (Cf. *Oros.* 162.6: mon *geseah weallan blod* of eorÐan = 163.5: *sanguis e terra . . . visum est manare de coelo.*)

*Laws* 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 3, § 2<sup>b</sup>: *gisende Ðu gimeodumia Gast Ðin halig . . . ofer Ðas gescæft wætres, Ðio from fyre giwalla biÐ gesene* = *aque, que ab igne feruescere uidetur*.

*Wærf.* 203.21, 22: an Ðing *wæs, Ðæt gesewen wæs on him tælwyrÐe beon, Ðæt full oft swa mycclu blis in him wæs gesæ genu beon, Ðæt he etc.* = 248 C<sup>1</sup> 2: *unum erat quod in eo reprehensibile esse uideatur, quod nonnunquam tanta ei lætitia inerat, ut illis tot virtutibus nisi sciretur esse plenus, nullo modo crederetur.*

**hatan, command:**

*Bede* 278.18: *Gif . . . haten ham hweorfan, ne wille* = 216.16: *noluerit inuitatus redire.*

II. The objective infinitive is inflected only with the passive of these verbs:—

**deman, condemn.**

**(ge)myngian, remind.**

**forbeodan, forbid.**

The examples in full are:—

**deman, condemn:**

*Wærf.* 254.13: Ðæt se Sanctulus . . . *wæs gedemed to acwellanne* = 309 D: *Cognito itaque quod Sanctulus qui inter eos pro sanctitatis reverentia magni honoris habebatur occidendus esset.*

**forbeodan, forbid:**

*Ælf. Hept.: Lev.* 11.8: *Hara and swyn synd forbodene to æthrinenne* = *Lepus quoque et sus, horum carnibus non vescimini nec cadavera contingetis.*

**(ge)myngian, remind:**

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 3.3: *we synd gemyn gode . . . eow nu to secgenne sum Ðing.*

III. The uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive are each found as the object with the passive of **forlætan, permit**. Only one example of each infinitive has been found:— uninflected: *Bede* 424.3: *eam eft forlæten* mid monnum *liifgan* = 304.12: *apud homines sum iterum uiuere permissus*;— inflected: *Bede* 412.29: Ða Ðæt se . . . wer . . . *geseah, Ðæt he ne wæs forlæten, Ðeodum godcunde lare to bodienne* = 298.30: *Ut . . . uidit uir . . . , quia nec ipse ad praedicandum gentibus uenire permittebatur.*

For the infinitive active (uninflected and inflected) after a few verbs passive in form but active in sense, see Note 2 to this chapter.

### [Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

It is by no means easy to discover what differentiates the use of the uninflected infinitive from the inflected infinitive as object in the groups (I and II) in which only one form of the infinitive is used; this differentiation is still less easy in the group (III) in which the same verb has as its object either the

uninflected infinitive or the inflected infinitive. And yet a few general principles seem to emerge from an examination of the groups, principles helpful to a solution of the problem despite the difficulty of precise formulation and despite a number of apparent, if not real, exceptions thereto.

To begin with group I, verbs having as object only the Uninflected Infinitive, it is to be observed:—

1. The objective infinitive in most instances appears to the modern Englishman as a direct (accusative) object, and doubtless so appeared to the Anglo-Saxon, for it occurs usually with verbs having the direct object in the accusative, as may be seen by a reference to the list given on page 36. Of this list, the verbs most frequently so used are the verb of commanding (*hatan*), the verb of causing and permitting (*lætan*), the verbs of sense perception, and the verbs of mental perception.

2. Occasionally, however, the uninflected objective infinitive occurs with verbs having another regimen than that of 1, and it occurs:—

(a) Occasionally with verbs governing (aa) a genitive or an accusative (*cunnian*, 'attempt;' *hogian* (*hyrgan*), 'think,' 'intend;' *lystan*, 'desire;' *tweogean* (*tweon*), 'doubt') or (bb) an accusative or a dative (*wunian*, 'use,' 'be wont'), though verbs of double regimen usually (especially when one of the cases is an accusative), as we shall see, govern both the uninflected and the inflected infinitive.

(b) Very rarely with a verb governing the genitive only (*blinnan*, 'cease from'). As we shall see below, p. 68, the compound, *ablinnan*, is followed by either infinitive.

(c) Very rarely with a verb not found with a case (*onmedan*, 'presume,' 'undertake').

As to group II, verbs having as object only the Inflected Infinitive, it is to be noted:—

1. To the modern mind, in the majority of instances, the objective infinitive appears as the "indirect object," under which phrase I here include genitive objects (occasionally also instrumental objects) as well as dative objects; and as a rule it doubtless so appeared to the Anglo-Saxon; for in most instances this inflected infinitive is found as the object with verbs whose noun object is in the genitive or the dative (occasionally the instrumental); or with verbs followed by a preposition plus an oblique case; or with verbs followed indifferently by an "indirect" case or by a prepositional phrase. To be more specific, the inflected infinitive as object occurs:—

(a) With certain verbs having an accusative of the direct object and a dative of the indirect object, with most of which (*æteowan*, 'show;' *cyðan*, 'make known;' *geswutelian*, 'show;' *geteohhian*, 'arrange;' *læran*, 'teach;' *tæcan*, 'teach') the infinitive appears to us as the indirect object toward which the action of the main verb tends. With one (*geceosan*, 'choose') the simplex governs a genitive; in one (*liefan*, 'allow') the datival sense is strong; one (*swerian*, 'swear') is found only in the later *Chronicle*; while the remaining verb (*tellan*, 'tell') is found only once.

(b) (1) With certain verbs followed by an accusative plus a prepositional phrase (*gefon*, 'undertake,' + *to*; *læran*, 'teach,' 'direct,' + *to* or *on*; *under-*

*standan*, 'understand,' + *be* or *ymbe*; *warenian*, 'shun,' + *from* or *wið*) or (2) with certain verbs followed by a prepositional phrase (*beotigan*, 'threaten,' + *to*; *elcian*, 'delay,' + *to*; *gehyhtan*, 'hope,' + *on*; *giernan*, 'desire,' + *æfter*; *higian*, 'strive for,' + *to*; *murnan*, 'lament,' + *æfter* or *for*; *sierwan*, 'plot,' + *ymb*; *smeagan*, 'meditate,' + *be* or *on* or *ymb*; *ðeahiti(g)an*, 'consult,' + *embe*). While to us of to-day a few of these infinitives (as with *beotigan*, *giernan*, *understandan*, and *warenian*) at first appear as direct objectives, we soon see that this is unnecessary with the two former; and the other infinitives appear to us as genitival, dative, or instrumental in sense, as with the corresponding phrases made up of a preposition and a noun.

(c) With certain verbs having the object in the genitive (*elcian*, 'delay,' also followed by *to* + a dative). The infinitive at first appears as an accusative objective, but later is seen to be an adverbial genitive or dative-instrumental.

(d) With certain verbs having the object in the dative (*gedihtan*, 'direct,' and *wiðsacan*, 'refuse'). To the modern Englishman the infinitive appears with the former as a true dative objective; with the latter, as an accusative objective, as would the dative noun therewith.

(e) With certain verbs having a double (occasionally a triple) regimen:—

(aa) Those governing the accusative or the genitive (*adrdædan*, 'fear,'; *anbidan*, 'await,'; *anðracian*, 'fear,'; *behatan*, 'promise,'; *bodian*, 'preach,'; *geðencan*, 'think,'; *giernan*, 'desire,'; *habban*, 'have,'; *reccan*, 'care for,'; *wedddian*, 'contract,'; and *witan (nytan)*, 'know' ('know not')), with which the infinitive appears to the modern reader as accusative objects rather than genitive objects, as would also the noun in the genitive.

(bb) Those governing the accusative of the person and the genitive of the thing (*gælan*, 'hinder from,'; *teon*, 'accuse'), in which the infinitive after *gælan* appears to us moderns as a genitive of separation; that after *teon*, as a genitive of specification.

(cc) Those governing the genitive or the dative (*geliefan* (also accusative), 'believe,'; *getilian* (also accusative), 'attempt,' 'strive for,'; *onfon* (also accusative), 'undertake,'; *wandian*, 'delay,'; and *wiðcweðan*, 'refuse'). The infinitive with *geliefan* appears to us as a dative or an accusative objective; that with *getilian*, as the dative of the end toward which; that with *onfon* and *wiðcweðan*, as an accusative objective; and that with *wandian*, as the genitive of specification.

(dd) Those governing the dative of the person and the genitive of the thing (*forwiernan*, 'prohibit,'; *wiernan*, 'desist from,'; and *wiðcweðan*, 'refuse'). The infinitive with the two former appears to us of the present day as a genitive of separation; with the latter, as an accusative objective, as would the noun in the dative.

2. Not a few times, however, the inflected infinitive appears to us moderns as a direct object. This is more or less true, as already pointed out, with a few of the verbs treated under 1 above. But the feeling for the direct objective is perhaps somewhat stronger when the inflected infinitive is found as object:—

(a) With certain verbs governing an accusative of the direct object. Several of these are compounds whose simplex governs another case than the accusative or another case beside the accusative (*aðencan*, 'think,' 'attempt,'; *forgieman*, 'neglect,'; *forgiemeleasian*, 'neglect,'; *oferhogian*, 'despise,'; *un-*

*derfon*, 'undertake'). With several (*tæcan*, 'teach;' *tihhian*, 'direct;' possibly, also: *murnan*, 'lament;' *sierwan*, 'plot;' *smeagan*, 'consider'), the infinitive may be considered adverbial (consecutive) rather than objective. Several (*anforlætan*, 'abandon;' *forsacan*, 'refuse;' *forseon*, 'despise;' *ieldan*, 'delay;' *lofian*, 'allow;' *onscunian*, 'shun') have the inflected infinitive when we should expect the uninflected; but *ieldan* may follow the analogy of other verbs of delaying, like *elcian*; while *lofian* in the passage in question is dative in sense.

(b) With a verb not found with a case (*gedyrstlæcan*, 'presume,' 'dare'), with which the infinitive appears to us as an accusative objective; and *mynnan*, 'direct one's course to,' 'intend,' with which the infinitive wavers in sense between the direct and the indirect object.

In a word, while the inflected infinitive only is found with a few verbs that govern the accusative only, this happens chiefly with compounds whose simplex govern a dative or a genitive; in the main, the inflected infinitive is found with verbs that govern an object in the genitive or in the dative (occasionally in the instrumental), or in both; or with verbs that are followed by a preposition plus an oblique case; and, while occasionally, even after verbs governing the genitive or the dative (or both), to the modern mind the infinitive appears as if it were an accusative objective, the same thing would be true of the noun in the genitive or the dative with these verbs. Taken as a whole, the infinitive in this group of verbs normally is a genitive or a dative (occasionally an instrumental) object to the chief verb, though occasionally the objective idea so pales away that the infinitive may be considered adverbial in the narrower sense, and be regarded as consecutive or final.

In group III, verbs having as object the Uninflected Infinitive and the Inflected Infinitive each, we note:—

1. In the majority of examples,<sup>1</sup> the double construction, with uninflected and inflected infinitive, occurs with verbs having a double (occasionally a triple) regimen, that is, with verbs governing (1) two cases at once<sup>2</sup> or (2) any one of two or three cases (or that govern a case or are followed by a prepositional phrase); and the distinction between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive is in the large such as we find with the different cases (genitive, dative, instrumental, and accusative) with these verbs, though with not a few exceptions duly pointed out in the several groups. The objective infinitive is both uninflected and inflected:—

(a) With a few verbs governing the accusative of the direct and the dative of the indirect object (*aliefan*, 'allow;' *secan*, 'seek;' *sellan*, 'grant,' 'allow'). The double construction with these verbs is due in part, no doubt, to their double regimen, but the inflected infinitive does not appear to us as an indirect object. With *aliefan* we have found the double construction with the subjective infinitive, due partly to its double regimen, partly to the dative sense thereof; and, as a rule, the subjective infinitive is inflected when near *aliefan*, but uninflected when remote therefrom. So here with the objective infinitive: the uninflected infinitive (*Mat.* 8.21<sup>b</sup>) is the second in a series of two, the first of which is inflected and is near to, but not juxtaposed with, the chief verb.

<sup>1</sup> If we except *enginnan*, an apparent rather than a real exception, as is shown below.

<sup>2</sup> (1) = "double regimen" in the looser sense; (2) = "double regimen" in the narrower sense.

Both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive in this passage, moreover, translate a Latin accusative and infinitive. In the second example (*Ælf. L. S.* 102.227) the inflected infinitive is separated from *aliefan* by four words. Hence I think that the dative force is of more importance than the distance from the verb. — In all probability the original construction with *secan* was the uninflected infinitive, which alone is found in the poetry (twice), and which occurs three times in the prose (*Gosp.*, 2; *Bl. Hom.*, 1). In each of the instances of the inflected infinitive, it is possible that the infinitive is final in sense; that, for instance, in *Pr. Ps.* 34.4 (ðā ðe *secað* mine sawle to *fordonne* = *confundantur* . . . *querentes animam meam*), to *fordonne* is an adverbial modifier of *secað* rather than its object, — an interpretation favored by the fact that *secan* at times means 'strive for' as well as 'seek;' and that *secan* is followed by *to* plus a noun in the dative in Anglo-Saxon, though this phrase expresses, not the object sought, but the source whence something is sought. — In the single instance of *sellan* followed by an inflected infinitive, the infinitive is juxtaposed with the verb, while the uninflected is separated therefrom, but the double construction is probably due to the double regimen of *sellan*. Compare "Subjective Infinitive," p. 24. — *Forletan*, 'abandon,' 'omit,' may be put in this group, as it is followed by an accusative and a prepositional phrase introduced by *to*.

(b) With certain verbs governing the accusative of the thing and the dative of the person (*bebeodan*, 'command;' *beodan*, 'command;' *bewerian*, 'prohibit,' 'forbid:' cf. 1 (c) and (d); *forbeodan*, 'forbid;' *gehatan*, 'command,' 'promise:' cf. 1 (d); *geðafian* (occasionally genitive instead of accusative), 'allow;' cf. 1 (d)). With this group of verbs the double construction rests primarily upon the double regimen of the verbs; and it is easy to see how in these verbs, particularly those of commanding and forbidding, the dative and the accusative objectives could be interchanged without any essential alteration in sense. *Gehatan* in the sense of 'command,' like the simplex, *hatan*, governs the uninflected infinitive only; in the sense of 'promise,' the inflected infinitive, though in one of these examples (*Bede* 316.22) the inflected infinitive is doubtless due to the Latin future infinitive (*esse donaturum*).

(c) With a few verbs followed by (1) an accusative or by a prepositional phrase (*gemedemian* (accusative or with *to*), 'humiliate,' 'condescend;' *gemyntan* (accusative or with *to*), 'intend,' 'determine;' *tilian* (accusative or with *to*), 'attempt,' 'strive for:' cf. 1 (d)) or by (2) a prepositional phrase (*bewerian* (*wið* and dative of the thing), 'prohibit,' 'forbid:' cf. 1 (b); *fon* (*to* or *on*), 'undertake,' 'begin:' see also 1 (d); *geswican* (*from*), 'stop,' 'desist from:' cf. 1 (d)). With this group, too, the chief factor in the double construction is the double (or triple) regimen. The difference in sense between the uninflected and inflected infinitive in the group as a whole is no greater and no less than that between 'stop' and 'desist from' or 'attempt' and 'strive for' in present English. Substantially the same situation exists in Greek, as is evident from this statement in Goodwin's *Moods and Tenses of the Greek Verb*, § 807: "After verbs and other expressions which denote *hindrance* or *freedom* from anything, two forms are allowed, the simple infinitive and the genitive of the infinitive with τοῦ. Thus we can say (a) εἴργει σε τοῦτο ποιεῖν (747) and (b) εἴργει σε τοῦ τοῦτο ποιεῖν, both with the same meaning, 'he prevents you from doing this.'"

(d) With certain verbs having a double (or occasionally a triple) regimen in the narrower sense:—

(aa) Those governing the accusative or the genitive (*bewerian*, 'prohibit,' 'forbid:' cf. 1 (b) and (c); *biddan*, 'request,' 'demand:' cf. 1 (d) (bb); *gehatan*, 'order,' 'promise:' cf. 1 (b); *geðafian*, 'allow:' cf. 1 (b); *gieman*, 'care (for);' *ondrædan* (also with reflexive dative), 'fear;' *tilian*, 'attempt,' 'strive for:' cf. 1 (c); *ðencan*, 'think,' 'think of;' *wenan* (also with dative of person), 'hope for,' 'expect;' *wil(l)nian*, 'desire'). Again, the double construction is the result, I believe, of the double regimen of these verbs; and the line between the uninflected and the inflected infinitive is in most cases as patent and as thin as that between 'hope for' and 'expect' and 'attempt' and 'strive for.'—For one of these verbs, however, *ðencan*, it has been declared<sup>1</sup> that we have the uninflected infinitive as a rule when the infinitive precedes the verb, *ðencan*, and the inflected infinitive when following it, the author of this theory, Dr. van der Gaaf, declaring that he could find only eight examples of the uninflected infinitive following *ðencan*. But I find a total of 35 (or, omitting two doubtful examples, of 33) uninflected infinitives following *ðencan*, while the total number of inflected infinitives is 34, all following the finite verb. Another objection to the contention of Dr. van der Gaaf is the fact that in several instances we find one and the same verb both preceded and followed, in the same sentence, by an uninflected infinitive, as in *Beow.* 800, 801; *Gen.* 1274, 1275; *And.* 150, 151, 152; *Ps.* 93.20<sup>a, b</sup>, 149.7<sup>a, b</sup>, 8<sup>a, b</sup>; *Fallen Angels* 183, 184, 208–209. Moreover, Dr. van der Gaaf declares that only the uninflected infinitive is found in the poetry with this verb. As my statistics show, however, at least one example of the inflected infinitive occurs in the poems (*Ps.* 118.59: *Swa ic wegas ðine wise ðence to ferenne fotum minum*), and six more occur in the *Charms* (V, C, 4<sup>a, b, c, d</sup>, 5<sup>a, b</sup>), which six occur in the prose prologue to the *Charms*, and doubtless were excluded from Dr. van der Gaaf's poetic count, though given in Wülker's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Poesie*. That nearness to or distance from the chief verb is not an important factor in the double regimen with *ðencan* is proved by the fact that we have the inflected infinitive when separated therefrom (*Wærf.* 252.4, 253.7; *Greg.* 11.14; *Oros.* 212.29; *Chron.* 190<sup>b</sup>, 1065 C<sup>b</sup>, 229<sup>b</sup>, 1094 E<sup>d</sup>, 233<sup>m</sup>, 1097 E<sup>a</sup>; *Ælf. Hept.:* *Gen.* 37.18, 21; *Charms* V, C, 4<sup>b, c, d</sup>, 5<sup>a, b</sup>) as well as when juxtaposed therewith (in the remaining instances), as is true, also, of the uninflected infinitive (three of which, however—*Oros.* 282.9<sup>b</sup>, 292.29 (with *ðuhte* for *ðohte*?); *Ælf. Hept.:* *Gen.* 48.17<sup>b</sup>—are the second in a series of two commencing with an inflected infinitive). As both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive are found in poetry and in Early West Saxon, it is probable that from the beginning each infinitive was allowable with this verb, though the uninflected was the favorite in poetry in the ratio of 61 to 1.<sup>2</sup>—For the same reason it is likely that either infinitive was allowable also with *tilian* and with *wil(l)nian* from the first, but neither verb was common in the poetry, only two examples occurring therein of each (*tilian*, 2 U.; *wilnian*: 1 U., 1 I.).

(bb) Those governing the accusative or the dative (*biddan* (accusative or dative of person), 'request,' 'demand:' cf. 1 (d) (aa)). With this verb,

<sup>1</sup> See van der Gaaf, *l. c.*, pp. 52–62.

<sup>2</sup> Since writing the above, I have come upon the following statement by Dr. H. Willert, in his "Vom Infinitiv with *To*," p. 103: "So soll, wenn *ðencan* und *wenan* sich mit dem präpositionalen Infinitiv verbinden, die Sache bezeichnet werden, auf welche sich die Gedanken richten."

confusion between inflected and uninflected infinitive rests upon the double regimen of the verb, and confusion is peculiarly easy to arise either with infinitive or with noun. The only instance of the infinitive with this verb in the poetry is uninflected.

(cc) Those governing the genitive or the dative (*geswican*, 'stop,' 'desist from:' cf. 1 (c)). Of the very slight difference between the two kinds of infinitive here, arising from the double (or triple) regimen of *geswican*, I have already spoken in 1 (c) above. This verb is not found with an infinitive in the poetry.

(dd) Those governing the genitive or the dative or the accusative (*gewil(l)-nian*, 'desire'). The double construction here, also, rests on the triple regimen of the verb; and the difference between the two infinitives is a matter of phraseology rather than reason, as also with the noun in different cases. This verb is not found with an infinitive in the poetry.

(ee) Those governing the accusative or the instrumental (*fon*, 'undertake,' 'begin:' cf. 1 (c); *gewunian*, 'use,' 'be wont'). Of the double construction with *fon*, due to its regimen, I have already spoken in 1 (c). The twofold construction with *gewunian* is likewise due to its double regimen.

2. At times, however, we find the objective infinitive both uninflected and inflected after verbs not having a double regimen, as in the following groups:—

(a) With a few verbs governing the accusative of the direct object (*aginnan*, 'begin;' *beginnan*, 'begin,' 'undertake,' 'attempt;' *findan*, 'find,' 'strive;' *forhogian*, 'despise,' 'neglect;' *forhycgan*, 'despise,' 'neglect;' *ge-earnian*, 'deserve,' 'earn;' *leornian*, 'learn;' *myntan*, 'think,' 'intend;' *onginnan*, 'begin,' 'undertake,' 'attempt'). Several of these verbs are compounds whose simplex governs another case besides the accusative (*forhogian*, *forhycgan*, *ge-earnian*),—a fact that may account for the double construction with the compounds.

As to the compounds of *ginnan*<sup>1</sup> (*aginnan*, *beginnan*, and *onginnan*), they constitute apparent rather than real exceptions to the principle stated in 1 above, for, while I have found no instance of these verbs governing any case except the accusative in Anglo-Saxon, Professor Delbrück, in his *Synkretismus*, p. 38, tells us that both the accusative and the genitive are found with *beginnan* in Old Saxon, that in Old High German the genitive is very common with *beginnan*, and that the genitive was probably at the outset the normal case in the West Germanic languages with the *ginnan* compounds. It may be, therefore, that these compounds had a double regimen in Anglo-Saxon, though not so recorded in the dictionaries; and that the use of the two infinitives is due to this double regimen. It should be added that not only the uninflected infinitive in *-an* but also the genitive infinitive in *-annes* are found after *beginnan* in Old High German.<sup>2</sup> In Middle High German, too, *beginnan* is followed by both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive.<sup>3</sup> That, when inflected, the objective infinitive is in close proximity to, usually in juxtaposition with, *beginnan*, but that, when uninflected, it is usually remote therefrom, is an interesting but puzzling fact. This fact seems to me, however, to tend to prove the contention of Professor Delbrück that, in all probability, the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Dr. H. Willert,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 104: "Nicht erklären kann ich mir, warum *ginnan* [*sic* for *beginnan*?] und *onginnan* neben zahlreichen reinen Infinitiven vereinzelt auch den *mit to* aufweisen und warum *beginnan* den letzteren bevorzugt."

<sup>2</sup> See Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, 1, p. 210; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 125.

<sup>3</sup> See Monsterberg-Münchenau, *l. c.*, pp. 106, 114–120.



genitive was originally the normal case with the *ginnan* compounds in the West-Germanic languages, especially with *beginnan*: in proximity to *beginnan*, we have in Anglo-Saxon the inflected infinitive, which, as we have seen, normally represents an "indirect" case. Which infinitive represents the original construction with *beginnan* in Anglo-Saxon, it is difficult to determine: only one example of the infinitive occurs in the poetry (*Creed* 37), that uninflected; none is found in Alfred; only two are found in the *Chronicle*, one uninflected (201<sup>m</sup>, 1067 D) and one inflected (243<sup>t</sup>, 1110 E<sup>b</sup>); and by far the majority of the examples occur in Ælfric (73 out of a total of 85). Since, however, the examples of the uninflected form in the *Chronicle* and in the poetry are each late, and since, out of a total of about 85 examples, 57 are inflected, I am inclined to believe that the inflected infinitive represents the original construction in Anglo-Saxon. This preponderance of the inflected infinitive is quite in keeping with the fact, stated by Professor Delbrück, that, in Old High German, the genitive case was very frequent with *beginnan*. Of course, the fluctuation in the two forms of the infinitive may be due in part merely to the lateness of Ælfric's works, by whose time the distinction between the two forms had begun to break down. However, I believe that the fact that the majority of Ælfric's examples (54 out of 73) are inflected, probably points to what was the original construction.

That with *onginnan*, on the contrary, the uninflected infinitive was the original idiom, seems probable from these facts: 977 examples of the uninflected infinitive occur to only 37 examples of the inflected; only the uninflected form is found in the poems (18 of them in *Beowulf*); in Alfred there are 246 uninflected to 2 inflected infinitives; and the majority of the inflected infinitives (25 out of 37) occur in Ælfric, but even with him the uninflected preponderate in the ratio of 82 to 25. As with *beginnan*, though not to the same extent, so with *onginnan* the infinitive, when inflected, is usually near the finite form of *onginnan*. As stated in the preceding paragraph, the double construction with *onginnan* is probably due to the assumed double regimen of that verb. The twofold construction may be due in part, also, to the lateness in time of Ælfric's works; and in part to the two well-known different meanings of *onginnan*,<sup>1</sup> 'begin,' and 'attempt;' though we find each use in each sense: the former needs no illustration; for the latter cf. *Boeth.* 127.23 (ic sceal ðeah hwæthwugu his *onginnan to tæcanne* = 108.16: *aliquid deliberare conabimur*) with *Bede* 200.12 (Ða *ongunnon . . . oncras upp teon* = 158.13: *temptabant . . . nauem retinere*). Again, in his *Grammar*, Ælfric tells us that *onginnan* plus the inflected infinitive is the proper translation for the Latin inchoative verbs, giving as paradigms, on p. 212, "ic onginne to wearmigenne = *calesco*," "ic onginne to anðracigenne = *horresco*," "ic onginne to blacigenne = *palesco*;" but he does not state, nor is it easy for me to conceive, why the inflected infinitive is better in such cases than the uninflected infinitive. Alfred evidently thought the uninflected infinitive proper, for in *Bede* 256.24 (*sona swa he trumian ongon* = 203.30: *cum conualescere coepisset*) we find *trumian ongan* translating *conualescere coepisset*. Be the reason what it may, the inflected infinitive caught the fancy of Ælfric, and to him we owe 25 out of the total of 37 inflected infinitives after *onginnan*. On the other hand, Ælfric uses the uninflected infinitive 82 times, without making any rational differentiation between the two so far as I can

<sup>1</sup> Cf. the quotation below from Dr. Henry Sweet.

discover. It remains only to add that to many grammarians *onginnan* seems to have paled into a mere auxiliary, and its infinitive seems "complementary" in the narrower sense rather than objective. To me, too, *onginnan* often seems auxiliary, though oftener not, and the difficulty of drawing a hard-and-fast line between the two uses has led me to put it here rather than under the complementary use.

With *aginnan*, too, the uninflected infinitive was probably the original construction: it is found 28 times, while the inflected infinitive is found only 5 times; and the latter occurs only in the late manuscript F of the *Chronicle* or, once, in the later years of manuscript E.

With *findan*, the uninflected infinitive (*Elene* 1255) is probably better considered predicative to a subject accusative to be supplied. The inflected infinitive (*Daniel* 544) is probably due to the fact that *findan* here means 'to strive for.'

In the one example of *geleornian* with an inflected infinitive (*Bede* 210.31) the infinitive corresponds to a Latin gerundive; but see the next paragraph, on *leornian*.

*Leornian* is once followed by the uninflected infinitive, but in all other instances it is followed by an inflected infinitive. In one of the latter instances (*Bede* 246.7), the inflected infinitive is in translation of a Latin gerund. The only explanation that occurs to me of the six other inflected infinitives is this: possibly *leornian* denoted the striving for an end rather than the attainment thereof, and was consequently followed by an inflected infinitive.<sup>1</sup> Once (in *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 253<sup>a</sup>, 256) we have a series of two infinitives, each inflected.

The only example of the inflected infinitive with *myntan* occurs in the later *Chronicle* (265<sup>m</sup>, 1137 E<sup>f</sup>), but several times the uninflected infinitive occurs both in prose and in poetry. Possibly the double regimen of the compound, *gemyntan* (with accusative (or *to* + dative) of thing and dative of person), has affected the simplex, *myntan*.

(b) With a verb governing the genitive only (*ablinnan*, 'cease,' 'desist from'). The single inflected infinitive after *ablinnan* (*Ælf. Hom.* II. 74<sup>b</sup>) immediately follows the verb; the one uninflected (*Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 39) follows with but one word intervening; and the double construction is probably due to the analogy of other verbs of cessation, which, as we saw in the preceding section, have a double regimen with the infinitive as with the noun.

(c) With a few verbs not found with a case (*gestihhian*, 'determine,' 'decide;' *geðristlæcan*, 'presume').

To sum up the matter for the verbs taking both the uninflected and the inflected infinitive, the double construction is found, in far the larger number of instances,<sup>2</sup> with verbs having a double or triple regimen, that is, with verbs governing two cases at once or any one of two or three cases, or with verbs followed by a case or by a preposition plus an oblique case; and the distinction between the uninflected and the inflected infinitive is in the large such as we find with the different cases (genitive, dative, instrumental, and accusative)

<sup>1</sup> After writing the above, I came upon the following sentence in Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 116: "Nur bei wenigen hat sich der blosse Infinitiv behauptet: bei den Prät.-Præsentia ausser *wissen*, also bei *mögen*, *können*, *dürfen*, *sollen*, *müssen*, und bei *wollen* und *lernen*; doch verbinden wir *lernen* mit dem Inf. mit *zu*, wenn nicht das Objekt, sondern das Ziel des Lernens bezeichnet werden soll."

<sup>2</sup> Exclusive of *onginnan*, an apparent rather than a real exception.

with these verbs, though with not a few exceptions, duly pointed out in the several groups. But with some verbs that govern only the accusative, or that are not found with a case, we also find both infinitives; and the double construction here seems to be due at times to the double regimen of another verb of the same root; at times to the analogical influence of verbs of different roots but of kindred signification; and at times to the fact that some of the infinitives fluctuate in sense between the adverbial and the objective uses. With all groups, occasional disturbing factors are the occurrence of the infinitive in a series, in which case at times, but by no means habitually, the second infinitive, even when following an inflected infinitive, is likely to be uninflected; and the influence of the Latin original, which at times, as with the gerund or the gerundive, tends to cause the inflected infinitive to be used, and at other times, as with the accusative and infinitive construction, tends to cause the uninflected infinitive to be used. Once more, the distinction between the two infinitives, which, as stated, rested originally on slight differences in meaning in the chief verb as indicated in the different cases of its noun objects, early began to fade away, and is very pale in Late West Saxon. Despite occasional exceptions that I have pointed out to this theory, I hope and believe that the main principles here formulated as to the differentiation of the two infinitives will meet with acceptance, the more so that, as will be seen in Chapter XVI, they seem as applicable to the Germanic languages in general as to Anglo-Saxon.

The foregoing has been written concerning the active infinitive with active verbs; but the same general principles apply to the active infinitive with passive verbs. In the group followed by the inflected infinitive only, after *deman* (*Wærf.* 254.14) the inflected infinitive is doubtless due to the gerundial periphrastic of the Latin original. *Forbeodan* and (*ge*)*manian*, in the active, are followed by either infinitive, each being a verb of double regimen. (*Ge*)*myngian* governs an accusative or a genitive.

I do not know of any detailed attempt<sup>1</sup> by previous investigators to differentiate the two infinitives as object in Anglo-Saxon. Dr. van Draat's "The Infinitive *with* and *without* Preceding *to*," in his *Rhythm in English Prose* (1910), does not touch upon the Anglo-Saxon period. But several helpful suggestions have been made by others. In his *Anglo-Saxon Grammar*, § 453, for instance, Professor March notes this interesting fact: "The gerund [= inflected infinitive] as genitive object is pretty common: *ondred to faranne*, dreaded to go (*Mat.* ii, 22); *wished to see* (xiii, 17). Other objects occur, § 448, 2." The second passage cited by Professor March, *Matthew* xiii. 17 (*gewilnuden ða ðing to geseonne . . . and gehyran ða ðing*) contains both an uninflected infinitive and an inflected infinitive as objects of the same verb, but no explanation is offered of the double construction. Dr. Wülfing, likewise, in his *Die Syntax in den Werken Alfreds des Grossen*, II, p. 204, tells us that "Der Infinitiv mit *to* als Objekt an Stelle eines Akkusativs oder eines Genetivs steht bei transitiven Zeitwörtern," but he does not indicate when, in his judgment, we have an accusative use of the inflected infinitive and when a genitive use; nor does he say anything of a dative objective use of the inflected infini-

<sup>1</sup> Dr. H. Willert's "Vom Infinitiv with *To*" is based upon the selections in Zupitza's *Alt- und Mittelhochdeutsches Übungsbuch*. As this article appeared after my study had been put in its final form, what seems noteworthy therein has been incorporated in my footnotes.

tive. Again, Dr. Wülfing duly records that certain verbs govern both an uninflected and an inflected infinitive, but he offers no explanation of that fact. Helpful, too, is this statement by Dr. Henry Sweet, in his *A New English Grammar*, II, p. 118: "The substitution of the supine [= inflected infinitive] for the infinitive [= uninflected infinitive] began in Old English itself. Thus the supine of purpose, as in *hie comon ðæt land to sceawienne*, 'they came to spy out the land,' gradually supplanted the older infinitive with many verbs of desiring, intending, attempting, etc., so that while such a verb as *willan*, 'will,' continued — as it still does in Modern English — to take the infinitive only, other verbs of similar meaning, such as *wilnian*, 'desire,' together with such verbs as *onginnan*, 'undertake,' 'begin,' began to take the supine as well as the infinitive." Nor is Dr. Sweet's view in essential conflict with that given by me above: he mentions here only one factor, while I have discussed in addition other factors.

Finally, the quotation from Dr. Sweet raises the interesting question as to whether, in the objective use, the uninflected infinitive or the inflected was the original idiom in Anglo-Saxon. Dr. Sweet seems to declare for the former, as does Dr. Kenyon, who, in his *The Syntax of the Infinitive in Chaucer*, p. 100, writes: "In O. E. [= A. S.] the simple infinitive seems to have been the original construction, but the prepositional came in early." My own view, as implicitly indicated in the exposition of the objective infinitive with the various groups of verbs, is that, while the uninflected infinitive was by far the commoner form and was with most verbs the original construction, the inflected infinitive was with other verbs not uncommon, and was with these verbs the original construction. Indeed, Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 100, considerably modifies his first statement above given, as immediately thereafter he adds: "Aside from the general tendency to substitute the prepositional for the simple infinitive, the prepositional is used in M. E. after many words like *commeven*, *compellen*, *constreynen*, *driven*, *enclynen*, and the like, after which the original force of the preposition *to* is still evident and appropriate, and after which *to* with noun objects is also used, as in Bo. V, p. 3, 166: *constreineth hem to a bitydinge* . . . This is true of verbs of causing, such as *maken*, *techen*, etc., but not of verbs of perception, like *sen*, *heren*, etc., which still have the simple infinitive in Chaucer as in O. E.

"The same relation between the prepositional infinitive and the prepositions *to* and *for* with nouns can be seen also in connection with verbs which take the complementary infinitive (see p. 88, above). It is perhaps noteworthy that there, in connection with auxiliary verbs where such an analogy between *to* + inf. and *to* + nouns as R. A. 597, *I entende to nothing* But . . . *for to kembe* and *tresse me*, did not work, and also here in the case of verbs of perception, the simple infinitive never gave place to the prepositional to any extent. This suggests that the great spread of the prepositional infinitive was not wholly due, perhaps only slightly, to a general substitution of the latter for the simple infinitive, but was rather due to an extension of the *original construction* of the prepositional infinitive as more closely related to the construction of preposition + abstract nouns. This possibility is to be considered also in connection with the spread of the prepositional infinitive as subject, which, as we have seen under Adjectives, was probably greatly enhanced by a transference of the dependent infinitive to the subject relation, as in *it is good to do*. See pp. 49 ff."

If the interpretation given by me of the illustrative examples in this chapter is correct, Dr. Kenyon's second statement is much nearer the truth than the first. It remains only to add that my interpretation of the Anglo-Saxon statistics had been written out in full before the appearance of Dr. Kenyon's work; and that it is a pleasure to find a conclusion based upon an independent study of Anglo-Saxon so strongly supported by that of Dr. Kenyon based upon an independent study of Middle English.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

Occasionally (about 24 times) the passive infinitive is found as the object of the following active finite verbs:—

**aginnan**, *begin*.

**geearnian**, *earn, merit*.

**gewilnian**, *desire*.

**habban**, *have*.

**onginnan**, *begin*.

**wil(l)nian**, *desire*.

**witan**, *know*.

Typical examples are:—

**aginnan** [-y-], *begin*:

*L.* 12.45<sup>d</sup>: *agynð beatan ða cnihtas . . . and etan and drincan and beon oferdruncen* = *cæperit percutere servos . . . et edere, et bibere, et inebriari*.

**geearnian**, *earn, merit*:

*Bede* 372.34: *geearnode onfongen beon* = 275.21: *meruisset recipi*. — *Ib.* 406.16: *ðæt he . . . gearnade . . . onfongen beon* = 294.10<sup>b</sup>: *recipi mereretur*.

**gewilnian**, *desire*:

*Wærƿ.* 204.4: *ðonne hi gewilniað fullfremede beon* = 249 A<sup>1</sup>: *quatenus dum appetunt perfecti esse*.

*Mat.* 20.28<sup>b</sup>: *Ge gewilniað to geðeonne on gehwædum ðinge, and beon gewanod on ðam mæstan ðinge* = no Latin.

**habban**, *have*:

*L.* 12.50: *ic hæbbe on fulluhte beon gefullod* = *Baptismo autem habeo baptizari*.

**onginnan**, *begin*:

*Bede* 88.3: *ðonne onginneð ðær seo syn acenned beon* = 61.14: *peccatum incipit nasci*. — *Ib.* 128.12: *ongon . . . swenced beon* = 108.18<sup>a</sup>: *coepit . . . affici*. — *Ib.* 358.14: *ongan . . . gewanad beon* = 267.11<sup>b</sup>: *coepit . . . referri*.

*Wærƿ.* 74.3: *heo ða ongan . . . beon onstýred* = 201 B<sup>3</sup>: *cæpit . . . agitari*. — *Ib.* 206.14: *ða ongan ðis . . . beon gedon* = 252 B<sup>1</sup>: *Cæpit itaque hoc indesinenter agere*. — *Ib.* 206.24: *ða ongan . . . se hlisa . . . beon gemærsad* = 252 B<sup>3</sup>: *cæpit . . . fama longe lateque crebescere*.

*Mk.* 13.4: *hwylc tacen bið ðænne ealle ðas ðing onginnað beon geendud?* = *quando hæc omnia incipient consummari?*

**wil(l)nian**, *desire*:

*Bede* 234.1<sup>b</sup>: *Woldon heo 7 willnadan . . . lifgan . . . oððe forðferde ðær bebyrged beon* = 176.30: *cupientes . . . sepeliri*.

*Greg.* 302.18: *ðonne hie [ma] wilniað oðrum monnum underðiedde beon ðonne hie ðyrfen* = 230.1: *cum student plus quam necesse est hominibus subjici*.

**witan**, *know*:

*Bede* 402.24: *Ondswarode ic . . . ðæt ic . . . wiste . . . aðwegan beon* = 291.13: *respondi, quia salutari fonte in remissionem peccatorum essem ablutus*.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

In a few instances we have the passive infinitive as "the retained object" after the passive of these verbs:—

æteawan [-ie-], *show*.  
bewaterian, *forbid*.

(ge)liefan, *believe*.  
(ge)seon, *see*.

ongietan, *understand*.

The examples in full are:—

æteawan [-ie-], *show*:

*Bede* 80.13: is gesægd, ðætte ðæt from . . . Gode unclæne 7 besmiten æteawed bið in weorce beon, ðætte of wyrtruman . . . accenned bið = 57.5: indicatum est, quia illud ab . . . Deo pollutum esse in opere ostenditur.

bewaterian, *forbid*:

*Bede* 78.4: heo wæron bewered heora weorum gemengde beon = 55.16: uiris suis misceri prohibentur.

(ge)liefan [-y-], *believe*:

*Wærf.* 203.23: ðæt he nane ðinga næs gelyfed beon gefylled = 248 C<sup>3</sup>: ut illis tot virtutibus nisi sciretur esse plenus, nullo modo crederetur.

(ge)seon, *see*:

*Bede* 424.28: saula . . . , ða . . . gesegene weeran . . . worpene beon = 305.6: quae . . . uidebantur . . . iactari.

ongietan [-y-], *understand*:

*Bede* 88.5: ðonne bið ongyten ðær syn gefremed beon = 61.15: tunc peccatum cognoscitur perfici.

For the objective infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section ii.

## NOTES.

1. *The Objective Infinitive in a Series*. — In the following passages, quoted on the pages indicated, we have a series of infinitives in which the first is inflected, but the succeeding is not: *Oros.* 282.9<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 49; *ib.* 292.28, 29, p. 49; — *Ælf. Hom.* II. 196<sup>b 1, 2</sup>, p. 51; *ib.* 488<sup>b 7, 8</sup>, p. 53; *ib.* 588<sup>t 1, 2</sup>, p. 55; — *Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 48.17<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 49; — *Ælf. L. S.* 154.127<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 47; — *Gosp.: Mat.* 8.21<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 46; *Mat.* 13.17<sup>a, b</sup>, p. 55. In the following passages we have a series of infinitives in which each infinitive is inflected, after an active verb: *Bede* 330.25<sup>a, b</sup>; 334.4, 5; 430.33<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Boeth.* 41.4, 5; 103.15<sup>a, b</sup>; 110.29<sup>b</sup>, 30; — *Greg.* 249.20<sup>a, b</sup>; 293.3<sup>a, b</sup>; 423.2, 3; 453.32<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Laws* 414, VII, c. 13, A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 453, c. 3, § 1<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Bened.* 56.18<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Pr. Ps.* 34.14<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Ælf. Hept.: Deut.* 3.25<sup>a, b</sup>; 32.46<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Ælf. Hom.* II. 486<sup>b 1, 2</sup>; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 223<sup>a, b</sup>; — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.*: 1. 253<sup>b</sup>, 256; — *Wulf.* 34.14, 15; 200.3<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Poems: Charms* V, C. 4<sup>a, b, c, d</sup>, 5<sup>a, b</sup>. It seems unnecessary to give the series in which each infinitive is uninflected.

2. *Infinitive after a Finite Verb Passive in Form, but Active in Sense*. — In the following passages we have an objective infinitive after the passive of (ge)medeman; or, rather, the finite verb, though passive in form, is active in sense, the passive form being due to the translator's mistaking the deponent verb *dignor* for a passive: — *Wærf.* 206.4, 5<sup>a</sup>: bæd ðæt he wære gemedemod him forgyfan 7 sellan hwylcehugu frofre to eardigenne = 252 A<sup>2, 3</sup>: ab . . . Domino petiit ut ei ad habitandum aliquod solatium donare dignaretur; — *Laws* 409, Judicium Dei IV, c. 2<sup>o</sup>: ðæs ilca Godes allmæhtiges mægen ofer hine ðis gibrehtan sie gimeodumad = eiusdem Dei omnipotentis uirtus super eum hoc declarare dignetur; *ib.* 409, c. 3: of Mar' hehstald flæsc onfoa gimeodumad arð = ex Maria uirgine carnem assumere dignatus es; *ib.* 411, c. 4, § 5<sup>b</sup>: ðis giðdlage sie gimeodumad = ueritas hoc euacuare dignetur; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 466: ic wæs gemedemod gebiddan ða gerynu ðære . . . rode [MS. G.: to gebiddanne]; — *ib.* XXX. 354: ðone eac swylce se hælend sylf wæs gemedemod ðurh ðone heort to his mildheortnesse gecigan; — inflected: *Mart.* 120.16: drihten God, beo ðu gemedemad me to geheranne. The same thing has happened with (ge)eaðmedan in *Bede* 340.1: Drihten hire forðfore . . . mid sweotolre gesyhðe wæs geeaðmeded to onwreonne = 257.4: Dominus . . . obitum . . . manifesta uisione reuelare dignatus est.

## CHAPTER III.

### OTHER SUBSTANTIVAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.

Aside from the Subjective and the Objective uses of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, we find occasionally the following additional Substantival Uses: (A) as a Predicate Nominative and (B) as an Appositive. Of (C) the infinitive as the Object of a Preposition, I find no clear example.

#### A. AS A PREDICATE NOMINATIVE.

The use of the infinitive as a predicate nominative is specifically denied to Anglo-Saxon by some scholars, as by Buchtenkirch, *l. c.*, p. 9; by Ortmann, *l. c.*, p. 53; and by Redepenning, *l. c.*, p. 84. But Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 23, cites what he considers an example of the uninflected infinitive as predicate nominative from Thorpe's *Analecta Anglo-Saxonica*, p. 112: *Me ys geðuht Godes ðeowdom betweoh ðas cræftas ealdorscipe healdan*. Possibly *healdan* is a predicate nominative here; but, as has been pointed out by Professor Albert S. Cook,<sup>1</sup> it may be considered as predicative to an accusative subject; or, as the context seems to me to make more probable, it may be used predicatively with the quasi-auxiliary, *ys geðuht*: see p. 82 below. In his *The Gerund in Old English*, p. 35, Dr. T. J. Farrar writes: "The only instance of the Gerund as a pure sentence-predicate is in poems 325.4:<sup>2</sup> to findanne næs to oðfeorrganne and to witanne næs to oðwyrceanne and to lufianne næs to oðlædanne." Dr. Farrar does not quote the first part of this clause, *swa ic ðence ðis feoh*, — a fact that may in part account for his interpretation? At any rate, I take these infinitives to be objects of *ðence*, and *næs* to be an adverb instead of a verb. As indicated, most, if not all, of the examples cited below, admit of a different explanation. I quote all of the less doubtful examples that I have observed, giving first the uninflected infinitive and then the inflected.

##### (1) Uninflected:

*Bl. Hom.* 189.30: *hit is mycel nedðearf ðæt h[ie] man forspille, & mid irenum ðislum & ordum hie man slea in anr[e] stowe for (sic!) niman mid witum (or subjective?)*. [Possibly an *and* has dropped out before *for*?]

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 490<sup>t 1, 2</sup>: *Hwæt is lange lybban buton lange swincan (or subjective?)*? — *Ib.* I. 584<sup>t 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>: *Hwæt is god willa buton godnys, ðæt he oðres mannes ungelimp besargige, and on his gesundfulnysse fægnige, his freond na for middengearde ac for gode lufige; his feond mid lufe forberan, nanum gebeodan ðæt him sylfum ne licige, his nextan neode be his mihte gehelpan, and ofer his mihte wyllan (the infinitives may be appositive?)*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 643: *to ðam mynstre ferde on ðære ylcan tide ðe heora easter-gewuna wæron togædere becuman* [Bosworth-Toller, *sub v. gewuna*, suggests *wæs* for *wæron*]. — *Ib.* XXV. 310<sup>b</sup>: *Nis nan earfoðnyss ðam . . .*

<sup>1</sup> In his *A First Book in Old English*, p. 131. Thorpe's quotation is from *Ælfric's Colloquy*, a work not included in my "Statistics," and is found on p. 30 of the edition of the *Analecta* cited in my bibliography.

<sup>2</sup> = *Charms* V, C. 4<sup>a</sup>, 5<sup>a</sup>, 5<sup>b</sup>. — M. C., Jr.

gode on feawum mannum oððe on micclum werode to helpenne on gefeohte and healdan ða ðe he wile (or subjective?).

(2) Inflected:

With *beon* + a noun or pronoun, arranged in alphabetic order of noun or pronoun:

— *earfoðnes, difficulty*:

*Ælf. L. S. XXV. 310<sup>a</sup>*: *Nis nan earfoðnyss ðæm ælmihtigan gode on feawum mannum oððe on micclum werode to helpenne on gefeohte and healdan ða ðe he wile (or subjective?)*.

— *frecednes, difficulty*:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 160<sup>b</sup>*: *wæs ðam gebroðrum micel frecednys to astigenne dæghwomlice of ðam cludum to wæterscipe (or subjective?)*.

— *gemet, propriety, right*:

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II. 10.521*: *He ða Ioseph cwæð mid bifiendre stefne: Nis min gemet swilcum cilde to onfonne, forðan ðe ic hæbbe fela bearna and ða synd ealle yldran ðonne heo*.

— *hwæt, what?*

*Ælf. Hom. II. 76<sup>t</sup>*: *Hwæt is to cweðenne, ðæt nan man us to ðam wingearde ne gehyrde, buton ðæt nan man us ne bodade lifes weig? — Ib. II. 574<sup>t</sup>*: *Hwæt is to cweðenne, "Ne cann ic eow," buton ðæt ic ne worhte eow ðyllice? [Or is the infinitive subjective in each?]*

— *hwilc [-y-], which, what*:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 614<sup>t</sup>*: *Understandað nu hwilc sy on wegges geswince to ateorigenne, and ðeah nelle ðone weg geendigan*.

*Wulf. 214.22*: *gif ge nellað gelefian, men ða leofestan, ðæs ærendgewrites, ðonne ne geðencað ge na, hu ðæt deofol ðam ancre sæde, hwylc hit in helle wære to wunianne*.

— *mæð, power, ability*:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 298<sup>t</sup>*: *Nis na eower mæð to witenne ðone timan, ðe min Fæder ðurh his mihte gesette*.

— *sorh, sorrow*:

*Beow. 473*: *Sorh is me to secganne . . . gumena ængum, hwæt me Grendel hafað . . . gefremed (or subjective, as Dr. K. Köhler, l. c., p. 45, holds?)*.

— *ðeaw, custom*:

*Bede 202.29*: *Ðæt eac swilce his ðeaw wæs on oðrum cyninges tune to donne = 160.1: quod ipsum et in aliis uillis regiis facere solebat*.

*J. 19.40*: *Hig namon ðæs Hælendes lichaman, and bewundon hine mid linenum claðe mid wyrtgemangum, swa Iudea ðeaw ys to bebyrgenne = sicut mos est Judæis sepelire*.

— *wundor, wonder*:

*Beow. 1724*: *Wundor is to secganne, hu mihtig god manna cynne ðurh sidne sefan snyttru bryttað, eard and eorlscipe (or subjective? Dr. K. Köhler, l. c., p. 48, strange to say, holds that the infinitive modifies the noun, wundor)*.

— *gebyrian, be fitting*:

*Wulf. 279.5<sup>a, b</sup>*: *ne gebyreð æt cyrican ænig ðing to donne, butan god to herianne and hine to gebiddanne (or subjective?)*.

As to the differentiation of the uninflected infinitive as predicate nominative from the inflected infinitive, it is substantially the same as in the subjective



use: the infinitive is inflected because of the influence of the noun in the verbal phrase made up of *is* etc. + a noun. In the few instances of the uninflected infinitive as predicate nominative, the infinitive is usually considerably removed from the noun of the verbal phrase, and in one instance (*Ælf. L. S. XXV. 310<sup>b</sup>*) is the second of a series of two infinitives, of which the first is inflected.

At times an inflected infinitive is used as an adjectivized predicate nominative, concerning which see Chapter XIII, pp. 180–181.

For the infinitive as predicate nominative in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section iii.

## B. AS AN APPOSITIVE.

We have a few examples in which the infinitive is used as an appositive to a noun or a pronoun. I give all the examples observed, arranged according to the case involved:—

(a) *Nominative*:—

(1) *Uninflected*:

*forhæfednes, restraint*:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 360<sup>b</sup> 1,2*: Deorwyrðe is ðeos *forhæfednys*, and wulderful ðrowung on Godes gesihðe, ða yfelan geðohtas and unlustas mid agenre cynegyrde *gestyran*, and fram derigendlicere spræce and pleolicum weorce hine sylfne *forhabban*.

*hwæðer, which?*

*Gosp.: Mk. 2.9<sup>b</sup>*: *Hwæðer* is eðre to secgenne to ðam laman, ðe synd ðine synna forgyfene; *hwæðer* ðe *cweðan*, Aris, etc. = Quid est facilius, dicere paralytico: Dimittuntur tibi peccata, an *dicere*, Surge etc.; so: *L. 5.23<sup>b</sup>*.

*ðæt, that*:

*Bede 78.22<sup>a, b, c, d, e</sup>* = 55.32, quoted on p. 3 above.

*Mk. 12.33*: ðæt he si gelufod of ealre heortan . . . and *lufigean* his nehstan swa hine sylfne, *ðæt* is mare eallum onsægdnyssum and offrungum = ut diligatur ex toto corde . . . et *diligere* proximum tanquam se ipsum, majus est omnibus etc.

(2) *Inflected*:

*ægðer [egðer], each*:

*Sohil. 16.16, 17*: forðam me ys *egðer* ðara alyfad, ge ðæt good to *lufianne* ge ðæt *yfel* to *hatianne* = Licet enim mihi in quovis *amare* rationem, cum illum jure oderim qui male utitur eo quod amo. [Or is the infinitive a genitive appositive to *ðara*? See note to *oðer* on p. 77.]

*hwæt, what*:

*Mat. 9.5<sup>a, b</sup>*: *Hwæt* is eaðlicre to *cweðenne*, ðe beoð forgyfene ðine synna, oððe to *cweðanne*, Aris and ga? = Quid est facilius, *dicere*: Dimittuntur tibi peccata, an *dicere*, Surge et ambula?

*hwæðer, which?*

*Gosp.: Mk. 2.9<sup>a</sup>* and *L. 5.23<sup>a</sup>*, both quoted under “Uninflected” above.

*syn, sin*:

*Boeth. 84.32*: Ðæt is ðeah micel *syn* to *geðencanne* be Gode, ðætte ænig god sie buton on him = 74.72: 0.

*ylice, same*:

*Pr. Ps.* 39, Intr.: swa *ylce* gebyrð ælcum Cristnum men, ðas twegen sealmas to *singanne* = 0.

(b) *Genitive*: —

(1) *Uninflected*:

*behæs*, *promise*:

*Chron.* 227<sup>b</sup>, 1093 E<sup>b</sup>. c. d: on his broke he Gode fela *behæsa* behet his agen lif on riht to lædene 7 Godes cyrcean *griðian* 7 *friðian* 7 næfre ma eft wið feo *gesyllan* 7 ealle rihte lage on his ðeode to habbene.

*forhæfednes*, *restraint*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 360<sup>m</sup> 1, 2, 3: Oðer *forhæfednysse* cynn is deorwurðre and healice, ðeah seo oðer god sy: *styræn* his modes styrunge . . ., and *campian* dæg-hwamlice wið leahtras, and hine sylfne *ðreagian*.

(2) *Inflected*:

*behæs*, *promise*:

*Chron.* 227<sup>b</sup>, 1093<sup>a</sup>. e: quoted under "Uninflected."

*ðæt*, *that*:

*Greg.* 273.3: ðæt hie geornlice tiligen to wietanne ðæt him nis na ðæs anes ðearf to ðenceanne hwelce hie hie selfe utane eowien mannum = 206.3: ut scire sollicite studeant, non solum quales foris ostendere, sed etiam quales se debeant intus exhibere.

*Oros.* 50.16: For ðon nis me ðæs ðearf, cwæð O., to *secgenne* = 51.11: nec per ordinem nunc *relexere* nostrum est.

(c) *Dative*: —

(1) *Uninflected*:

*onginn*, *undertaking*:

*Pr. Gu.* IV. 58: ða wæs his mod ðæs eadigan weres swiðe gedrefed on him be ðam *onginne*, ðe he ongan, ðæt westen swa ana *eardigan* = tunc miles Christi totis sensibus turbatus de eo, quod incoeperat, desperare coepit, et huc illucque turbulentum animum convertus, *quo solo sederet*, nesciebat.

(2) *Inflected*:

*ægðer*, *each*:

*Solil.* 2.16, 17: forgife me ðæt me to *ægðrum* onhagige, ge her nytwyrðe to *beonne*, ge huru ðider to *cumanne* = 0.

(d) *Accusative*: —

(1) *Uninflected*:

*ægðer*, *each*:

*Oros.* 178.10, 11: he him geswor on his goda noman ðæt he *ægðer* wolde, ge ðæt ærende *abeoðan*, swa swa hi hiene heton, ge eac him ðæt anwyrde eft *gecyðan* = 0.

*bu*, *both*:

*Mart.* 60.3<sup>a</sup>. b: hu meahte ic *bu* somod ge in heofon *geheran* ge her *sprecan*?

*hwæt*, *what*:

*Laws* 455, Geref, c. 13<sup>1-12</sup>: A he mæg findan, *hwæt* he mæg on byrig betan — ne ðearf he na unnyt beon, ðonne he ðær binnan —: oððe hus *godian*, *rihtan* 7 *weoxian* 7 grep *hegian*, dicsceard betan, hegas *godian*, weod *wyrthwalian*, betweox husan *bricgian*, *beoddian*, *bencian*, horsan *styllan*, flor *feormian* oððe synnes (*sic*!) sum ðing ðe to nyte mæge.

*naðer*, *neither*:

*Pr. Gu.* XVI. 14<sup>a</sup>. b: swa sarlice he wæs mid ðam sare geswnced, ðæt he

*naðer* ðara ne *gesittan* ne *standan* mihte = *ut sedere aut stare vel jacere* nequivisset (see note to *oðer* below).

*oðer*, one:

*Boeth.* 53.20<sup>a, b</sup>: ða wilniað *oðer* twega, oððe him selfe *ricsian*, oððe hi to ðæra ricena freondscipe *geðiodan* = 52.20, 21: hi uel *regnare ipsi uolunt* uel *regnantibus adhaerere conantur* (the infinitives may be considered appositive to the genitive, *twega*, but are more probably appositive to *oðer*: see examples from *Orosius* below).

*Oros.* 44.9: secgan het ðæt hie *oðer* sceolden, oððe ðæt land æt him *alesan*, oððe he hie wolde mid gefeohte fordon 7 forhergian = 0. — *Ib.* 120.31<sup>a, b</sup>: ðæt hie siððan *oðer* sceoldon, oððe for metelieste heora lif *aletan* oððe Somnitum an hand *gan* = 0. — *Ib.* 138.32<sup>a, b</sup>: to tacne ðæt hie *oðer* woldon, oððe ealle libban oððe ealle *licgean* = 0.

*Maldon* 208<sup>a, b</sup>: hi woldon ða ealle *oðer* twega, lif *forlætan* oððe leofne *gewrecan* (see note to examples from *Boethius* above).

*weorc*, work:

*Beow.* 76: ic wide gefrægn *weorc* gebannan manigre mægðe geond ðisne middangeard, folcstede *frætwan*.

*Bede* 458.24: he ærest ongan ðæt *weorc* Cristes godspell *læran* = 326.18: ipse primus ibi *opus euangelicum* coepit.

(2) Inflected:

*ægðer*, each:

*Greg.* 355.22<sup>a, b</sup>: forðæm he wisse ðæt hit bið swiðe unieðe *ægðer* to donne, ge wið ðone *to cidanne* ðe yfel deð, ge eac sibbe wið *to habbenne* = 276.1: Difficile quippe erat ut si male acta *corriperent*, *habere pacem cum omnibus* possent.

*weorc*, work:

*Bede* 56.24: Agustinus . . . hwearf eft on ðæt *weorc* Godes word *to læranne* 7 com on Breotone = 44.29: A. . . . rediit *in opus uerbi*, peruenitque Britanniam (or does *to læranne* modify *weorc* attributively instead of being appositive thereto?).

A careful inspection of the foregoing examples will show that normally the appositive infinitive is uninflected. If inflected, the infinitive is inflected because of its relative proximity to some word that is usually accompanied by the inflected infinitive (as *aliefan*: *Solil.* 16.16, 17; *eaðlicre*: *Mat.* 9.5<sup>a, b</sup>; *eaðre*: *Mk.* 2.9<sup>a</sup>, *L.* 5.23<sup>b</sup>; *gebyrian*: *Pr. Ps.* 39. Intr.; *onhagian*: *Solil.* 2.16, 17; *syn*: *Boeth.* 84.32; *unieðe*: *Greg.* 355.22<sup>a, b</sup>; *behatan* [(?): or *on riht*?]: *Chron.* 227<sup>b</sup>, 1093<sup>a</sup>). I know not how to account for the inflected infinitive in *Chron.* 227<sup>b</sup>, 1093<sup>a</sup> (in which an inflected infinitive occurs after three preceding uninflected infinitives) unless it be due to the disturbing influence of *rihte*; in *Bede* 56.24, as there stated, the infinitive may modify the noun (*weorc*) as an attributive genitive instead of as an appositive. — In two instances (*Mk.* 2.9<sup>b</sup>, *L.* 5.23<sup>b</sup>, p. 75 above) the uninflected infinitive occurs in a series beginning with an inflected infinitive, while in one instance (*Chron.* 227<sup>b</sup>, 1093<sup>a</sup>), as already stated, the reverse is the case.

For the appositive infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section iii.

## C. AS THE OBJECT OF A PREPOSITION.

Aside from the inflected infinitive made up of the preposition *to*<sup>1</sup> plus a dative of the verbal noun in *-ne*, which we regard as a unit and which, therefore, does not strictly fall under the above heading, I have found no clear case of an infinitive used as the object of a preposition. Dr. T. J. Farrar, *l. c.*, p. 35, cites *Bede* 82.22 (*ðes mon is his seolfes dome to forlætenne, oððe be cirican ingonge, oððe to onfonne ðam geryne* = 58.25: *iste profecto siue de ingressu ecclesiae, seu de sumendo dominici corporis sanguinisque mysterio, suo est iudicio relinquendus*) as an example of the inflected infinitive used with the preposition *be*; and it is possible so to construe *to onfonne*, especially in view of its close correspondence to the Latin *de sumendo*. It is also possible, however, to consider *to onfonne* as an adverbial infinitive of specification without dependence upon the preposition *be*: see Chapter XII, section B. In sentences like *Wulf.* 279.5<sup>a, b</sup> (*ne gebyrð æt cyrican ænig ðing to donne, butan god to herianne and hine to gebiddanne*), *butan* is probably a conjunctive adverb instead of a preposition, and the infinitives, instead of being objects of *butan*, are nominatives. — In *Wærf.* 71.11 (*he wæs geornful mid teolone his singalra gebeda* = 200 B: *continuæ orationis studio*) one is tempted to consider *teolone* an inflected infinitive that has lost its *to* and that is the object of the preposition *mid*. But more probably *teolone* is a noun, though I do not find it so recorded in the dictionaries.

To turn to the uninflected infinitive, it is probable that in such instances as *Ælf. Hom.* I. 490<sup>1, 2</sup> (*Hwæt is lange lybban buton lange swincan*) and *Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 198, 199 (*hwæt wille we leng don buton licgan ealle æt his arwurðum cneowum and eadmodlice biddan ðæt he us geðingie to ðyllicum gode?*) *buton* is a conjunctive adverb, not a preposition. — So, too, in *Bede* 78.26 (*Ond hwæt elles is to secenne wið ðam hungre nemne ondlifen, wið ðurst drync, wið hæto celnis, wið cyle hrægl, wið werignesse reste, wið untrymnesse lacedom secan* = 56.3: *Et quid est aliud contra famem alimenta, contra sitim potum, contra aestum auras, contra frigus uestem, contra lassitudinem requiem quaerere, nisi medicamentum quidem contra egritudines explorare*) *nemne* is probably a conjunction, as is the Latin *nisi*; and *secan* in reality completes the sense of *is*, as does *to secanne*, but, owing to its remoteness from *is*, is uninflected: see Chapter VII, p. 98. — In *Læce.* 5.37 (*gif mon on sinwe beslea æt blodlætian* and 45.10 (*Gif mon æt blodlætian on sinwe beslea*), we have a compound noun, I think, although I do not find this word so recorded in the dictionaries.

For the idiom in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section iii.

<sup>1</sup> Also sporadically of *for to*.

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH AUXILIARY VERBS.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Perhaps the most frequent use of the active infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is to complete the sense of these auxiliary verbs:

**agan** (**nagan**), *owe (not), ought (not).*

**cunnan**, *know, can.*

**dear(r)**, *dare.*

**magan**, *can, may.*

**mot**, *may, must.*

**sculan**, *owe, shall.*

**þurfan**, *need.*

**willan**,<sup>1</sup> *desire, will.*

No doubt, as is generally believed, the complementary infinitive after these verbs was originally scarcely, if at all, distinguishable from the objective infinitive, treated in Chapter II; for the auxiliary verbs originally were transitive in sense and could govern a noun object, as is still true of *willan* in its primary sense of 'desire.' As, however, the transitive sense more and more faded away in the auxiliaries, the latter came to seem more and more to be mere copulas between the subject and the infinitive; and the infinitive, instead of seeming to be the object of the auxiliary, appears to us as the most significant element in the verb phrase. Hence it is that I have put the use of the infinitive with auxiliary verbs under the general heading of the more verbal (or the predicative) uses of the infinitive.

The predicative infinitive with auxiliaries is habitually uninflected, though occasionally it is inflected. The examples of the uninflected infinitive are so numerous and are so normal that it has not seemed profitable to me either to collect or to publish the complete statistics thereof. Suffice it to say that this infinitive is very frequent in poetry and in prose, in Early West Saxon and in Late West Saxon, and in the more original works as well as in the translations. Nor have I sought with a verb like *willan*, which is sometimes a transitive verb and sometimes an auxiliary, to separate the two uses. In a word, the paucity of my statistics as to the predicative uninflected infinitive is intentional, and is based on the belief that what is peculiar in such verbal phrases rests on the shift in meaning of the auxiliaries, and belongs rather to a history of the auxiliaries than to a history of the infinitive. Moreover, the history of the auxiliaries has already been worked out to a greater or less degree, especially in the case of the two most interesting ones, *sculan* and *willan*.<sup>2</sup> A few examples, therefore, will suffice for the uninflected infinitive as the complement of auxiliary verbs. On the other hand, I have tried to collect all the examples of the rarer construction, the inflected infinitive as complement to the auxiliaries. I do not forget that this use of the inflected infinitive as complement to auxiliary verbs is denied by some careful students of Anglo-Saxon, as by Dr. K. Köhler, *l. c.*, p. 45, Professor Blackburn,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 57, and Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, pp. 9, 68, 70,

<sup>1</sup> For reasons already given, I do not put here, but under the objective use, *beginnan*, *don*, *gewunian*, *habban*, *onginnan*, and *wunian*. *Beon* (*wesan*) is treated in Chapter VII. Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, pp. 88 ff., uses the terms *complement* and *complementary* so as to include a very large number of verbs, transitive and intransitive.

<sup>2</sup> See, in the bibliography, the works by Blackburn, C. B. Bradley, H. Bradley, Graef, K. Köhler, H. Kurrelmeyer, Ljunggren, Lüttgens, and Riggert.

and 75; but I think that the scarcity of examples in the poetry has misled these gentlemen, and that the construction will hardly be questioned by any one after reading the complete statistics thereof given below. It is difficult to discover the view of Dr. Wülfing and of Dr. Farrar: the former, *l. c.*, II, pp. 209-210, gives one example of the inflected infinitive after *willan*<sup>1</sup> and *agan* each, but calls it objective; the latter nowhere differentiates the complementary and the objective uses of the inflected infinitive.

As to the position of the uninflected infinitive with auxiliary verbs, my observation tallies with that of Dr. Riggert, who, *l. c.*, p. 10, declares: "Der Infinitiv pflegt im Hauptsatze dem Hilfsverb zu folgen, im Nebensatze ihm voranzustehen. Zwar ist die Regel nicht streng durchgeführt, jedoch sind die Abweichungen vielleicht des öfteren aus metrischen Rücksichten zu erklären." The inflected infinitive follows the auxiliary except in a very few instances (*Laws* 396 and 400, quoted below under *agan*, p. 81; *Bened.* 135.11, quoted under *durran*, p. 82).

Whether uninflected or inflected, the predicative infinitive that is active in form is active in sense.

The following are typical examples of the uninflected infinitive with auxiliary verbs:—

**agan**, *owe, ought*:

*Wulf.* 294.26<sup>b</sup>: ac man *ah* cyrican and haligdom to secanne and ðær hine georne inne to gebiddanne and mid eadmodnysse *hlystan*.

**cunnan**, *know, can*:

*Beow.* 2372: he . . . eðelstolas *healdan cuðe*. — *Ib.* 91: se ðe *cuðe* frumsceaft fira feorran *reccan*.

**dear(r)**, *dare*:

*Beow.* 528: gif ðu Grendles *dearst* nihtlongne fyrst nean *bidan*. — *Ib.* 684<sup>b</sup>: gif he *gesecan dear* wig ofer wæpen.

**magan**, *can, may*:

*Beow.* 2954, 2955: ðæt he sæmannum *onsacan mihte*, heaðoliðendum *hord forstandan*.

**mot**, *may, must*:

*Beow.* 1939, 1940: ðæt hit sceadenmæl *scyran moste*, cwealmbealu *cyðan*.

**sculan**, *owe, shall*:

*Beow.* 1464: ðæt hit ellenweorc *æfnan scolde*. — *Ib.* 3078: Oft *sceall* eorl . . . wræc *adreogan*.

**ðurfan**, *need*:

*Beow.* 2874: nealles folccýning fyrdgesteallum *gylpan ðorfte*. — *Ib.* 446<sup>a</sup>: Na ðu minne *ðearft* hafalan *hydan*.

**willan**, *desire, will*:

*Beow.* 2148, 2149: maðmas . . . ða ic ðe . . . *bringan wylle*, estum *geywan*.

Below I cite, in alphabetic sequence of the auxiliaries, all the examples of the complementary inflected infinitive that I have observed:—

**agan** (**nagan**), *owe (not), ought (not)*:

*Chron.* 206<sup>t</sup>, 1070 A<sup>a</sup>: he . . . sæde ðæt he hit *nahte to donne*. — *Ib.* 216<sup>m</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> *Boeth.* 110.29, but the text used by me, Sedgefield's, has here *wilnað*.

1085 E<sup>d</sup>: oððe hwilce gerihta he *ahte to habbanne* to xii monðum. — *Ib.* 266<sup>m</sup>, 1140 E<sup>b</sup>: Ðe eorl . . . benam him al ðæt he *ahte to hauen* (*sic!*).

*Laws* 30, Ælfred, Intr., c. 12<sup>a</sup>: *nage* he hie ut on elðeodig folc *to bebycgganne*. — *Ib.* 48, Ælfred, c. 2: *age* he ðreora nihta fierst him *to gebeorganne* (or final?). — *Ib.* 116, Ine, c. 62: *nah* ðonne self nane wiht *to gesellanne* beforan ceape. — *Ib.* 228, III Æthelred, c. 3: hlaforðes gifu, ðe he on riht *age to gifanne*. — *Ib.* 284, I. Cnut, c. 4, § 1: understande se ðe cunne, mycel is 7 mære ðæt sacerð *ah to donne* folce to ðearfe. — *Ib.* 304, I Cnut, c. 22, § 5<sup>a</sup>: Forðam he *nah* æfter forðsiðe Cristenra manna gemanan ne on gehalgedan lictune *to restene*. — *Ib.* 304, I Cnut, c. 22, § 5<sup>b</sup>: ne he *nah* ðæs halgan husles *to onfonne* her on life. — *Ib.* 304, I Cnut, c. 22, § 6: ne he *nah* mid rihte oðres mannes *to onfonne* æt fulluhte. — *Ib.* 328, II Cnut, c. 24, § 3: ðæt nan man hit *nah to geahnianne* raðost ðinga. — *Ib.* 376, Duns., c. 6: *nah* naðer *to farenne* ne Wilisc mon on Ænglisc land ne Ænglisc etc. — *Ib.* 396, Swerian, c. 3, § 3: swa hit me se sealde, ðe hit *to syllanne agte*. — *Ib.* 400, Becwæð, c. 2: swa hit se sealde, ðe *to syllanne ahte*. — *Ib.* 442, Wifmannes Beweddung, Inscr., MS. B: Hu man mæden weddian sceal: 7 hwylce forewarde ðær *aghon to beonne*. — *Ib.* 477, Episcopus, c. 2<sup>b</sup>: ðæt heora ælc wite, . . . eac hwæt hy woruldmannum *agan to beodanne*.

*Wærƿ.* 241.18: ðæt se ðe agymeleasede, ðæt he heolde his lichaman forhæfednesse, *nahte* sona na ma *to sprecenne* ðæs wundorlican mægnes word buton lichamlicre tungan = 296 A<sup>2</sup>: ut qui carnis continentiam servare neglexerat, sine lingua carnea non haberet verba virtutis.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.*: 15.252: Hwanan wearð eow, ðæt ge mihton *ahan* (*sic!*) godes ðeowes *to beswicenne* = 216.281: Quis te genuit, vel quis vobis præcepit in sancta opera *insidiari*?

*Wulf.* 39.17: he ne . . . *nah* mid rihte æniges mannes æt fulluhte *to onfonne* ne æt bisceopes handa. — *Ib.* 123.2: forðam *nah* ænig man mid rihte *to fullianne* hæðenne man. — *Ib.* 135.31: ðæt se deofol eow *nage* naht on *to bestellenne* on ðam ytemestan dæge. — *Ib.* 238.2: nan man *nah* to . . . cyrican ne to . . . weofode idelhende *to cumene*. — *Ib.* 279.19: witodlice *nah* man on ænigne timan . . . æt godes huse unnyt *to donne*. — *Ib.* 290.18: ðu *ahst to fyllenne* ðine seofen tidsangas. — *Ib.* 292.2: hu ge *agan* her on life rihtlice *to libbanne*. — *Ib.* 294.20, 24: ðæt man *ah to forganne* ealle fulnyssa; . . . ælc gemot ænig mann *to fremmanne*. — *Ib.* 294.25, 26<sup>a</sup>: ac man *ah* cyrican and haligdom *to secanne* and ðær hine georne inne *to gebiddanne* and mid eadmodnysse hlystan (*sic!*). — *Ib.* 294.30<sup>a</sup>: ðæt man *ah* seoce men *to geneosianne* and deade bebyrian (*sic!*), earmingas . . . fedan (*sic!*) and scrydan (*sic!*). — *Ib.* 295.5: man *ah* on ðam dæge hine *to gesibsumianne*. — *Ib.* 302.5: ne he *nah* mid rihte æniges mannes æt fulluhte *to onfonne* ne æt bisceopes handum. — *Ib.* 307.27: ne he *nah* mid rihte oðres mannes *to onfonne* æt fulluhte.

**cunnan**, *know, can*:

*Ex.* 437: He að swereð, engla ðeoden, . . . ðæt ðines cynnes and cneowmaga, randwiggendra rim ne *cunnon* ylðo ofer eorðan ealle cræfte *to gesecgenne* soðum wordum, nymðe etc. [In his edition of *Exodus and Daniel*, Professor F. A. Blackburn comments as follows on this passage: "The object of *cunnon* is *rim*, 'know not the number . . . to tell it,' i. e. will not be able to count thy descendants. *to gesecgenne* cannot be joined directly to *cunnon*, 'can tell,' since *cunnan* in this sense takes the pure infin., not the phrasal form." Similarly Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 75, expresses himself: "In loser Beziehung zum

Sätze stehend möchte ich den präpos. Inf. Exod. 435 [= my 437] auffassen . . . Da sich in der ae. Poesie Kein Beispiel für die Verbindung von Hilfsverb mit präpos. Inf. findet, ist auch hier wohl nicht *to gesecgenne* als unmittelbar abhängig von *cunnan* zu betrachten." The interpretation of Drs. Blackburn and Riggert is, of course, possible; but it does not seem probable to me in view of the fact that we have a second instance of *to gesecgenne* after *cunnan* in Anglo-Saxon poetry (*Rid.* 37.13), and not a few clear examples of the inflected infinitive used predicatively with other auxiliaries in Anglo-Saxon prose.]

*Rid.* 37.13: Ðu wast gif ðu *const to gesecganne*, ðæt we soð witan hu ðære wihte wise gonge. [In his edition of *The Riddles of the Exeter Book*, Professor Frederick Tupper, Jr., does not comment on the inflection of the infinitive here, but cites two analogous passages: *And.* 603 (Miht ðu me *gesecgan*, ðæt ic soð wite) and *Chr.* 442 (ðæt ðu soð wite). But Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 70, and Mr. Wyatt, *l. c.*, p. 95, consider *to gesecganne* the object of *wast*, not the complement of *const*, — an interpretation that seems to me quite doubtful.]

**dear(r), dare:**

*Bened.* 135.11: forði ansetles wununge geceosað, ðæt hi geðwære and eaðmode geðuhte syn and hi nan man *gegremianne* (*sic!*) *dyrr* = 0. [Cf. Farrar, *l. c.*, p. 22, where attention is called to the absence of *to*, but no explanation is suggested for the inflection of the infinitive.]

**nagan:** see *agan* above.

**sculan, owe, shall:**

*Chron.* 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>d</sup>: Ða wærð he swiðe glæd, heot seonden . . . æfter alle ða ðe Gode luuedon, ðæt hi *scoldon* to him *cumene* (*sic!*).

Somewhat akin to the predicative use of the infinitive with auxiliary verbs is the use of the infinitive in the following sentences, after *cuman*, 'come,' *gebyrian*, 'be fitting,' and *ðyncan*, 'seem:' *Chron.* 177<sup>m</sup>, 1052 E<sup>a</sup>: Ða *com* hit *to witenne* ðam eorlum ut to Sandwic; — *Laws* 483, Wilhelm I, c. 1<sup>a</sup>: Gif Englisc man beclypað ænigne Fræncisce mann to orneste . . . for ænigan ðingan, ðe *gebyrige* ornest fore *to beonne*; — *Wærf.* 179.9: Nu ic ðus swiðe behealde ða neahfædras, ðe mid us wæron, maran 7 geðungenran manna dæda ic forlet, swa ðæt me *ðynceð* of gemynde *beon* Paulines wundor Nólane burge biscopas, se manige mæn ðara, ðe ic gemunde, ægðer ge on tida gegange ge eac on wundrum oferðeah = 216 C: Dum vicinis valde Patribus intento, majorum facta reliqueram, ita ut Paulini miraculum, Nolanæ urbis episcopi, qui multos quorum memini virtute et tempore præcessit, memoriæ *defuisse videatur*.

In the following passages we seem to have an active infinitive used as the complement of the passive of *gewunian*, 'habituate one's self:' *Wærf.* 181.13: grene wyrta he *is gewunod* me *to bringanne* = 220 A<sup>3</sup>: herbas mihi ad prandium *deferre consuevit*; — *Ælf. Hom.* II. 358<sup>b</sup>: ðaða se broðor wæs *gewunod to mæssigenne*; — *ib.* II. 570<sup>b</sup>: Ge ðe wæron *gewunode to underfonne* manna herunga for eowerum godum weorcum, farað etc. See, too, p. 73 above.

#### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

How shall we account for the instances in which we have an inflected infinitive as the complement of an auxiliary verb? With all the strict auxiliaries except *agan*, the predicative infinitive is normally uninflected, and the straggling examples of the inflected infinitive are clearly the exceptions that prove the



rule. With *agan*, however, the predicative infinitive is frequently inflected; why? Because of the strong dative sense of the verb, — its signification of propriety or fitness, I think. In Wulfstan we find the infinitive uninflected four times after *agan* (*nagan*), in a series, once (294.26<sup>b</sup>) in a series of three infinitives and three times (294.30<sup>b</sup>, 31<sup>a, b</sup>) in a series of four infinitives, with the first infinitive inflected in each of the two series, and also the second infinitive in the former series.

As stated above, Dr. K. Köhler and Dr. Riggert both deny that we have any clear examples of the inflected infinitive as the complement of an auxiliary verb; hence they do not attempt to differentiate the uninflected infinitive from the inflected infinitive in this use. The most specific deliverance that I have observed as to the differentiation of the two infinitives after auxiliaries is the following by Professor Einenkel, in his "Der Infinitiv im Mittelhenglischen," p. 88, written primarily with reference to Middle English: "Eine der ältesten Verbindungen ist die des Objectsinfinitivs mit einem Hilfszeitwort. Hier ist der reine Infinitiv die fast ausnahmslose Regel. Häufiger findet sich die Präposition dort, wo das Hilfszeitwort dem prägnanteren Sinne des Begriffsverbs sich nähert. Die Grenze zwischen diesen beiden Verwendungen ist oft schwer zu ziehen."

As to the complementary infinitive with the passive of *gewunian*, the inflected infinitive is what we should expect and what we find.

In the kindred Germanic languages, too, we occasionally find the active infinitive inflected after auxiliary verbs: see Chapter XVI, section iv.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive as the complement of an auxiliary verb is not nearly so frequent as is the active infinitive in the same use, but it is far more frequent than in other uses of the passive infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. It is very rare in the poems, and is found chiefly in the prose translations. The passive infinitive is made up normally of the verb *beon* plus the past participle, but occasionally of *weorðan* or of *wesan* plus a past participle. I do not see any difference in sense between the passive infinitive made with *beon* and that made with *wesan*; but that made with *weorðan* denotes, originally at any rate, an 'imperfect' action, while the other two denote a 'perfect' action, in the technical sense of these terms.

Typical examples are: —

*cunnan*, *know*, *can*:

*Greg.* 113.22: *se ðe conn wel stræc beon & ahafen wið ða unryhtwisan* = 78.26: *qui scit per illam super culpas erigi*.

*dear(r)* *dare*:

*Wærf.* 132.17: *swa ðeah he ne dorste beon beforan him upp aræred of ðære eorðan* = B. 162 A<sup>3</sup>: *sed ipse ante eum de terra erigi non auderet*. — *Ib.* 232.7: *be ðam ne dorste us nan wen beon geðuht* = 284 A: *de quibus nil coelestis gloriæ præsumi posse videbatur, oborta occasione, contigit ad martyrii coronas pervenisse?*

*magan*, *can*, *may*:

*Bede* 20.14: *ðære lichama on byrigenne gewemmed beon ne mihte* = 243.2: *cuius nec corpus in monumento corrumpi potuerit*. — *Ib.* 76.2: *hwelce rehte mæg ðonne bewered beon from gife . . . fulwihtes?* = 54.17: *qua ratione poterit*

a sacri baptismatis gratia prohibere? — *Ib.* 92.6: swa efne ðæs ðe meahthe wiðmeten beon Saule = 71.13: ita ut Sauli . . . comparandus uideretur. — *Ib.* 186.25: hu ðu gehæled beon meahthe = 151.3: quomodo cureris. — *Ib.* 308.12: ðæt heo . . . meahton . . . beholene beon = 237.25: occulendos se . . . credidissent. — *Ib.* 328.34: he . . . ne meahthe geheaðerod beon = 251.19: uidisset . . . eum non potuisse cohiberi. — *Ib.* 472.10: be ðam mæg ðæt . . . word cweden beon = 346.31: de quibus apostolicum illum licet proferre sermonem. *Greg.* 85.20: we magon beon getrymede mid Iohannes cuide = 56.27: Iohannis voce roboramur.

*Chron.* 229<sup>t</sup>, 1094 E<sup>b</sup>: gesemede beon ne mihtan.

*Wærf.* 55.2: hit mæg beon ðe gecyðed = 188 B<sup>4</sup>: valet probari. — *Ib.* 60.33<sup>b</sup>: swa ðeh hit forholen beon ne mihte = 192 B<sup>4</sup>: taceri non potuit.

*Bened.* 5.16: ðæs weges ongin . . . ne meg (*sic!*) beon begunnen = 10.26: viam . . . , quæ non est . . . incipienda.

*Bl. Hom.* 19.22: heo mihte beon acenned.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 48<sup>b</sup>: Hwa mæg beon rihtlice gecieged mannes Bearn? — *Ib.* II. 28<sup>t</sup>: ðeah hi ne magon beon ealle gegaderode.

*Ælf. L. S.* 98.137: hu magon hi beon gegladode?

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Deut.* 3.23<sup>b</sup>: ðe mæge . . . beon wiðmeten ðinre strengðe = qui possit . . . comparari fortitudini tuæ.

*Gosp.*: *Mk.* 10.38: mage gyt . . . beon gefullod? = potestis . . . baptizari?

With *weorðan* plus a past participle (all examples):

*Gen.* 261: ne mihte him bedyrned wyrðan.

*Chr.* 1431: ðu meahthe minum weorðan mægwlite gelic, mane bidæled.

*Met.* 11.19: Forðæm æfre ne magon ða unstillan woruldgescæfta weorðan gestilde. — *Ib.* 11.98<sup>a, b</sup>: gif hiora modsefa meahthe weorðan staðolfæst gereaht ðurh ða strongan meahthe 7 geendebyrd swa swa oðra sint woruldgescæfta. — *Ib.* 20.97: ðæt hio siððan mæg for ðæm sype weorðan geleht lyftum.

*Boeth.* 92.29: ðæt fyr . . . ne mæg næfre weorðan todæled = 80.81: ignis uero omnem refugit sectionem.

*Greg.* 395.34: gebidde hira ægðer for oðer ðæt hie mægen ðurh ðæt weorðan gehælede = 314.9: exhortantes invicem salvent. — *Ib.* 399.18: ðonne magon hie ðeah weorðan gehælede suiðe iedelice ðurh forgiefnesse & ðurh gebedu = 318.4: et tamen venia salvantur. — *Ib.* 431.24: Ac hit wilnað ðæt hit to ðon onwæcne ðæt hit mæge eft weorðan ofedruncen = 356.18: Quæ quidem, evigilare optat, ut rursum vina reperiat.

*Oros.* 64.34: ðæt hie mid nanum ðinge ne mehton gesemede weorðan = 0. — *Ib.* 94.15: ða hie ne mehton from . . . fyre forbærned weorðan = 95.12: quod inmissa per hostem flamma non adiit.

*Wulf.* 96.14: swa æfre ænig gold mæg clænost amerod weorðan. — *Ib.* 103.20: forðam ðurh ðæt we magan mycle ðe yð raðe gehælede weorðan.

With *wesan* plus a past participle (all examples):

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.*: 18.424: ðæt sio geðungennes ne mæg næfre wesan besmitan (*sic!*).

*Læce.* 19.14: mæg wesan sio wund gehæled. — *Ib.* 152.19: mæg seo wund wesan gehæled.

*mot, may, must:*

*Bede* 72.11: hwæðer mot biscop halgad beon? = 52.6: an *debeat* . . . episcopus *ordinari*? — *Ib.* 182.31: ðætte . . . reliquias . . . *gehealdne beon moston* = 148.26: *conderentur*.

*Greg.* 171.18: næfre ne moton him beon ofatogene = 126.13: nec umquam *extrahentur* ab eis.

*Wærf.* 35.19: *moste beon gelæded* to Romebyrig = 172 B<sup>3</sup>: ut ad Romanam urbem *deduci debuisset*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 292<sup>b</sup>: ðæt nan man ne mot beon tuwa gefullod.

*Ælf. L. S.* 270.142: he ne mot na beon eft gefullod.

*Wulf.* 32.9, 10: ðonne mot he beon ærost ðinga *gemyne*gad and *gewisod*.

*Note.* — No example of the infinitive made up with *weorðan* or with *wesan* plus a past participle has been found with *motan*.

*sulan, owe, shall:*

*Chr.* 213: *sceolde witedom* in him sylfum beon soðe *gefylled*.

*Bede* 18.16: getacnod wæs, hwær *gesette beon sceoldon* ða lichaman = 219.10: *poni deberent*. — *Ib.* 74.1<sup>a, b</sup>: hu ða *gerehte 7 gebette beon scylen* = 53.4: qualiter . . . *corrigan*tur. — *Ib.* 96.28, 29: heo *sculon* of Godes yrr beon *abrogdene*, 7 to . . . *mildheortnesse gecegde* = 80.18, 19: *Deiri; de ira eruti, et ad misericordiam Christi uocati*. — *Ib.* 110.32<sup>a, b</sup>: ðæt he ðurh ða *geclænsed 7 gereht beon sceolde* = 90.34<sup>a, b</sup>: Nec supernae flagella *distinctionis perfido regi castigando et corrigendo defuere*. — *Ib.* 288.22: *ahafen beon sceolde* = 222.24: *leuanda esset*.

*Boeth.* 95.15: ðæt corn *sceal bion aweht* = 81.12: *excitatur*.

*Greg.* 251.1: cuæð S. ðæt fremde ne *scoldon beon gefyllede* ures mægenes = 190.1: Ne forte *impleantur* extranei viribus tuis.

*Oros.* 20.33: ðonne *sceolon beon gesamnode* ealle ða men = 0.

*Chron.* 145<sup>t</sup>, 1014 E<sup>p</sup>: ælc ðæra ðinga *forgifan (sic!) beon sceolde*.

*Laws* 448, *Rectitudines*, c. 5, § 3: he *sceal beon gehorsad*.

*Wærf.* 54.18: ðæt hi *sceolon beon* eft mid benum *begytene* = 188 B<sup>1</sup>: ut precibus *obtineantur*. — *Ib.* 181.7: hu *sceole geseted beon* Wændlarice = 220 A<sup>2</sup>: qualiter *disponi debeat*. — *Ib.* 213.4: he *sceolde beon eall tosliten* = 260 B<sup>2</sup>: *discerpi potuisset*.

*Bened.* 43.20: *sealmas sculon beon todaelede* = 80.24 *dividendi sunt*.

*Bl. Hom.* 9.6: Adames gylt ðurh ðe *sceal beon geðingod*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 24<sup>b</sup>: cydde hire, ðæt Godes Sunu *sceolde beon acenned* of hire.

*Ælf. L. S.* 30.82: heo *sceolde* . . . *beon gescyld*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 27.45<sup>b</sup>: hwi *sceal ic beon bedæled ægðer (sic!) minra sunena* on anum dæge? = cur utroque orbabor filio in uno die?

*Gosp.: Mat.* 3.14: Ic *sceal from ðe beon gefullod* = Ego a te *debeo baptizari*. — *Mk.* 2.22: Ac niwe win *sceal beon gedon* on niwe bytta = sed vinum novum . . . *mitti debet*.

*Ælf. Gr.* 255.12: se ðe *sceal beon gehyred* = *audiendus*.

*Wulf.* 96.5, 6: forðam ðe hy *sculon beon raðe geclænsode* and *amerode*.

*Læce.* 58.21: bæð . . . *sceal beon geworht*.

With *weorðan* plus a past participle (all examples):

*Gen.* 1102: min *sceal swiðor mid grimme gryre golden wurðan fyll* and *feorhwealm*, ðonne ic forð scio.

*Chr.* 1617: ðæt he, fah, *scyle from his Scyppende ascyred weorðan*.

*Ju.* 416: se ðe on legre *sceal weorðan* in worulde wyrme to hroðor *bifolen* in foldan.

*El.* 581: ðæt eow *sceal* ðæt leas *awundrad weorðan* to woruldgedale. — *Ib.* 688: ðæt ðu hungre *scealt* for cneowmagum *cwylmed weorðan*.

*And.* 758: ðæt of his cynne *cenned sceolde weorðan* wuldres god.

*Ph.* 378: ðæt he swa wrætlice *weorðan sceolde* eft ðæt ilce, ðæt he ær ðon wæs, feðrum *bifongen*. — *Ib.* 564: ðeah min lic *scyle* on moldærne *molsnad weorðan* wyrnum to willan.

*Met.* 25.72: ðeah he *oferwunnen weorðan sceolde*. — *Ib.* 29.89, 91: æghwylc hiora wraðe *tostencte weorðan sceolden*: æghwile hiora ealle to nauhte *weorðan sceoldon* wraðe *toslopena*.

*Bede* 38.30<sup>a, b</sup>: stow . . . , ðe eft *sceolde* mid . . . blode . . . *gewurðad 7 gehalgod weorðan* = 20.34: qui beati martyris cruore *dicaretur*.

*Bl. Hom.* 77.29, 30: ðæt seo burh *sceolde abrocen weorðan & bereafod*. — *Ib.* 117.18: hie tealdon ðætte Israhela rice *sceolde* . . . *gebletsod weorðan*. — *Ib.* 121.33<sup>a, b</sup>: heora eðel *sceolde* eft *gebuen 7 geseted weorðan* mid halgum sawlum. — *Ib.* 185.6: ðæt he *sceole* to heofenum *ahafen weorðan*.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 9.147: Wite . . . ðæt ðu *wurðan scealt* . . . *ofslagen*. *Wulf.* 88.19: sæde . . . , ðæt his *sceolde weorðan* æghwylc stan . . . *toworpen*. — *Ib.* 103.24: men . . . , ðe nyde *sculan* . . . *ascadene* . . . *weorðan*. — *Ib.* 140.21: wa me earmre, ðæt ic æfre *geboren sceolde wurðan*. — *Ib.* 276.1: bitterlice *scel* hit him *wyrðan forgolden* on ðam toweardan life. — *Ib.* 277.5: bitere *scel* hit him *wyrðan forgolden*.

*Nic.* 504.3: ne foresæde ic . . . ðæt deade men arysan *sceoldon 7 mænige byrgena geopenod weorðan?*

With *wesan* plus a past participle (all examples):

*Gen.* 1310: Ðær *sceal* fæsl *wesan* cwiclifigendra cynna gehwilces on ðæt wudufæsten wocor *gelæded eorðan* tudres. — *Ib.* 2286: ic . . . secge, ðæt se magorinc *sceal* mid yldum *wesan* Ismahel *haten*. — *Ib.* 2318<sup>a, b, c</sup>: *Sceal* monna gehwile ðære cneorisse cildisc *wesan* wæpnedcynnes, ðæs ðe on woruld cymð, . . . *geagnod* me oððe of eorðan ðurh feondschiþe feor *adæled, adrifæn* from duguðum.

*Dan.* 560: ðæt ðæt treow *sceolde* . . . his wyrtruman foldan *befolen* fyrst-mearc *wesan*, stille on staðole, swa seo stefn gecwæð, ymb seofon tida sæde eft onfon.

*ðurfan, need:*

*Greg.* 83.16: ðæt he . . . ne eac ne ðyrfe *bion* to *upahæfen* for nanum wlen-cum = 56.3: Non hunc prospera *elevent*. — *Ib.* 413.16: ðonne hi hi gesewene hæbben, gedon ðæt hie ne ðyrfen *bion* *gesewene* æt ðæm nearwan dome = 334.8: vivendo agant, ut a districto iudice *videri non debeant*.

*Wærf.* 222.15: ðæt se feond . . . ne ðearf beon *ondræded* = 272 B<sup>2</sup>: *timeri non debeat*. — *Ib.* 269.16<sup>b</sup>: ne ðearf ðæt beon *gelyfed* = 329 A<sup>4</sup>: Nam *credi* jam non *potest* quod *videri* potest. — *Ib.* 336.28: ðæt ðurfe beon *andswared* = 405 A: Non est jam quod *responderi debeat* apertæ rationi. — *Ib.* 345.17<sup>b</sup>: ðæt hi ðonne mihton oððe ðorfton beon *getælede* = 421 A<sup>2</sup>: unde *reprehendi potuissent*.

*Bl. Hom.* 135.25: Ne ðurfe ge beon unrote, ne *gedrefed* eower heorte.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 48<sup>b, 1</sup>: ne ðearf he beon eft *gefullod*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 176.130: ðæt ic . . . ne ðurfe . . . beon *gefyled*.

*Note.* — I have found no example of the passive infinitive made up of *weorðan* or *wesan* and a past participle after *ðurfan*.

**willan** [**nyllan**], *will* (*not*):

*Bede* 112.12: *Gif ge willað onðwegene beon* = 91.16: *Si uultis abluī*. — *Ib.* 308.3: *ða ðe woldon gehælede beon* = 237.16: *qui saluari uellent*. — *Ib.* 366.5: *Gif me seo . . . geofu . . . forgifen beon wile* = 271.13: *Si mihi . . . gratia . . . donauerit*.

*Boeth.* 36.2: *mid hwelce hleahtre ge woldon bion astered* = 41.17: *quanto moueris cachinno*.

*Greg.* 135.26: *noldon beon abisgode nane wuht on eorðlicum ðingum* = 96.29: *ut rebus exterioribus nullatenus occupentur*.

*Oros.* 128.5: *ða Darius geseah ðæt he oferwunnen beon wolde* = 129.3: *Sed Darius cum vinci suos uideret*.

*Wærƿ.* 88.34: *nelle ðu nu beon ma geswenced* = 212 C<sup>3</sup>: *noli fatigari*. — *Ib.* 279.3, 4: *ða geceas heo ma, ðæt heo wolde . . . beon Gode gegearwod ðonne heo . . . wolde beon to hwylcum woruldmæn geðeoded* = 340 B<sup>1</sup>, 2: *elegit magis spiritalibus nuptiis copulari Deo . . . quam carnalibus nuptiis subijci*.

*Bened.* 112.16: *Gif he . . . nelle beon underðeoded ðam halgan regole* = 178.20: *ut subdi aut obedire Regulæ nolit*.

*Bl. Hom.* 33.13: *ðæt he acweald beon wolde*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 34<sup>t</sup>: *Crist wolde on ytinge beon acenned*.

*Ælf. L. S. XXXII.* 88: *ic . . . wille beon ofslagen*.

*Ælf. Gr.* 143.19: *ic wylle beon gehufod* = *amari uolo*. — *Ib.* 144.6: *ic wylle beon gehufod* = *amatum iri uolo*.

*Mat.* 2.18: *heo nolde beon gefrefed* = *et noluit consolari*. — *Ib.* 19.21: *Gyf ðu wilt beon fullfremed* = *Si vis perfectus esse*.

*Wulf.* 194.3: *ðæt he wolde ðær beon geboren soð man*.

*Note.* — I have found no example of the passive infinitive made up of *weorðan* plus a past participle with *willan*, and but one example of the passive infinitive made up of *wesan* plus a past participle: *Gu.* 575: *him geornlice gæstgemyndum wille wideferh wesan underðyded*.

With a few verbs not auxiliary, we find the passive infinitive used in a way quite similar to that with the genuine auxiliaries. The verbs in question are *gedafenian*, 'be fitting'; *gewunian*, 'be wont'; *weorðan*, 'become'; and *wunian*, 'be wont.' The infinitive after *gewunian* and *wunian* may be considered objective, as is the active infinitive after these verbs; but the verbal power seems to me diminished in them when followed by the passive infinitive. I cite all the examples that I have observed:—*gedafenian*: *Ælf. L. S. XXIII B.* 743: *geseah . . . ða handa swa heo gedafenodon alegdon (sic!) beon* and *eastweardes gewende*;—*gewunian*: *Bede* 172.28: *monig weorc . . . 7 monig tacen . . . wundra . . . gewuniað . . . sægd beon* = 143.3: *solent opera . . . et signa . . . narrari*;—*ib.* 270.33: *gewuniað . . . wundor hælo geworden beon* = 212.9: *solent . . . miracula operari*;—*ib.* 474.14: *ðe hie næfre ær gewunedon in ðam stowum weorðade beon* = 348.4: *nunquam . . . celebrari solebat*;—*Wærƿ.* 183.17: *be . . . Iohanne ðis wundor gewunode beon sæd fram urum witum* = 224 A: *De quo etiam illud mirabile . . . narrari solet*;—*weorðan*: *Wulf.* 217.9: *ðæt ðeos weoruld mihte eft beon geedstaðoled weorðan* and *eft of awecnigan*;—*wunian*: *Bede* 340.7<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: *ðær heo wunedon to gebedum gecegde 7 awehte beon* = 257.10<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: *quo . . . excitari uel conuocari solebant*.

For the passive infinitive with auxiliary verbs in the other Germanic languages, see section iv of Chapter XVI.

## NOTES.

1. *The Predicative Infinitive in a Series with Auxiliary Verbs.* — We have a series of two inflected infinitives after the auxiliary *agan* in *Wulf.* 294.20, 24 and 294.25, 26, quoted on p. 81 above. We have a series of infinitives in which only the first is inflected after *agan*, in *Wulf.* 294.26<sup>a, b</sup> and 294.30<sup>a, b</sup>, 31<sup>a, b</sup>, quoted on p. 81 above.

2. *The Inflected Infinitive without "To"* occurs in *Bened.* 135.11, quoted on p. 82; *Chron.* 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>d</sup>, quoted on p. 82.

3. *A Passive Infinitive as Complement to an Auxiliary, but with Beon (Wesan) Understood*, is occasionally found, as in *Ælf. Gr.* 227.10, *Chr.* 1260, *Gnomic Sayings* 94<sup>a, b</sup>, 122<sup>a, b</sup>.

4. *The Predicative Infinitive Is Omitted after Auxiliary Verbs* at times, especially if the omitted infinitive denotes motion, as in *Oros.* 86.3: Ðeh ic ær sæde ðæt we to helle sceolden = 0. Cf. Wülfing, *l. c.*, II, §§ 388–397; Riggert, *l. c.*, pp. 9 ff.

5. *The Auxiliary Verb Is Omitted* occasionally, as in *Ælf. Hom.* II. 560<sup>t</sup>: Se bið wurðe ðæt hine man *arwurðian*, seðe of ðisum life færð to engla gefean and heofenlicum wurðmynte (or predicative with accusative subject?); *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 168: Ða geseah he him on ða swiðran healfe ðær he on gebedum stod swa swa he on mennisce gelicnysse on lichaman hine *ateowan*, and Ða wæs he ærest swiðe afyrht (or predicative with accusative subject?); *Laws* 166.3: synoð . . . , on ðam wæsse ærcebiseop Wulfhelme mid eallum ðæm æðelum mannum 7 wiotan, ðe Æðelstan cyning *gegaderian* (Liebermann would supply *mihle*); *ib.* 222(2): ælc ceapscip frið hæbbe, ðe binnan muðan *cuman* (*sic!*). In the following passages, the italicized words may be infinitives with auxiliaries to be supplied, or they may possibly be plural subjunctives to the indefinite *man*: *Laws* 241 (14 D): And saneta Marian freolstida ealle *wurðian* (other MSS.: *wurðie*) man georne; *ib.* 263 (3 D): Ðonne bete man ðæt eircgrið . . . he ðæs cyninges fullan mundbryce 7 Ða mynsterclænsunge begite, swa ðarto gebirige, 7 wið God huru ðingian (other MSS.: *ðingie*) georne; *ib.* 264 (4 D): betan (other MSS.: *bete*) man georne. — Cf. Note 4 to Chapter VIII.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF MOTION AND OF REST.

By the phrase, "the Predicative Infinitive with Verbs of Motion," I refer to the infinitive in such sentences as the following: *Mart.* 26.10: *culfre com fleogan* of heofonum ond gesæt ofer his heafde; *Gen.* 1479: *culufuran . . .*, seo eft ne *com* to lide *fleogan*; in which the infinitive, instead of denoting purpose, seems equivalent, in modern English, to a predicate present participle: 'The dove came flying from heaven,' etc. Various other names have been proposed for this use of the infinitive: "modal," by Koch,<sup>1</sup> in his *Englische Grammatik*, 1865; "definitive," by Professor March,<sup>2</sup> in his *A Comparative Grammar of the Anglo-Saxon Language*, 1869; "pleonastic," by Dr. Steig,<sup>3</sup> in his "Ueber den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altniederdeutschen," 1884; and "phraseological," by Dr. Prati,<sup>4</sup> in his "Syntax des Heliand," 1885. To this list might be added still another name, "co-ordinate," since several writers (as Koch, Mätzner, K. Köhler, Wülfing, and Riggert) declare that at times the predicative infinitive expresses an action co-ordinate with that expressed by the finite verb. The grounds for these various names and for my own choice are given in my chapter on "The Origin of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon," section v. It should be added that under "the Predicative Infinitive after Verbs of Motion" I do not include the infinitive of verbs of motion after the adhortative (*w)uton*, a separate chapter being devoted to the latter idiom.

In the predicative use with verbs of motion, the infinitive is invariably uninflected. The construction is far more common in Anglo-Saxon poetry than in prose; but the idiom is far more frequent in prose than has been thought hitherto. Instead of only four examples in the prose, as claimed by Professor Shearin,<sup>5</sup> there are seventeen examples, or twenty, if we include three examples of the predicative infinitive after verbs of rest (*stondan*, 'stand,' and *licgan*, 'lie'). The examples not cited by Dr. Shearin are: *Wærf.* 84.20, 25; — *Pr. Gu.* I. 26, V. 7, X. 5; — *Mart.* 26.10, 90.14, 182.4, 200.12; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1039; — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 15.178, 292; — *Apol.* 29.10; — to which we may add *Pr. Gu.* V. 274<sup>a, b</sup>, in which the infinitive follows *stondan*; and *Ælf. L. S.* 512.417, in which the infinitive follows *licgan*. Moreover, the scope and the life of this idiom in the prose have been underrated by both Dr. Schrader<sup>6</sup> and Dr. Shearin:<sup>7</sup> instead of being found only in Alfred, in the non-Ælfrician Homilies, and in Wærferth, it occurs also, as the above list shows, in the prose

<sup>1</sup> *L. c.*, II, p. 61. This term is the one most frequently used by writers upon Anglo-Saxon syntax.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, § 448.4: "General motion defined by specific motion: *feon gewat*," etc.

<sup>3</sup> *L. c.*, p. 337.

<sup>4</sup> *L. c.*, § 142.

<sup>5</sup> Shearin, *l. c.*, p. 13. It is only fair to add, however, that the idiom under discussion by me was only indirectly connected with the main theme of Dr. Shearin's monograph, *The Expression of Purpose in Old English Prose*, and that he devoted thereto only a brief note.

<sup>6</sup> Schrader, *l. c.*, p. 70, declares that this use of the infinitive is not found in Ælfric, but, when he wrote, in 1887, the third volume of Skeat's edition of Ælfric's *Lives of Saints*, in which the example occurs, had not been published.

<sup>7</sup> Shearin, *l. c.*, p. 13.

*Guthlac*, in *An Old English Martyrology*, in *Apollonius*, and in *Ælfric's Lives of Saints*. In the poetry the predicative infinitive is found over one hundred times, and occurs in most of the poems.

Normally the infinitive follows the finite verb, as in *Beow.* 703 (*Com on wanre niht scriðan sceadugenga*), but occasionally it precedes,<sup>1</sup> especially in dependent clauses, as in *Dan.* 698 (*ðeah ðe feonda folc feras cwome*) and *Ps.* 76.15 (*ðonne ligette lixan cwoman*).

The infinitive is active in sense as well as in form.

The following verbs of motion are followed by a predicative infinitive of a verb of motion (occasionally of other verbs, as *blican*, *lixan*, and *scinan*, each meaning 'shine'; and *hlynnan*, 'resound'):

*becuman* [bi-], *come*.  
*cuman*, *come*.  
*dælan* (?), *distribute*.

*fleon*, *fly*.  
*gewitan*, *go, depart*.

The verbs most frequently so used are *cuman* and *gewitan*. The various infinitives that follow the verbs named above are given, in alphabetic sequence after each verb, in my statistics, and need not be named here. The number of infinitives is far larger than the number of finite verbs; but, as the usage is substantially the same, regardless of the verb, I quote only a few examples. It remains only to add that at times it is difficult, if not impossible, to decide whether we have the predicative or the final use of the infinitive in some passages, — concerning which see section v of Chapter XIV.

Typical examples are: —

*becuman* [bi-], *come*:

*And.* 789: *ðæt he on Mambre becom beorhte blican*.

*Beow.* 2553: *stefn in becom heaðotorht hlynnan under harne stan*. [But Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 41, construes differently.]

*Chr.* 1114: *ðær blod ond wæter butu ætsomne ut bicwomane fore eagna gesyhð, rinnan fore rincum ða he on rode wæs*.

*cuman*, *come*:

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 15.329: *And ða ure drihten him self com of heofonum to eorðan astigan*, and hire sona to cwæð = 218.370: loose paraphrase.

*Bede* 400.28: *ða ic hreowsende wæs, ða ic mid ðy heafde 7 mid honda com on ðone stan dryfan; 7 se ðuma gebrocen wæs, 7 eac swylce seo geðeodnes ðæs heafdes tobrocen wæs 7 tolesed* = 290.19: *euenit . . . ut hunc [= lapidem] capite ac manu, quam capiti ruens subposueram, tangerem, atque infracto pollice capitis quoque iunctura solueretur*.

*Beow.* 2915: *syððan Higelac cwom faran flotherge on Fresna land*.

*Gen.* 852: *ða com feras frea ælmihtig ofer midne dæg*.

*Pr. Gu.* X. 5: *ða comon ðær semninga in twa swalewan fleogan = forte hirundines duae subito domum intrantes, velut magna laetitia . . . sese non haesitantes humeris . . . Guthlaci imposuerunt*.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 15.292: *And ða ðær com fleogan drihtnes ængel and he ða gehalgode ðæt . . . wæter* = 217.326: *veniat super me sancta tua columba, . . . et benedicat aquam*.

<sup>1</sup> See Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 41.



*Boeth.* 8.16: *ða com ðær gan* in to me heofencund Wisdom = 4.2: *adstitisse mihi supra uerticem uisa est mulier.*

*Beow.* 1163: *ða cwom* Wealhðeo forð *gan.* — *Ib.* 1644: *ða com* in *gan* ealdor ðegna (may be final, as Dr. Shearin,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 237, holds).

*Pr. Gu.* I. 26: *ða com ðær* sum wif *yrnan* of ðam huse, . . . and cleopode = ecce ex aula propriante (*sic!*), . . . mulier . . . *currens* clamabat.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1039: *ða com ðær* færlice *yrnan* an ðearle wod cu. [Cf. *ib.* XXXI. 1043: *com* . . . *yrnende.*]

*Rid.* 23.2: *Ætsomne cwom* sixtig monna to wægstæde wicgum *ridan.*

*Pr. Gu.* V. 7: *ða comon* semninga twegen deoflu to him of ðære lyfte *slidan*, and *ða* to him cuðlice spræcon and cwædon = subito coram illo, velut ex aere lapsi, efferis vultibus duo zabuli humano habitu se obtulerunt, ac etc.

*dælan*, distribute, diffuse:

*Gen.* 2192: tungel, *ða* nu rume heora wuldorfæstne wlite wide *dælað* ofer brad brymu beorhte *scinan* (or may be final?).

*fleon*, flee:

*Doomsday* 240: se earma *flyhð* uncræftiga slæp, sleac mid sluman *slincan* on hinder.

*gewitan*, go, depart:

*Beow.* 124: ðanon eft *gewat* huðe hremig to ham *feran.*

*Beow.* 27: Him *ða* Scyld *gewat* to gescæphwile felahror *feran* on frean wære (predicative according to Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 39, but final according to Dr. Shearin,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 237).

*And.* 786: *Gewat* he *ða* *feran.*

*Gen.* 1471: *gewat fleogan* eft mid lacum hire.

*Gen.* 1050: Him *ða* Cain *gewat gongan* geomormod gode of gesyhðe.

*And.* 238: *Gewat* . . . *gangan* on greote.

*Beow.* 234: *Gewat* him *ða* to waroðe wigce *ridan* ðegn Hroðgares.

*Beow.* 2569, 2570: *Gewat* *ða* byrnende gebogen *scriðan*, to gescipe *scyndan.*

*Gen.* 2161: *Gewat* him *ða* se healdend ham *siðian.*

The predicative use of the infinitive after verbs of motion is common in the Low Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section v.

Occasionally, too, after verbs of rest we have a similar predicative use of an infinitive, as in the following: — *Ælf. L. S.* 512.417: *ða* gelamp hit on ðam dagum ðe ðas forsprecenan ðingc gewurdon, ðæt god ælmihtig gescifte ænne swa geradne mann, ðe ahte gewæld ealles ðæs splottes æt celian dune, ðær ðæt scræf wæs tomiddes ðe *ða* seofon halgan *lagon* inne *slapan*;<sup>1</sup> — *And.* 1712: Hie *ða* gebrohton æt brimes næsse on wægðele wigan unslawne; *stodon* him *ða* on ofre æfter *reotan* (but Dr. Riggert, *l. c.* p. 45, considers the infinitive final in sense); — *Pr. Gu.* V. 274<sup>a, b</sup>: *ða* geseah he ðær *standan* twegen ðara awerigdra gasta *wepan* swyðe and *geomrian* = a sinistra stantes duos satellites *lugentes* . . . *conspicit* (or possibly *wepan* and *geomrian* are co-ordinate with *standan*?). In the former of the two following examples the infinitive may be predicative, but it is more probably final in each: *Ælf. Hept.*: *Judges* 4.18<sup>b</sup>: He eode *ða* in earhlice swiðe, and seo wimman mid hire hwitle bewreah hine sona, let hine *licgan* swa *ællutan* his feondum = Qui ingressus tabernaculum ejus

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Einkenkel,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 1076.

et opertus ab ea pallio, dixit ad eam; — *Gen.* 842: *sæton onsundran bidan selfes gesceapu heofoncyniges*: see Chapter X, pp. 134 and 142.

This predicative use of the infinitive after verbs of rest is common in the High Germanic languages, especially in New High German: see Chapter XVI, section v.

Gradually the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion and of rest began to be supplanted by the predicate nominative of the present participle, *com* . . . *yrnan* becoming *com* . . . *yrnende* (as in *Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1039, 1043), — an evolution discussed in the chapter on "Some Substitutes for the Anglo-Saxon Infinitive."

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH "WUTON."<sup>1</sup>

Predicative, too, may be considered the use of the infinitive to complete the sense of the adhortative (*w*)*uton*, 'let.' When so used in Anglo-Saxon, the infinitive is uninflected. Regularly, too, the infinitive is active, only three examples having been found of the passive infinitive so used. Whether active or passive, the infinitive invariably follows (*w*)*uton*.

Regularly the infinitive that is active in form is active in sense.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Of the active infinitive used as the complement of (*w*)*uton* about 614 examples have been found, 572 in the prose and 42 in the poetry. As in the poetry, so in Early West Saxon, the idiom is relatively infrequent: only 25 examples occur in the whole of Alfred. No example has been found in the *Chronicle* or in *Wærferth*. On the other hand, the construction is relatively frequent in the *Laws*, in the *Blickling Homilies*, and in the *Gospels*, and is quite frequent in *Ælfric* (about 168 examples) and in *Wulfstan* (about 231 examples).

The construction is found with a large number of verbs, and these have such a diversity of meaning as not to admit of helpful classification. The following verbs occur approximately twenty times or more: *beon*, 'be;' *biddan*, 'pray;' *don*, 'do;' 'make;' *gan* [*gangan*, -o-], 'go;' *geðencan*, 'think;' 'consider;' *habban*, 'have;' *healdan*, 'hold;' 'preserve;' *lufian*, 'love;' and *wyrcean*, 'work;' 'make.' The following verbs occur in the poems: *acieran* [-e-], 'turn;' *agan*, 'own;' *beorgan*, 'protect;' *biddan*, 'pray;' *cuman*, 'come;' *cunnian*, 'attempt;' *cweman*, 'please;' *cyðan*, 'make known;' *earnian*, 'earn;' 'merit;' *eðstan*, 'hasten;' *feogan* [*feon*], 'hate;' *feran*, 'travel;' *gan* [*gangan*, -o-], 'go;' *gebeodan*, 'offer;' *gedon*, 'cause;' *geðencan*, 'think;' 'consider;' *habban*, 'have;' *healdan*, 'hold;' *helpan*, 'help;' *herian*, 'praise;' *hycgan*, 'think;' *hyhtan*, 'hope;' *lufian*, 'love;' *oferhycgan*, 'despise;' *oliccan*, 'please;' *oðwendan*, 'escape;' *scyndan*, 'hasten;' *secan*, 'seek;' *settan*, 'set up;' 'establish;' *staðelian*, 'establish;' *tilian*, 'strive for;' 'attempt;' *toweorpan*, 'destroy;' *wilnian*, 'desire;' and *wuldrian*, 'honor.' The following are found in Alfred: *acraeftan*, 'devise;' *agi(e)fan*, 'give;' *bidan*, 'await;' *biddan*, 'pray;' *biegan* [-e-], 'bend;' *bringan*, 'bring;' *brucan*, 'enjoy;' *cuman*, 'come;' *don*, 'do;' 'make;' *endian* [æ-], 'end;' *fon*, 'begin;' *forlætan*, 'leave;' *gebetan*, 'amend;' *gebiddan*, 'pray;' *geliefan* [-y-], 'believe;' *gereccan*, 'account;' 'consider;' *healdan*, 'hold;' *hebban*, 'lift up;' *iecan* [e-], 'increase;' *lætan*, 'allow;' *secgan*, 'say;' 'relate;' *sellan*, 'give;' *spyrian* [-u-], 'inquire;' and *tellan*, 'tell;' 'relate.'

As the construction is quite the same regardless of the verb used, it seems necessary to give only a few examples: —

<sup>1</sup> Variant forms are *uton*, (*w*)*utan*, (*w*)*utun*, *uten*, *ute*: see notes at the end of this chapter. For the evolution in the meaning of (*w*)*uton*, see Chapter XIV, section vi.

**acierran**, *turn, go:*

*Fallen Angels* 217: *Uton acerran* ðider.

**agi(e)fan**, *give back:*

*Boeth.* 103.5: *Wutun agifan* ðæm esne his wif = 87.42: *Donamus comitem uiro.*

**beon**, *be:*

*Laws* 300, I Cnut, c. 20<sup>b</sup>: *utan beon* a urum hlaforde holde.

*Bl. Hom.* 131.1: *Uton beon* ælmesgeorne.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 414<sup>b</sup>: Ac *uton* we *beon* carfulle, ðæt etc.

*Wulf.* 119.12<sup>b</sup>: *utan beon* a urum hlaforde holde. — *Ib.* 145.33<sup>c</sup>: *uton beon* eadmode.

**biddan**, *pray:*

*Chr.* 774: *Utan* . . . *biddan* Bearn Godes ond ðone bliðan Gæst, ðæt he us gescilde wið seeaðan wæpnum.

*Bede* 98.27<sup>a</sup>: *Uton biddan* . . . God = 81.29<sup>a</sup>: *Obsecremus* Deum.

*Bl. Hom.* 159.32: *utan* we *biddan* ða fæmnan S. Marian ðæt heo etc.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 364<sup>t</sup>: *Uton nu biddan* ðone . . . Hælend, ðæt etc.

*Wulf.* 142.13: *uton biddan* urne drihten.

**brucan**, *enjoy:*

*Oros.* 86.1: *Uton nu brucan* ðisses undernmetes swa ða sculon ðe hiora æfengifl on helle gefeccean sculon = 85.33: *Prandete*, tamquam apud inferos coenaturi.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 618<sup>b</sup> 1: *Uton forði brucan* ðæs fyrstes ðe us God forgeaf.

**don**, *do, make:*

*Boeth.* 75.16<sup>a</sup>: *Uton nu*, gif ðe swa ðince, ecan ðone anwald 7 ðæt geniht, *don* ðær weorðscipe to, 7 gereccan ðonne ða ðreo to anum = 68.22: *Addamus igitur sufficientiae potentiaeque reuerentiam*, ut haec tria unum esse iudicemus.

*Laws* 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 43<sup>a</sup>: Ac *uton don*, swa us ðea[r]f is.

*Bened.* 21.9: *Utan don* swa swa se witega myngað = 42.7: *Faciamus quod ait propheta.*

*Bl. Hom.* 205.28: *uton wit* . . . *don* . . . fæsten.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 100<sup>b</sup> 2: *uton don* ðearfum and wannspedigum sume hiððe ure goda.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 368: *Uton don* criste ðancung.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 37.20<sup>b</sup>: *Uton hine ofslean* and *don* hine on ðone . . . pytt and segan = Venite, occidamus eum et mittamus in cisternam veterem! dicamusque.

*Wulf.* 20.1<sup>a</sup>: *utan* we *don*, swa us mycel ðearf is (a very common locution in *Wulfstan*). — *Ib.* 166.1: *utan don*, swa us neod is.

**efstan**, *hasten:*

*Beow.* 3101: *Uton nu efstan* oðre siðe seon and secean searogeðræc, wundur under wealle.

*Bl. Hom.* 109.9: *Uton* we nu *efstan* etc.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 526<sup>b</sup>: *Uton forði efstan* to urum eðele.

*Wulf.* 75.21: *uton nu efstan* and ealle ure lifwegas geornlice rihtan.

**forlætan**, *leave, abandon:*

*Solil.* 49.12: *uton ne forlætan* gyet ðas boc = Non *sinam* omnino *concludi* hunc libellum.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 380<sup>m</sup> 3: *Uton* we herian . . . Drihten . . . and yfel *forlætan*.

*Wulf.* 141.28<sup>a</sup>: *Uton* nu, leofan men, gebeorgan us wið swilce eardungstowe and wendon (*sic!*) anrædlice to urum drihtne and *forlætan* ælc unriht and don to gode, locahwæt we magon.

**gan** [gangan, -o-], *go*:

*Beow.* 2648: *wutun* *gangan* to, *helpan* *hildefruman*.

*Gen.* 839: *Uton* *gan* on ðysne weald innan.

*And.* 1356: *Utan* *gangan* eft.

*Bl. Hom.* 247.1: *utan* *gangan* . . . and hine ut *forlætan*.

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Gen.* 4.8: *Uton* *gan* ut = *Egrediamur* foras. — *Deut.* 13.6<sup>a</sup>: *Uton* *gan* and ðeowian fremdum godum = *Eamus* et *serviamus* diis alienis.

*Gosp.*: *Mk.* 6.37<sup>b</sup>: *Uton* *gan*, and mid twam hundred penegon hlafas bigan = *Euntes* *emamus* *ducentis* *denariis* *panes*. — *Mk.* 14.42: *Arisað*, *uton* *gan* = *Surgite*, *eamus*.

**geðencan**, *think*, *consider*:

*Har.* 278: *Uton*, la, *geðencan* geond ðas worulde ðæt we hælende heran onginnen.

*Laws* 146, I *Æthelstan*, c. 2<sup>a</sup>: *Uton* *geðencan*, hu *Jacob* cwæð.

*Bl. Hom.* 91.13: *Uton* we forðon *geðencean* etc.

*Wulf.* 112.6: *utan* *geðencan*, ðæt we habbað ænne . . . fæder.

**lufian**, *love*:

*Hymn* 3: *Wuton* wuldrian weorada dryhten halgan hlioðorecwidum, hiofonrices weard *lufian* liofwendum, lifes agend.

*Laws* 268, VIII *Æthelred*, c. 43, § 1: *utan* *God* *lufian*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 52<sup>b</sup> 2: *Uton* *lufian* ure gebroðra. — *Ib.* II. 316<sup>b</sup> 3: *Uton* *lufian* *God*.

*Wulf.* 94.13: *utan* *lufian* *god* ofer ealle oðre ðing.

**wuldrian**, *glorify*:

See *Hymn* under *lufian*.

**wyrcean** [wircean], *work*, *make*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 160<sup>b</sup> 2: *uton* . . . *god* weorc *wyrcean*.

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Gen.* 1.26: *Uton* *wircean* *man* = *Faciamus* *hominem*.

*Mat.* 17.4<sup>b</sup>: *uton* *wyrcean* her ðreo eardungstowa = *faciamus* *hic* *tria* *tabernacula*.

*Wulf.* 41.1: *utan* ðurh æghwæt godes willan *wyrcean*.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive as the complement of (*w*)*uton* is found only three times, as follows: *Ælf. L. S.* 242.68: *uton* *beon* *gehyrte*; — *Ælf. Hom.* I. 602<sup>a</sup> 3: *Uton* *awurpan* ðeostra weorc, and *beon* *ymbscopydde* mid leohtes wæpnum; repeated in the same, I. 604<sup>a</sup> 2.

The predicative infinitive with (*w*)*uton* is occasionally found in the other Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section vi.

## NOTES.

1. *The Adhortative "Veni" (or "Venite")*. — Several times in the Latin original we have the adhortative *veni* or *venite* in addition to the subjunctive of exhortation, in the *Heptateuch*: *Gen.* 11.7<sup>a</sup>: Soðlice *uton cuman* and *todælan ðær heora spræce* = *Venite igitur, descendamus et confundamus ibi linguam*; — *ib.* 19.32<sup>a, b</sup>: *Uton fordrencan urne fæder mid wine*, and *uton licgan mid him* = *Veni, inebriemus eum vino dormiamusque cum eo*; — *ib.* 37.20<sup>a, b, c</sup>: *Uton hine ofslean* and *don hine on ðone . . . pytt* and *secgan* = *Venite, occidamus eum et mittamus . . . dicamusque*; — *ib.* 31.44: *Ga hider near* and *uton syllan wedd* = *Veni, ergo et inemus foedus*. The same idiom is found, also, in the *Gospels*: *Mat.* 21.38<sup>a, b, c</sup>: *uton gan* and *ofslean hyne*, and *habban us hys æhta* = *Venite, occidamus eum, et habebimus (sic!) hæreditatem ejus*. With the foregoing, compare *L.* 20.14: *Her ys se yrfeweard: cumað, uton hine ofslean, ðæt seo æht ure sy* = *Hic est hæres, occidamus illum, ut nostra fiat hæreditas*; and notice, also, the use of *ga* in *Gen.* 31.44, quoted in the preceding part of this note.

2. *"(W)uton" to Be Supplied*. — In *Laws* 280, I Cnut, c. 2 (And Godes cyrican *grifðian* 7 *friðian* 7 *gelomlice secean* *saulum* to *hæle* 7 *us sylfum* to *ðearfe*), *(w)uton* is to be supplied, as Dr. Liebermann indicates.

3. *"Uten" for "(W)uton."* — Occasionally we have *uten* instead of *(w)uton*, as in *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 7.322 (*uten wurcæn (sic!) mihte on ðone . . . god*); *Bened.* 3.13 (*uten ahsien urne drihten*); etc.; etc.

4. *"Ute" for "(W)uton."* — Occasionally we have *ute* instead of *(w)uton*: *Boeth.* 17.8: *Ute nu tellan beforan swilcum deman swilce ðu wille* = 27.6: *quouis iudice de opum dignitatumque mecum possessione contende*; — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 14.51: *Ac ute we beon gemyn-die ure sawle ðearfe*; — *ib.* 14.53: *Ute gemunan ðæne . . . dæg*; — *ib.* 14.77: *ute gehyran hu etc.*; — *Wulf.* 173.7: *ute don eac swa, ealswa hi dydon*.

5. *Infinitive in "-e."* — Occasionally, as in *Laws* 269, I Æthelred, Expl.<sup>a</sup> (*uton ænne God . . . and ænne Cristendom ealle healde and ælcne hæðendom mid ealle aweorpan*), we have an infinitive in *-e*.

6. *The Infinitive Is to Be Supplied with "(W)uton"* in *Boeth.* 75.18: *Uton ðæs, forðæm hit is soð* = 68.22: a loose paraphrase with a subjunctive; *Solil.* 55.5: *Uton ðæs = 0*; and possibly in *Laws* 269, IX Æthelred, Expl.<sup>b</sup> but the text is here defective.

## CHAPTER VII.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH "BEON" ("WESAN").

The Predicative Infinitive with *beon* or *wesan* normally denotes (A) Necessity or Obligation, but occasionally denotes (B) Futurity or (C) Purpose. As will be seen, save in a few sporadic cases of (A) the infinitive is inflected. No example of the compound passive infinitive has been found.

#### A. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES NECESSITY OR OBLIGATION.

As to the voice of the infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denoting necessity or obligation, most students of the construction believe that, while the infinitive is normally passive in sense, occasionally it is active in sense. Among those that have expressed themselves to this effect may be mentioned Dr. Farrar, *l. c.*, pp. 34-35, 37; Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 136; Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 37; Dr. Tanger, *l. c.*, p. 312; and Dr. Wülffing, *l. c.*, II, p. 47. Indeed, I know of but one<sup>1</sup> noteworthy divergent opinion; and this divergence, I must believe, is apparent rather than real. Dr. Henry Sweet seems to hold that the infinitive is always passive in sense. In his *Anglo-Saxon Reader*, 7th ed. (1894), p. lxxxiv, he says of the inflected infinitive: "With the verb *be* it expresses necessity or duty in a passive sense: *monige scylda beoð to forberanne*, 'many sins are to be tolerated' (3.24). So also 3, 100," which reads: "*Eac is to wietanne ðæt æresð bið se wah ðurhðyrelod*." Again, in his *New English Grammar*, II. (1898), p. 119, we read: "In Old English the supine is used in a passive sense to express what must be or ought to be done: *ða ðing ðe to donne sind*, 'the things which are to be done.' We still keep up this passival use in the phrase *a house to let*; but, as we cannot do this with other verbs, we have to use the passive form in such constructions as *this house is to be let or sold*, whence there is a tendency to say *a house to be let*. Originally these passival uses were probably simply ambiguous: *to donne* meant indifferently 'for some one to do' or 'to be done by some one.'" But, in the last sentence quoted by me, Dr. Sweet may intend to modify the earlier unqualified statements so as to allow that occasionally in Anglo-Saxon we have with *beon* (*wesan*) an infinitive that is active in sense. The foregoing opinions are with reference to the inflected infinitive only. This general view seems to me substantiated by the investigation of Dr. Farrar and by the present study. As already indicated, I find a few sporadic instances of the uninflected infinitive denoting necessity, some active in sense and some passive in sense.

Normally the infinitive follows the principal verb, as in *Bened.* 39.5: *eal ðenung is to donne on ðæt ylce gemet* = 72.12: *ita agatur*; but at times it precedes, as in *Wulf.* 57.15<sup>a</sup>: *geredað æfre, hwæt him to donne sy* and *hwæt to forlætenne*; and at times the same principal verb is both preceded and followed by the infinitive, as in the passage just quoted from *Wulfstan*. The foregoing

<sup>1</sup> I am not sure as to the position of Dr. Riggert. On p. 68 of his dissertation we read: "Der Infinitiv hat stets aktive Form; jedoch wird durch den aktiven Infinitiv ein passiver Sinn zum Ausdruck gebracht (cf. ahd. *nist iu thaz zī wizzanne*)."

applies primarily to the infinitive that is passive in sense, for, when active in sense, the infinitive usually precedes the finite verb, as may be seen by an inspection of the examples given later in this chapter.

### 1. The Infinitive Passive in Sense.

#### I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED.

In the two following examples, one from Alfred and one from Ælfric, we have an uninflected infinitive denoting necessity or obligation and passive in sense: —

*Bede* 78.26: Ond hwæt elles *is* to secenne wið ðæm hungre nemne ondlifen, wið ðurst drync, wið hæto celnis, wið cyle hrægl, wið werignesse reste, wið untrymnesse lacedom *secan*? = 56.3: Et quid est aliud contra famem alimenta, contra sitim potum, contra aestum auras, contra frigus uestem, contra lassitudinem requiem quaerere, nisi medicamentum quidem contra egritudines *explorare*? [*Secan* may be considered active here. See p. 78 above.]

*Ælf. L. S.* 336.223: ðas feower ana *syndon* to underfonne on geleaffulre gelaðunge and *forlætan* (*sic*!) ða oðre ðe lease gesetnysse gesetton.

#### II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED.

Of the inflected infinitive denoting necessity or obligation and passive in sense, about 894 examples have been found; of which only ten examples occur in the poetry. As is evident from the instances quoted below, sometimes (about 654 times) the subject of the principal verb is personal, sometimes (about 240 times) the subject is impersonal.

The ten examples in the poems are as follows: —

*S. & S.* 54: Ac hulic *is* se organ ingemyndum *to begonganne* ðam ðe his gast wile meltan wið morðre, mergan of sorge, asceadan of scyldum?

*Seizure and Death of Alfred* 13: Nu *is* *to gelyfenne* to ðan leofan gode, ðæt hi blission bliðe mid Criste.

*Rid.* 42.8: ðæt *is* *to geðencanne* ðeoda gehwylcum, wisfæstum werum, hwæt seo wiht sy!

*Rid.* 29.12: Micel *is* *to hycganne* wisfæstum menn hwæt seo wiht sy.

*Rid.* 32.23: Micel *is* *to hycgenne* wisum woðboran hwæt [sio] wiht sie.

*Met.* 21.42: ðonne wile he secgan, ðæt ðære sunnan *sie* beorhtnes ðiostro beorna gehwylcum *to metanne* wið ðæt micle leoht godes ælmihtiges (or absolute?).

*Gu.* 502: micel *is* *to secgan* (*sic*!) eall æfter orde, ðæt he on elne adreag.

*Gu.* 510: *is* ðæs gen fela *to secgenne*, ðæs ðe he sylfa adreag.

*And.* 1481: Mycel *is* *to secganne*, langsum leornung, ðæt he in life adreag, eall æfter orde!

*Ps.* 77.10: *nis* *to wenanne*, ðætte wolde god hiora gasta mid him gyman awiht = 77.8: non est creditus cum Deo spiritus ejus.

As to the prose, the construction is very common in Early West Saxon: Alfred has about 473 examples, though, as we shall see later (in Chapter XIV), only when suggested by the Latin directly (usually) or indirectly. It is rare in the *Chronicle*, in the *Laws*, in the *Gospels*, and in *Wulfstan*; and, as compared with Alfred, is rare in Ælfric, who has about 115 examples to Alfred's 474.



The idiom occurs with so many different verbs in prose that it seems impossible to make helpful groups thereof. The verbs most frequently occurring in this construction are *cyðan*, 'make known;' *don*, 'do,' 'make,' 'cause;' *forlætan*, 'leave,' 'forsake;' *geliefan*, 'believe;' *geðencan*, 'think,' 'consider;' *healdan*, 'hold,' 'consider;' *manian*, 'admonish' (which occurs about 243 times, in Alfred); *secgan*, 'say,' 'tell;' *smeagan*, 'consider;' *understandan*, 'understand;' *witan*, 'know;' and *wundrian*, 'wonder.'

Typical examples are:—

**cyðan**, *make known*:

*Greg.* 263.9: Ðæt is to *cyðanne* ðe him swingellan ondrædað, ðæt hie etc. = 198.12: *Dicendum namque est flagella timentibus.* — *Ib.* 287.3: Ongean ðæt is to *cyðanne* ðæm ðe beoð to hrade, . . . ðæt etc. = 216.19: 0. — *Ib.* 189.1: Suaðeah is ðæm to *cyðanne*, ðæt etc. = 140.20: Quibus profecto *intimandum* est etc. — *Ib.* 201.15: Ðam hlaforðum is eac to *cyðanne* ðætte hie etc. = 150.15: Domini *admonendi sunt* quia etc. — *Ib.* 301.14: Ðam eaðmodum is to *cyðanne* ðætte etc. = 228.6: *Dicatur ergo humilibus*, quia etc.

**don**, *do, make, cause*:

*Bede* 50.10<sup>a</sup>: ræddon hwæt him to *donne* wære, hwær him wære fultum to secanne = 30.16: est consilium, quid *agendum*, ubi quaerendum esset praesidium. — *Ib.* 128.13: hwæt him selest to *donne* wære = 108.18<sup>b</sup>: quid *ageret* (or with adjective?). — *Ib.* 68.7: ðonne is hit of lufan to *donne* = 50.7: *agendum* est.

*Chron.* 215<sup>t</sup>, 1083 E<sup>a</sup>: nyston hwet heom to *donne* wære.

*Laws* 368, II Cnut, c. 84<sup>a</sup>: smeage swyðe georne, hwæt him sig to *donne* 7 hwæt to forganne.

*Bl. Hom.* 199.30: beahsodan, hwæt him ðæs to *donne* wære.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 314<sup>b</sup> 2: hwæt is us to *donne*?

*Wulf.* 173.4: ah hi dydon, swa heom to *donne* wæs.

*Læce.* 62.21: ðas ðing sint to *donne*.

**forlætan**, *leave, forsake*:

*Bede* 70.12: seo æftere cneoris . . . alle gemete is to forbeorenne 7 to forlætenne = 51.3: secunda . . . a se omni modo debet abstinere. — *Ib.* 292.14: wundor . . . , ðe us nis to forlætenne = 224.20: Sane nullatenus *prætereundum* arbitror miraculum.

*Wærf.* 23.18: ne wene ic no, ðæt me sy an ðæra spella to forlætanne = 164 B<sup>2</sup>: Sed unum dicam, quod ab eo narratum *prætereundum* nullo modo aestimo. — *Ib.* 109.18: ðæt nis na mid swigunge to forlætanne = B. 140 A<sup>1</sup>: quod silentio *prætereundum* non est.

*Pr. Gu.* XIX. 1: Swylce nys eac mid idelnysse to forlætanne ðæt wundor = Non me . . . praesagium narrarre piget.

*Wulf.* 51.20: hwæt him to *donne* sy and hwæt to forlætanne.

*Læce.* 5.28: Læcedomas on hwilce tid blod sie to forganne, on hwilce to forlætenne.

**geliefan** [-y-], *believe*:

*Bede* 224.22: ðæs seðel wære ece to gelyfenne in heofonum = 172.6: cujus sedes aeterna . . . in caelis esset credenda. — *Ib.* 372.27: Is ðæt to gelyfenne, ðætte etc. = 275.16: ut *credibile* est. — *Ib.* 228.23: to gelyfenne is ðæt etc. = 174.9: *credendum* est quia etc.

*Chron.* 158<sup>b</sup>, 1036 C: Nu is to gelyfenne to ðan leofan Gode.

*Wærf.* 328.6: *ðæt clænsiende fyr is to gelyfanne* = 396 A<sup>1</sup>: *purgatorius ignis credendus est.* — *Ib.* 146.2: *hwæðer hit to gelyfenne sy* = B. 174 A: *nunquid non credendum est.*

*Bl. Hom.* 29.15: *Us is to gelyfenne ðæt etc.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 442<sup>b</sup>: *Micele swiðor is to gelyfenne ðæt he etc.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 100.176: *Se god is to gelyfanne.* — *Ib.* XXIII B. 108: *is to gelyfanne ðæt etc.*

**geðencan, think, consider:**

*Bede* 84.3<sup>b</sup>: *Mid . . . mode is to smeageanne 7 to geðencenne ðæt etc.* = 59.5: *pensandum est.*

*Boeth.* 52.2: *Eac is ðeos bisen to geðencenne* = 0.

*Greg.* 385.24: *Ðonne is us [ðæt] swiðe wocorlice to geðencenne ðætte ure Hælend etc.* = 302.1: *Vigilanti itaque consideratione pensandum est, quod cum Jesus etc.* — *Ib.* 59.21<sup>a</sup>: *Ymb ðyllic is to geðencenne & to smeageanne, forðam etc.* = 34.27: *Cui considerandum quoque est etc.*

*Wærf.* 239.27<sup>a</sup>: *in ðære wisan us is to sceawianne 7 to geðencanne, ðæt etc.* = 292 C<sup>2</sup>: *Qua in re considerandum est.* — *Ib.* 328.26: *us is geornlice to geðencanne . . . ðæt etc.* = 395 C<sup>1</sup>: *pensandum sollicitate est.*

*Bl. Hom.* 19.31: *Eac is to geðencenne hwæt Drihten spræc.*

**healdan, hold:**

*Bede* 68.15<sup>b</sup>: *seo lufu is . . . to haldanne* = 50.14: *caritas . . . tenenda est.*

*Greg.* 119.2<sup>a</sup>: *on ðære heortan is a sio eaðmodnes to healdanne* = 82.16: *Servanda . . . est et in corde humilitas.*

*Bened.* 6.16: *Hu on sumera seo nihtlice tid to healdenne sy* = 64.10: *Qualiter aetatis tempore agatur nocturna laus.* — *Ib.* 7.4: *Hwylc gemet on ðære bote to healdenne sy* = 90.13: *Qualis debeat esse modus excommunicationis.* — *Ib.* 49.3: *Ðis is mid gesceade to healdenne ðam ðe ascyrede syn fram . . . gereorde* = 92.1: *Privati autem a mensæ consortio, ista erit ratio.* — *Ib.* 60.11: *Untrumra manna gymen is to healdenne toforan eallum ðingum* = 112.14: *cura . . . super omnia adhibenda est.* — *Ib.* 110.5: *Nis na ðis be munecum anum to healdene* = 176.11: *Non solum autem Monachum . . . stabilire potest.*

*Ælf. Æthelw.* 6: *ðeawa . . . , ðe synd to healdenne* = *agenda sunt.*

*Wulf.* 270.16: *ðas feower sinoðas syndon to healdenne.*

*Læce.* 63.18: *hwæt him sie to healdanne.*

**manian [-o-], admonish:**

*Bede* 70.26: *heo seondon to monienne* = 51.19: *admonendi sunt.*

*Greg.* 13.20: *Ðætte on oðre wisan sint to manianne weras, on oðre wiif* = 130.6: *Aliter namque admonendi sunt viri, atque aliter feminæ.* So about 241 times in Gregory.

**secgan, say:**

*Bede* 208.32: *bi ðon her æfter in heora tiid is to secgenne* = 163.17: *dicendum est.* — *Ib.* 334.30: *is nu to secgenne* = 254.31: *dicamus.*

*Boeth.* 41.3: *Ðæt is nu hraðost to secganne, ðæt ic wilnode weorðfullice to libbanne etc.* = 0.

*Greg.* 215.6: *Ðæm ungeðyldegum is to secganne ðæt etc.* = 162.4: *Dicendum est impatientibus.* — *Ib.* 261.3: *Him is to secgeanne ðæt hie etc.* = 196.16: no Latin here, but is preceded by *admonendi sunt.*

*Bl. Hom.* 63.16: *Nis ðæt no be eallum demum gelice to secggenne.*

*Wærf.* 139.32: *gif hwylce syn nu gyt to secganne* = B. 168 A: *In objectione*

meæ quæstiunculæ patuit causa rationis. Sed quæso te, si qua *sunt* adhuc de hujus viri virtutibus, subjunge.

*Wulf.* 204.2: *ðider scylan wicean and wigleras, and raðest is to sæcgenne, ealle ða manfullan, ðe ær yfel worhton.*

**smeagan, consider:**

*Bede* 84.3<sup>a</sup>: *Mid . . . mode is to smeageanne 7 to geðencenne ðæt etc.* = 59.5: *pensandum est.*

*Greg.* 153.13: *manegu diglu ðing sindon nearolice to smeageanne* = 110.20: *sunt perscrutanda.* — *Ib.* 59.21<sup>b</sup>: *Ymb ðyllic is . . . to smeaganne, forðam etc.* = 34.27: *Cui considerandum quoque est etc.*

*Bened.* 16.9: *Gif . . . hwyrc læsse ðing sie to smeagenne* = 28.20: *Si qua vero minora agenda sunt.* — *Ib.* 15.6: *secge eallum embe hwæt neoda to smeagenne sy* = 26.16: *dicat ipse unde agitur.*

*Bl. Hom.* 33.17: *Ac us is to smeageanne ðæt etc.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 254<sup>t</sup>: *Us is to smeageanne ðæt word.* — *Ib.* I. 308<sup>m</sup>: *Us is to smeagenne hu seo clænnys wæs ðeonde.*

*Wulf.* 185.6<sup>a</sup>: *ðæt is ofer eal gemet to smeageanne and to sorgianne and on mycelre care to cweðanne.*

**understandan, understand:**

*Bened.* 23.7: *Nis butan tweon to understandenne se upstige* = 46.9: *Non aliud sine dubio . . . ascensus a nobis intelligitur.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 270<sup>b 1, 2</sup>: *nis forði nan ðing ðæron to understandenne lichamlice, ac is eall gastlice to understandenne.* — *Ib.* I. 132<sup>b</sup>: *Be ðisum is to understandenne hu etc.*

*Wulf.* 192.21: *ðæt is ðonne swa to understandenne, ðæt etc.* — *Ib.* 113.8: *ðonne is ðærtocan gyt to understandenne, ðæt we etc.*

**witan, know:**

*Bede* 334.26: *is hrædlice to witanne ðæt etc.* = 254.27: *intimandum.*

*Greg.* 157.14: *Eac is to witanne ðæt etc.* = 114.9: *Notandum itaque est.* — *Ib.* 269.19: *Eac is to witanne ðætte etc.* = 204.1: *Sciendum vero est, quod etc.*

*Laws* 442, *Wifmannes Bewedding, Insc.*, c. 2: *Æfter ðam is witanne (MS. B: to witanne), hwam ðæt fosterlean gebyrige.*

*Wærf.* 329.4: *us is ðæt to witanne . . . , ðæt etc.* = 396 C<sup>2</sup>: *Hoc tamen sciendum est.* — *Ib.* 281.3: *Eac us is to witane betweoh oðrum wisum, ðæt etc.* = 341 B<sup>1</sup>: *Sed inter hæc sciendum est.*

*Bl. Hom.* 129.26: *ðæt is ðonne geare to witenne.* — *Ib.* 63.35: *us is to witenne ðæt etc.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 110<sup>t</sup>: *Us is eac to witenne, ðæt etc.*

*Ælf. Gr.* 154.1: *is to witenne, ðæt etc.* = *Sciendum est.*

*Wulf.* 201.23: *eow is eac to witanne, ðæt etc.*

**wundrian, wonder, admire:**

*Bede* 178.11: *Ne ðæt swiðe to wundrienne is* = 145.23: *Nec mirandum.*

*Boeth.* 104.4: *ðæt is to wundrienne* = 88.12: *quod solum quanta dignum sit ammiratione.*

*Solil.* 12.24: *hu ðin godnes is to wundrienne* = *admiranda et singularis bonitas tua!*

*Wærf.* 67.31: *ða weorc us syndon swyðor to wundrienne* = 197 A: *illa magis miranda sint.*

*Bl. Hom.* 33.12: *Nis ðæt to wundrigenne.*

2. *The Infinitive Active in Sense.*

## I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED.

Twice we have an uninflected active infinitive denoting obligation or necessity, with an objective case: *Ælf. Hom. I. 400<sup>b</sup>*: Is nu forði munuchades mannum mid micelre gecnyrdnysse to forbugenne ðas yfelan gebysnunga, and *geefenlæcan (sic!)* ðam apostolum, ðæt hi, mid him and mid Gode, ðæt ece lif habban moton; *Ælf. L. S. 376.183*: Us is to secenne . . . ða bote æt gode, na æt ðam gramlicum wiccum, and mid ealra heortan urne hælend *gladian (sic!)*. As with the infinitive passive in sense, so here, when active in sense, the uninflected infinitive is second in a series.

## II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED.

In my judgment we have only a few examples of the inflected infinitive with *beon (wesan)* in which the sense is active, not passive, and in which the infinitive governs as an accusative<sup>1</sup> of the direct object what, in the passival use, would be the subject nominative. A few instances of the active use are found in Alfred and in Wærferth, but the majority are found in Ælfric. Dr. Farrar,<sup>2</sup> let me add, considers as active in sense a large number of inflected infinitives that to me seem passive in sense, as in the following: *Bede 50.10<sup>a, b</sup>*: ræddon hwæt him *to donne wære*, hwær him *wære fultum to secanne* = 30.16, 17: est consilium, quid *agendum*, ubi *quaerendum esset* praesidium; — *ib. 66.4<sup>a, b</sup>*: be heora ondlifne *is to ðencenne 7 to foreseonne* ðæt heo godum ðeawum lifgen = 49.8<sup>a, b</sup>: *cogitandum atque providendum est*.

I give a complete list of what seem to me the clearer cases, arranged alphabetically: —

**biddan, pray:**

*Ælf. Hom. II. 494<sup>b 3</sup>*: Us *is to biddenne* Drihtnes mildheortnysse, ðæt he ðisum mannum miltsige.

**brucan, enjoy:**

*Mart. 72.25*: Ða dagas *sindon* rihtlice to fæstenne, ond ðara metta *to brucenne* ðe men brucað on ðæt . . . fæsten.

**clænsi(g)an, cleanse:**

*Pr. Gu. V. 58*: ac on seofon nihta fyrstes fæste ne bið *to clænsienne* ðone man (Vercelli MS.: ac on seofon nihta fyrstes fæsten bið *to clænsigeanne* se man) = sed septenarum dierum valida castigatio jejunium est.

**cyðan, make known:**

*Greg. 187.15*: Ðam oferbliðum *is to cyðanne* ða unrotnessa ðe ðærafter cumað, 7 ðam unbliðum sint to cyðanne ða gefean ðe him gehatene sindon = 140.10: Lætis . . . *inferenda sunt tristitia* . . . ; tristibus vero inferenda sunt læta. [The second *to cyðanne* is probably passive in sense.]

**ehtan, punish, persecute:**

*Bede 72.9*: Forðon, swa swa bi ðam monnum is hwæthwugu to aræfnenne, ða ðurh unwisnesse synne fremmað, swa ðonne *is stronglice to ehtenne*, ða ðe him ne ondredað weotende syngian = 52.1: culpa . . . toleranda est, ita in his fortiter *insequenda*, qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.

<sup>1</sup> Occasionally a genitive or a dative.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.* p. 15.

**forbugan, avoid:**

*Ælf. Hom. I. 400<sup>b</sup>:* *Is nu forði munuchades mannum mid micelre gecnyrdnysse to forbugenne ðas yfelan gebysnunga, and geefenlæcan (sic!) ðam apostolum.*

**forswelgan, swallow:**

*Læce. 68.30:* *swelc swa bið ðreo beana ælce dæge to forswelganne 7 ðisum gelice drenças.*

**gearcian, prepare:**

*Ælf. L. S. XXIV. 21:* *ðysum is to gearcigenne ða reðestan wita.*

**gewitan, know:**

*Ælf. Hom. I. 294<sup>b</sup>:* *Nis na eow to gewitanne ða tid oððe ða handhwile ðe min Fæder gesette ðurh his mihte (or subjective?).*

**manian, mix (?) :**

*Greg. 125.13:* *Sua eac ðam larcowe is to monianne (Cot. MS.: to mengenne) ða lieðnesse wið ða reðnesse, & of ðam gemonngc wyrce gemetgunge, ðæt etc. = 88.4: Miscenda ergo est lenitas cum severitate.*

**metan, measure:**

*Boeth. 44.20:* *Forðam hit nis no to metanne ðæt geendodlice wið ðæt ungeendodlice = 46.57: infiniti uero atque finiti nulla umquam poterit esse collatio.* [The infinitive may be passive, but is probably active in sense. Concerning the use of *hit* in this sentence, compare Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 136: "As in the construction of the infinitive after nouns and adjectives the dependent infinitive interchanges with the subject infinitive (pp. 49 ff.), so with the predicative infinitive denoting purpose, obligation, etc., a construction occurs in M. E. in which the subject of the sentence comes to be used as the object of the infinitive. *A thing is to do* appears, often with the assistance of the expletive *it*, in the form *it is to do a thing*, meaning *it is necessary to do a thing*, in the same way that the Greek *ἐξῆστι* is used to denote necessity. The examples of this construction are not numerous in Chaucer. He appears to have retained the other form in most cases."]

**ongietan, understand:**

*Bede 224.19:* *Ac God ma wære to ongeotanne in ðrymme unbesændlicne (sic!), menniscum eagum ungesenelicne, almeahtigne, ecne = 172.1: Deum potius intellegendum maiestate incomprehensibilem, humanis oculis inuisibilem, omnipotentem, aeternum etc., before which is to be understood, from 171.20, solebat eum hortari.*

**secan, seek:**

*Ælf. L. S. 376.181:* *Us is to secenne . . . ða bote æt gode, na æt ðam gramlican wiccam, and mid ealra heortan urne hælend gladian (sic!) (or subjective?).* [Cf. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 137.]

**secgan, say:**

*Ælf. Hept.: De N. T. 21.14:* *Nys us na to secgenne ðone . . . morð (or subjective?).* [Cf. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 137.]

**sellan, give:**

*Læce. 63.37:* *him is to sellanne lactucas 7 suðerne popig inneweard. — Ib. 76.33:* *merce on wætre gesoden 7 swilca wyrta 7 migole drincan 7 ðynne win him is to sellanne wel scir.*

**underfon, receive, accept:**

*Ælf. Hom. II. 344<sup>b</sup> 2:* *ac swaðeah nis to underfonne nanes synfulles mannes æhta on his geendunge, ne his lic ne sy on haligre stowe bebyriged.*

**understandan, understand:**

*Ælf. L. S.* 354.258: *Us is to understandenne* ðas endebyrdnyssa (or subjective?).

**warni(g)an, warn:**

*Wærf.* 340.29: forðan him *is to warnianne* ðone rihtan dom ðam, ðe ær ne beoð his synna forlætene = 413 A<sup>2</sup>: *Qua ex re aperte datur intelligi quia hi quibus peccata dimissa non fuerint, ad evitandum iudicium sacris locis post mortem non valeant adjuvari.*

*Ælf. Gr.* 3.10: *is nu for ði godes ðeowum and mynstermannum georne to warnigenne*, ðæt seo halige lar on urum dagum ne acolige oððe ateorige.

**weorðian, honor:**

*Ælf. Hom. I.* 354<sup>t</sup>: *Ac us is to wurðigenne* mid micelre gecnyrdnyssse Cristes gebyrtdide.

**wundrian, admire:**

*Pr. Gu. III.* 63: And nu, hwæt, *ys swiðe to wundrianne* ða diglan mihte ures drihtnes and his mildheortnyssse domas = *O quam admiranda est divinae miserationis indulgentia, et quantum glorificanda paternae dilectionis providentia!*

### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

Regularly the infinitive of necessity is inflected, whether active or passive in sense. Sporadically, however, we find the infinitive uninflected, as in the examples given on pp. 98 and 102. In each of these examples the uninflected infinitive is the second in a series of two infinitives, the first in each series being inflected; and one may hold that the influence of the *to* of the first is carried over to the second infinitive, or, to state it differently, that *to* is omitted with the second infinitive because of its presence with the first infinitive; or, as I prefer to think, that the second infinitive is uninflected primarily because of its remoteness from the principal verb. Or, finally, the lack of inflection, occurring so seldom, may be due to mere chance.

### B. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES FUTURITY.

At times the inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denotes Futurity, is active in sense, and corresponds to the Latin periphrastic conjugation made up of the verb *sum* and the future participle, of which, indeed, it is usually a translation.

I give all of the clearer examples observed by me: —

**aliesan, redeem:**

*L.* 24.21: We hopedon ðæt he *to alysenne* wære Israhel = *Nos autem sperabamus quia ipse esset redempturus Israel.*

**cuman, come:**

*Gosp.* *Mat.* 11.3: Eart ðu ðe *to cumenne* eart = *Tu es qui venturus es?* Similarly: *Mat.* 11.14, 16.27; — *L.* 7.19, 20; 10.1; — *J.* 1.15.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II:* 11.106: Hwi nis se wyrðe ðæt he onfo ðinra metelafe, ðe mid ðe *is to cumenne* to engla gebeorscipe?

**cweðan, say, speak:**

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II:* 12.86: And ure drihten *is to cweðenne* ðonne he to ðam dome cymð: *Hospes eram et suscepistis me.*

**don, do:**

*L.* 22.23<sup>b</sup>: hi agunnon betwux him smeagan hwyrc of him *ðæt to donne wære* = *coeperunt quærere inter se, quis esset ex eis qui hoc factururus esset.*

**gefyllan, complete:**

*L.* 9.31: sædon his gewitendnesse *ðe he to gefyllenne wæs on hierusalem* = *dicebant excessum ejus, quem completurus erat in Jerusalem.*

**onfon, receive:**

*Bede* 224.26: *ðæt heo ðonne wæren from him ece mede to onfonne* = 172.9: *aeterna ab illo praemia essent percepturi.*

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 11.103: For hwi ne mot se ðearfa onfon ðines metes *ðe mid ðe is to onfonne heofona rice?* Similarly: *ib.* 11.105.

**sendan, send:**

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 4.13: sende ðone *ðe ðu to sendenne eart* = *mitte quem missurus es.*

**ðrowi(g)an, suffer:**

*Mat.* 17.12: *ys mannes Sunu eac fram him to ðrowigenne* = *Sic et Filius hominis passurus est ab eis.*

*Note.* — “*Beon*” (“*Wesan*”) Plus “*Towearð*” to Denote Futurity. — Occasionally *beon* (*wesan*) plus *towearð* represents the future indicative, as in *Bede* 270.2: (*hwonne he . . . towearð sy in . . . wolcnum . . . to demanne cwice and deade* = 211.7: *uenturus est . . . ad iudicandos uiuos et mortuos*) and in *Chad* 188 (*ðonne he bið towearð to demenne cwice 7 deade*). See Chapter XI, where all such examples are recorded.

### C. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES PURPOSE.

At other times the inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denotes Purpose, is active in sense, and corresponds to and occasionally translates a Latin phrase made up of *ad* plus a gerund or a gerundive in the accusative.

All the clearer examples observed are given: —

**adiligan, destroy:**

*Hept.: Gen.* 9.15: *heonon forð ne bið flod to adiligenne eall flæsc* = *non erunt ultra aquæ diluuii ad delendam omnem carnem.* [The infinitive may modify *flod* instead of *bið*.]

**etan, eat:**

*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 101.315<sup>a</sup>: *Hæbbe ge her æni ðing, ðe to etenne sy?* [Cf. *L.* 24.41: *Hæbbe ge her ænig ðing to elenne?* = *Habetis hic aliquid quod manducetur?*]

**faran, go, run:**

*Wærf.* 221.1: *hit wæs wæter to fultume 7 to helpe ðam mannum, ðe in ðære cyrican wæron, 7 swylce hit wæter nære in ða stowe to farane* = 269 B: *ut aqua erat ad adiutorium et quasi aqua non erat ad invadendum locum.*

**forlæran, lead astray:**

*Gen.* 703: *wæs hire on helpe handweorc godes to forlæranne* [lacuna].

**gehælan, heal:**

*L.* 5.17: *and Drihtnes mægen wæs hig to gehælenne* = *et virtus Domini erat ad sanandum eos.*

**getacni(g)an, signify:**

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B.* 241: *he is to getacnigenne of ðære sawla dædum.*

**gremian, irritate:**

*Chron.* 239<sup>b</sup>, 1104 E<sup>b</sup>: *Eall ðis wæs God mid to gremienne, 7 ðas arme leode mid to tregienne.*

**healdan, hold, preserve:**

*Oros.* 46.17: oðer æt ham *beon* heora lond to *healdanne* = 47.17: *reginae . . . quae . . . vicissim curam belli et domus custodiam sortiebantur.*

**onfon, receive:**

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II:* 13.266: Uton . . . tilian ðæt we *syn* clæne and unwæmme ðam to *onfonne* (or the infinitive may modify the adjectives instead of *syn*?).

**sceawian, see, examine:**

*Greg.* 131.21: Ða recceras sceolon *bion* beforan ðæm folce sua sua monnes eage beforan his lichoman, his weg & his stæpas to *sceawianne* = 92.28: ut recta pedes valeant itinera carpere, hæc procul dubio caput debet ex alto providere.

**tregian, grieve:**

*Chron.* 239<sup>b</sup>, 1104 E<sup>c</sup>: quoted under *gremian* above.

**ðegnian, serve:**

*Wærf.* 281.20: ac ðysum wæs æt his moder 7 his broðer to *ðegnienne* = 341 C: Huic *ad serviendum* mater cum fratre *aderat*.

For the predicative infinitive with the verb *to be* in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section vii.

#### NOTES.

1. *The Predicative Infinitive with "Beon" ("Wesan") in a Series.* — In the following passages we have a series of two infinitives with *beon* (*wesan*) in which the first is inflected but the second is not: *Ælf. Hom.* I. 400<sup>b</sup> 1, 2, quoted on p. 103; *Ælf. L. S.* 336.222, 223, quoted on p. 98; *ib.* 376.181, 183, quoted on p. 102; *Bede* 78.24, 26, quoted on p. 98. In the following passages we have a series of inflected infinitives: *Ælf. Hom.* I. 498<sup>t</sup> 1, 2; — *Bede* 66.4<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 430.32<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *Bened.* 5.8<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *Boeth.* 72.27<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>; — *Greg.* 183.3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *Læce.* 25.30<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *Laws* 14<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>; 46<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 474<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *Wærf.* 108.32<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 239.26, 27; 348.9<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 349.27<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

2. *Predicative Infinitives Becoming Absolute.* — In *Bede* 88.23 (Ono se mon bið, ðæs ðe swa to *cweðenne sy*, æghwæðer ge gehæfted ge freo = 62.1: Ecce itaque homo est, ut ita *dixerim*, captivus et liber etc.), in *Boeth.* 39.10 (Swa hit is nu *hrafost* to *segganne* be eallum ðam woruldegasælðum = 42.63: *concludere . . . licet*), and in *Wulf.* 158.16 (and *hrædest* is to *cweðenne*) and 204.2 (and *raðest* is to *sæcgenne*), we have inflected predicative infinitives of necessity on the way to becoming absolute in use. Cf., too, *Boeth.* 41.3 (Ðæt is nu *hradost* to *segganne*, ðæt ic wilnode weorðfullice to libbanne etc. = 0).

3. *Predicative Inflected Infinitive without "To."* — In *Laws* 442 (2), quoted on p. 101 above, we have, in one manuscript, an inflected infinitive of necessity without *to*.

4. *The Inflected Infinitive with "Habban."* — As stated in Chapter II, p. 43, occasionally the inflected infinitive with *habban* denotes obligation or futurity. See the examples there given, and compare the statement of Wilmanns, who, *l. c.*, p. 128, after speaking of the infinitive of obligation after the verb *to be*, adds: "Ähnliche Bedeutung nimmt *haben* mit dem Inf. mit zu an: Tat. c. 138.8: *ih haben thir sihwaz zi quedanne*, habeo tibi aliquid dicere."

5. *A Mixed Construction* occurs in *Greg.* 23.1 (Ðætte hwilum ða leohtan scylda *beoð* beteran to *forlætan* (sic! but Cotton MS.: to *forlætanne*) = 388.21: Quod aliquando leviora vitia *relinquenda sunt*): the inflected infinitive may be considered as predicative with *beoð* or as modifying the adjective *beteran*; but, although I have put it under the former head, it really belongs under each.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT.

The uninflected infinitive active as the quasi-predicate of an accusative subject, in object clauses, is found about 1512 times in Anglo-Saxon. It is common in Anglo-Saxon prose, early and late, and in Anglo-Saxon poetry, after certain verbs (1) of Commanding, (2) of Causing and Permitting, (3) of Sense Perception; is less frequent after (4) verbs of Mental Perception; and is almost unknown after (5) verbs of Declaring.<sup>1</sup> The passive infinitive in this construction is far less common, being restricted almost exclusively to the translations. In subject clauses, the predicative infinitive with accusative subject, whether active or passive, is very rare, and with one exception is found only in the translations.

In object clauses, the infinitive phrase usually follows the principal verb, as in *Bede* 156.21: *Ða gehyrde he sumne ðara broðra sprecan ðæt etc.* = 130.19: *audiret unum . . . disposuisse*; but occasionally it precedes, as in *Beow.* 1346: *Ic ðæt londbuend leode mine selerædende secgan hyrde, ðæt etc.*; and occasionally it partly precedes and partly follows, as in *Bede* 190.1: *ðæt he hine . . . herde secgan* = 152.15: *eum audierit . . . narrare*. In subject clauses, the situation is practically the same: see examples toward the end of this chapter.

Whether in objective or subjective clauses, the infinitive that is active in form seems to me active in sense. Some hold, however, that, after verbs of commanding, of causing, and of sense perception, we sometimes have a predicative infinitive that, though active in form, is passive in sense. The grounds for the active interpretation have been given in Chapter II, pp. 29 ff.; where I have stated that to me the infinitive in examples of the sort there cited seems, not predicative, but objective, and the accompanying accusative, not subjective, but objective.

I consider first the idiom in object clauses.

#### AS OBJECT.

##### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

###### I. UNINFLECTED.

The active uninflected infinitive occurs as the quasi-predicate of an accusative subject with the following groups of verbs:—

1. Oftenest with Verbs of Commanding<sup>2</sup> and the like, of which group the chief representative is *hatan*, 'command,' 'order.' The complete list of verbs belonging to this group is as follows:—

<b>bebeodan</b> [bi-], <i>command, order.</i>	<b>forbeodan</b> , <sup>3</sup> <i>forbid.</i>
<b>biddan</b> , <i>request, command.</i>	<b>hatan</b> , <i>command.</i>

<sup>1</sup> As is evident from this statement, I include Grimm's 'non-genuine' as well as his 'genuine' accusative with infinitive, — concerning which see Chapter XIV, section viii.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, pp. 371 ff.; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 55 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 373.

2. Next most frequently with Verbs of Causing and of Permitting,<sup>1</sup> of which the chief representative is *letan*, 'allow,' 'cause.' The full list follows:—

*alætan*, allow.  
*biegan* [began], urge, force.  
*don*, make, cause.  
*forlætan*, allow.  
*gedon*, make, cause.

*geðafian*, allow.  
*geðolian* [gi-], allow.  
*geunnan*, grant.  
*lætan*, allow, permit, cause.  
*niedan* [-e-, -y-], compel, force.

3. Only slightly less frequently than with the preceding, with Verbs of Sense Perception,<sup>2</sup> of which the chief representative is *geseon*, 'see.' This group is composed of the following:—

*behealdan* [bi-], behold, see.  
*gefelan*, feel, perceive.  
*gehawian*, see.  
*gehieran* [-e-, -y-], hear.  
*geseon*, see.

*hieran* [-e-, -y-], hear.  
*ofseon*, see.  
*sceawian*, see.  
*seon*, see.

4. Far less frequently with Verbs of Mental Perception,<sup>3</sup> the chief representatives of which are *findan*, 'find,' *gefrignan*, 'learn by asking,' *gemetan*, 'find,' *ongietan*, 'understand,' and *witan*, 'know.' The full list follows:—

*æteawan*, show.  
*afindan*, find.  
*eowan*, show.  
*findan*, find.  
*geacsian* [-ah-], learn by asking.  
*gecyðan*, make known.  
*gefrignan*, learn by inquiry.  
*gehatan*, promise.  
*gehyhtan* [-i-], hope.  
*geliefan* [-e-, -y-], believe.  
*gemetan*, meet, find.

*gemittan*, meet, find.  
*gemunan*, remember, recall.  
*getriewan* [-eo-], trust, hope.  
*gewitan*, perceive, observe.  
*læran*, teach.  
*onfindan*, find.  
*ongietan*, understand, perceive.  
*tali(g)an*, consider, account.  
*tellan*, tell, consider.  
*wenan*, hope.  
*witan*, know.

5. Very rarely with Verbs of Declaring,<sup>4</sup> of which this is a complete list:—

*cweðan*, say.  
*foresecgan*, foretell, predict.

*ondettan*, confess, declare.  
*secgan*, say, relate.

6. Very rarely with Other Verbs: once only with the verb *habban*, *have*, and the verb *todælan*, *divide*, which do not easily fall under any of the preceding groups.

Typical examples are:—

1. Verbs of Commanding, etc.:—

*bebeodan*, command:

*Ex.* 217<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 218<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 219<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: oð Moyses *bebead eorlas . . . folc somnigean, freccan arisan, habban heora hlencan, hycgan on ellen, beran beorht searo, beacnum cigean sweet sande near.*

*Pr. Ps.* 41.9<sup>a</sup>: On dæg *bebead* God his *mildheortnesse cuman* to me = In die *mandabit Dominus misericordiam suam.* — *Ib.* 43.6: ðu ðe *bebude hælo cuman* to Iacobes cynne? = 43.5: qui *mandas salutes Jacob?*

*biddan*, request, command:

*Gen.* 20.31: *bæd* him ðræcrofe, ða *rincas* ðæs ræd *ahicgan.*

*Dan.* 3.59: *bædon bletsian* bearn Israela, eall landgesceaft ecne *drihten.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> l. c., pp. 43 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., pp. 384 ff.; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> l. c., pp. 78 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., pp. 395 ff.; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> l. c., pp. 66 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Gorrell, l. c., pp. 414 ff.; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> l. c., 99 ff.

*El.* 1101: Cyriacus . . . *bæd* him engla *weard geopenigean uncuðe* wyrd niwan on nearwe.

*Gu.* 1133: *bæd hine* ðurh mihta scyppend . . . *spræce ahebban.*

*And.* 1614: *bæd haligne* helpe *gefremman* gumena geogoðe.

*Bede* 6.13: *bæd hine* cristenne beon = 16.3: *Christianum se fieri petierit.*

*Chron.* 173<sup>t</sup>, 1048 E<sup>a</sup>: se cyng . . . *bæd hine* faran in to cent.

*Ælf. L. S.* 76.439, 440: *bæd hi* ealle *wacian* ðær on niht mid him and ðingian ðam . . . men. — *Ib.* 266.70: Ða sume dæg *bæd* he ðone *bisceop ælfelh blætsian* his ful.

**forbeodan, forbid:**

*Mat.* 19.14: Nelle ge *hig forbeodan cuman* to me = *nolite eos prohibere* ad me venire.

**hatan,<sup>1</sup> command, order:**

*Beow.* 1869<sup>a</sup>, b: *het hine* mid ðæm lacum leode swæse *secean* on gesyntum, snude eft *cuman.*

*Gen.* 122: Metod . . . *heht leoht* . . . forð *cuman.*

*Ex.* 254: *heht* ða folctogan fyrde *gestillan.*

*Dan.* 431: *Het* ða se cyning to him *cnihtas gangan.*

*Az.* 183: *Het* ða of ðam lige lifgende bearn Nabocodonossor near *ætngangan.*

*Chr.* 1024, 1026: *hateð* arisan reordberende of foldgrafum, folc anra gehwyle *cuman* to gemote.

*El.* 999: *Hie* se casere *heht gearwian* sylfe to siðe.

*Ju.* 523: ða he *mec feran* *het* ðeoden of ðystrum.

*And.* 365, 366, 367: ælmihtig *heht* his engel gan, . . . mete *syllan, frefran* feasceafne.

*Rid.* 7.5: ðonne *mec* min frea *feohtan* *hateð.*

*Jud.* 54: nymðe se modga *hwæne* niðe rofra him ðe near *hete* rinca to rune gegangan.

*Ps.* 80.12: Ac *hi lifian* *het* lustum heortena.

*Bede:* 34.25<sup>a</sup>, b: Ða *het* he . . . his ðegnas *hine secan* 7 *acsian* = 18.25: *iussit milites eum . . . inquirere.* — *Ib.* 58.28: Ða *het* se cyning *hie sittan* = 46.5: Cumque ad iussionem regis residentes . . . uerbum prædicarent. — *Ib.* 118.8, 9: *heht* his ðegnas *hine . . . beran . . . 7 asettan* = 94.22: *iussit se . . . efferi.* — *Ib.* 138.11<sup>a</sup>, b: *heht* his *geferan* toweorpan . . . ðone herig . . . 7 *forbærnan* = 113.19<sup>a</sup>, b: *iussit sociis destruere ac succendere fanum.* — *Ib.* 232.8: cwom ærendwraça, se ðe *hine* to cyninge *feran* *het* = 176.1: uenit qui clamaret eum ad regem.

*Greg.* 279.19: Se gemetgað irre, se ðe ðone *disigan hætt geswugian* = 210.26: Qui imponit stulto silentium.

*Oros.* 202.8: ðone here he *het* mid ðæm scipum ðonan *wendan* = 203.1: *deflexo cursu.* — *Ib.* 280.12: *hiene* *het* iernan on his . . . purpurum = 281.13: ut per aliquot millia passuum purpuratus ante vehiculum ejus concurrisset referatur.

*Chron.* 12<sup>t</sup>, 449 A<sup>a</sup>: Se cing *het hi* *feohtan* agien Pihtas.

*Wærf.* 10.4: Hu man *het* *Æquitium cuman* to Rome = 0. — *Ib.* 58.13: *het* ealle ðanon *utgan* = 189 C<sup>1</sup>: omnesque exinde egredi præcepit. — *Ib.* 297.9<sup>a</sup>, b: *hine* *het* forð gan 7 him *gearwian* his hrægl = 360 A<sup>1</sup>, 2: vocavit puerum suum,

<sup>1</sup> *Hatan* is followed, also, by a substantive clause introduced by *ðæt*, as in *Ælf. L. S.* 142.404; 154.99; 162.245; 224.68; 396.218; 400.261; 406.360; 442.37; 464.373; etc.; etc. Cf. Gorrell, l. c., p. 375.

*pararique sibi vestimenta ad procedendum jussit.* — *Ib.* 337.37: drihten ðe het faran = 408 A: Paratus esto, et quia Dominus jussit, migra.

*Bened.* 70.18: oð . . . hine geswican hate = 134.7: usque dum ei jubeat iterum Abbas, ut quiescat ab hac satisfactione.

*Bl. Hom.* 21.30: hateð ða eorðan eft agifan ðæt heo ær onfeng.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 28<sup>t</sup>: het hi faran geond ealne middangeard, bodigende fulluht and soðne geleafan.

*Ælf. L. S.* 98.142: Martianus het his . . . cwelleras ðone halgan beatan.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 22.6: Abraham ða het Issac beran ðone wudu = Ligna holocausti imposuit super Isaac. — *Ex.* 32.5<sup>a, b</sup>: het bydelas beodan and ðus cweðan = præconis voce clamavit dicens. — *Num.* 31.17: het hig ða acwellan ealle ða wif = Ergo mulieres . . . jugulate. — *Judges* 16.25: heton hine standan betwux . . . swerum = feceruntque eum stare inter . . . columnas.

*Gosp.: Mat.* 14.19: And ða he het ða menegu ofer ðæt gærs hi sittan = Et quum jussisset turbam discumbere super fœnum. — *Mk.* 8.6: Ða het he sittan ða menegu ofer ða eorðan = Et præcepit turbæ discumbere super terram.

*Wulf.* 235.16: ða deoflu hy potedon . . . and heton hy ut faran raðe.

*Læce.* 55.25<sup>a, b</sup>: hine mon sceal swiðe hlude hatan grædan oððe singan.

## 2. Verbs of Causing and of Permitting:—

**alætan, allow:**

*Beow.* 2666: ðæt ðu ne alæte be ðe lifigendum dom gedreosan.

*Dan.* 591: Oft metod alæt monige ðeode [lacuna] wyrcan.

**biegan [began], urge, force:**

*Ps.* 143.14: Ðara bearn swylce begað æðelum settum beamum samed anlice standan on staðule stiðe wið geoguðe = 143.12: Quorum filii sicut novellæ plantationes constabilitæ in juventute sua.

**don, make, cause:**

*Ps.* 103.30: He on ðas eorðan ealle locað, deð hi for his egsan ealle beofian = qui respicit super terram, et facit eam tremere.

*Bede* 98.27<sup>b</sup>: se ðe eardigan deð ða anmodan in his fæder huse = 81.29<sup>b</sup>: qui habitare facit unanimes in domu Patris.

*Laws* 410, Judicium Dei IV, c. 4, § 1: ðu onsiist ofer earðe 7 ðu doest ða fyrhta (sic!) = qui respicis super terram et facis ea[m] tremere.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 468<sup>m 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>: Swa swa ðu dydest minne broðor his god forlætan, and on ðinne god gelyfan, swa do ic eac ðe forlætan ðinne god, and on minne gelyfan.

*Wulf.* 196.1, 2: treowa he deð færlice blowan and eft raðe asearian.

**forlætan, allow:**

*Beow.* 3167: forleton eorla gestreon eorðan healdan.

*Gen.* 1406: ða hine halig god . . . forlet edmonne streamum stigan.

*El.* 598: Hio on sybbe forlet secan gehwylcne agenne eard.

*Gu.* 1148: næfre ic lufan sibbe, ðeoden, æt ðearfe ðine forlæte asanian.

*And.* 836: dryhten forlet dægandelle scire scinan.

*Bede* 318.4: Bæd heo . . . ðone cynning ðæt . . . heo forlete . . . Criste ðeowian = 243.28: postulans . . . Christo servire permittetur.

*Greg.* 467.11: Forðæm oft se . . . God fo[r]let ðæt mod his gecorenra gesyngian on sumum lytlum ðingum = 404.1: imperfectas tamen ex parva aliqua parte derelinquit.

*Solil.* 21.22: *ðonne forlæt he ðæt scyp standan = eos dimisi.*

*Chron.* 5<sup>t</sup>, *Introd.* E: *ða he forlet his here abidan mid Scottum.*

*Wærf.* 294.5: *ðæt se . . . God swa forlæteð sweltan his gecorenan = 356 A<sup>1</sup>: Quid est hoc, quæso te, quod . . . Deus sic permittit mori, quos tamen post mortem cuius sanctitatis fuerint, non patitur celari?*

*Bl. Hom.* 87.14: *ne forlæt ðu us nu on witum wunian.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 192<sup>t</sup> 2: *beod him ðæt he min folc forlæte of his leode faran.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 144.429: *forleton hine swa licgan for deadne.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Judges* 3.21: *He forlet ða ðæt swurd stician on him = Nec eduxit gladium, sed reliquit in corpore.*

*Wulf.* 232.17: *ðæt ge forlætan ða unnyttan spræca gewurðan and ða unnyttan geðancas of eowrum heortum.*

**gedon, make, cause:**

*Bl. Hom.* 239.16: *Matheum he gedyde gangan to ðam eastdæle.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIII. 316: *gebide to drihtne for us ðæt he gedo us werlice becuman to hælo hyðe.*

**geðafian, allow:**

*Bl. Hom.* 45.19: *gif he ne geðafað ðæt godes folc heora lif on woh lybban.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 92<sup>t</sup>: *ne geðafiað godne willan infaran to his heortan.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 108.323, 324: *Geðafa ðæt min modor me gespræcan and sume ðreo niht on minum ræde beon.*

**geðolian [gi-], allow:**

*Laws* 412, *Judicium Dei* V, c. 2, § 4<sup>b</sup>: *unscyldigo hwoeðre 7 ðingleaso from ðissum synne unascendedo wosa giðolaðes = innocentes uero et immunes ab hoc crimine inlesos esse patiaris.*

**geunnan, grant:**

*Ælf. Æthelw.* 53: *ic bidde . . . ðæt ðu geunna me ðurhwunian ðone toweardan dæg on ðinum halgum ðeowdome = deprecor . . . ut concedas mihi diem uenturum sic in tuo sancto seruitio peragere (or objective?).*

**lætan, allow, permit, cause:**

*Beow.* 1490: *læt . . . widcuðne man heardecg habban.*

*Gen.* 438<sup>a</sup>: *Sittan læte ic hine wið me sylfne. — Ib.* 1349: *Ic . . . sigan læte wællregn ufan widre eorðan.*

*Dan.* 683: *let Babilone blæd swiðrian.*

*Chr.* 159: *ne læt awyrgde ofer us onwald agan.*

*El.* 237: *Leton ða ofer fifelwæg famige scriðan, brontne brimðisan.*

*Ju.* 200: *Læt ða sace restan.*

*Gu.* 924: *ða se ælmihtiga let his hond cuman.*

*And.* 832, 833: *Leton ðone halgan . . . swefan . . . , bliðne bidan.*

*Bede* 256.29: *ða onlesde he hine 7 let feran æfter ðam biscope = 204.4: absoluit eum, et . . . ire permisit.*

*Boeth.* 6.10: *forhwy se . . . God læte ænig yfel beon = 0. — Ib.* 8.23: *Lætað hine eft hweorfan to minum larum = 5.39: meisque eum musis curandum sanandumque relinquit.*

*Greg.* 139.8: *hi ðonne lætað acolian ða innecundan lufan = 100.4: ab intimo amore frigesunt. — Ib.* 171.1: *læt hi stician ðæron = 124.24: qui semper erunt in circulis. — Ib.* 193.25: *ðæt is ðonne ðæt mon his eage læte slapian = 144.29: Somnum quippe oculis dare est etc. — Ib.* 457.13: *Forðæm sceal se gesceadwisa læce lætan ær weazan ðone læssan = 390.3: ut . . . unum patiatur crescere.*

*Oros.* 126.15: he . . . ðæt folc sum ðær sittan let = 0.

*Solil.* 14.2: ne læt me nanwiht oferwinnan on ðis wege = *nihilque mihi repugnare facias tendenti ad te.* — *Ib.* 48.19: læt beon ðone wop and ða unrot- nesse = *cohibe te a lacrymis, et stringe animum.*

*Pr. Ps.* 15.10<sup>a, b</sup>: ne ðinne gehalgodan ne lætst forrotian ne forweorðan = *neque dabis sanctum tuum videre corruptionem.*

*Chron.* 161<sup>b</sup>, 1038 D: ðæt he hine ne lete lybban. — *Ib.* 164<sup>b</sup>, 1046 C<sup>b</sup>: let hi syððan faran ham.

*Laws* 160, II Æthelstan, c. 20, § 6: Gif he nylle hit geðafian, leton hine licgan. — *Ib.* 454, Gerefa, c. 7: Ne læte he næfre his hyrmen hyne oferwealdan.

*Wærƿ.* 234.3: sacerdas . . . seo arfæstnes ne læteð ehtan 7 oferswiðan ðone geleafan = 285 B: ut . . . *sacerdotes . . . fidem persequi minime permittat.* — *Ib.* 276.3: ne let he næfre hi him neh gan = 336 C<sup>1</sup>: *presbyteram . . . ad se proprius accedere nunquam sinebat.*

*Bened.* 120.8: ðæt he leahtras fyrðrige and wehsan læte = 186.13: ut *permittat nutriri vitia.*

*Bl. Hom.* 69.17: lætað ðis ðus wesan to cyðnesse minre bebyrgednesse.

*Pr. Gu.* V. 153<sup>a</sup>: ða leton hi hine ane hwile abidan and gestandan = *sistere illum paullisper fecerunt.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 12<sup>11</sup>: hi ealle adræfde of heofenan rices myrhð, and let befeallan on ðæt ece fyr. — *Ib.* I. 522<sup>b</sup>: Fæder, seðe læt his sunnan scinan ofer gode and yfele.

*Ælf. L. S.* 18.147: gif heo læt rixian on hire ða gewilnunge.

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 9.24: drihten let rinan hagol wið fyr gemenged = *pluitque dominus grandinem.* — *Lev.* 1.15: læte yrnan ðæt blod nyðer = *decurrere faciet sanguinem.* — *Num.* 11.24: folce, ða he let standan . . . ymbutan ða eardung- stowe = *quos stare fecit circa tabernaculum.*

*Gosp.: Mat.* 8.22: læt deade bebyrigean hyra deadan = *dimitte mortuos sepelire mortuos suos.* — *Mk.* 5.37: he ne let him ænigne fyligean = *non admisit quemquam se sequi.* — *Mk.* 10.14: Lætað ða lytlingas to me cuman = *Sinite parvulos venire ad me.* — *L.* 9.60: Læt ða deadan byrgan hyra deadan = *Sine ut mortui sepeliant mortuos suos.* — *L.* 9.61: læt me æryst hit cyðan ðam ðe æt ham synt = *permittite mihi primum renuntiare his, quæ domi sunt (or objective?).* — *J.* 18.8: lætað ðas faran = *sinite hos abire.*

*Wulf.* 10.7, 8: hy ðurh heora synna god to ðam swyðe gegremedon, ðæt he let æt nehstan flod gan ofer ealne middaneard and adrencan eal. — *Ib.* 14.3<sup>a, b</sup>: ðæt folc ða wearð swa wið god forworht, ðæt he let faran hæðenne here and forhergian eall ðæt land.

*Læce.* 12.2: læt gedreopan on ða eagan ænne dropan. — *Ib.* 97.22: læt gerestan ðone man.

niedan [-e-, -y-], *compel, force:*

*Mk.* 6.45: Ða sona he nydde his leorningcnihtas on scyp stigan = *Et statim coegit discipulos suos adscendere navim.* Cf. p. 166 below.

### 3. Verbs of Sense Perception: —

behealdan [bi-], *behold, see:*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 32<sup>m</sup>: Ðæt folc beheold ðone broðer standan buton . . . cwacunge.

gefelan, *feel, perceive:*

*Bede* 156.32: ne wiste he *hwæt* he *gefælde* cealdes æt his sidan *licgan* = 130.30: *sensit nescio quid frigidi suo lateri adiacere*.

*Wærf.* 236.1: *ða* semninga *gefeldon* hi an *swyn yrnan* hider 7 *ðider* = 288 B: *porcum . . . discurrere senserunt*.

**gehawian**, see:

*Wærf.* 250.26: *ða* *ða* hi *naht* ne *gehawedon* *flowan* *ðæs* eles = 305 C: *Cumque illi ex olivis oleum defluere non cernerent*.

**gehieran** [-e-, -y-], hear:

*Beow.* 786, 787: anra *gehwyrcum* *ðara* *ðe* of wealle wop *gehyrdon* *gryreleoð galan* godes *andsacan*, *sigeleasne* sang, sar *wanigean hellehæfton*.

*Gen.* 508<sup>a</sup>. <sup>b</sup>: ic *gehyrde hine* *ðine* dæd and word *lofsan* on his leohte and ymb *ðin lif sprecan*.

*Chr.* 797, 798: *gehyreð Cyning mæðlan*, rodera *Ryhtend*, *sprecan* reðe word.

*El.* 443<sup>a</sup>. <sup>b</sup>: Gif . . . *ðu* *gehyre* ymb *ðæt* . . . *treo* *frode frignan* 7 *gefitu ræran*.

*Ju.* 629: *gehyrde* heo *hearm galan* helle *deofol*.

*Bede* 400.18: *ða* *geherde* ic *ðone biscop* . . . *cweoðan* = 290.8: *audiui illum . . . dicentem*.

*Wærf.* 117.22: *gehyrde* *ðone hlisan* *weaxan* = B. 148 A<sup>3</sup>: *Cumque . . . conspiceret . . . conversationis illius opinionem crescere*.

*Bl. Hom.* 15.15: Sum blind *ðearfa* . . . *gehyrde* *myccl* *menigo* him beforan *feran*.

*Pr. Gu.* XX. 75: ic *ðe* *gehyrde sprecan* on æfenne and on ærenmergen = *te loquentem vespere et mane audiebam*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 518<sup>1</sup>. <sup>3</sup>: *Hwæt* *ða* *gehyrdon* *gehwilce* on life halige *englas singan* on his forðsiðe.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 80: *gehyrde* . . . *martinus* *ðone hælend clypian* to his . . . *englum*.

*Mk.* 14.58: Soðes we *gehyrdon hine secgan* = *Quoniam nos audivimus eum dicentem*.

**geseon**, see:

*Beow.* 1517: *fyrleoht* *geseah*, *blacne leoman* beorhte *scinan*.

*Gen.* 548: *ðær* he *ðæt wif* *geseah*, on eorðrice *Euan stontan*.

*Ex.* 104: forð *gesawon* lifes *latðeow* liftweg *metan*.

*Dan.* 553: *wundor* . . . , *ðæt* *ðu* *gesawe* *ðurh swefen cuman*.

*Chr.* 498: *Gesegon* hi on heahðu *Hlaford stigan*.

*El.* 1111: leode *gesawon* hire *willgifu* *wundor cyðan*.

*Gu.* 28<sup>a</sup>. <sup>b</sup>: *gesihð* he *ða domas* dogra *gehwylce wonian* and *wendan*.

*Rid.* 69.1: Ic *ða* wiht *geseah* on weg *feran*.

*Bede* 102.32: *ða* *geseah* he . . . *sacerdas* . . . *sundor stontan* = 84.7: *Cumque . . . uideret sacerdotes . . . consistere*. — *Ib.* 112.8<sup>a</sup>. <sup>b</sup>: Mid *ðy* heo . . . *gesegon* *ðone biscop* mæssan onsymbolnesse *mærsian* . . . 7 . . . *husl sellan* = 91.10, 11: *Cumque uiderent pontificem, celebratis . . . missarum sollemniis, eucharistam dare*. — *Ib.* 128.16: *ða* *geseah* he . . . *sumne mon* wið his *gongan* = 108.22: *uidit . . . adpropinquantem sibi hominem*. — *Ib.* 430.31: seo *denu* . . . , *ðe* *ðu* *gesawe* *egeslice beon* = 308.11 *Uallis illa, quam asperisti . . . horrenda . . . , ipse est locus*.

*Boeth.* 97.18: ic *ðæt* lytle *leoht* *geseah twinclian* = 0. — *Ib.* 111.13: *ða* we *gesioð sittan* on *ðam* . . . *heahsetlum* = 95.1: *Quos uides sedere*.

*Greg.* 255.24, 25: Ðæt wæs forðæmðe se assa *geseah* ðone engel on gean hine standan, & him ðæs færeltes forwiernan = 194.5: Prohibitione quippe immorata asina Angelum videt.

*Oros.* 162.6, 7: mon *geseah* weallan blod of eorðan 7 rinan meolc of heofonum = 163.5: sanguis e terra, lac visum est manare de coelo.

*Pr. Ps.* 48.8: ðonne he *gesyhð* ða welegan and ða weoruldwisan sweltan = 48.11: cum viderit sapientes morientes.

*Wærf.* 95.15: ac ða ða he *geseah* manige men gan = B. 126 A: Sed cum in eis multos ire per abrupta vitiorum cerneret. — *Ib.* 116.15: ða ylcan ic *geseah* me upp gelædan of ðam wætere = B. 146 C: ipsum me ex aquis educere considerabam.

*Bened.* 25.20: ðylæs ðe God . . . us *geseo* bugende to yfele and to nahte gehweorfan = 50.18: ne nos declinantes in malo, et inutiles factos . . . aspiciat.

*Bl. Hom.* 187.34: nu git *geseoð* hine geond heofenas feras.

*Pr. Gu.* IX. 8: ða *geseah* he ðone hrefen ða cartan beran = volantem alitem chartulam in ore suo portantem prospicit.

*Mart.* 16.25: Antonius *geseah* ðæs Paulus sawle . . . stigan to heofonum.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 42<sup>b</sup>: Ða *geseah* heo ðæt cild licgan on binne. — *Ib.* I. 48<sup>b</sup> 2: Se eadiga Stephanus *geseah* Crist standan.

*Ælf. L. S.* 64.242: Ða *geseah* se biscop . . . Marian cuman. — *Ib.* XXVII. 92: gesawon . . . rode . . . ðær scinan.

*Ælf. Hept.:* *Gen.* 28.12<sup>a</sup>: Ða *geseah* he on swefne standan ane hlædre = *Viditque* in somnis scalam stantem super terram. — *Gen.* 37.25: hig gesawon twegen . . . men cuman of Galaad = *viderunt* . . . viatores venire de G. — *Gen.* 41.2: him ðuhte ðæt he gesawe gan upp . . . seofon fægre oxan = *ascendebant* septem boves.

*Gosp.:* *Mat.* 20.3: he *geseah* oðre on stræte idele standan = *vidit alios stantes* in foro otiosos. — *L.* 21.1: he *geseh* ða welegan hyra lac sendan on ðone sceoppian = *vidit* eos qui *mittebant* munera sua in gazophylacium, divites.

*Wulf.* 187.11<sup>a, b</sup>: we dæghwamlice *geseoð* beforan urum eagam ure ða nehstan feallan and sweltan.

**hieran** [-e-, -y-], *hear*:

*Beow.* 1346: Ic ðæt londbuend leode mine selerædende secgan hyrde, ðæt etc.

*El.* 241: Ne hyrde ic sið ne ær on egstreame idese lædan . . . mægen fægrre.

*Ju.* 1: we ðæt hyrdon hæleð eahtian . . . ðætte etc.

*Bede* 190.1: he hine . . . herde secgan = 152.15: eum audierit . . . narrare.

*Chron.* 258<sup>m</sup>, 1127 E<sup>b</sup>: ða muneces herdon ða horn blawen (sic!).

**ofseon**, *see*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 508<sup>m</sup>: ða ofseah he feorran ða hæðenan feras an lic to eorðan. **sceawian**, *see*:

*Wærf.* 206.27<sup>a, b</sup>: ðonne ðe he sceawað ða godan fremian 7 weaxan to Godes wuldre = 252 C<sup>1</sup>: bonos cernit enitescere ad gloriam.

**seon**, *see*:

*Rid.* 32.3: Ic seah sellic ðing singan on ræcede.

*Mart.* 2.18, 19: manig seah meoloc rinnan of heofonum ond lamb spæcan on mennisc gecynde. — *Ib.* 144.4: ac ðurh ða wundor ðe he seah Sebastianum don he onfeng fulwihte.

#### 4. Verbs of Mental Perception: —

**æteawan**, *show*:



*Bede* 84.2: Ða æteawde he ðær synne weosan = 59.4: *culpam esse demonstravit. afindan, find:*

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 9.364: se afunde his hlaford licgan heafodleasne. *eowan, show:*

*Wærf.* 200.14: he eowde hine sylfne . . . on gebede standan = 244 C<sup>4</sup>: qui se tribus diebus et noctibus orare ante oculos hominum demonstraret.

*findan, find:*

*Beow.* 119: Fand Ða ðær inne æðelinga gedriht swefan æfter symble.

*Jul.* 364: Ðær ic hine finde ferð staðelian to Godes willan, ic beo gearo sona etc.

*Jud.* 278: funde Ða on bedde blacne licgan his goldgifan.

*Oros.* 128.14: funde hiene ænne be wege licgan, mid sperum tosticad, healf-cucne = 129.12: *invenit in itinere solum relictum confossum vulneribus.*

*Ælf. Hom. I.* 452<sup>t</sup>: funde his spere standan mid blode begledod.

*L.* 19.32: fundon . . . ðone folan standan = *invenerunt . . . stantem pullum.*

*geacsian [-ah-], learn by asking:*

*Bl. Hom.* 109.2<sup>a</sup>: manig yfel we geaxiað her on life gelomlician & wæstmian.

*Wulf.* 2.2, 5: we Ða geacsodon be Ðam heofonlican eðle, and we geacsodon his geceasterwaran beon godes englas, and we geacsodon Ðara engla geferan beon Ða gastas soðfæstra . . . manna.

*gecyðan, make known:*

*Wærf.* 137.7: to Ðan ðæt he gecyðde hine sylfne cunnan, hwylce wæren Godes gestihunge = *B.* 166 A: ut se ostenderet nosse quæ Dei sunt.

*gefrignan, learn by inquiry:*

*Beow.* 2695: Ða ic æt ðearfe gefrægn ðeodecyniges andlongne eorl ellen cyðan.

*Gen.* 2060: Ða ic neðan gefrægn under nihtscuwan hæleð to hilde.

*Ex.* 99: Ða ic on morgen gefrægn modes rofan hebban herebyman hludan stefnum.

*Dan.* 1, 2, 3: Gefrægn ic Hebreos eadge lifgean in H., goldhord dælan, cyningdom habban.

*Chr.* 79: Ne we soðlice swylcne gefrugnan in ærdagum æfre gelimpan.

*And.* 1706: Ða ic lædan gefrægn leoda weorode leofne lareow to lides stefnan.

*Jud.* 8, 9: Gefrægen ic Ða Holofermus winhatan wyrcean georne, and eallum wundrum ðrymlic girwan up swæsendo.

*Har.* 161: Ða ic gongan gefregn gingran ætsomne ealle to Galileam.

*gehatan, promise:*

*Bede* 122.34: geheht hine sylfne deofolgildum wiðsacan = 99.25: *promisit se, abrenuntiatis idolis, Christo seruiturum.* — *Ib.* 316.29: se ðe hine gehatende wæs mid us eac wunian = 243.22: *qui se nobiscum . . . manere pollicetur.* — *Ib.* 394.27: ic . . . me gehet wedlum ælmeßan sellan = 287.15: *promittens . . . me elimosynas . . . dare.*

*gehyhtan [-i-], hope:*

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B.* 557: ic to soðan gehihte me ætstandan.

*geliefan [-e-, -y-], believe:*

*Wærf.* 207.25: gelyfað we gewislice ðæt beon hefige synne 7 mycclæ = 253 B: *Nunquidnam valde grave esse credimus etc.?*

*gemetan, meet, find:*

*And.* 145: Hie . . . *gemetton* . . . haligne hæle *bidan* beadurofne. — *Ib.* 1062: oððæt he *gemette* be mearcpaðe *standan* stræte neah *stapul* ærenne.

*Bede* 386.3: *gemaetton* we . . . nænig *hyht* hælo in us to lafe *stondan* = 282.5: *inuenimus* . . . nullamque *spem* nobis in nobis *restare* salutis. — *Ib.* 398.19: Ðæs biscepes lif . . . ic *gemette* bisceobwyrðe *beon* = 289.12: *Uitam* . . . illius . . . episcopo *dignam* *conperi*.

*Boeth.* 61.18: he *hine gemette sittan* on . . . *scridwæne* = 58.7: Catullus licet in curuli *Nonium sedentem* struman tamen appellat.

*Greg.* 415.23: Sihhem . . . geniedde . . . Dinan, Ða he *hie gemette swa wandrian*. Swa deð se dioful ðæt mod ðæt he gemet on unnyttum sorgum: he hit awiert (*sic!*) = 336.22: Quam Sichem . . . opprimit: quia videlicet *inventam* in curis exterioribus diabolus corrumpit.

*Chron.* 124<sup>b</sup>, 982 C: Ða *gemette* he . . . mycele *fyrde cuman* up of sæ.

*Wærf.* 99.23: Ða *gemette* he *hine lutian* in anum scræfe = B. 130 B: *eumque latere* in specu *reperit*.

*Bl. Hom.* 237.18: hie ðær *gemetton* seofon *hyrdas standan*.

*Pr. Gu.* XX. 49: Ða *gemette* he *hine hl onian* on ðam hale his cyrcan = *invenitque eum* recumbentem in angulo oratorii sui.

*Mart.* 112.5: Ða *gemette* heo sume dæge ðær ute *standan* twegen godes ðeowas.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 502<sup>m</sup>: æt nextan *hine gemette standan* uppon ðam cnolle.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIII. 185: *gemette hine* . . . on eorðan *licgan*.

**gemittan, meet, find:**

*Gen.* 2426: Hie Ða æt burhgeate *beorn gemittan sylfne sittan*.

*Spirit of Men* 46: Nu ðu cunnan meaht, gif ðu ðyslicne ðegn *gemittest wunian* in wicum.

**gemunan, remember, recall:**

*Bede* 322.19: ic *gemon mec* . . . *beran* . . . Ða . . . byrðenne = 246.9: *me memini* . . . *pondera portare*.

*Wærf.* 281.9: be ðon eac ic *geman me sylfne secgan* = 341 B<sup>2</sup>: Unde in Homiliis quoque Evangelii jam *narrasse me memini*. — *Ib.* 283.1: ic *gemune* . . . *me sylfne secgan* = 344 B: In eisdem quoque Homiliis *rem narrasse me recolo*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 48<sup>m</sup>: forði *gemunde* swiðe gedafenlice ðæt godcunde gewrit, mannes *Sunu standan* æt Godes swiðran.

**getriewan [-eo-], trust, hope:**

*Bede* 190.30: ne *getreowe me onfoende beon* = 153.14: *me accepturum esse confidam*.

**gewitan, perceive, observe:**

*And.* 802<sup>a</sup>: *geweotan* Ða Ða witigan ðry *modige mearcland tredan*.

**læran, teach:**

*Bede* 460.3: bodedon 7 *lærdon ænne willan* 7 ane *wyrnesse beon* on Drihtne = 326.27: qui unam in Domino . . . *uoluntatem* atque *operationem* dogmatizabant.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S.* II. 14.108<sup>a, b</sup>: God us *læreð fæstan* and ælmessan *syllan earmum mannum*.

*L.* 11.1: lær us us *gebiddan* = *doce nos orare*.

**onfindan, find:**

*Beow.* 2842: gif he wæccende *weard onfunde buon* on beorge.

**ongietan, understand, perceive:**

*Beow.* 1432: *bearhtm ongeaton, guðhorn galan.*

*Bede* 178.32: *ða onget he hwæthwugu . . . in ðære stowe beon* = 146.12: *intellexit aliquid . . . inesse.* — *Ib.* 266.27: *Gif . . . ðu . . . werod ongete ofer us . . . cuman* = 209.30: *Si . . . superuenire coetus cognouisti.*

*Wærf.* 74.20: *swa myccele ma he ongæt him on gæn standan in anum lichaman ðæt weorod* = 201 B<sup>6</sup>: *contra se assistere legionis aciem inuenit.* — *Ib.* 130.6: *swa mycclum swa he hine sylfne ma ongæt æfweardne agyltan beforan . . . eagum Benedictes* = B. 160 A<sup>3</sup>: *quanto se cognovit etiam absentem in Benedicti Patris oculis deliquisse.* — *Ib.* 139.14: *ða ðe ic ðe ongæt secgan* = B. 139 C: *quæ te dixisse cognovi.*

**taligan, consider, account:**

*Alex.* 39<sup>a</sup> b: *Nu ic hwæðre gehyhte and gelyfe ðæt ðu ðas ðing ongete swa ðu me ne talige owiht gelpan and secgan be ðære micelnisse ures gewinnes and compes.*

**tellan, tell, consider:**

*Bede* 82.4: *ne tellað we synne weosan gesinscipe* = 57.29: *Nec haec dicentes culpam deputamus esse coniugium.*

**wenan,<sup>1</sup> hope:**

*Bede* 430.24: *Mid ðy ic unc wende inngongende beon* = 308.4: *in cuius amoenitatem loci cum nos intraturos sperarem.*

*Wærf.* 181.25: *ne wene ic ne ðysne wer swa mycelre geearnunge swa swiðe beon ðissere worulde man* = 220 B<sup>3</sup>: *nam hunc tanti meriti virum . . . esse non suspicor.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 590<sup>b</sup>: *ðæt ðu wenst me for tintregum ðe geopenian ða godcundan gerynu.*

**witan, know:**

*Ju.* 92: *ðær he glædmod geonge wiste wic weardian.*

*Gu.* 1312: *se ðe his mondryhten life bilidenne last weardian wiste wine leofne.*

*And.* 183: *ðær ic seomian wat ðinne sigebroðor.*

*Rid.* 50.1: *ic wat eardfæstne anne standan deafne dumban.*

*Wids.* 102: *hwær ic under swegle selast wisse goldhrodene cwen giefte bryttian.*

*Bede* 36.17: *ðonne wite ðu me cristene beon* = 19.19: *Christianum iam me esse . . . cognosce.* — *Ib.* 408.21: *ðara cynna monig he wiste in Germanie wesan* = 296.13: *quarum in Germania plurimas nouerat esse nationes.*

*Læce.* 105.32: *ðær ðu wite elenan standan.*

## 5. Verbs of Declaring: —

I quote all the examples observed by me: —

**cweðan, say, declare:**

*Wærf.* 203.25: *hwæt cweðe wit ðis beon?* = 248 D: *Quidnam, quæso te, hoc esse dicimus?*

**foresecgan, foretell, predict:**

*Bede* 406.21: *Done . . . riim wintra hiene hæbbende beon, he . . . foresægde* = 294.23: *quem se numerum annorum fuisse habiturum . . . praedicere solebat.*

**ondettan, confess, declare:**

*Bede* 84.17: *ær ðon Dauit ondet heo fram wiifum clæne beon* = 59.16: *nisi prius mundos eos Dauid a mulieribus fateretur.*

<sup>1</sup> Gorrell, l. c., p. 386, holds that in *Beow.* 933 we have an accusative with an infinitive after *wenan*, but, with most translators of the poem, I take *me* to be dative.

**secgan, say, relate:**

*Bede* 340.20, 22: hire sægde . . . *Hilde* . . . of worulde geleoran 7 . . . to . . . leohte . . . *astigan* = 257.24, 27: *nuntiauit* matrem . . . *Hild* . . . *mi-grasse* . . . et . . . *ascendisse*.

*L.* 24.23: engla gesihðe, ða *secgað hine lybban* = *qui dicunt eum vivere*.

**6. Other Verbs: habban, have, and todælan, divide:**

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 440<sup>m</sup>: Seo swuster *hi wolde habban* to hire *bysegan*.

*Oros.* 46.16, 17, concerning which see Chapter XII, pp. 169 ff.

## II. INFLECTED.

Occasionally we seem to have an inflected infinitive as the quasi-predicate of an accusative subject. As indicated below, some of the examples admit of other explanations; but a few of them seem to me to belong here. I discuss the cases under the same general groups as I did the uninflected predicative infinitive. The examples occur in the prose texts only.

Under **Verbs of Causing** we have *don, make, cause*, and its compound, *gedon, make, cause*. The verbs of compelling (*geniedan, neadian, niedan*, etc.) might be put here, but the infinitive after them seems to me consecutive rather than predicative: see Chapter XII. I give all the examples that I have observed:—**don, make, cause:**

*Bede* 334.18<sup>a</sup>: heo . . . leornunge . . . gewreota . . . 7 . . . weorcum hire *underðeodde dyde to bigongenne* = 254.18: *Tantum lectioni . . . scripturarum suos uacare subditos, tantum operibus iustitiae se exercere faciebat*.

*Greg.* 357.5: Swa hwa swa urum wordum & gewritum hieran nylle, *do hit mon us to witanne* = 276.10: Si quis non obedit verbo nostro per epistolam, hunc *notate* (or final? see *Oros.* 126.131 under *gedon* below).

*Chron.* 257<sup>m</sup>, 1127 E<sup>a</sup>: se ilce Heanri *dide ðone king to understandene* ðæt he hæfde læten his abbotrice. — *Ib.* 259<sup>t</sup>, 1128 E: He *dide ðone king to understanden* (*sic!*) ðæt he wolde . . . forlæten ðone minstre.

**gedon, make, cause:**

*Oros.* 126.31: Genoh sweetollice *us gedyde nu to witanne* Alexander hwelce ða hæðnan godas sindon to weorðianne, ðæt etc. = 0. [Or is *us* dative, as is claimed by Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 12, who compares the New High German *Ich thue Dir zu wissen?* The examples of the infinitive after *don* given above argue for the accusative and the predicative infinitive, but the following example from *Cato* 10 argues for the dative and the final infinitive: *Donne ðu eald sie and manegra ealdra cwidas and lara geaxod hæbbe, gedo hie ðonne ðam geongum to witanne*. Likewise, the following passage from Otfrid argues for the dative and the final infinitive: I, 17, 48: *duet ouh thanne iz mir zi wizzanne*. See Chapter XVI, section x, and cf. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 209; De Reul, *l. c.*, p. 131; and Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 103.]

**Verbs of Mental Perception:—**

*findan, find.*  
*gereccan, direct.*

*læran, teach.*  
*tæcan, teach.*

The examples in full follow:—

*findan, find:*

*Ælf. L. S. XXXI. 980:* Ða comon his geferan and fundon hine licgenne (*sic!*) on blodigum limum and tobeatenum lichaman.

**gereccan, direct:**

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 76:* god . . . *us gerecce* Ða weorc to begangenne Ðe him licige (or final?).

**læran, teach:**

*Bede 100.28:* Ðæt he Cristes geoc bere 7 eow lære to beorennne = 83.1: quia iugum Christi et ipse portet, et uobis *portandum offerat* (or final?). — *Ib. 226.27:* he . . . *heo lærde to healdanne* regollices liifes Ðeodscipe = 173.11: *disciplinam uitae regularis . . . custodiri* docuit. — *Ib. 472.6:* Ðara Ðinga, Ðe he oðre lærde to donne, he sylfa wæs se wilsumesta fylgend 7 læstend = 346.27: et eorum, quae *agenda docebat*, erat executor deuotissimus (or final?).

*Bl. Hom. 131.32:* To eow cymeÐ Halig frofre Gast, . . . se eow ealle Ðing læreÐ to donne.

**tæcan, teach:**

*Boeth. 149.21:* *tæc me* Ðinne willan to wyrrenne = 0 (or final?).

*Hept.: Pref. to Gen. 24.19:* Crist . . . and his apostolas *us tæhton* ægÐer to healdenne. — Cf. Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 50.

Of Verbs of Declaring only one word is found in this construction, *foresecgan*, *foretell, predict*, in *Wærf. 10.22:* Hu Bonifatius *foresæde to sweltenne* Ðone *cimbalgliwere* = 0; which is repeated on p. 61.20 = 192 C: 0.

Once, in *Luke 1.73*, we have an inflected infinitive with accusative subject, and the infinitive phrase is in apposition to a noun: he alysd us of urum feondum . . ., mildheortnesse to wyrrenne mid urum fæderum, and gemunan (*sic!*) his halegan cyðnesse: *hyme us to sylleenne* Ðone aÐ Ðe he urum fæder Abrahames swor = Sicut locutus est per os sanctorum . . . prophetarum ejus: salutem ex inimicis nostris . . . ad faciendam misericordiam cum patribus nostris, et memorari testamenti sui sancti: *jusjurandum quod juravit ad Abraham patrem nostrum, daturum se nobis*. The inflected infinitive is evidently caused by the future of the Latin, *daturum*, and is used to denote futurity.

*Note.* — Other Supposed Examples of the Inflected Infinitive Used Predicatively have been suggested. Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 31, apparently would put here *Pr. Ps. 34.13* (*gebigde min mod to fæstenne* = humiliabam in jejuniis animam meam) and *Ælf. Hom. I. 114<sup>t</sup>* (Ðæt se . . . God nænne mann ne neadaÐ to symgigenne), but I have put both under the consecutive use. Stoffel, *l. c.*, p. 53, thinks that in *Mat. 17.4* (god ys us her to beonne = bonum est nos hic esse) we have an accusative with a predicative inflected infinitive, but to me it seems more probable that *us* is a dative and that the infinitive is subjective: see Chapter I, p. 12 above; and cf. De Reul, *l. c.*, pp. 136–137; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 115. It may be that in *Mat. 8.21<sup>a</sup>* we have an accusative with a predicative inflected infinitive after *aliefan*, but I believe that the pronoun is dative and that the infinitive is objective: see p. 46 above.

### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

The foregoing statistics make clear that the predicative infinitive with accusative subject is normally uninflected in Anglo-Saxon. Of the possible examples of the inflected infinitive used predicatively above given, several, as there indicated, may be considered final rather than predicative in sense; several (after *læran*) are in translation of a Latin gerund or gerundive; several occur after a verb (*tæcan*) denoting tendency, with which we should expect the

inflected infinitive; two (after *foresecgan*) are probably due to the desire to denote futurity, as one other (*Luke* 1.73<sup>t</sup>, translating a Latin future participle) undoubtedly is, for, as Ælfric, *l. c.*, 246, tells us, the denotation of futurity is one function of the inflected infinitive. The clearest cases occur in the later *Chronicle* and in Ælfric, by which time the distinction between the two infinitives had begun to break down appreciably.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive with accusative subject as object of active verbs is very rare in Anglo-Saxon, only about 52 examples having been found. It is almost unknown in the poems, only two examples having been found (with *lætan*: see below).

### Verbs of Commanding: —

*bebeodan*, *command*.  
*biddan*, *request*.

*hatan*, *command*.

The examples in full are: —

*bebeodan*, *command*:

*Bede* 14.13: *bebead deofolgyld beon toworpen* = 0. — 172.9: *bebead ðæt feowertiglice fæsten healden beon* = 142.8<sup>b</sup>: *ieunium xl dierum obseruari . . . praecepit*.

*biddan*, *request*:

*Bede* 38.31: *bæd . . . Albanus fram Gode him wæter seald beon to sumre his ðenunge* = 21.1: *Albanus dari sibi a Deo aquam rogavit*.

*hatan*, *command*:

*Bede* 18.2: *mid . . . gewritum 7 stæcraftum hi georne het beon gelærede* = 204.11: *coeperint studiis imbui*.

*Wærf.* 194.18: *ða het he ðysne biscop beon gelæded to ðære stowe* = 237 B<sup>1</sup>: *hunc . . . iussit deduci*.

### Verbs of Causing and Permitting: —

*don*, *make, cause*.  
*forlætan*, *allow*.

*lætan*, *allow*.

The examples in full are: —

*don*, *make, cause*:

*Wulf.* 196.2: *sæ he deð on lytelre hwile beon ungemetlice . . . astyrode*.

*forlætan*, *allow*:

*Bl. Hom.* 33.11: *se hine sylfne forlet from deofles leomum & from yflum mannum beon on rode ahangenne*.

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 18.237: *ða ne forlet ðære lyfte smyltnes [ænig ðing] wesan gederede*.

*lætan*, *allow*:

*Gen.* 2194: *Ne læt ðu ðin ferhð wesan sorgum asæled*.

*Gu.* 1235: *nelle ic lætan ðe æfre unrotne æfter ealdorlege meðne modseocne minre geweorðan soden sorgwælmum*.

*Wærf.* 294.6: *his gecorenan, ða ðonne hwæðre he ne læteð na beon forholene æfter deaðe* = 356 A<sup>2</sup>: *quos non . . . patitur celari*.

*Elf. L. S.* 250.215: *læt me beon geteald to heora getele.* — *Ib.* XXX. 443: *læt hi beon her atgædere gelede.*

*Mk.* 7.27<sup>a</sup>: *Læt ærust ða bearn beon gefylled = Sine prius saturari filios.*

*Læce.* 101.12: *bewreoh ðæt wif wel 7 læt beon swa beclæmed lange tide.*

### Verbs of Sense Perception:—

*gefelan, feel, perceive.*

*geseon, see.*

*gehieran, hear.*

Typical examples are:—

*gefelan, feel, perceive:*

*Bede* 378.24: *ða gefelde he his lichoman . . . geslægene beon = 278.14: sensit dimidiam corporis . . . langore depressam.*

*gehieran* <sup>1</sup> [-e-, -y-], *hear:*

*Bede* 310.4: *gehyrde Theodor ðone geleafan . . . gedrefde (sic!) beon = 238.28: audiens Theodorus fidem . . . multum esse turbatam.*

*Chad.* 112: *ða geherde he . . . ðone ilcan blisse song upp astigan 7 ðy wege ðe he com to hefonum beon gecerredne mid . . . swetnisse.*

*geseon, see:*

*Bede* 24.4: *geseah him fram deoflum tobrohte beon ða boc = 311.1: oblatum sibi a daemonibus codicem . . . uiderit.* — *Ib.* 34.17: *mid ðy ðe he hine ða geseah on . . . gebedum 7 wæccum . . . beon abysgadne = 18.16: quem dum orationibus . . . studere conspiceret.* — *Ib.* 80.33: *se ðe hine gesið hefigadne beon = 57.23: qui se grauari . . . uidet.* — *Ib.* 340.12: *ða geseah heo . . . sawle . . . to heofonum up borenne (sic!) beon = 257.16: uidit animam . . . ad caelum ferri.*

*Wærf.* 171.22: *ða geseah he Germanes sawle . . . fram ænglum beon borne in ðone heofon [MS. H.: ða geseah he englas ferial etc.] = B. 198 B<sup>3</sup>: uidit Germani . . . animam . . . in cælum ferri.*

### Verbs of Mental Perception:—

*geleornian, learn.*

*gemunan, remember.*

*geliefan, believe.*

*ongietan, understand.*

*gemetan, meet, find.*

*tweogian, doubt.*

The examples in full are:—

*geleornian*, <sup>2</sup> *learn:*

*Bede* 90.16: *edneowade . . . ða cirican, ðe he ær geara geo geleornade ealde Romanisce weorce geworhte beon = 70.13: ecclesiam, quam . . . opere = factam fuisse didicerat.*

*geliefan, believe:*

*Bede* 208.1: *ða æriste he gelyfde on anum ðara restedaga beon geworden = 162.10: resurrectionis, quam una sabbati factam . . . credebat.*

*gemetan, find:*

*Bede* 354.17: *nænigne . . . ic gemette . . . abisgodne beon = 265.10: nemi-nem . . . occupatum repperi.*

*Wærf.* 68.24: *ða gemette heo hire hwæte ealne beon neah gedæledne fram hire*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 401.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 403. In *Bede* 404.21, cited by Dr. Gorrell as having an accusative and active infinitive, I take the infinitive to be objective.

. . . suna ðearfendum mannum = 197 B<sup>1</sup>: pene omne *triticum* . . . *invenit* a filio suo pauperibus *expensum*.

**gemunan**, *remember*:

*Bede* 440.24, 25, 26: ðæt we *gemundon* ðætte usse *dæde* 7 usse *geðohtas* . . . in idelnesse *toflowenne*, ah . . . *gehaldene* beon 7 us . . . *æteowde* beon = 313.11, 12, 13: ut *meminerimus* *facta* et *cogitationes* nostras non in uentum *diffluere*, sed . . . *seruari*; et . . . nobis *ostendenda*.

**ongietan**,<sup>1</sup> *understand*:

*Bede* 330.16: *feola* oðerra *gescrepa* 7 *gesynta* . . . he oncneow 7 *ongeāt* heofonlice him *forgifen* *weosan* = 252.3: *alia* . . . *fuisse* *donata* *intellexit*. — *Ib.* 340.14: Ða onget heo . . . *æteawed* *weosan*, ðætte heo *geseah* = 257.19: *intellexit* . . . *ostensum* sibi *esse* *quod* uiderat.

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B.* 485: Ða ic ðas *stemne* *gehyrde* and for minum ðingum *ongeāt* beon *geclypode*, ic *wepende* *spræc*.

**twoegian** [*twygian*],<sup>2</sup> *doubt*:

*Bede* 190.22<sup>a, b</sup>: Ne *twygeo* ic . . . *mec* . . . *gelæd* beon 7 . . . *underðeoded* . . . ne beon = 153.5, 6: nec *dubito* . . . *me* . . . *rapendum* ac . . . *subdendum* *esse*.

### Verbs of Inclination and of Will: —

**gefeon**, *rejoice*.

**willan**, *desire*.

**geomrian**, *lament*.

The examples in full are: —

**gefeon**, *rejoice*:

*Bede* 470.24, 25: 7 *hi* swa swa niwe *discipulhada* ðæs *eadegestan* *ealdres* ðara *apostola* *See*. *Petres* *underðeodde* beon 7 mid his *mundbyrde* *gescylde* 7 (*sic!*) *eall* seo ðeod *geriht* *gefeah* 7 *blissade* = 346.12<sup>a, b</sup>: et quasi nouo *se* *discipulatu* . . . *Petri* *subditam*, *eiusque* *tutandam* *patrocinio* *gens* *correcta* *gaudebat*.

**geomrian**, *lament*:

*Bede* 88.15: *geomrað* *hine* swa *gebundenne* beon = 61.23: *ligatum* *se* *uehementer* *ingemiscat*.

**willan**, *desire*:

*Bede* 322.21: ic *gelyfo*, ðætte *me* . . . *seo* . . . *arfæstnis* *wolde* *mec* *gehefigade* beon = 246.10: *credo*, *quod* . . . *me* . . . *pietas* . . . *uoluit* *grauari*.

### Verbs of Declaring: —

**cweðan**, *say*.

**secgan**, *say*.

The examples in full are: —

*Bede* 64.24: *nænig* . . . *owiht* his beon *onsundrad* *cwæð* = 49.1: *nullus* . . . *aliquid* *suum* *esse* *dicebat*.

*Bede* 398.15: *Nis* ðæt *wundor* to *forswugianne*, ðæt *Herebald* *sægde* from him *ge* ðæt *eac* *swylce* *geworden* beon in him *selfum* = 289.7: *Heribald* in *se ipso* ab eo *factum* *solet* *narrare* *miraculum*.

We find, too, what may be considered an elliptical passive infinitive with accusative subject, made up of an accusative noun and of a past participle

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 399.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 394.



after an active transitive verb; and the infinitive (*beon* or *wesan*) is understood, or, at least, it may be considered as being understood. Since in most, if not all, of the instances the supplying of the infinitive is a matter of taste rather than of necessity, I cite only a few examples, after the different groups of verbs:—

**Verbs of Sense Perception:—**

**gehieran, hear:**

*El.* 957: *Sefa wæs ðe glædra, ðæs ðe heo gehyrde ðone hellesceaðan ofer-swiðedne.*

**hieran, hear:**

*And.* 361: *Æfre ic ne gehyrde ðon cymlicor ceol gehladenne heahgestreonum.*

**Verbs of Mental Perception:—**

**findan, find:**

*Rid.* 44.7: *hy gesunde æt ham findað witode him wiste and blisse.*

**geaxian, learn by inquiry:**

*Bl. Hom.* 107.28: *we . . . geariað . . . deaðas geond ðeodland to mannum cumene.*

**gefrignan, learn by inquiry:**

*Gu.* 1335: *se selesta . . . ðara ðe we on Engle æfre gefrunen acennedne ðurh cildes had gumena cynnes.*

**geliefan, believe:**

*Chr.* 120: *Nu we hyhtfulle hælo gelyfað ðurh ðæt Word Godes weorodum brungen.*

**getacnian, signify:**

*Mart.* 104.10: *mid ðy he getacnode Crist cumenne in ðære clænan fæmnan innoð.*

**ongietan, understand:**

*Greg.* 211.3<sup>a, b</sup>: *Ða fortruwodnesse & ða anwilnesse an Corintheum Paulus ongeat suiðe wiðerweardne wið hine, & betweoh him selfum suiðe aðundene & upahæfene = 158.6: Unde cum proterve Paulus Corinthios adversum se invicem videret inflatos. — Ib. 211.22: gif we hwæt ongietað on him ungesceadwislices gedoon = 158.24: Et si qua ab eis inordinate gesta sunt, non jam tamquam perpetrata corripimus. — Ib. 295.24, 25: ðonne hie ongietað hwelcne monnan gesuencedne mid irre & mid hatheortnesse onbærnedne = 224.6: cum per abrupta furoris mentem cujuspian ferri conspiciat.*

*Ps.* 61.11<sup>b</sup>: *æne ic god spræcan gearuwe gehyrde and ðæt treowe ongeat tidum gemeldad.*

**witan, know:**

*Gen.* 42<sup>a, b</sup>, 43: *Ða he hit geare wiste synnihte bescald, susle geinnod, geond-folen fyre.*

*Gu.* 1327: *wat his sincgiefan holdne biheledne.*

*And.* 942, 943: *Wat ic Matheus ðurh mænra hand hrinen heorudolgum, heafodmagan searonettum beseted.*

*Bl. Hom.* 81.34: *we witon eall ðis ðus geworden. — Ib. 85.34: ðæt ðu wistest Crist on rode ahangenne.*

**Verbs of Declaring:—**

**bodian, announce:**

*Wærf.* 250.3: *se bodode me ðone ylcan wer forðferedne = 305 B: quia eumdem virum obisse nuntiavit.*

It should be added that by some it is claimed that this predicative use of the participle (and, also, of the adjective and of the noun) had much to do with the origin of the predicative infinitive with accusative subject, — a claim discussed in Chapter XIV, section viii.

## AS SUBJECT.

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

That the accusative with an infinitive is used, though very rarely, as the subject of an impersonal verb in Anglo-Saxon, is admitted by Erckmann, *l. c.*, p. 6; by Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 22; by De Reul, *l. c.*, p. 135; and by Stoffel, *l. c.*, p. 52. And what seems to me a clear example of the passive infinitive so used in Anglo-Saxon (*Bede* 338.11<sup>a, b</sup>), is given by Mätzner, and is copied by Dr. Stoffel. But, in his recent *The Accusative with Infinitive*, p. 167, Dr. Zeitlin denies the existence of this construction in Anglo-Saxon: "The use of a substantive with infinitive as the subject of a neuter or impersonal verb . . . is not found at all in Old English [= Anglo-Saxon]." Below I give all the clearer examples that I have observed of this construction, with both active and passive infinitive. Although, as indicated, some of the examples are doubtful, and although the total number of clear examples is not large, it is sufficient, I believe, to establish the existence of the idiom in Anglo-Saxon. As is evident from my examples, the use of this idiom in Anglo-Saxon is due to the influence of the Latin originals.

#### *gebyrian*, *be fitting*:

*Gosp.*: — *Mat.* 17.10: Hwæt secgeað ða boceras ðæt *gebyrige* ærest *cuman Heliam*? = Quid ergo scribæ dicunt quod *Eliam oporteat* primum *venire*. — *Mk.* 8.31<sup>b, c</sup>: Ða ongan he hi læran ðæt mannes *Sunu gebyreð* fela ðinga ðolian, and beon aworpen fram ealdormannum . . . and beon ofslegen, and . . . *arisan* = Et cœpit docere eos quoniam *oportet Filium* hominis *pati* multa, et reprobari a senioribus . . . et occidi; et . . . *resurgere*. — *L.* 13.33: Ðeah hwæðere *me gebyreð* to dæg and to morgen and ðy æfteran dæge *gan* = Verumtamen *oportet me holdie* et cras et sequenti die *ambulare* (or is *me* dative and *gan* subjective?). *L.* 24.46<sup>a, b</sup>: Ðus *gebyrede Crist* ðolian, and ðy ðriddan dæge of deaðe *awisan* = sic *oportebat Christum pati*, et *resurgere* a mortuis tertia die. [In his 1893 edition of *The Gospel of Saint Luke in Anglo-Saxon*, Professor J. W. Bright has, in 24.46, *Criste*, dative, instead of *Crist*, accusative. Three manuscripts have the accusative, while only one has the dative here.]

#### *gedafenian*, *be fitting*:

*Mat.* 3.15: Ðus *unc gedafenað* ealle rihtwisnesse *gefyllan* = sic enim *deceat nos implere* omnem *justitiam* (or is *unc* dative and *gefyllan* subjective?).

Possible, but not probable, examples of the active infinitive with accusative, as subject of a finite verb (impersonal), are found in the following passages, the infinitives in which seem to me rather subjective than predicative, and have accordingly been put in Chapter I, pp. 15, 16, and 17: after *gebyrian*, *Mat.* 18.33, *L.* 11.42<sup>b</sup>, 12.12; after *gedafenian*, *Bede* 342.18; *L.* 4.43; after *lician*, *Bede* 276.12. See, too, p. 73 above, the comment on *healdan*.

Once we have the inflected infinitive with accusative subject as subject of a passive verb, in the *Chronicle* 252<sup>b</sup>, 1123 E<sup>c</sup>: ðæt wæs forðan ðæt hit wæs *don ðone pape to understanden* (*sic!*) ðæt he hæfde etc.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive with accusative subject as subject of an active verb is found a few times (7 in all) with the following verbs: —

**gebyrian**, *be fitting*:

*Gosp.*: *Mk.* 8.31<sup>a</sup>, already quoted on p. 124 above under *Mk.* 8.31<sup>b</sup>. c. — *Mk.* 13.10: And on ealle ðeoda ærest *gebyrað beon* ðæt godspel *gebodud* = Et in omnes gentes primum oportet *prædicari evangelium*. — *L.* 24.47: Ðus *gebyrede* Crist ðolian, and ðy ðridðan dæge of deaðe arisan; and *beon bodud* on his naman *dædbote* and synna *forgyfenesse* on ealle ðeoda = sic oportebat Christum pati, et resurgere a mortuis tertia die; et *prædicari* in nomine ejus *pænitentiam*, et *remissionem peccatorum* in omnes gentes.

**gedafenian**, *be fitting*:

*Bede* 294.11: Ðætte swelces modes *wer* ma *gedafonade beon* to biscope *gehalgad*, ðonne cynning wære = 225.24: quia talis animi *uirum* episcopum magis quam regem *ordinari deceret*.

**lician**, *be pleasing*:

*Bede* 338.11<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: Ða *licede* ðæm . . . foreseonde . . . Ða . . . sawle . . . *ademde* 7 *asodene beon* = 256.14: *placuit* . . . prouisorii . . . *animam* . . . *examinari*.

Once we have a passive infinitive with accusative subject as subject of a passive verb, in *Bede* 70.32: ðy læs on him *gesegn sy* Ða ðing *onwrecen beon*, in ðæm heo ðurh unwisnesse gesyngodon ær fulwihtes bæðe = 51.24: ne in eis *illa ulcisci uideantur*, in quibus se per ignorantiam ante lauacrum baptismatis adstrinxerunt.

For the predicative infinitive with accusative subject in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section viii.

Occasionally in Early West Saxon and frequently in Late West Saxon, the predicative infinitive with accusative subject is supplanted by the predicative present participle with accusative subject, and *I heard her sing* becomes *I heard her singing*, — a topic discussed in Chapter XV.

## NOTES.

1. *Ambiguous Infinitives*. — It may be that, in *Mat.* 8.21<sup>b</sup> (Drihten, *alyfe me* ærest to farene and *bebyrigean minne fæder* = Domine, perimite *me* primum ire, et *sepelire* patrem meum) and in *Luke* 9.59 (*alyf me* æryst *bebyrigean minne fæder* = perimite mihi primum ire, et *sepelire* patrem meum), we have an accusative and predicative infinitive, but I am inclined to believe that we have rather a dative (*me*) and an objective infinitive, for in the only instance in which we have *aliefan* followed by an infinitive plus a pronoun whose case is certain, in *Ælf. L. S.* 102.227 (Ðam *alyfde* se casere heora cristendom to *healdenne*), we have the dative case. — *Me* and an infinitive occur after other verbs, but in most cases it is clear whether the accusative or the dative is intended from the construction of the verb with other pronouns or with nouns.

2. *Future Active Infinitive*. — We have a kind of future infinitive active in the following: *Bede* 406.21: Ðone . . . riim wintra *hiene hæbbende beon*, he . . . *foresægde* = 294.23: *se numerum annorum fuisse habiturum* . . . *prædicere* solebat; *ib.* 190.30: ne *getreowe me onfoende beon* = 153.14: *me accepturum esse confidam*; *ib.* 430.24: Mid ðy ic *unc wende inngongende beon* = 308.4: in cuius amoenitatem loci cum nos *intraturos sperarem*.

3. *Alternation of Participle and Infinitive*. — Occasionally we find the predicative present participle alternating with the predicative infinitive active, as in: *Bened.* 25.20: Ðylæs ðe God on ænigne timan *us geseo bugende* to yfele and to nahte *geheworfan* = 50.17: ne nos

*declinantes in malo, et inutiles factos aliqua hora aspiat Deus; Bl. Hom. 177.15<sup>a, b</sup>: mon geseah hine blinde onlyhtende, & hreofe clænsian.*

4. *An Infinitive Phrase Introduced by "Ðæt."* — Occasionally in the *Blickling Homilies* we have the infinitive phrase introduced by the conjunction *ðæt*: 217.21: Ða he ða Sanctus Martinus *ðæt geseah*, *ðæt* ða oðre broðor ealle swa unrote ymb *ðæt* lic utan standan (*sic!*), ðe (*sic!*) weop he & eode into him; 45.19: gif he ne *geðafað ðæt* Godes folc heora lif on woh lybban (or subjunctive?); in *Bede*: 440.24, 25: *ðæt* we *gemundon ðatte* usse dæde 7 usse geðohtas . . . in idelnesse toflowenne, ah . . . gehaldene beon = 313.11, 12: *ut meminerimus facta et cogitationes nostras non in uentum diffuere, sed . . . seruari*; and in *Ælfric's Lives of Saints*: 108.323, 324: *Geðafa ðæt* min modor me *gespræcan* and sume ðreo niht on minum ræde beon. Cf. Note 5 to Chapter IV.

5. *Inflected Infinitive without "To."* — An inflected infinitive without *to* is found in *Ælf. L. S. XXXI. 980*, quoted on p. 119 above.

6. *The Accusative Subject of the Passive Infinitive Is to Be Supplied in Wærf. 337.20<sup>a, b</sup>:* swa ðu sylf gelomlice gehyrdest mid me beon sæd 7 reht be sumum halgum were = 405 C: sicut *narrari de quodam sancto viro mecum frequenter audisti*; or one may prefer to consider the infinitive as merely objective.

7. *The Infinitive "Beon" or "Wesan" May Be Supplied* in such sentences as the following, but this is not necessary: *Greg. 291.21, 22: buton ðæt* he ongeat Titum hwene monðwærran & geðyldigran ðonne he sceolde, & *Timotheus (sic!)* he ongeat hatheortran ðonne he sceolde = 220.22: nisi quod mansuetioris spiritus Titum, et paulo ferventioris uidit esse Timotheum.

8. *Position of the Accusative Subject.* — Normally the accusative subject precedes its predicative infinitive, but occasionally it follows the infinitive, in both objective and subjective phrases, as in the following passages, quoted on the pages indicated: *Gen. 438<sup>a</sup>* and 1439, p. 111; *Ælf. L. S. 18.147*, p. 112; *Beow. 786* and 787, p. 113; *Oros. 162.6, 7*, p. 114; *Wærf. 74.20*, p. 117; *Mat. 17.10*, p. 124; etc.

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH DATIVE SUBJECT.

The first to suggest that in the Germanic languages, specifically in Gothic, there occurs after an impersonal verb (*wairþan*) a dative with predicative infinitive substantially identical with the well-known accusative with predicative infinitive, was Jacob Grimm, who, in his *Deutsche Grammatik*, IV, p. 131, cited the following as an example in Gothic: *Mark 2. 23: jah warþ þairhgaggan imma þairh atisk* = *Καὶ ἐγένετο παραπορεύεσθαι αὐτὸν . . . διὰ τῶν σπορίμων*. To me the infinitive here seems subjective, not predicative, and the dative seems governed by the finite verb, not to be the subject of the infinitive; but not so to Grimm: "Auf *warþ* beziehen mag ich den Dat. nicht (etwa in dem Sinn: es geschah, begegnete ihm, dass), dann würde er unmittelbar daneben stehen." Further discussion of this locution in Gothic is deferred to Chapter XVI, section ix; and the example is quoted here merely to define the idiom under discussion and, incidentally, to give a bit of its earliest history.

For the moment accepting Grimm's theory, have we such a dative-with-infinitive construction in Anglo-Saxon? True, Grimm says that not a trace of the idiom occurs in any other Germanic language besides Gothic: "In keinem andern deutschen Dialect die Spur einer solchen Construction, wie sie auch im Goth. nur nach *warþ* vorkommt."<sup>1</sup> But I cannot see that the dative with infinitive in the following examples differs essentially from that in the Gothic sentence above quoted:—

#### (1) Uninflected:

*Gosp.: Mk. 9.47: betere ðe is mid anum eagan gan on Godes rice* = 9.46: *bonum est tibi luscum introire in regnum Dei*. — *L. 12.12: Halig Gast eow lærð on ðære tide ða ðing ðe eow specan gebyrað* = *Spiritus enim sanctus docebit vos in ipsa hora quid oporteat vos dicere*. — *L. 15.32<sup>a, b</sup>: ðe gebyrede gewistfullian and geblissian* = *Epulari autem et gaudere oportebat*.<sup>2</sup> — *L. 24.26<sup>a, b</sup>: Hu ne gebyrede Criste ðas ðing ðoligean, and swa on his wuldor gan?* = *Nonne hæc oportuit pati Christum, et ita intrare in gloriam suam?* — *Pr. Gu. V. 67, 68, 69: swa ðonne gedafenað ðam men* [Vercelli MS.: *ðane man*] *gelice ðurh six daga fæsten ðone gast gefrætwan, and ðonne ðy seofodan dæg mete ðicgan and his lichaman restan* = *ita etiam hominem decet sex diebus per jejunii plasma spiritu reformari, et septimo die comedendo carni requiem dare*. — *L. 4.43 Soðlice me gedafenað oðrum ceastrum Godes rice bodian* = *Quia et aliis civitatibus oportet me evangelizare* (may be accusative and infinitive).

#### (2) Inflected:

*Mat. 19.24: eaðelicre byð ðam olfende to ganne ðurh nædle eage, ðonne se welega on heofona rice ga* = *facilius est camelum per foramen acus transire, quam divitem intrare in regnum cælorum*.<sup>3</sup> — *Mk. 10.25: Eaðere ys olfende to farenne ðurh nædle ðyrel* = *Facilius est camelum per foramen acus transire*. —

<sup>1</sup> Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 131.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Tatian's translation of the same passage, in Chapter XVI, section ix.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Tatian's translation of the same passage, in Chapter XVI, section viii.

*Mat.* 17.4<sup>a</sup>: *god ys us her to beonne* = *Domine, bonum est nos hic esse*.<sup>1</sup> — *Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 2.18<sup>a</sup>: *Nis na god ðisum men ana to wunienne* = *Non est bonum hominem esse solum*. — *Mk.* 14.31: *And ðeah me gebyrige mid ðe to sweltenne* = *Et si oportuerit me simul commori tibi*. — *L.* 11.42<sup>a</sup>: *ðas ðing eow gebyrede to donne, and ða ðing ne forlætan (sic!)* = *hæc autem oportuit facere, et illa non omittere*. — *Bede* 196.17: *Hwæt woldest ðu, min domne biscop, ðæt cynelice hors ðæm ðearfan syllan, ðe ðe gedafenade agan (sic!) to habbanne* = 156.18: *Quid uoluisti, domine antistes, equum regium, quem te conueniebat proprium habere, pauperi dare?*

True, in the Anglo-Saxon examples, the dative usually is next to the finite verb, but at times it is not, as in *L.* 12.12; and in the examples from the Old High German, below, Chapter XVI, several times the dative is separated from the principal verb. Moreover, while Professor Streitberg emphasizes the fact that, in the examples which he cites of the Gothic dative with infinitive, “*der Dativ steht fast ausnahmslos hinter dem Infinitiv, wie im Griech. das Subject des Akk. m. Inf.*,”<sup>2</sup> at times, as in *2 Cor.* 7.7, cited by Professor Streitberg himself, the dative precedes the infinitive as in the Greek original the accusative precedes its infinitive; and both pre-position and postposition of the dative seem to me to result from a slavish rather than an independent handling of the original. Moreover, in our Anglo-Saxon examples the dative regularly precedes the infinitive, while in Old High German it sometimes precedes and sometimes follows it. These facts lead me to the conclusion that little, if any, significance is to be attached to the fact that the dative generally follows the infinitive in Gothic. Nor do I think that in the Gothic examples much, if any, weight is to be attached to the separation of the dative from the chief verb, since this separation, too, comes of following the order of words in Greek. Two of the chief arguments offered for setting up a genuine dative-with-infinitive construction after impersonals seem to me, therefore, considerably weakened, if not nullified.

It may be urged, however, that the above examples from Anglo-Saxon differ radically from the Gothic example in that in the latter we have a well nigh colorless word, *warþ*, translating the Greek *ἐγέvero*, while the chief verbs in Anglo-Saxon (*gebyrian*, *gedafenian*, and *beon* (*wesan*)) + an adjective are more datival in sense. There is a difference, to be sure, but not such as to preclude the Anglo-Saxon examples from being included in the same general category with the Gothic, I think; for the dative-with-infinitive in the Slavic languages — where the construction in question is most frequent — arose, as Miklosich<sup>3</sup> tells us, because of the very large number of dative-governing verbal nouns therein; — a fact of which I was not aware until I had independently come to the conclusion that, in the Anglo-Saxon examples above given, we more usually have the dative and the infinitive because of the datival force of the chief verbs, a force, however, that is occasionally overcome by the translator's following the Latin original and giving us an accusative and infinitive. When we have the dative, though, we have not in Anglo-Saxon, I think, a genuine dative-with-infinitive construction: the dative depends on the chief verb, and the infinitive is subject thereto. This conclusion is rendered the more

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Tatian 185.23: *guot ist uns hir zi wesanne* = *bonum est nobis hic esse* (from Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 71).

<sup>2</sup> Streitberg, *l. c.*, p. 213.

<sup>3</sup> See Miklosich, *l. c.*, p. 494, and Jolly, *l. c.*, p. 269; also Vondrak, *l. c.*, II, pp. 366-368, 420-422. Professor C. D. Buck, of the University of Chicago, kindly called my attention to the grammar by Vondrak.

probable, not only for Anglo-Saxon but also for Gothic, I believe, by the similar development in Old High German, especially after *gilmphan*, concerning which see Chapter XVI, section ix.

Moreover, this interpretation of the dative with the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon tallies, so far as I have been able to discover, with that given of the dative with the infinitive in Latin. In Allen and Greenough's *Latin Grammar*, § 272, a. 1, we read: "With certain impersonal verbs and expressions that take the infinitive as an apparent subject (§ 270. b), the personal subject of the action may be expressed (1) by a dative depending on the verb or verbal phrase or (2) by an accusative expressed as the subject of the infinitive. Thus: *rogant ut id sibi facere liceat* (B. G. i. 7), 'they ask that it be allowed them to do this;' — *si licet<sup>1</sup> vivere eum quem Sex. Naevius non volt* (Quinct. 94), 'if it is allowed a man to live against the will of Sextus Nævius (whom S. N. does not wish).'" The phrase, "the dative with an infinitive," occurs in but few of the Latin grammars that I have consulted, and, when it does occur, is employed, as in the Allen and Greenough *Latin Grammar*, to designate a dative that is governed by the finite verb and an infinitive that is the subject thereof. Nowhere have I found a claim, implicit or explicit, that the Latin infinitive in such locutions is genuinely predicative.

It will have been observed that, in some of the Anglo-Saxon examples above given, we have sometimes a dative and an uninflected infinitive, sometimes a dative and an inflected infinitive, and sometimes with the same verb a dative and both an inflected infinitive and an uninflected infinitive. This interchange of uninflected and of inflected infinitives has already been explained in the consideration of the Subjective Infinitive, Chapter I, pp. 20-26 above, under which head, as already implied, I have put all of the above examples. Here it remains only to add that, regardless of our attitude to the so-called dative-with-infinitive construction, our explanation of the interchange between the uninflected and the inflected subjective infinitives is strengthened, if not confirmed, by the Miklosich theory of the dative with infinitive in the Slavic languages.

So far as I have been able to discover, the phrase, "the dative with infinitive," in the sense assigned to it by Grimm, is confined in the grammars to the dative with infinitive after impersonal verbs, as illustrated in the preceding section of this chapter. But, if the phrase is to be used at all, I do not see why it should not be used with reference, also, to the dative after certain personal verbs. Note, for example, how close to the accusative with infinitive after *permitto* in the Latin *Mat.* 8.21 (*Domine, permitte me primum ire, et sepelire patrem meum* = *Drihten, alyfe me ærest to farenne and bebyrigean (sic!) minne fæder*) is the dative with infinitive after the same verb in *Luke* 9.59 (*permitte mihi primum ire, et sepelire patrem meum* = *alyf me æryst bebyrigean minne fæder*), at least as close, in my judgment, as is the dative with infinitive after the impersonal, *licet*, to the accusative with infinitive after the same, in the passages quoted above. In Anglo-Saxon, too, we have an unin-

<sup>1</sup> According to Zumpt, l. c., § 601, *licet* is more frequently followed by a dative with an infinitive than by an accusative with an infinitive. I have found no clear example in Anglo-Saxon of *aliefan*, 'to be allowable,' 'to allow,' followed by an accusative with an infinitive; but *gebyrian* 'to happen,' 'to be fitting,' and *gedafenian*, 'to be fitting,' are followed by both the accusative with an infinitive and the dative with an infinitive. — M. C., Jr.

flected active infinitive with a dative after (1) certain verbs of Commanding (*beodan*, 'command;' *hatan*, 'command') and (2) certain verbs of Causing and Permitting (*aliefan*, 'allow;' *don*, 'make,' 'cause;' *lætan*, 'let,' 'cause'). I quote only a few examples:—

**beodan**:—*Chron.* 173<sup>m</sup>, 1048 E<sup>c</sup>: *se cyng . . . bead heom cuman to Gleaweceastre.* — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 15.280<sup>b</sup>, 281: *Ða het se gerefa hio genimon (sic!) and bead heom hire claðes of niman and hi up ahon bi ðam fotum* = 217.312<sup>a, b</sup>: *Præfectus dixit: Exspoliare eam et in aerem suspendite.*

**hatan**:—*Wærf.* 202.13: *ða het he heora æghwylcum gesomnian his byrðene wyrta* = 245 C<sup>2</sup>: *Quos statim collectis oleribus onustari fecit.* — *Mart.* 210.6, 7: *ða het he hym gebindan anne ancra on his sweoran and hyne forsendan on sæ.* — *Ælf. Hom. I.* 416<sup>t</sup>: *Ða færlice het he his gesihum ðone biscop mid his preostum samod geandwerdian.*

**aliefan**: see *Mat.* 8.21 and *L.* 9.59, as given above in connection with the comment on the Latin *permitto*; in these examples, of course, *me* may be considered accusative instead of dative, but it is more probably dative.

**don**:—*Chron.* 266<sup>b</sup>, 1140 E<sup>c</sup>: *ðe biscop . . . dide heom cumen ðider.* — *Ib.* 262<sup>b</sup>, 1132 E<sup>a, b</sup>: *king . . . dide him gyuen up ðæt abbotrice of Burch 7 faren ut of lande.* — *Ælf. L. S.* 464.376: *gif him ðyrste, ðu do him drincan* (or is *drincan* a noun?). — *Læce.* 141.5: *do sumne dæl pipores 7 do him ete (sic!) ðreo snæda on nihtnyhstig.*

**lætan**:—*Chron.* 56<sup>b</sup>, 796 F<sup>a, b</sup>: *Ceolwulf Myrcna cing . . . gefeng Eadberht Præn . . . 7 let him pytan ut his eagan 7 ceorfan of his handa.* — *Ib.* 116<sup>t</sup>, 963 E<sup>d</sup>: *se arcebiscop . . . com ða to ðe cyng, leot him locon (sic!) ða gewrite ðe ær wæron gefunden.* — *Ib.* 210<sup>b</sup>, 1075 D<sup>b</sup>: *se scirgerefa . . . let him findan mete.* — *Ib.* 225<sup>b</sup>, 1090 E: *he . . . let heom swa weorðan.*

Some of these examples are doubtful. But a few (those with *don* and *lætan*) admit of no other explanation than to consider that we have an infinitive with dative subject, unless we hold that at that stage in the history of the language the dative form, *him*, had already begun to supplant the accusative forms, *hine* and *hie*, — a possibility suggested by the fact that most of the clearer examples (those after *don* and, in a less degree, *lætan*) occur in the later *Chronicle* and, usually, in the later manuscripts of that work. With the verbs other than *don* and *lætan* the infinitive seems to me objective, not predicative; and the examples have been included in Chapter II. Aside from the confusion of the dative and the accusative forms of the pronouns already suggested, the dative instead of the accusative seems to be due to the fact that in some instances we have verbs (*beodan* and *lætan*) which are sometimes followed by a dative as well as by an accusative, and that in other verbs of kindred signification (*hatan*<sup>1</sup>) the same usage arose out of analogy.

Concerning this idiom with personal verbs in the kindred Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section ix.

At times, too, we have an inflected active infinitive with a dative after (1) certain verbs of Commanding (*bebeodan*, 'command;' *beodan*, 'command;' and *forbeodan*, 'forbid'); (2) one verb of Sense Perception once (*hieran*, 'hear'); and (3) certain verbs of Causing and Permitting (*aliefan*, 'allow;' *gedon*, 'cause;' *liefan*, 'allow;' and *wyrcean*, 'make,' 'cause').

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> l. c., p. 56.



As before, I quote only a few examples:—

**bebeodan:**—*Bede* 350.28: *Swa hwæt swa ðu me onsetttest 7 bebeodest to donne* = 263.25: *quicquid mihi imposueris agendum* (or, as the Latin suggests, *to donne* modifies *hwæt*?).—*Wærf.* 9.31: *hu he bebead ðære nædran ða wyrta to healdenne* = no Latin.

**beodan:**—*Ælf. Hept.: Deut.* 32.46<sup>a, b</sup>: *beodað ða word eowrum bearnum to healdenne* and *to donne* = *ut mandetis ea filiis vestris custodire et facere*.

**forbeodan:**—*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 36: *mete, ðe moyses forbead godes folce to ðicgenne* (or final?).—*Ib.* XXV. 42: *Moyses forbead . . . ða nytenu to etanne* ðam ealdan folce (or final?).—*Ib.* XXXII. 105: *ðe forbead petre mid wæpnum to winnenne wið ða . . . iudeiscan*.

**hieran:**—*Wærf.* 221.25: *wæs cuð, ðæt se . . . deofol . . . him hyrde ða scos of to donne* = 269 D<sup>2</sup>: *Ad cujus vocem mox cœperunt se caligarum corrigiæ in summa velocitate dissolvere, ut aperte constaret quod ei ipse qui nominatus fuerat ad extrahendas diabolus caligas obedisset*.

**aliefan:**—*Ælf. Hept.: Deut.* 3.25: *Alife me to farenne* and *to geseonne* ðæt seloste land = *Transibo igitur et videbo terram hanc optimam*.

**liefan:**—*Ælf. Hept.: Num.* 21.22: *Ic bidde ðæt ðu me lyfe ofer ðin land to ferenne* = *Obsecro ut transire mihi liceat per terram tuam*.

Some of the foregoing examples, as indicated, are doubtful. In most of them, however, we have a dative and an inflected objective infinitive, and, with the exception of the infinitive after *hieran*, all have been put under the objective use, in Chapter II. A few examples are quoted in this chapter on the Predicative Infinitive with a Dative Subject merely to show the affinity of these inflected infinitives with a dative, like the uninflected infinitives with a dative already treated, to Grimm's dative-with-infinitive construction. But in none of the foregoing examples does the infinitive seem to me predicative with the possible exception of the infinitive after *hieran*. In this example the inflected infinitive is probably due to the gerundive of the Latin original. The inflected infinitive with the other verbs has been explained already in Chapter II.

For the dative with inflected infinitive after personal verbs in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section ix.

In a word, I doubt whether we have a genuine dative-with-infinitive construction in Anglo-Saxon, that is, a predicative infinitive with dative subject substantially equivalent to a predicative infinitive with accusative subject, after either impersonal or personal verbs. Normally, after the former class of verbs the infinitive is subjective, and after the latter class the infinitive is objective; and after both the dative depends on the chief verb. In a few sporadic cases, almost exclusively in Late West Saxon, after a few personal verbs like *don* and *lætan*, we do have an uninflected predicative infinitive whose subject is dative in form, but probably by that time the distinction between the accusative forms (*hine* and *hie*) and the dative form (*him*) had broken down to such an extent that *him* was felt as an accusative. And once possibly (after *hieran*) we may have an inflected infinitive used predicatively with a dative; if so, the inflected infinitive is probably due to the gerundive in the Latin original.

This general conclusion is fortified, I believe, by what we learn of the same construction in the other Germanic languages, especially in Old High German: see Chapter XVI, section ix.

## CHAPTER X.

### THE FINAL INFINITIVE.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

##### 1. *With Active Finite Verb.*

The active infinitive denoting Purpose after active verbs is quite common, being found about 983 times. Of these infinitives about 442 are uninflected, and 541 are inflected. The total number of final infinitives in prose is about 849, of which 323 are uninflected, and 526 are inflected; the total number in poetry is about 134, of which 119 are uninflected, and 15 are inflected. As a rule, therefore, the final infinitive is inflected in prose, and is uninflected in poetry.

To me the final infinitive, both inflected and uninflected, seems dominantly, if not exclusively, active in sense as well as in form. Dr. Farrar,<sup>1</sup> however, holds that in sentences like the following the inflected infinitive is passive in sense: *Bede* 22.18: Ðæt . . . cyning *to gefullianne com* to Rome = 292.9: Ut . . . rex . . . *baptizandus* Romam *uenerit*; *ib.* 124.3: his dohtor *to gehalgienne* Criste ðam biscope to wedde *gesealde* = 99.30: filiam suam Christo *consecrandam* . . . *episcopo adsignavit*; *Greg.* 277.17: suelce he . . . sua nacodne hine selfne *cowige to wundigeanne* his feondum = 210.2: Totam vero se insidiantis hostis vulneribus detegit; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 46.35: hine . . . of ðære byrig *gelæddon to stænenne*. Personally I think that in such sentences the infinitive is possibly, but not probably, passive in sense; and it may be that this is what Dr. Farrar intends to assert. The grounds of my own opinion are these: (1) In most, if not all, of such sentences, an active translation is allowable, though a passive translation is more common. (2) We find in the original Latin an interchange between gerund and gerundive, as in *Bede* 76.34: ðas wiif, ða ðe heora bearn . . . oðrum *to fedenne sellað* = 55.13: quae filios suos . . . aliis *ad nutriendum tradunt*; *ib.* 150.8: ða [= these] eft seo modor æfter ðon *onsende* . . . in Gallia rice *to fedanne* Dægbrehte ðam cyninge = 126.4: quos . . . misit in Galliam *nutriendos* regi Dægberecto. (3) We find the final infinitive not infrequently translating a Latin active infinitive or subjunctive. (4) The Anglo-Saxon had little feeling for a genuine passive infinitive, as I tried to show in the discussion of the voice of the objective infinitive. This conclusion tallies with that of Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> who, *l. c.*, p. 28, writes as follows of the voice of the prepositional infinitive of purpose: "It is doubtful whether this can ever be with certainty called passive, since the infinitive may be felt as a mere verbal noun, as in *John* 17.4: Ðæt weorc ðæt ðu me sealdest *to donne*, where the Latin *quod dedisti ut faciam*, and the concurrent Lind. and Rush. glosses, *ðætte ic gedoe*, show plainly that *to donne* = not 'to be done,' but 'for doing.'"

When uninflected, the infinitive is far less frequently of doubtful voice. While, again, I believe, that the infinitive is prevailingly, perhaps exclusively,

<sup>1</sup> *L. c.*, pp. 16, 19, 25.

active in sense, in the following we have active infinitives that are apparently but not really passive in sense: *Ælf. Hept.*: *Jos.* 11.6: to mergen ic hig *syllē* on ðisre ylcan tide ealle *gewundigean* on Israēla gesihðe = cras enim hac eadem hora ego *tradam* omnes istos *vulnerandos* in conspectu Israel; *Laws*, Ordal, c. 4, § 1: *syllē* heom eallum *cyssan* boc; *Bede* 192.14: Ða gehalgode ic wæter 7 scæfðan dyde in ðæs . . . treoes, 7 *sealde* ðam untruman *drincan* = 153.32: benedixi aquam, et astulam roboris prae-fati inmittens *obtuli* egro *potandum* (with which compare *Greg.* 329.3<sup>b</sup>: Me ðyrste, & ge me ne *sealdon* *drincan* = 254.4: sitivi, et non *dedistis* mihi *bibere*); *Mk.* 6.37<sup>c</sup>: we him *etan* *syllað* = *dabimus* illis *manducare*. Again I am in substantial agreement with Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> who, *l. c.*, p. 16, declares: "Only the active meaning of the simple infinitive in final function is found in Old English, as may easily be noted in the examples already quoted, in which the Latin original is of like voice." The last clause of his statement, however, is somewhat too sweeping, as in some of the examples given by him and by me the Anglo-Saxon infinitive corresponds to a passive locution in Latin.

Normally the final infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, follows the verb that it modifies, as in *Beow.* 115 (*Gewat* ða *neosian* . . . hean huses) and in *Mat.* 9.13 (soðlice ne *com* ic rihtwise to *gecigeanne* = Non enim *veni* *vocare* justos), but occasionally it precedes it, as in *Gen.* 2262 (Heo ða *fleon* *gewat* ðrea 7 ðeowdom) and in *Bede* 22.18 (to *gefullianne com* to Rome = 292.9: *baptizandus* Romam *uenerit*). In many instances, the pre-positive final infinitive in Anglo-Saxon prose corresponds to a pre-positive word (infinitive, gerund, or gerundive) in the Latin original, as in the example just quoted from *Bede*. In not a few instances, as Dr. Riggert, *passim*, suggests, pre-position seems due to the fact that the infinitive occurs in a dependent clause, as in *Ex.* 472: hwonne waðema stream . . . *neosan come*.

As stated in Chapter V, with verbs of motion and of rest it is at times difficult to decide whether an infinitive is final or predicative in use. This difficulty arises out of the close kinship of the two uses at the outset, — a topic discussed in section v of Chapter XIV. Again, at times it is difficult to determine whether an inflected infinitive is final or adjectival, as in *Bede* 150.8 (ða eft seo modor . . . *onsende* . . . in G. rice to *fedanne* = 126.4: quos . . . *misit* in Galliam *nutriendos*), with which compare *Bede* 76.30<sup>b</sup> (ðætte wiif forhycað heora bearn fedan, ða ðe heo cennað, 7 heo oðrum wiifum to *fedenne sellað* = 55.10: eosque aliis mulieribus *ad nutriendum tradant*).

I. Only the uninflected final infinitive is found with the following verbs: —

1. Certain Verbs of Motion: —

*genægan*, approach.  
*gegan*, go.

*gewitan*, depart.  
*hladan*, load, draw.

2. Certain Verbs of Rest: —

*gesittan*, sit.

*licgan*, lie.

3. Certain Verbs of Commanding and Requesting: —

*abiddan*, request.

*biddan*, request.

4. Certain Other Verbs: —

*gewyrcean*, make.

*scieppan*, create.

Typical examples are: —

**1. Verbs of Motion: —**

**genægan, approach:**

*Ex.* 131: *wiste genægdon modige meteðegnas hyra mægen beton (sic!).* [The construction of *beton* is doubtful. In the original and in the recent editions of Grein's *Sprachschatz der Angelsächsischen Dichter* and in Blackburn's edition of the *Exodus*, *beton* is entered as an infinitive; but in the latter with this query: "or pt. 3 p. for *betton* (?)."]

**gengan, go:**

*Beow.* 1413: He . . . *gengde* . . . *wong sceawian.*

**gewitan, depart, go:**

*Beow.* 291: *gewitað forð beran wæpen and gewædu.* — *Ib.* 1275: *ða he hean gewat, dreame bedæled deaðwic geseon.* — *Ib.* 2820: *him of hreðre gewat sawol secean soðfæstra dom.*

*Gen.* 1649: *Gewiton him ða eastan æhta lædan.* — *Ib.* 1920: *Him ða Loth gewat land sceawigan be Iordane.*

**hladan, load, draw:**

*Greg.* 469.7: *Ac hladað iow nu drincan = 0.*

*Wærf.* 220.22: *ðær hlodon heom drincan = 269 A<sup>2</sup>: ad bibendum hauriebant aquam.*

**2. Verbs of Rest: —**

**gesittan, sit:**

*And.* 1162: *Gesæton searuðancle sundor to rune ermðu eahtigan.* [Or predicative? Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 45, considers the infinitive final.]

**licgan, lie:**

*Ælf. Hept.: Judges* 4.18<sup>b</sup>: *He eode ða in earhlice swiðe, and seo wimman mid hire hwitle bewreah hine sona, let hine licgan swa ætlutian his feondum = Qui ingressus tabernaculum ejus et opertus ab ea pallio, dixit ad eam (or predicative? see Chapter V, pp. 91–92).*

**3. Verbs of Commanding and Requesting: —**

**abiddan, request:**

*Bede* 392.32: *Wilt ðu wit unc abidde (sic!) ondrincan? = 286.13: Uis petamus bibere?*

**biddan, request:**

*Ælf. Hept.: Judges* 4.19: *bæd him drincan, and heo him bliðelice sealde, beheold hine eft = Da mihi, obsecro, paululum aquæ, quia sitio valde! Quæ dedit ei bibere et operuit illum.*

*J.* 4.9: *Humeta bitst ðu æt me drincan = Quomodo tu Judæus quum sis, bibere a me poscis?*

**4. Other Verbs, with each of which the construction is doubtful, as is apparent from the examples (complete): —**

**gewyrcean, make:**

*Gifts* 66: *Sum mæg wæpenðræce wige to nytte modcræftig smið monige gefremman, ðonne he gewyrceð to wera hilde helm oððe hupseax oððe heaðu-byrnan, scirne mece oððe scyldes rond, fæste gefegan wið flyge gares (or accusative and infinitive?).*

**scieppan**, *create, make*:

*Gnomic Sayings* 129: Gold geriseð on guman sweorde, sellic sigesceorp, sinc on cwene; god *scop* gumum, garnið werum, wig towiðre wicfreoða healdan (?).

The following is a complete alphabetic list of the verbs followed by the uninflected final infinitive only: —

**abiddan**, *request.*

**biddan**, *request.*

**genægan**, *approach.*

**gegan**, *go.*

**gesittan**, *sit.*

**gewitan**, *go, depart.*

**gewyrcean**, *make, build.*

**hladan**, *lade, draw.*

**licgan**, *lie.*

**scieppan**, *make, create.*

II. The final infinitive is found both uninflected and inflected with the following groups of verbs: —

1. Chiefly certain Verbs of Motion: —

**arisan**, *arise.*

**asendan**, *send.*

**becuman**, *come.*

**beran**, *bear.*

**cuman**, *come.*

**efstan**, *hasten.*

**faran**, *go.*

**feran**, *go.*

**forlætan**, *leave.*

**fundian**, *set out, strive.*

**gan** [**gangan**], *go.*

**gecierran**, *turn, go.*

**onsendan**, *send.*

**sendan**, *send.*

**wendan**, *turn, wend.*

2. Frequently certain Verbs of Offering and of Giving: —

**beodan**, *offer.*

**gesellan**, *give.*

**giefan**, *give.*

**sellan**, *give.*

*Sellan* is the verb most frequently used, occurring over 200 times.

3. Occasionally certain Verbs of Rest: —

**sittan**, *sit.*

**standan**, *stand.*

4. Occasionally certain Other Verbs:

**aliesan**, *release.*

The following are typical examples: —

1. Verbs of Motion: —

**arisan**, *arise*:

(1) Uninflected:

*And.* 829, 830: cining engla [*lacuna*] ða ða aras siðigean, eadige on upweg eðles neosan.

(2) Inflected:

*Pr. Ps.* 26.4: ðeah hi arisan ongearn me to feohtanne = 26.3: Si insurgat in me bellum.

*Wærf.* 201.23: he aras . . . lof to sæcganne = 245 B<sup>3</sup>: ad exhibendas laudes Domino surrexisset.

*Bened.* 40.11: ic aras . . . ðe to andettenne = 74.19: surgebam ad confitendum tibi.

*Ælf. L. S.* 456.233: hi swa oft arisan (*sic!*) . . . to singenne ðone lofsang.

**asendan**, *send*:

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hept.*: Judges 15.18: bæd ðone . . . god ðæt he him asende drincan,

for ðam ðe on ðære neawiste næs nan wæterscipe = clamavit ad dominum et ait: en *siti* morior.

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 402<sup>b</sup>*: Se asende . . . Titum to oferwinnenne ða . . . Iudeiscan.

*Ælf. L. S. 104.236*: hælend hi asende . . . ða men to fullienne.

*Mk. 3.14*: he hi asende godspell to bodigenne = fecit . . . ut mitteret eos *prædicare*.

**becuman, come:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Ermahnung 53*: geðancas, ðe on niht *becumað*, synlustas foroft swiðe fremman.

*Beow. 2366*: lyt eft *becwom* . . . hames niosan.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 22.26*: *becuman* wolde on Germaniam to bodianne godcunde lare = 296.3: *ad prædicandum* in Germaniam *uenire* uoluerit. — *Ib. 486.8<sup>a, b</sup>*: ic . . . bidde ðætte to eallum ðe ðis ylce stær to *becyme* ures cynnes to rædenne oððe to gehyrenne, ðæt hi . . . ðingien etc. = 8.10<sup>a, b</sup>: *Praeterea omnes, ad quos haec eadem historia peruenire potuerit nostrae nationis, legentes siue audientes, suppliciter precor, ut etc.*

**beran, bear:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede 396.8*: ðæm biscope bær drincan = 287.26: *obtulit poculum* episcopo.

*Ælf. Hom. II. 180<sup>t</sup>*: Se deofol cwæð ðæt he wolde beran drincan his gebroðrum.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 440.2<sup>b</sup>*: heht me beran to ræðanne = 312.16<sup>a</sup>: *iussit . . . mihi ad legendum deferre*.

*Wærƿ. 128.11*: bær mid him mettas to ðicgene = B. 158 C: *qui sumendos cibos in itinere portabat*.

*Ælf. Hom. I. 512<sup>b</sup>*: ðaða him man to bær cild to bletsigenne.

**cuman, come:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 2010*: Ic . . . cwom to ðam hringsele Hroðgar gretan. — *Ib. 268*: We . . . hlaford ðinne . . . secean cwomon.

*Ex. 92*: ðæt ðær drihten cwom . . . wicsteal metan.

*El. 152*: Com . . . cyning burga neosan.

*Ex. 416*: Ða him styran cwom stefn of heofonum.

*Bede 296.10*: ðone ðe hy untrumne neosian cwomon = 226.24: *quem languentem visitare uenerant*.

*Wærƿ. 251.9*: ðæt se ðe ðider com eles biddan = 308 A<sup>2</sup>: *quia is qui oleum petere uenerat, etc.*

*Ælf. L. S. XXX. 49<sup>a, b</sup>*: ic com ðæt ic me ðe ætywde ðurh ðysne heort and for hine ðe gehuntian and gefon mid ðam nettum minre mildheortnysse.

*Mat. 10.35*: Ic com . . . mann asyndrian ongen hys Fæder = *Veni enim separare hominem aduersus patrem suum*.

(2) Inflected:

*Ps. 97.8<sup>b</sup>*: forðon he eadig com eorðan to demanne = *quoniam venit iudicare terram*.

*Bede 22.18*: to gefullianne com to Rome = 292.9: *baptizandus* Romam

*uenerit.* — *Ib.* 96.8: monige *cwomon to bicgenne* ða ðing = 79.30: multi *ad emendum confluxissent.* — *Ib.* 158.28: *coman . . . word to gehyranne* = 132.19: *confluebant ad audiendum uerbum.* — *Ib.* 220.13: ðane (*sic!*) *cwom ðider to halgianne . . . se biscop* = 169.15: *quem ordinaturus uenit illuc . . . antistes.*

*Wærf.* 46.2: *se ceorl, ðe ðider com hine to geseonne* = 180 B<sup>2</sup>: *is qui ad uidendum eum uenerat.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 142<sup>b</sup> 2: *Crist, seðe com to gehælenne ure wunda.*

*Gosp.: Mat.* 9.13: *soðlice ne com ic rihtwise to gecigeanne* = *Non enim ueni vocare justos.* — *J.* 9.39: *Ic com on ðysne middaneard to demenne* = *In iudicium ego in hunc mundum ueni.* — *J.* 12.47: *ne com ic middaneard to demanne, ac ðæt ic gehæle middaneard* = *non enim ueni ut iudicem mundum, sed ut saluificem mundum.*

*Wulf.* 219.26: *drehten cwæð, ðæt he come to demenne cwicum.*

**efstan, hasten:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow.* 3103<sup>a, b</sup>: *uton nu efstan oðre siðe seon and secean searogeðræc, wundur under wealle.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 376.6<sup>a, b</sup>: *efestton ðæm biscope to cyðenne 7 secgenne (sic!) ða ðing* = 276.25: *festinarunt referre antisti.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 130<sup>m 3</sup>: *Ongunnon . . . menige efstan to gehyrenne ða halgan bodunge.*

*Ælf. L. S.* 312.91: *efst ðu nu me to fultumigenne* = 312.90: *ad adiuuandum me festina.*

**faran, go:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Met.* 26.14: *for wiges heard Creca drihten campstede secan.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 372<sup>b</sup> 2: *Ic bohte fif getymu oxena, and ic wille faran fandian-ðæra.*

*Ælf. Gr.* 134.12<sup>b</sup>: *ic fare huntian* = *uenatum pergo.*

(2) Inflected:

*Oros.* 46.17<sup>c</sup>: *oðer ut faran to winnanne* = 47.16: *reginae . . . , quae . . . vicissim curam belli et domus custodiam sortiebantur.*

*Wærf.* 237.11: *ðæt wit faran (sic!) to Ispanialande . . . to gecyðanne ða forðmednessa* = 289 B: *pro ostendenda ejusdem Arianæ hæreseos damnatione, transeamus . . . ad Hispanias.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 372<sup>b</sup>: *Se færð to sceawienne his tun.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Deut.* 11.29: *land, ðe ge farað on to eardienne* = *ad quam pergis habitandam.*

**feran, go:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow.* 840: *ferdon folctogan . . . wundur sceawian.*

*And.* 331: *us feran het geond ginne grund gasta streonan.*

*L.* 6.12: *he ferde on anne munt hine gebiddan* = *exiit in montem orare.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 372.11<sup>a, b</sup>: *ðæt wit . . . moton to heofenum feran his gife . . . to geseonne 7 to sceawigenne* = 274.30: *ad . . . uidendam gratiam transeamus.*

*Wærf.* 63.29: *he gewat feran ut sum dæl oðres weorces to wyrçanne* = 193 B<sup>5</sup>: *ad exercendum opus aliquod discessit.*

*Ælf. Hom. II. 88<sup>m</sup>*: Sum sædere *ferde to sawenne* his sæd.

*L. 7.25*: Ac hwi ferde ge to *seonne*? = Sed quid *existis videre*?

*forlætan*, leave:

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 971*: Hwæðere he his folme *forlet to lifwraðe* last *weardian*, earm and eaxle.

*Ju. 554*: Ða hine seo fæmne *forlet æfter ðræchwile ðystra neosan*.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 138.28*: ðæt . . . *geweorc . . . Oswalde forlet to geendianne* = 114.16: opus . . . *Oswaldo perficiendum reliquit*.

*fundian*, set out, strive:

(1) Uninflected:

*Beow. 1820*: we *fundiað Higelac secan*.

*Gen. 2270*: Hwider *fundast* ðu, feasceaft ides, siðas *dreogan*?

(2) Inflected:

*Greg. 93.24*: Se ðonne se ðe *fundige wislice to spreccanne*, ondræde he etc. = 64.10: Qui igitur *loqui sapienter nititur*, magnopere metuat.

*Bl. Hom. 93.4<sup>a</sup>*: blodig regn & fyren *fundiað* ðas eorðan to *forswylgenne* & to *forbærnenne*.

*gan* [*gangan*, -o-], go:

(1) Uninflected:

*Gen. 2430*: *gretan eode cuman cuðlice*.

*Beow. 1786*: *geong sona to setles neosan*. — *Ib. 493*: on beorsele . . . ðær swiðferhðe *sittan eodon*.

*Dan. 159*: Ða *eode Daniel . . . swefen reccan sinum frean*.

*Bede 186.30*: *eode gesittan to* ðæs . . . weres liice = 151.8: *sedentemque ad tumbam sancti infirmitas tangere nequaquam, praesumsit*. — *Ib. 198.2*: bæt ðæt he *eode to* his seðle *sittan to* his swæsendum 7 unrotnisse of his heortan asette = 157.3: *promittens se multum illi esse placatum, dum modo ille residens ad epulas tristitiam deponeret*.

*Greg. 309.14*: *eodon him plegean* = 238.10: *surrexerunt ludere*. — *Ib. 415.14*: Hit is awriten ðæt Dina wære ut *gangende sceawian* ðæs londes wif = 336.13: *Egressa est D. ut videret mulieres*.

*Wærf. 115.7*: se cniht, ðe *eode wæter hladan* [MS. H. *ferde to hladene*] = B. 146 A<sup>2</sup>: puer ille qui *ad hauriendam aquam perrexerat*.

*Ælf. Gr. 134.14*: ic *gange drincan* = *bibitum pergo*.

*Ælf. L. S. XXXI. 917<sup>b</sup>*: tima wære ðæt he into cyrcan *eode* ðam folce to mæssigenne and godes mærsunge *don*.

*Ælf. Hom. II. 242<sup>b</sup>*: He *eode eft sittan siððan* mid his ðegnum.

*L. 1.17*: he *gæð toforan* him on gaste and Elias mihte, ðæt he fædera heortan to heora bearnum gecyrræ, and ungeleaffulle to rihtwisra gleawscype; Drihtne fulfremed folc *gegearwian* = ipse *præcedet* ante illum in spiritu et virtute Eliæ, ut convertat corda patrum in filios, et incredulos ad prudentiam justorum, *parare* Domino plebem perfectam. — *Ib. 1.76, 79<sup>a</sup>*: ðu *gæst beforan Drihtnes* ansyne his wegas *gearwian*; to sylenne his folce hæle gewit on hyra synna forgyfnesse, ðurh innoðas ures Godes mildheortnesse on ðam he us geneosode of eastdæle up springende, *onlihtan* ðam ðe on ðystrum and on deaðes sceade sittað; ure fet to gereccenne on sybbe weg = *præibis enim ante faciem Domini parare* vias ejus, Ad dandam scientiam salutis plebi ejus, in remissionem pecca-



torum eorum: Per viscera misericordiae Dei nostri, in quibus visitavit nos, oriens ex alto: *Illuminare* his qui in tenebris et in umbra mortis sedent, ad dirigendos pedes nostros in viam pacis. [See the section on "the Differentiation of the Two Infinitives" in this chapter.]

*Apol.* 28.18: *gan we secan ure gesthus, ðæt we magon us gerestan* = 45<sup>b</sup>: *eamus, hospitalia requiramus.*

*Læce.* 58.5: *ðonne he slapan gan wille.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 76.12: *ðeah ðe heo . . . Gode ðoncunge to donne in circan gonge* = 54.24: *si . . . actura gratias intrat ecclesiam.* — *Ib.* 162.7: *ut eode to his gebede oððe to leornianne mid his geferum* = 136.17: *adceleravit . . . ad legendum, siue ad orandum egredi.* — *Ib.* 362.18: *gedwolan to gereccenne se . . . man wæs ut gongende* = 269.22: *Ad . . . corrigendum errorem egressus.*

*Greg.* 165.25: *Gif hwa gonge . . . treow to ceorfanne* = 122.1: *Si quis abierit . . . ad ligna cædenda.*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 428<sup>m</sup>: *He eode into . . . temple hine to gebiddenne.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 917<sup>a</sup>: quoted on p. 138.

*Ælf. Hept.:* *Gen.* 2.10: *ðæt flod eode . . . to wætrienne . . . wang* = *fluvius egrediebatur . . . ad irrigandum paradisum.* — *Gen.* 22.5: *ic and ðæt cild gað unc to gebiddenne* = *postquam adoraverimus.*

*Gosp.:* *Mat.* 13.3: *ut eode se sædere hys sæd to sawenne* = *Ecce exiit qui seminat, seminare.* Cf. *Mk.* 4.3: *Ut eode se sædere his sæd to sawenne* = *Ecce exiit seminans ad seminandum.*

*L.* 1.77, 79<sup>b</sup>, quoted on p. 138.

*gecierran, turn, go:*

(1) Uninflected:

*And.* 1079: *Hie ða unhyðige eft gecyrdon, luste belorene, laðspell beran.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 12.8: *to bodigenne hider gecyrdon* = 92.12: *ad praedicandum reuocauerit. onsendan, send:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 398.1: *bæd ðæt he him onsende wines ondrincan* = 288.20: *rogans sibi poculum uini mittere.*

(2) Inflected:

*Dan.* 76: *Onsende ða sinra ðegna worn ðæs werudes west to feras (sic!).*

*Bede* 150.8: *ða eft seo modor . . . onsende . . . in G. rice to fedanne* = 126.4: *quos . . . misit in Galliam nutriendos.*

*sendan, send:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Bede* 54.31: *he sende A. . . bodian Godes word* = 42.22: *misit . . . A. . . praedicare uerbum Dei.* — *Ib.* 250.21: *sende he . . . ðone biscop . . . to gereccenne ðone gedwolan, 7 heo to soðfæstnesse geleafan eft gecegan* = 199.26: *misit ad corrigendum errorem; reuocandamque ad fidem ueritatis prouinciam.*

*L.* 9.2<sup>b</sup>: *he sende hig to bodianne Godes rice, and untrume gehælan* = *misit illos prædicare regnum Dei et sanare infirmos.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 10.2: *Ðæt . . . Gregorius Augustinum sende . . . to bodiganne Godes word* = 42.10: *Ut Gregorius Augustinum ad praedicandum genti Anglorum mittens etc.* — *Ib.* 172.17<sup>a, b</sup>: *sendon heora dohtor ðider to lerranne 7 to geðeod-*

*enne ðæm . . . brydguman = 142.19, 20: filias suas eisdem erudiendas, ac sponso caelesti copulandas mittebant. — Ib. 250.20: quoted on p. 139.*

*Greg. 49.17: he forcwæð, & nolde ðæt hine mon sende to læranne = 26.22: ne mitti ad prædicandum debeat, contradicit. — Ib. 405.34: oft sende his englas us ham to spananne to him = 326.4: qui ad revocandum hominem Legem dedit, exhortantes angelos misit.*

*Oros. 138.8: here . . . sendon an hergiunge, 7 ðæt folc to amierrenne = 139.5: quibusdam suis ad populandos hostiles agros . . . praemissis.*

*Chron. 32<sup>b</sup>, 656 E<sup>o</sup>: preost ðe seo kyning . . . seonde to bodian (sic!) Cristendome on Wiht.*

*Laws 42, Alfred, Intr., c. 49, § 1<sup>b</sup>: hie sendan ærendwrecan . . . Cristes æ to læranne.*

*Ælf. Hom. I. 372<sup>b</sup>: Ðu, . . . ðe us sendest to bodigenne ðinne geleafan.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Num. 13.17: manna . . . , ðe Moises sende to sceawienne Chanaan = quos misit M. ad considerandam terram C.*

*L. 9.2<sup>a</sup>: quoted on p. 139.*

*Wulf. 295.32<sup>a, b</sup>: ic sende ofer eow ða ðeode eow to hergianne and eower land to awestenne.*

**wendan, turn, wend:**

(1) Uninflected:

*S. & S. 20: Ic . . . wende mec on willan on wæteres hrieg ofer Cofersflod Caldeas secan.*

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. L. S. XXVII. 13: wende ham . . . to hire . . . sunu his geleafan to getrymmenne.*

## 2. Verbs of Offering and of Giving:—

**beodan, offer, entrust:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Ælf. Hom. II. 254<sup>m</sup>: and him budon drincan gebitrodne windrenc.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 114.19: ðæt . . . eowde . . . , ðætte he him bead to healdanne = 92.22: gregem . . . quem sibi ipse crediderat.*

**gesellan, give:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Oros. 136.16: him gesealdon ator drincan = 137.10: cum . . . ministri insidiis venenum potasset.*

(2) Inflected:

*Bede 124.3: his dohtor to gehalgienne Criste ðam biscope to wedde gesealde = 99.30: filiam suam Christo consecrandam . . . episcopo adsignauit.*

*Oros. 54.11: gesealde Ircaniam ða ðeode on anwald to habbane = 55.3: eumque Hyrcanorum genti praeposuit.*

**giefan, give:**

(1) Uninflected:

*Ps. 79.5: tyhst us 7 fedest teara hlafe 7 us drincan<sup>1</sup> gifest deorcum tearum manna gehwylcum on gemet rihtes = 79.6: Cibabis nos pane lacrymarum, et potabis nos in lacrymis in mensura?*

<sup>1</sup> In *Bede* 486.4 (ie ðe bidde, duguða Hælend, ðæt ðu me milde forðife swetlice drincan ða word ðines wisdomes = 360.4: Teque deprecor, bone Iesu, ut cui propitius donasti uerba tuae scientiae dulciter haurire, donec etiam etc.), the infinitive seems to me to be objective rather than final, and has been put in Chapter II.

## (2) Inflected:

*Bede* 236.1: *Þæt he Gode geaf mynster on to timbrenne* = 177.30: *ad construenda monasteria donaret.* — *Ib.* 242.7: *bec on to leornienne . . . gefon* = 192.17: *libros . . . ad legendum . . . praeberere curabant.*

*Chron.* 117<sup>m</sup>, 963 E<sup>e</sup>: *ic gife tocnawlece . . . Peter min messehacel . . . Criste to ðeowian (sic!).*

*sellan, give:*

## (1) Uninflected:

*Rid.* 13.5: *Hwilum ic deorum drincan selle* beorne of bosme. — *Ib.* 72.7: *swæse broðor, ðara onsundran gehwylc dægtidum me drincan sealde* ðurh ðyrel ðearle.

*Laws* 387, Ordal, c. 4, § 1: *sylle heom eallum cyssan boc.*

*Bede* 30.7: *ða sceafðan dyde on wæter, 7 sealde drincan ðam mannum* = 13.4: *ipsam rasuram aquae inmissam ac potui datam.* — *Ib.* 156.7: *ðæt wæter . . . drincan syllass* = 129.18: *astulas . . . quas cum in aquas miserint, eis que . . . homines aut pecudes potauerint.* — *Ib.* 192.14: *ða gehalgode ic wæter 7 scaefðan dyde in ðæs . . . treoes, 7 sealde ðam untruman drincan* = 153.32: *benedixi aquam, et astulam roboris praefati inmittens obtuli egro potandum.*

*Greg.* 329.3<sup>b</sup>: *ge me ne sealdon drincan* = 254.4: *non dedistis mihi bibere.* — *Ib.* 459.18<sup>a</sup>: *ðy ic sceal sellan eow giet mioloc drincan nalles flæsc etan* = 392.16: *Tamquam parvulis in Christo lac vobis potum dedi, non escam.*

*Oros.* 136.1: *ða nam he ða [= wyrð] on mergen, 7 sealde hie ðæm gewundedum drincan* = 135.35: *ac post herba per somnium sibi ostensa in potum sauciis data.*

*Wærf.* 161.5: *ic wille faran to ðam broðrum 7 him syllan drenc drincan* = B. 188 A<sup>1</sup>: *Ecce ad fratres vado potionem eis dare.*

*Bl. Hom.* 229.9: *hie him sealdon attor drincan.*

*Elf. Hom.* I. 582<sup>b</sup>: *Swa hwa swa sylð ceald wæter drincan anum ðyrstigan menn ðæra ðe on me gelyfað, etc.*

*Elf. Hept.: Gen.* 21.19: *sumne wæterpytt . . . , and heo of ðam sealde ðam cnapan drincan = dedit puero bibere.* — *Ex.* 2.19: *hlod wæter mid us and sealde ðam sceapum drincan = potumque dedit ovibus.*

*Elf. Gr.* 111.6: *syle us drincan = da nobis bibere.*

*Gosp.: Mat.* 25.35<sup>b</sup>: *ge me sealdun drincan = dedistis mihi bibere.* — *Mat.* 25.42<sup>b</sup>: *ge me drincan ne sealdun = non dedistis mihi potum.*

*Wulf.* 288.32: *ge me drincan ne sealdon.*

*Læce.* 8.21: *geseoð cerfillan on wætere, sele drincan.* So 170 times in all in *Læce.*

*Greg.* 329.3<sup>a</sup>: *ge me nawuht ne sealdun etan* = 254.3: *non dedistis mihi manducare.*

*Gosp.: Mat.* 14.16<sup>b</sup>: *sylle ge him etan = date illis vos manducare.* — So: *Mat.* 25.35<sup>a</sup>, 42<sup>a</sup>; *Mk.* 5.43<sup>a</sup>, 6.37<sup>a</sup>; *L.* 8.55<sup>b</sup>, 9.13; *J.* 6.31.

*Læce.* 21.39: *sele etan.* So 27 times in all in *Læce.*

*Elf. Hept.: Jos.* 11.6: *to mergen ic hig sylle on ðisre ylcan tide ealle gewundigean on Israela gesihðe = cras enim hac eadem hora ego tradam omnes istos vulnerandos in conspectu Israel.*

*Læce.* 37.19: *ðæt seaw sele on cuclere supan.* So 8 times in *Læce.*

*Læce.* 55.34: *sele ðicgean.* So: 69.21<sup>a, b</sup>; 150.6.

## (2) Inflected:

*Beow.* 1731: *seleð him on eðle eorðan wynne, to healdanne hleoburh wera.*

*Ps.* 54.6: *Ic ða on mode cwæð, hwa me sealde to fleogenne fiðeru swa culfran*

7 ic ðonne ricene reste syððan = Quis *dabit* mihi pennas sicut columbæ? et *volabo* et *requiescam*.

*Wids.* 134: se bið leofast londbuendum, se ðe him god *syleð* gumena rice to *gehealdenne*.

*Bede* 76.30<sup>b</sup>: heo oðrum wiifum to *fedenne sellað* = 55.10: eosque aliis mulieribus *ad nutriendum tradant*. — *Ib.* 104.29: his gyfe *sealde* . . . , him to *brucanne* = 85.29: *in usum eorum*. — *Ib.* 158.29: *sealde* æhte 7 land mynster to *timbrianne* = 132.21: *donabantur* . . . possessiones . . . *ad instituenda monasteria*. — *Ib.* 232.25: *Sealde* se biscop ðæt mynster to *reccenne* . . . Ceaddan his breðer = 176.18: *Dedit* . . . episcopus *regendum* post se monasterium fratri suo. — *Ib.* 480.29, 30: ealle geornesse ic *sealde* to *leornienne* 7 to *smeagenne* halige gewritu = 357.11: omnem *meditandis* scripturis operam *dedi*.

*Greg.* 369.14: ðonne he us *selð* micle getyngnesse & wlitige spræce ymb soðfæstnesse to *cyðanne* = 286.17: cum nobis luce veritatis plena eloquia subministrat.

*Oros.* 42.29: ealle . . . bearn . . . *sealdon* ðam Minotauro to *etanne* = 43.29: qui . . . filios Minotauro . . . *devorandos addicebant*.

*Laws* 48, Ælfred, c. 1, § 2<sup>b</sup>: *selle* . . . his wæpn 7 his æhta his freondum to *gehealdanne*.

*Wærf.* 253.13: he bæd hi, ðæt hi hine *sealdon* him to *healdene* = 309 B<sup>1</sup>: petiit ut sibi *ad custodiam tradi* debuisset.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 244<sup>1</sup>: gelæhte ænne calic, . . . and *sealde* his gingrum, of to *supenne* æfter gereorde.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 28.20<sup>b</sup>: Gif drihten . . . *sylð* me hlaf to *etenne* = si deus . . . *dederit* mihi panem *ad vescendum*. — So: *Ex.* 16.15; *Num.* 11.4.

*J.* 6.52<sup>b</sup>: Hu mæg ðes his flæsc us *syllan* to *etanne*? = 6.53: Quomodo potest hic nobis carnem suam dare *ad manducandum*?

*Læce.* 65.8: *sele* to *etanne* liferseocum men. — *Ib.* 17.11: *sele* ðry dagas ðry bollan fulle to *drincanne*. So 9 times in all. — *Ib.* 87.8: *syle* ðonne ðæs wæteres bollan fulne to *gedrincanne*. — *Ib.* 66.11: ðam mannun sceal man *sellan* ægra to *supanne*. — *Ib.* 65.26: *selle* him mon leohtes hwæthwega to *ðicganne*. So 8 times in all.

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 6.8: ðæt ic *sylle* eow to *agenne* = *daboque* illam vobis *possidendam*.

*Mat.* 27.26<sup>b</sup>: ðone Hælynd he let swingan, and *sealde* heom to *ahonne* = Jesum . . . *tradidit* eis ut *crucifigeretur*.

### 3. Verbs of Rest:—

*sittan, sit:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Gen.* 842: sæton onsundran *bidan* selves gesceapu heofoncyniges (or predicative? see Chapter V, pp. 91–92).

(2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 542<sup>m</sup>: he him behet . . . , ðæt hi on ðam micclum dome ofer twelf domsetl *sittende* beoð, to *demenne* eallum mannun.

*standan, stand:*

(1) Uninflected:

*Gen.* 526: me her *standan* het his bebodu *healdan*, 7 me ðas bryd forgeaf (or *healdan* may be objective, co-ordinate with *standan*?).

## (2) Inflected:

*Ælf. Hom. I. 48<sup>m</sup> 1*: gemunde . . . gewrit . . . Sunu standan æt Godes swiðran to gescyndenne ðæra Iudeiscra ungeleaffulnysse.

*Ælf. Hept.: Deut. 27.13*: ðas sceolan standan on H. dune to wirgienne Ruben = *stabant ad maledicendum* . . . Ruben.

*Mk. 11.25*: ðonne ge standað eow to gebiddenne = *Et quum stabitis ad orandum*.

## 4. Other Verbs:—

*aliesan, release*:

## (1) Uninflected:

*L. 1.72<sup>b</sup>*: he *alysde* us of urum feondum, . . . mildheortnesse to wyrccenne mid urum fæderum, and *gemunan* his halgan cyðnesse = *Sicut locutus est per os sanctorum . . . prophetarum ejus: salutem ex inimicis nostris . . . ad faciendam misericordiam cum patribus nostris, et memorari testamenti sui sancti*.

## (2) Inflected:

*L. 1.72<sup>a</sup>*: quoted under "Uninflected" above, *L. 1.72<sup>b</sup>*.

The following is a complete alphabetic list of the verbs followed by both the uninflected infinitive of purpose and the inflected infinitive of purpose:—

*aliesan, release.*

*arisan, arise.*

*asendan, send, offer.*

*becuman, come.*

*beodan, command, offer.*

*beran, bear, offer.*

*cuman, come.*

*efstan, hasten.*

*faran, go, depart.*

*feran, go, depart.*

*forlætan, leave.*

*fundian, set out, strive.*

*gan [gangan, -o-], go.*

*gecierran, turn, go.*

*gesellan [-ie-, -y-], give.*

*giefan, give, offer.*

*onsendan, send, offer.*

*sellan [-ie-, -y-], give, offer.*

*sendan, send.*

*sittan, sit.*

*standan, stand.*

*wendan, wend, go.*

III. The inflected final infinitive only is found with a very large number of verbs of such varied significations that it seems unwise to attempt to classify them. Accordingly, I give merely an alphabetic list of the verbs followed only by the inflected final infinitive:—

*æteowan [-ea-], show, appear.*

*ætwindan, escape, fly away.*

*afaran, travel, go.*

*agiefan [-y-], give.*

*alædan, lead away.*

*aliefan [-e-, -y-], allow.*

*aræcan, reach, hand.*

*aræran, disseminate.*

*astigan, ascend.*

*aweccan, bring to life.*

*awendan, translate.*

*beciepan [-y-], sell.*

*befæstan, entrust, commit.*

*belæfan, leave.*

*betæcan, entrust, commit.*

*beðurfan, need.*

*biegan, bend, turn.*

*bindan, bind.*

*brecan [hine], retch.*

*bringan, bring.*

*cyðan, make known.*

*don, do, make, put.*

*eowian, show, expose.*

*findan, find.*

*fleogan, [-e-], fly.*

*forestihtian, predestinate.*

*forgiefan [-y-], give.*

*forsendan, send.*

*gadrian, gather.*

*gearcian, prepare.*

*gearwian, make ready, prepare.*

*gebindan, bind.*

*gebredan, draw, hence feign (reflexive).*

*gebugan, turn, go.*

*gebycgan, buy.*

*geceosan, choose.*

*gecuman, come.*

*gedon, commit, entrust.*

ge-*emtigian* [-æm-], *keep one's self free*.  
 gefreogan [-freon], *free*.  
 gefultumian, *help*.  
 gegripan, *seize*.  
 gehwierfan, *turn*.  
 gelæcan, *seize*.  
 gelædan, *lead*.  
 geliefan [-e-, -y-], *believe*.  
 gelogian, *arrange*.  
 gemearcian, *mark, plan*.  
 genealæcan, *approach*.  
 geniman, *take, accept*.  
 gesamnian [-o-], *assemble*.  
 gescieppan, *create, make*.  
 gesecan, *seek*.  
 gesettan, *set, establish*.  
 gestandan, *stand, stand up*.  
 geteon [-tion], *draw, attract*.  
 geðafian, *grant, give*.  
 ge-unnan, *grant, give*.  
 gewendan, *wend, go*.  
 habban (nabban), *have (not)*.  
 healdan, *hold, keep*.  
 iecan [æcan], *increase*.  
 iernan, *run*.  
 ingan [-gangan, -o-], *go in*.  
 lædan, *lead*.  
 læfan, *leave, entrust*.  
 lænan, *lend*.  
 lætan, *leave*.  
 lecgean, *lay, place*.  
 libban, *live*.  
 liehtan, *light*.

logian, *arrange, frame*.  
 lufian, *love*.  
 niman, *take*.  
 niðerastigan, *descend*.  
 ondfon, *receive*.  
 onfindan [ʔ], *find, receive*.  
 onfon, *receive, undertake*.  
 onginan, *begin*.  
 onlænan, *lend*.  
 ontynan, *open*.  
 ræcan, *reach, seize*.  
 reccan, *care*.  
 sceawian, *grant*.  
 scyndan, *hasten*.  
 secan, *seek*.  
 settan, *set, place*.  
 siðian, *travel, go*.  
 sniðan, *cut open*.  
 stician, *stick*.  
 teon, *make, create*.  
 tocuman, *come, come to*.  
 tofaran, *separate, disperse*.  
 toferan, *separate, disperse*.  
 tosendan, *send*.  
 ðrowian, *suffer, endure*.  
 ðurfan, *need*.  
 utgan [-gangan, -o-], *go out*.  
 wegan, *carry, manifest*.  
 weorpan, *throw, cast*.  
 wil(l)nian, *desire, wish*.  
 winnan, *struggle, strive*.  
 wunian, *dwelt, remain*.  
 wyrcan, *make*.

I quote only a few examples:—

*befæstan*, *entrust, commit*:

*Wærƿ.* 111.3<sup>b</sup>, 4<sup>a</sup>: *ongunnon . . . ða . . . weras . . . him befæstan heora suna to fedanne 7 to læranne* = *B.* 140 C<sup>4</sup>: *Cœpere . . . ei filios omnipotenti Deo nutriendos dare*. — *Ib.* 254.1: *bædon, ðæt he heom ðone agæfe, ðe hi him ær befæston to healdenne* = 309 C<sup>2</sup>: *quem dederant petierunt* (but cf. 309 C<sup>1</sup>: *qui diaconum ad custodiendum dederant*).

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXVI. 76: *gif ðu wilt me befæstan cnapan to lærenne*.

*Apol.* 32.4: *ic . . . ðas mine dohtor befæste ðam . . . mannan to fedanne* = 49<sup>t</sup>: *hanc vero . . . filiam meam nutriendam . . . hominibus commendavi*.

*gedon*, *entrust, commit*:

*Cato* 10: *Ðonne ðu eald sie and manegra ealdra cwidas and lara geaxod hæbbe, gedo hie ðonne ðam geongum to witanne*. [Cf. *Greg.* 357.5, *Oros.* 126.31, and the comments given thereon, p. 118, above. Koch, *l. c.*, II, p. 64, quotes, without a reference, the following passage, which I am unable to locate: "Ic do eow to witanne (*thū euch zu wissen*)."]

*secan*, *seek*:

*Bede* 50.11<sup>a, b</sup>: *hwær him wære fultum to secanne to gewearnienne 7 to wiðscufanne swa reðre hergunge 7 swa gelomlicre ðara norððeoda* = 30.17<sup>a, b</sup>: *ubi quaerendum esset praesidium ad euitandas uel repellenddas tam feras tamque creberrimas gentium aquilonialium inruptiones*.

*Mat.* 2.13: toweard ys ðæt Herodes secð ðæt Cild to forspillenre = futurum est enim ut Herodes *querat* puerum ad *perdendum* eum (may be objective in Anglo-Saxon).

*Elf. L. S.* 368.78: ðæt eower nan . . . ne galdras ne sece to gremigenne his scyppend.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

The active infinitive of purpose is found uninflected only with the passive of the following verb:—

(ge)wealdan, *instruct* (?).

I quote all the examples noted:—

*Gifts of Men* 47: hond bið gelæred wis and gewealden, swa bið wyrhtan ryht, sele asettan.

Both infinitives are found with the passive of:

asendan, *send*.

(ge)settan, *appoint*.

Typical examples are:—

asendan:

(1) Uninflected:

*L.* 1.19<sup>a, b</sup>: ic eom asend wið ðe sprecan and ðe ðis bodian = *missus sum loqui ad te, et hæc tibi evangelizare*.

(2) Inflected:

*Chron.* 11<sup>b</sup>, 430 E: Her Patricius wæs asend fram Celestine ðam papan to bodianne Scottum fulluht.

*Elf. Hom.* II. 488<sup>b, c</sup>: We sind asende to gecigenne mancynn from deaðe to life, na to scufenne fram life to deaðe.

(ge)settan:

(1) Uninflected:

*Bl. Hom.* 157.35: nu syndon gesette ða apostolas inhlet æ hie bodian hire.

(2) Inflected:

*Bede* 396.28<sup>a</sup>: in ðære he to bebyrgenne geseted beon scolde = 228.16<sup>a</sup>: in quo *sepeliendus poni deberet*.

But normally the infinitive of purpose is inflected with passive verbs; it is so found with the passive of the following verbs:—

aliefan, *allow*.

befæstan, *commit, entrust*.

beran, *bear, give birth*.

betæcan, *commit, entrust*.

bringan, *bring*.

ceosan, *choose*.

forgiefan, *give*.

(ge)beodan, *offer*.

gebringan, *bring*.

(ge)gadrian, *gather together*.

(ge)gearwian, *prepare*.

gehalsian [gi-], *request*.

(ge)healdan, *preserve*.

(ge)lædan, *lead*.

(ge)laðian, *invite*.

(ge)rædan, *advise*.

(ge)samnian, *assemble*.

(ge)sellan, *give*.

(ge)smyrian, *anoint*.

(ge)tacnian, *signify*.

(ge)wyrcan, *make, build*.

gierwan, *prepare*.

iecan [-y-], *increase*.

nacian, *make naked*.

onfon, *receive*.

onsendan, *send*.

ontendan, *kindle*.

sellan, *give, entrust*.

sendan, *send*.

todrifan, *drive*.

ycan: see iecan.

ymsellan, *surround*.

A few examples will suffice:—

aliefan [-y-], *allow*:

*Mat.* 12.4: hu he . . . æt ða offringhlafas ðe nærun him alyfede to etynne  
= *Quomodo* . . . panes . . . comedit, quos non licebat ei edere.

*ceosan*, choose:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXII. 223: ðe beoð gecorene gode to ðegnigenne.

(ge)laðian, invite:

*Bede* 394.19: wæs ðyder gelaðod circan to halgianne = 287.6: Contigit . . .  
*uirum* . . . *ad dedicandam ecclesiam* . . . *uocari*.

(ge)wyrcean, make, build:

*Bede* 354.19<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: ða hus ða ðe in to gebiddenne 7 to leornienne geworhte wæron  
= 265.13<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: quae *ad orandum uel legendum factae erant*.

*sellan*, give, entrust:

*Bede* 480.26, 27: ða wæs ic . . . seald to fedanne 7 to lærenne ðam . . .  
*abbude Benedicte* = 357.9: *datus sum educandus* . . . *abbati Benedicto*.

*sendan*, send:

*Bede* 108.23: A. . . to læranne Ongolðeode sendeð wæs = 89.5: *ad praedicandum genti Anglorum missus est*.

### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

We find that in the poetry practically only the uninflected infinitive of purpose is used, that it is very frequent after verbs of motion, and is very rare after other verbs; that in the prose we have the uninflected infinitive of purpose after certain verbs (1) of motion and (2) of giving only,<sup>1</sup> but that more frequently the inflected infinitive is found, in prose, with these two groups of verbs, while with a very large number of verbs only the inflected infinitive is found. Moreover, as will be shown in the section on the origin of the final infinitive, in Chapter XIV, the Latin original has much to do with whether or not the infinitive is inflected in Anglo-Saxon prose: in a number of instances the uninflected infinitive in Anglo-Saxon translates a Latin final infinitive after verbs of motion and of giving; and the inflected infinitive, with verbs of all kinds, the Latin gerund or gerundive. Not a few times, however, the inflected infinitive is found, especially in the *Gospels*, translating a Latin final infinitive after verbs of motion, — a circumstance doubtless due in part to the fact that the inflected infinitive had by that time become a common instrument for the expression of purpose owing to the Early West Saxon's frequent translation of the Latin gerund and gerundive by an inflected infinitive and in part to the superior clarity<sup>2</sup> of the inflected infinitive as a means of expressing purpose. At any rate, purpose was normally expressed by the inflected infinitive in all Anglo-Saxon prose, early and late, except in the *Gospels*, in which the uninflected infinitive slightly predominates owing to the large number of final infinitives in the Latin original, and except in the *Læceboc*, in which the uninflected infinitive decidedly predominates owing to the very frequent use of the uninflected infinitive after *sellan*, 'give' (especially with *drincan*, 'drink,' and *etan*, 'eat'). The probability that the few instances of the inflected infinitive of purpose in Anglo-Saxon poetry are due to Latin influence is discussed in the section on the origin of the final infinitive, in Chapter XIV.

<sup>1</sup> Sporadically, also, with certain verbs (3) of rest and (4) of commanding; in (4) in direct translation of Latin final infinitives.

<sup>2</sup> On the ambiguity of the uninflected infinitive as the complement of the verb of motion see Chapter XIV, section x.



In a series of co-ordinated final infinitives, each infinitive is, as noted by Professor Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 30, usually preceded by *to*, though occasionally *to* appears only before the first infinitive, and the succeeding infinitive is uninflected. A complete list of the final infinitive in a series is given in Note 1 at the end of the present chapter. In the four examples of the uninflected infinitive following the inflected there cited, I believe the absence of inflection is largely due to the remoteness of the infinitive from its chief verb, for, although the examples are too few to demonstrate this, this is in keeping with what we have seen to be the influence of proximity and of separation in the subjective use of the infinitive. Once, however, as shown by Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 31, we have an alternation of uninflected with inflected infinitive that is probably due to a slavish following of the Latin<sup>1</sup> original, in *Luke* 1.76-79, in which the Anglo-Saxon has twice an uninflected infinitive for the Latin infinitive, and twice the inflected infinitive for the Latin gerundive.

On p. 27 Dr. Shearin<sup>1</sup> declares: "A separable adverbial prefix seems to have the effect of divorcing *sellan* from the following purpose idea enough to cause this to be expressed by the prepositional, not the simple, infinitive; e. g. *ÆH.* ii. 244.12: eft swa gelice gelæhte ænne calic . . . and sealde his gingrum *of* to suppenne æfter gereorde; *L. S.* ii. 142.264: sealde ðam adligan *of* to supenne. The same effect is seen after the passive; e. g. *Lch.* i. 370.15: eft weðe<sup>2</sup> hundes heafod and his lifer gesoden and geseald to etanne . . . gehæleð; as well as when the infinitive precedes *sellan*; e. g. *O.* 108.28: and hit on mete oððe on drynce to geðicgenne gesellan." Personally, however, I believe the inflected infinitive is, in each of these cases, to be accounted for by the general principles laid down above rather than on the special grounds suggested by Dr. Shearin; at any rate, my statistics show that we have, also, the uninflected infinitive when the infinitive precedes *sellan* and when it follows it at an appreciable distance.

Substantially the same differentiation between the uninflected infinitive of purpose and the inflected infinitive of purpose is found in the other Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

I have not found a clear example of the passive infinitive of purpose in Anglo-Saxon.

For the final infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section x.

## NOTES.

1. *The Final Infinitive in a Series.* — Dr. Farrar, *l. c.*, p. 16, cites only one example (*Bede* 250.20, 21) of an inflected final infinitive's being followed by an uninflected in a series, and Professor Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 30, cites only three: *Bede* 250.20, 21, quoted on p. 139 above; *L.* 1.72<sup>a, b</sup>, on p. 143; and *L.* 9.2<sup>a, b</sup>, on p. 139. To these examples, however, should be added *Bede* 376.6<sup>a, b</sup>, quoted on p. 137, and *Ælf.* *L. S.* XXXI. 917<sup>a, b</sup>, quoted on p. 138. On the other hand, twice (in *L.* 1.76, 77, 79<sup>a, b</sup>, quoted on p. 138) we have an uninflected infinitive succeeded by an inflected infinitive, owing no doubt to the influence of the Latin original, as suggested by Professor Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 31, though Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 2, is inclined to believe that the uninflected infinitive is here used, not because of the Latin infinitive, but because it follows a verb of motion in Anglo-Saxon. In the following passages we have a series of inflected infinitives: *Bede* 2.3<sup>a, b</sup>, 4<sup>a, b</sup>; 50.11<sup>a, b</sup>; 66.5<sup>a, b</sup>; 116.32<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 124.30, 31; 172.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 272.25<sup>a, b</sup>; 372.11<sup>a, b</sup>; 438.14, 15; 454.9<sup>a, b</sup>; 480.29, 30; 486.8<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Boeth.* 19.22,

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Kenyon demurs: see Note 1 below.

<sup>2</sup> *Weðe* should read *wede*: see Cockayne, *l. c.*, I, 370.15. — M. C., Jr.

23; — *Greg.* 307.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 373.8, 9; — *Oros.* 188.10, 11; — *Wærf.* 111.3<sup>b</sup>, 4<sup>a</sup>; 218.4<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Chron.* 253<sup>t</sup>, 1123 E<sup>d, c</sup>; 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 E<sup>a, d</sup>; — *Laws* 38, c. 36<sup>a, b</sup>; 42, c. 49<sup>b, c, d</sup>; 366, c. 79<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Ælf. Hom.* I. 320<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>; 582<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>; II. 444<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>; — *Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 28.20<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 418, 419; — *Ælf. Int.* 155<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Mat.* 20.19<sup>a, b, c</sup>; — *Wulf.* 295.32<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Poems: Christ* 1621<sup>a, b</sup>, 1622. With this list should be compared that given by Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 30–31. The differences are slight, and arise from the fact that he gives statistics for one work, Kemble's *Codex Diplomaticus Aevi Saxonici*, to which I have not had access; that he includes a few inflected infinitives that modify a noun (*Bede* 62.8<sup>a, b</sup>, 9; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 360<sup>b, 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>; *Wulf.* 202.1<sup>a, b</sup>), one that seems to me consecutive (*Bede* 330.18<sup>a, b</sup>, 19), and one that seems to me objective (*Greg.* 293.3<sup>a, b</sup>). Dr. Farrar does not give a list of this series; nor does Dr. Riggert.

2. *A Clause Alternates with an Infinitive* occasionally, as in *Ælf. L. S.* XXX. 49<sup>a, b</sup>, quoted on p. 136; *J.* 12.47, quoted on p. 137; and *L.* 1.17, quoted on p. 138. Dr. Farrar, *l. c.*, pp. 28 and 33, cites only the example from *John*. In the two examples from the Gospels we have the same alternation of clause and of infinitive in the Latin original.

3. *An Inflected Infinitive Alternates with a Prepositional Phrase* at times, as in *Bede* 162.7, quoted on p. 139; *Oros.* 138.8, quoted on p. 140; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 340<sup>m</sup>: Ne lufode he worldlice æhta for his neode ana, ac to dælenne eallum wædiendum; — *ib.* 430<sup>b</sup>: ðes sunderhalga . . . hæfde opene eagan to forhæfdnyse, to ælmes-dædum, to ðancigenne Gode.

4. "*For To*" with the *Inflected Infinitive of Purpose* is found in *Chron.* 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 E<sup>a, d</sup>: se kyng hit dide for to hauene sibbe of se eorl Angeow, for helpe to hauene togenes his neuē. Cf. the *New English Dictionary*, *sub v. for* IV, 11, where the earliest example given of this idiom is dated 1175 (*Cotton Homilies*).

5. *An Inflected Infinitive without "To"* is found in *Ælf. L. S.* 222.39: ða petrus siððode neosigenne [MSS. U. and B.: neosigende] ða geleaffullan.

6. *The Uninflected Infinitive after "Beran," "Hladan," and "Sellan."* — Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, pp. 178 and 181, seems to consider as objective the uninflected infinitive after *beran*, *hladan*, and *sellan*, but the Latin equivalents in most cases show, I think, that the infinitive is final, as in the Latin *da bibere* etc. Occasionally in Anglo-Saxon, *drincan* (after *sellan*) may be a noun instead of an infinitive, as it at times corresponds to the Latin noun, *potum*, instead of to the infinitive, *bibere*, as in *Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 2.19 (hlod wæter mid us and sealde ðam sceapum *drincan* = hausit aquam nobiscum *potumque dedit* ovibus). The infinitive after these verbs is considered final by Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 13–15.

7. *A Final Infinitive as Modifier of a Verb to Be Supplied.* — Occasionally a final infinitive modifies an infinitive that is to be supplied as the complement of an auxiliary verb, as in *Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 22.4 (Ða on ðone ðriddan dæg, ða hig ða dune gesawon, ðær ðær hig to sceoldon to ofsleanne Isaac = vidit locum procul) and in *A. S. Hom. & L. S.* II, 15.218 (Geswic ðu earmung, ne miht ðu to nahte minne mægðhad me to beswicenne).

8. *The Uninflected Infinitive as a Translation of the Latin Supine in "-um."* — Ælfric, in his *Grammar*, p. 134, gives several examples of an uninflected infinitive translating a Latin supine, after a verb of motion in each language, and seems to say that the infinitive denotes futurity, but in each example the infinitive, while future in sense, also denotes purpose, I think. The examples are: vis amatum ire? = wylt ðu faran lufian? uenatum pergo = ic fare huntian; uis doctum ire? = wylt ðu gan leornian? lectum pergit = he gæð rædan; bibitum pergo = ic gange drincan.

9. *Final or Predicative Infinitive?* — Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 137, considers the two infinitives (*beon* and *jaran*) after *todædon*, in *Oros.* 46.15, 16, as final. To me, however, they seem predicative, and the infinitive phrase seems absolute: see Chapter VIII, p. 118, and section D of Chapter XII, p. 169.

10. *Infinitive or Indicative?* — In *Ex.* 166 (Wulfas sungon atol æfenleoð ætes on wenan, carleasan deor, cwyldrof beodan on laðra last leodmægnes ful), as Grein, in his *Sprachschatz*, *sub v. beodan*, states, we may have the infinitive of *bēodan*, 'announce,' or the preterite plural of *bīdan*, 'await.' Professor J. W. Bright kindly writes me that the presumption is certainly against the infinitive, and that he would read *fyl* for *ful*. Accordingly, I have omitted *bēodan* from my statistics.

11. "*The Split Infinitive.*" — In the second infinitive quoted in Note 4 above, we seem to have the earliest instance of splitting the infinitive in the English language, though it is of the compound prepositional infinitive introduced by *for to*, not of the simple prepositional infinitive introduced by *to*, to which latter idiom the phrase, "the split infinitive," is usually applied. Of the latter idiom, the earliest instance cited by F. Hall is from Wycliffe: see his "On the Separation, by a Word or Words, of *To* and the Infinitive Mood," as cited in my bibliography.

## CHAPTER XI.

### THE INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES.<sup>1</sup>

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Usually the active infinitive that modifies an Adjective is inflected, but occasionally it is uninflected. There are 241 examples of the former to 6 examples of the latter. Of the inflected infinitive, 217 examples occur in the prose, rather widely distributed, in Early West Saxon and in Late West Saxon, and 24 examples in the poetry. Of the six uninflected infinitives, four are found in the prose and two in the poetry. Although Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 71, declares that "Ein reiner Infinitiv in Verbindung mit einem Adjektiv ist in der ae. Poesie nicht zu belegen," he practically withdraws this statement in his comment on *Guthlac*, 1. 1050. In discussing the simple infinitive of purpose after verbs of motion, he adds, *l. c.*, p. 44: "Anzuführen ist hier endlich *Gu.* 1050, wo *ic eom siðes fus* als Ausdruck der Eile aufzufassen ist und demgemäss mit dem reinen Infinitiv steht; *Gu.* 1050: *ic eom siðes fus* upearð niman edleanan georn in ðam ecan gefean, ærgewyrhtum geseon sigora frean."

To me the active infinitive with adjectives seems almost, if not quite, exclusively active in sense. Dr. Farrar, however, *l. c.*, pp. 16 and 19, contends that the infinitive is passive in the following: *Bede* 174.22: *wundro*, . . . ða ðe nu to *long to secgenne* syndon = 143.30: *sed haec nos ad alia tendentes, suis narrare permittimus*; *Greg.* 173.11: *Ne brede ge no ða stengeas of ðam hringum, ðylæs sio earc sie ungearo to beranne* = 126.28: *Ut ad portandam arcam nulla mora praepeditat*. Undoubtedly each of these infinitives may be translated as if passive, but I see no necessity therefor in either sentence. The Latin in the second sentence seems to me distinctly to suggest that *to beranne* is to be taken as active, not passive, in sense; and with the former sentence should be compared *Greg.* 239.10 (*nawuht nis iēðre to gesecgenne, ne eac to [ge]hefanne ðonne soð* = 180.21: *Nil autem est ad defendendum puritate tutius, nil ad dicendum veritate facilius*), in which *ad dicendum* likewise suggests the active sense for *to (ge)secgenne*. More doubtful than the two cases cited by Dr. Farrar, in my judgment, are the following: — *Oros.* 80.11, 12<sup>a, b</sup>: *Swa ðeah seo . . . menegeo ðæs folces wæs ða iēðre to oferwinnanne ðonne heo us sie nu to gerimanne oððe to geliefanne* = 81.7, 8: *Huic tam incredibili temporibus nostris agmini, cujus numerum nunc difficilius est adstrui, quam tunc fuit vinci*; *Greg.* 459.9<sup>a, b</sup>: *sio hea lar is betere manegum monnum to helanne, & feawum to secgganne* = 392.7, 8: *Alta enim quæque debent multis audientibus contegi, et vix paucis aperiri*. However, despite the presence of the Latin passive infinitives in these sentences, I see no necessity for considering the corresponding infinitives in Anglo-Saxon as passive; it seems to me that the utmost that we can say is this: the infinitives may be passive in sense, but are probably not.

The general contention of the preceding paragraph is supported, it seems to me, by what we know of the infinitive with adjectives in Greek. In his

<sup>1</sup> Also sporadically with a few Adverbs.

*Syntax of Classical Greek*, I, § 143, "Infinitive Active Apparently as Passive," Professor Gildersleeve tells us: "The infinitive being a verbal noun is not so strictly bound by the voices as the finite form. The infinitive as a complement to adjectives and the so-called epexegetic infinitive often coincide with the English idiom in which 'good to eat' is 'good for food,' 'fair to see' is 'fair to the sight,' and in Greek the active form is more common and, if anything, more natural than the passive. Καλὸς ἰδεῖν, 'fair to see;' καλεπὰ εὐρεῖν, Plato, Rpb. 412 B, 'hard to find;' but καλεποὶ . . . γνῶσθηναι, Antiphon, 2 a I, 'hard to recognize.'"

The infinitive usually follows its adjective, at times immediately, as in *And.* 73 (ic beo sona *gearu* to *dreoganne* ðæt ðu . . . deman wille); at times with several words intervening, as in *Chron.* 139<sup>b</sup>, 1009 E<sup>c</sup> (eall folc *gearu* wæs heom on to *fonne*). Occasionally the infinitive precedes the adjective, as in *Hept.: Gen.* 2.9 (treow . . . to *brucenne wynsum* = *lignum* . . . *ad vescendum suave*). Not infrequently the adjective immediately precedes the noun that it modifies (apparently attributively but really appositively, as a rule), and sometimes it is not easy to tell whether the infinitive modifies the adjective or the intervening noun, as in *Bede* 60.29: heo hæfdon *geara* mod . . . deað sylfne to ðrowianne = 47.6: *paratum ad* . . . *moriendum* . . . *animum habendo*; *Beow.* 2416: næs ðæt yðe ceap to *gegengenne gumena ænigum*.

As stated in Chapter I, some of the infinitives there classed as subjective may possibly belong here; and this difficulty, if not impossibility, of precise demarcation<sup>1</sup> accounts for the chief divergences of my statistics from those of my predecessors. The differences occur chiefly in pronominal clauses of the sort discussed in Chapter I, pp. 9 ff. Aside from this, Dr. Wülfing<sup>2</sup> puts here *Bede* 468.30 = 643.7 (Sende him cræftige wyrhtan stænene cyricean to *timbrienne* = 333.12: *misit architectos*), which I consider final; and *Bede* 202.28 = 543.27, which he<sup>3</sup> rightly puts here, has no infinitive in the text used by me. Once more: as stated below, in the discussion of the inflected infinitive with adjectives, I have put a few infinitives with adjectives in the chapter on "Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive," in the section treating of the consecutive use.

### I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED.

Of the six examples of the uninflected infinitive modifying an adjective, three occur with *gearu*(-o), 'ready,' 'prepared for;' two with *fus*, 'ready,' 'prepared;' and one with *wierðe* (-u-, -y-), 'worthy.' I give the examples in full:—

*fus*, ready, prepared:

*Gu.* 1051, 1053: ic eom siðes *fus* upeard *niman* edleanan georn in ðam ecan gefean, ærgewyrhtum *geseon* sigora frean, min ðæt swæse bearn! [See Dr. Riggert's comment on this passage, above, p. 149.]

*gearu*, ready:

*Bede* 56.21: forðon he *gearo* wære in ðam ylcan gewinne mid him *beon* = 43.21: *quia laborare scilicet uolo*.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 534<sup>b</sup>: ic eom *gearo* to *gecyrrenne* to munuclicere drohtnunge,

<sup>1</sup> On this topic see, too, Eichenkel,<sup>1</sup> l. c., pp. 243-244.

<sup>2</sup> Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> l. c., II, p. 199. The number after the equal sign is that of the text used by Wülfing, namely, Smith's.

<sup>3</sup> Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> l. c., II, p. 203.

and woruldlíce ðeawas ealle *forlætan* (*sic!*). — *Ib.* II. 130<sup>t</sup> 2: *gearowe* wæron ehtnysse to ðoligenne, and deaðe *sweltan*.

*wierðe*, *worthy*:

*Ælf. L. S.* 138.353<sup>b</sup>: biddende mid wope ðæt hi *wurðe* wæron for criste to ðrowiganne and *becuman* (*sic!*) to his halgum.

## II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED.

The inflected infinitive occurs with numerous adjectives to specify the tendency, the purpose, or the activity appropriate to the quality denoted by the adjective, about as does the Latin phrase made up of *ad* + a gerund (or *ad* + a gerundive), or the Latin gerund in the genitive or the dative or the ablative, or the supine in *-u-*, — idioms to which the Anglo-Saxon inflected infinitive often corresponds in the translations. The Infinitive of Specification occurs with the following groups<sup>1</sup> of adjectives (and adverbs): —

1. Adjectives Denoting Readiness, Capacity, Inclination, and the like, with their opposites, the chief representatives of which are *gearu*, 'ready,' and its negative, *ungearu*: —

*æmetig*, at leisure, free.  
*bealdra*, bolder.  
*behydigest*, most solicitous.  
*freora*, freer.  
*from*, energetic.  
*fus*, ready.  
*gearu*, ready.  
*gedyrstig*, audacious.  
*gemyndig*, mindful.  
*geornfull* [giorn-], eager, desirous.  
*geornost*, most eager.  
*geris(e)ne*, suitable, apt.  
*geðancol*, thoughtful.  
*gifre*, eager.  
*hal*, whole, able (?).  
*hræd*, quick.

*hræð*: see *hræd*.  
*læt*, slow.  
*latheort*, slow of heart.  
*listhendig*, skillful.  
*lustbære*, desirous.  
*lustfull*, desirous.  
*lustlic*, desirous.  
*mi(e)htig*, mighty, powerful.  
*open*, open.  
*scearp*, sharp, eager.  
*strang* [-o-], strong, powerful.  
*strengra*, stronger.  
*swift*, swift.  
*trum*, firm, strong.  
*ðurhwæccendlic*, very vigilant.  
*ungearu* [-o-], unready.

2. Adjectives Denoting Ease and Difficulty and the like, of which the chief representatives are *ieðe*, 'easy,' its negative, *unieðe*, and *earfoð(e)*, 'difficult:' —

*deop*, deep, profound.  
*earfoð(e)*, difficult.  
*earfoðest*, most difficult.  
*earfoðlic*, difficult.  
*hefig*, difficult.  
*ieðe* [y-, e-, ea-], easy.  
*ieðelic*, easy.

*ieðre*, easier.  
*lang* [-o-], long, tedious.  
*langsum* [-o-], long, tedious.  
*leoht*, light, easy.  
*leohtest*, lightest, easiest.  
*lytel*, little, insignificant.  
*unieðe* [-ea-, -e-], not easy, difficult.

3. Adjectives Denoting Goodness, Usefulness, Necessity, and the like, of which the chief representatives are *god*, 'good;' *sel*, 'excellent;' *wierðe*, 'worthy,' and its compounds; *nyt*, 'useful,' with its compounds; and *niedðearf*, 'necessary,' with its compounds: —

*æðele*, excellent, valuable.  
*betere*, better.  
*betst*, best.

*frymful*, beneficial.  
*god*, good.  
*mære*, glorious, famous.

<sup>1</sup> The groups are substantially those given by Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, pp. 197–206. A few adjectives appear in more than one group.

niedbeðearfest [-ea-, -e-], <i>most necessary.</i>	selost [-a-, -e-], <i>most excellent.</i>
niedðearf [-ea-, -e-], <i>necessary.</i>	selra, <i>more excellent.</i>
niedðearflīc, <i>necessary.</i>	til, <i>excellent.</i>
nyt(t)wierðe [-y-], <i>useful.</i>	wierðe [-u-, -y-], <i>worthy.</i>
nyt(t)wierðlīc [-y-], <i>useful.</i>	wierðelīc, <i>worthy.</i>
rædicost, <i>most advisable.</i>	wierðost, <i>most worthy.</i>

4. Adjectives Denoting Pleasantness and Unpleasantness and the like, of which the chief representatives are *leof*, 'dear,' with its compounds; and *wynsum*, 'winsome,' with its compounds:—

andrysnlīc [on-], <i>terrible.</i>	liðe, <i>pleasant.</i>
arwurðlīc, <i>venerable.</i>	lustbære, <i>pleasant, fruitful (also in 1).</i>
bitterre, <i>more bitter.</i>	lustbærre, <i>more pleasant.</i>
eatolīce, <i>terribly.</i>	lustfullic, <i>pleasant.</i>
egeful, <i>terrible.</i>	lustlicre, <i>more pleasant.</i>
egeslīc, <i>terrible.</i>	lustsumlīc, <i>pleasant.</i>
fæger, <i>fair, beautiful.</i>	myrige, <i>pleasant.</i>
gecweme, <i>agreeable.</i>	onderslīc, <i>terrible.</i>
gesom, <i>agreed, friendly.</i>	reow [reoh], <i>rough, fierce.</i>
glæd, <i>bright, clear.</i>	scir, <i>white.</i>
glæshlut(t)or, <i>clear as glass.</i>	swete, <i>sweet.</i>
grimlīc, <i>terrible.</i>	ðearlīc, <i>painful.</i>
grimre, <i>more terrible.</i>	unwerodre, <i>more unsweet.</i>
halwende, <i>beneficial.</i>	unwynsum [-i-], <i>unwinsome.</i>
leof, <i>dear, desirable.</i>	wered [-od], <i>sweet.</i>
leofra, <i>dearer, etc.</i>	wynsum [-i-], <i>winsome, pleasant.</i>
leofost, <i>dearest, etc.</i>	wynsumre [-i-], <i>more winsome, etc.</i>
licwierðe [-u-], <i>pleasing, acceptable.</i>	

5. Adjectives Denoting Right and Wrong, Suitability and Unsuitability, the Customary and the Strange, and the like, of which the chief representatives are *rihtlīc*, 'right;' *gecoplīc*, 'suitable;' *getriewe*, 'true;' *gewuna*, 'accustomed;' *soðlīc*, 'true;' *unrihtlīc*, 'wrong;' *wundorlīc*, 'wonderful:'—

deaflic, <i>suitable.</i>	micel [-y-], <i>great, wonderful.</i>
diegol [diegle], <i>mysterious.</i>	rihtlīc, <i>just, proper.</i>
gecoplīc, <i>fit, suitable.</i>	soðlīc, <i>true.</i>
gehendast, <i>most convenient.</i>	unaberendlicre, <i>more intolerable.</i>
gehyð, <i>convenient.</i>	ungeliefedlīc, <i>incredible.</i>
getriewe [-e-], <i>true, safe, able.</i>	ungewunelīc, <i>unusual.</i>
gewuna, <i>accustomed.</i>	unrihtlīc, <i>wrong, improper.</i>
lang [-o-], <i>long (also in 2).</i>	unscende, <i>honorable.</i>
langsum [-o-], <i>long (also in 2).</i>	wrætlic, <i>rare, wonderful.</i>
manigfeald [-o-], <i>manifold.</i>	wundorlīc, <i>wonderful.</i>
manigfealdlicor, <i>more manifoldly.</i>	

#### 6. Other Adjectives:—

ana, <i>alone.</i>	læne, <i>fleeting, deceptive.</i>
feald [god and —], <i>suitable (?)</i> .	toward, <i>toward, coming.</i>
feorr, <i>far.</i>	

Typical examples are:—

#### 1. Adjectives Denoting Readiness, Capacity, Inclination, etc.:—

*fus*, *ready:*

*Beow.* 1805: wæron æðelingas eft to leodum *fuse to farene.*

*gearu* [-o], *ready:*

*And.* 73: quoted on p. 150.

*Bede* 60.29: quoted on p. 150. — *Ib.* 98.4: *ðæt he selfa geara wære . . . ðæt weorc to fremmenne* = 80.27: *ipsum paratum esse in hoc opus . . . perficendum.*

*Boeth.* 107.32: *ðu eart gearo to ongitanne* = 93.69: *quoniam te ad intellegendum promptissimum esse conspicio.*

*Greg.* 45.9: *Sceawiað iowre fet, ðæt ge sien gearwe to ganganne on sibbe weg* = 22.28: *Calceati pedes in præparatione Evangelii pacis.* — *Ib.* 173.5: *ðonne hi suiðe hrædlice bioð gearwe to læranne* = 126.24: *protinus docent.* — *Ib.* 173.8<sup>1</sup>. 2: *Bioð simle gearwe to læranne & to forgiefanne ælcum etc.* = 126.26: *Parati semper ad satisfactionem omni poscenti vos rationem etc.* — *Ib.* 203.12: *ðonne beoð ða heortan suiðe gearwe wisdomes to anfonne* = 152.10: *quasi ad suscipiendum ædificium corda paraverunt.* — *Ib.* 423.28: *forðæmðe he næfð gearone willan ðæt woh to fulfremmanne* = 346.21: *nec bonos mala inconsummata condemnant.*

*Solil.* 11.11: *ðe ic eom gearu to ðeowianne* = *tibi soli servire paratus sum.*

*Pr. Ps.* 7.13: *he bende his bogan, se is nu gearo to sceotanne* = *arcum suum tetendit, et paravit illum.*

*Chron.* 139<sup>b</sup>, 1009 E<sup>c</sup>: *eall folc gearu wæs heom on to fonne.*

*Laws* 166, V *Æthelstan*, Prol., 1: *Nu hæbbe ic funden mid ðæm witum . . . ðæt ða ealle beon gearwe . . . mid eallum ðingum to farenne ðider ic wille.*

*Wærf.* 80.27: *we syndon gearwe ðæt to done* [*sic!* but MS. H.: *to donne*] = 205 C<sup>2</sup>: *facere parati sumus.*

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 406<sup>b</sup>: *gif hwa . . . wolde his lac Gode offrian, ðæt he on gehendnysse to bigenne gearu hæfde.*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXVII. 110: *ic . . . gearo eom witu to ðrowienne.*

*Ælf. Hept.: Num.* 15.40: *We syndon gearwe nu to gewinnanne ðæt land* = *Parati sumus ascendere ad locum.*

*A. S. Hom. & L. S.* II. 15.104: *ic eom geara . . . on drihten to geleafanne* = 210.90: *ego illum adoro.*

*L.* 22.33: *ic eom gearu to farenne mid ðe* = *tecum paratus sum . . . ire.*

**gemyndig, mindful:**

*Pr. Ps.* 9.12: *he is swyðe gemyndig heora blod to wrecanne* = 9.13: *requires sanguinem eorum recordatus est.*

**geornfull** [*giorn-*], *eager, desirous:*

*Boeth.* 51.9: *ðæt ðu swiðe geornfull wære hit to gehyranne* = 50.14: *te audiendi cupidum.*

*Greg.* 281.5<sup>b</sup>: *Sie æghwelc mon suiðe hræd & suiðe geornful to gehieranne, & suiðe læt to sprecanne* = 212.9<sup>a</sup>: *Sit omnis homo velox ad audiendum, tardus autem ad loquendum.*

**geris(e)ne, suitable, apt:**

*Bede* 274.7: *ða gemette he sume gerisne stowe in H. mynster on to timbrienne* = 213.24: *inuenit locum in H. . . aptum monasterio construendo.*

**gifre, eager:**

*Boeth.* 50.24<sup>a</sup>. <sup>b</sup>: *ic heora eom swiðe gifre ægðer ge to geheranne ge eac to gehealdenne* = 50.8: *audiendi avidus* (or are the infinitives appositive?).

**læt, slow, tardy:**

*Greg.* 281.6: see under *geornful*.

**listhendig, skillful:**

*Gifts of Men* 96: *Sum bið listhendig to awritanne wordgeryno.*

*lustbære*,<sup>1</sup> *desirous*:

*Boeth.* 50.10: ic . . . wæs . . . swiðe *lustbære* hine to *geheranne* = 50.1: me *audiendi avidum*.

*Ælf. L. S.* 96.117: wæron *lustbære* . . . wita to *ðrowienne*.

*mi(e)htig*, *mighty*, *powerful*:

*Greg.* 91.15<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: se lareow sceolde beon *miehtig* to *tyhtanne* on halwende lare, & eac to *ðreanne* ða ðe him [wið]standan wiellen = 62.3, 4: Ut *potens* sit *exhortari* in doctrina sana, et eos, qui contradicunt, *arguere*.

*ðurhwæccendlic*, *very vigilant*:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 44: mid *ðurhwæccendlican* mode forð heonon to *under* [fonne] ða toweardan mede.

*ungearu* [-o], *unready*:

*Greg.* 173.11: quoted on p. 149.

## 2. Adjectives Denoting Ease and Difficulty, etc.: —

*earfoð(e)* [-eð(e)], *difficult*:

*Boeth.* 81.3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: Swa swa nu eorðe . . . 7 wæter sint swiðe *earfoðe* to *geseonne* oððe to *ongitonne* dysgum monnum = 0. — *Ib.* 92.24: ða stanas . . . bioð *earfoðe* to *tedælenne* (*sic!*) = 79.77: ne *facile* dissoluantur.

*Chron.* 218<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>a</sup>: unriht . . . , ðe sindon *earfeðe* to *areccenne*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 542<sup>b</sup>: Ælc ehtnys bið *earfoðe* to *ðolienne*.

*ieðe* [eðe], *easy*:

*Beow.* 2416: quoted on p. 150.

*Boeth.* 16.13<sup>b</sup>: ðing ða ðe nawðer ne sint getrewe to habbanne, ne eac *ieðe* to *forlætanne* = 25.38: quam non relicturam nemo umquam poterit esset securus. An uero tu pretiosam aestimas *abituram* felicitatem? — *Ib.* 92.27: hi bioð swiðe *eðe* to *tedælenne* (*sic!*) = 79.79: facile quidem *diuidentibus cedunt*.

*ieðelic*, *easy*:

*Greg.* 419.10: Ða cyððe se witga hu *ieðelic* bið to *forgiefenne* sio geðohte synn = 340.22: quam sit super hæc *facilis* *venia* ostendit.

*ieðre*, *easier*:

*Greg.* 239.10, 11: nawuht nis *ieðre* to [ge]secganne ne eac to [ge]hefanne ðonne soð = 180.21: Nil autem est ad defendendum puritate tutius, nil ad *dicendum* *veritate facilius*.

*langsum* <sup>2</sup> [-o-], *long*, *tedious*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 170<sup>b</sup> <sup>1</sup>, <sup>2</sup>: ðing . . . , ðe us sind *langsume* to *gereccenne*, and eow to *gehyrenne*.

*leoht*, *light*, *easy*:

*Greg.* 23.13: ðylæs hi hwæm *leohte* ðyncen to *underfonne* = 2.3: quæ ne quibusdam *levia* esse videantur.

*unieðe* [uneaðe], *not easy*, *difficult*:

*Greg.* 385.10, 11: Ðu gionga, bio ðe *unieðe* to *clipianne* & to *læranne* = 300.16: *Adolescens loquere* in causa tua *vix*. — *Ib.* 409.20: sæde ðæt he *unieðe* wære to *gehealdenne* = 330.1: et dum prædicat quia *difficile* *capitur*.

*Bl. Hom.* 59.15: se deaða byð *uneaðe* ælcon men on neaweste to hæbbenne. [Cf. Einenkel,<sup>2</sup> l. c., p. 244.]

<sup>1</sup> Also under 4.

<sup>2</sup> See also under 5.



**3. Adjectives Denoting Goodness, Usefulness, Necessity, etc.:—****betere, better:***Greg.* 457.7: Ðætte hwilum ða leohtan scylda bioð *beteran to forlætenne* = 388.21: *Quod aliquando leviora vitia relinquenda sunt.***betst, best:***Læce.* 44.29: wyrta ðonne sien *betste to wyrçenne.***god, good:***Bened.* 127.7<sup>a</sup>: cræftas, ðe synd *gode to beganne* = 194.13: ut . . . artes diversæ . . . *exerceantur.**Ælf. Hept.:* *Gen.* 3.6: Ðæt treow wæs *god to etanne* = *bonum esset lignum ad vescendum.**Læce.* 34.10: fifleafe awrungenu 7 wið win gemenged *god bið to drincanne.***niedbeðearfost, most necessary:***Greg.* 7.7: bec, ða ðe *niedbeðearfosta* sien eallum monnum *to wiottonne* = 0.**niedðearflic [ned-], necessary:***Bl. Hom.* 225.26: gif ic nugit sie ðinum folce *nedðearflic* on worlde *to hæbbenne.***nyt(t)wierðe [-y-], useful:***Greg.* 275.14, 15: ac ðonne he *nytwyrdne* timan ongiet *to sprecanne*, he forsið ða swigean, & spricð eall ðæt he *nytwyrdes* ongiet *to sprecanne* = 208.8: ut nimirum cum opportunum considerat, postposita censura silentii, *loquendo quæ congruunt*, in usum se utilitatis impendat. — *Ib.* 255.12: se gæsðlica Fæder he us lærð *nytwyrdlicu* ðing *to underfonne*, ðæt is ðæt we ge(e)arnigen ðæt ece lif = 192.23: Et illi quidem in tempore paucorum dierum secundum voluntatem suam *erudiebant* nos; hic autem *ad id quod utile est in recipiendo* sanctificationem ejus.**selra, more excellent:***Beow.* 1851: Wen ic talige . . . Ðæt ðe Sæ-Geatas *selran* næbben *to geceosenne* cyning ænigne, hordweard hæleða.*S. & S.* 406: Swilc bið seo an snæd æghwylcum men *selre* micle, gif heo gesegnod bið, *to ðycgganne.***wierðe [-u-, -y-], worthy:***Gen.* 622: ne wite ic him ða womcwidas, ðeah he his *wyrðe* ne sie *to alætanne* ðæs fela he me laðes spræc.*Ælf. L. S.* 138.353<sup>a</sup>: biddende mid wope ðæt hi *wurðe* wæron for criste *to ðrowigenne* and becuman (*sic!*) *to his halgum.**Mat.* 3.11: Ðæs gescy neom ic *wyrðe to berenne* = *cujus non sum dignus calceamenta portare.***wierðelic [-y-], worthy:***Wær.* 230.16: bebodu, ðe *wyrðelice* wæron *to gehyranne* = 281 B: ei per quos potuit quæ fuerat *dignus audire* mandavit.**wierðost [-y-], most worthy:***Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 637: he *wurðost* wæs æfter him *to drincenne.***4. Adjectives Denoting Pleasantness and Unpleasantness, etc.:—****andrysnlic, terrible:***Bl. Hom.* 33.5: Ðonne ðincð ðis geleaffullum monnum swiðe *andrysnlicu* wise *to gehyrenne.***fæger, fair, beautiful:**

*Oros.* 74.13: *Seo burg . . . wæs swiðe fæger an to locianne* = 75.11: *natura loci laetissima.*

*Bl. Hom.* 113.22: *ðær ðu ær gesawe . . . fægre leomu on to seonne.*

**glad, bright, clear:**

*Boeth.* 14.14: *ðeah heo [= sæ] ær gladu wære on to locienne* = 23.12: 0.

**grimlic, terrible:**

*Chr.* 919<sup>b</sup>: *he bið ðam yflum egeslic and grimlic to geseonne.*

**leof, dear, desirable:**

*Bede* 450.3<sup>a, b</sup>: *Wæs he . . . ealre his ðeode leof heora rice to habbanne 7 to healdenne* = 322.8, 9: *genti ad tenenda seruandaque regni sceptrā exoptatissimus.*

**leofost, dearest, most desirable:**

*Bl. Hom.* 55.18: *ða word ðe he wenð ðæt him leofoste syn to gehyrenne.* —

*Ib.* 111.26<sup>a, b</sup>: *eall forlæteð ðæt him . . . wynsumlic wæs, & leofost to agenne & to hæbbenne.*

**leofra, dearer, more desirable:**

*Oros.* 286.8<sup>a, b</sup>: *him leofre wæs se cristendom to beganne ðonne his scira to habbanne* = 287.8: *omnes officium quam fidem deserere maluerunt.*

*Bl. Hom.* 195.8: *him wæron ær his æhta leofran to hæbbenne ðonne Godes lufu.* [Cf. Einkenkel,<sup>1</sup> l. c., p. 244.]

**lustbære,<sup>1</sup> pleasant, fruitful:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 130<sup>m</sup>: *ðas word sind lustbære to gehyrenne.*

**lustlicre, more pleasant:**

*Bened.* 3.3: *Hwæt is lustlicre to ghyrenne ðonne ðeos . . . stefn?* = 6.7:

*Quid dulcius nobis hac voce?*

**onderslic, terrible:**

*Bede* 144.18<sup>b</sup>: *wære æghwæðer ge arwyrðlic ge onderslic on to seonne* = 117.29<sup>b</sup>: *uenerabilis simul et terribilis aspectu.*

**swete, sweet:**

*Boeth.* 51.5: *he [= se læcecraft] . . . swiðe swete to bealcetenne* = 0.

*Bl. Hom.* 59.10: *geogoðlustas . . . ða ðe . . . him swete wæron to aræf-nenne.* [Cf. Einkenkel,<sup>1</sup> l. c., p. 244.]

**unwynsum, unwinsome:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 184<sup>t</sup>: *swa ðæt heo foroft bið swiðe unwynsum on to eardigenne.*

**werod [-ed], sweet:**

*Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 15.25<sup>b</sup>: *het don ðæt treow on ðæt wæter, and hit wearð siððan wered to drincanne* = *lignum, quod cum misisset in aquas, in dulcedinem versæ sunt.*

**wynsum [-i-], winsome:**

*Met.* 21.19: *ðæt is wynsum stow æfter ðissum yrmðum to aganne.*

*Bede* 346.4: *his song 7 his leoð wæron swa wynsumu to gehyranne, ðætte . . . his lareowas æt his muðe wreoton 7 leornodon* = 260.32: *suauiusque resonando doctores suos uicissim auditores sui faciebant.*

*Solil.* 51.11: *deoplicu is seo ascung and winsumu to witanne* = 0.

*Ælf. L. S. XXX.* 315: *Wæs seo wunung ðær . . . wynsum on to wicenne.*

**wynsumre [-i-], more winsome:**

<sup>1</sup> Also under 1.

*Boeth.* 52.8: Swa bið eac micle ðe *winsumre* sio soðe gesælð to *habbanne* efter ðam eormðum ðisses . . . lifes = 0.

### 5. Adjectives Denoting Right and Wrong, Suitability and Unsuitability, the Customary and the Strange, etc.:—

**getriewe** [-trewe], *true, safe*:

*Boeth.* 16.13<sup>a</sup>: ðing ða ðe nawðer ne sint *getrewe* to *habbanne*, ne eac ieðe to forlætanne = 25.36: quam non *relicturam* nemo umquam poterit esset *securus*. An uero tu pretiosam aestimas abituram felicitatem?

**gewuna**, *accustomed*:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 614: ne oferfar ðu na iordanen swa swa *gewuna* synt of eowrum mynstrum to *farenne*.

**rihtlic**, *just, proper*:

*Wærƿ.* 345.14: ðing . . . , ðe heom symle gelyfde wæron genoh *rihtlice* to *habbanne* = 421 A<sup>1</sup>: ceperunt singuli extrema quæque et vilia, et quæ eis *habere* regulariter semper *licuerat* (or does the infinitive modify *gelyfde*?).

**soðlic**, *true*:

*Ælf. L. S.* 182.226: scyppend *soðlic* to *wurðigenne*.

**ungewunelic**, *unusual*:

*Wærƿ.* 17.28: ongan ðencan, ðæt ðyllic wundor wære mannum *ungewunelic* to *wyrccanne* = 160 B<sup>2</sup>: At ille *inusuatum* habens tale miraculum, expavit petitionis illius iuramentum.

**unrihtlic**, *wrong, improper*:

*Wærƿ.* 209.23<sup>a</sup>: ðeah ðe heo [= spræc] si us unwyrðelice (*sic!*) 7 *unrihtlic* to *sprecane* (*sic!*) = 256 C<sup>1</sup>: locutionem quæ nobis *indigna* est etiam delectabiliter tenemus.

**wrætlic**, *rare, wonderful*:

*Rid.* 40.25: ðæt [is] *wrætlic* ðing to *gesecganne*.

**wundorlic**, *wonderful*:

*Wulf.* 15.14: seo menniscnes is *wundorlic* ymbe to *smeagenne*.

### 6. Other Adjectives:—

**ana**, *alone*:

*Ælf. L. S.* 182.225: Eala ðu ælmihtiga god *ana* to *gebiddene* (*sic!*).

**feald** [god and —], *suitable* (?):

*Læce.* 87.15, 16: se petraoleum . . . is god and *feald* to *drincanne* wið innan tiedernesse 7 utan to *smerwanne* on wintres dæge.

**feorr**, *far*:

*And.* 424: Mycel is nu gena lad ofer lagustream, land swiðe *feorr* to *secanne*.

[Cf. *Beow.* 1922 in Ch. I, p. 13.]

**læne**, *fleeting, deceptive*:

*Wulf.* 189.4: gecnawan hu *læne* . . . ðis lif is on to *getruwianne*.

**toward**,<sup>1</sup> *toward, coming*:

*Bede* 270. 2: hwonne he . . . *toward* sy in . . . wolcnum . . . to *demanne* cwice and deade = 211.7: *uenturus est* . . . *ad iudicandos uiuos et mortuos*.

*Bl. Hom.* 81.35, 36: we eac witon ðæt he is *toward* to *demenne*, & ðas world to *geendenne*.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter VII, p. 105.

*Ælf. Hom. I. 190<sup>b</sup>*: Godes Sunu, se ðe wæs *towearð to alysenne ealne mid-dangeard fram deofles anwealde.*

*Chad. 188*: ðonne he bið *towearð to demenne* cwide 7 deade.

### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

Although twice in the poetry an uninflected infinitive is found with an adjective, we may be reasonably sure that, in the poetry as in the prose, the infinitive with adjectives normally was inflected: of the 26 examples of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon poetry, only two are uninflected; of the 221 examples in the prose, only four are uninflected. The lack of inflection in both poetry and prose appears to be due chiefly to the remoteness of the infinitive from the adjective that it modifies, since in each <sup>1</sup> of the examples the infinitive is appreciably separated from its adjective. As, however, in three of the examples (*Ælf. Hom. I. 534<sup>b</sup>*, *II. 130<sup>t</sup>*; *Ælf. L. S. 138.353<sup>b</sup>*) the uninflected infinitive is the second of a series of two infinitives the first of which is inflected, some may prefer to consider that the force of *to* is carried over to the second infinitive, or, to state the matter another way, that the presence of *to* with the first infinitive accounts for its absence with the second infinitive. What seems to me to militate against this latter view and to favor the former, is the fact that in *Bede* 56.21, where we have only a single infinitive and that separated from its adjective by a number of words, the infinitive is uninflected; and the further fact that in sixteen series we have only the inflected infinitive, while in only three series have we an uninflected infinitive following an inflected. Moreover, we have seen that in some other uses remoteness from a word normally requiring an inflected infinitive, tends to cause the infinitive to lose its inflection.

### B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

Of an adjective modified by an infinitive that is passive in form I have found only one example, in *Ælf. Hom. II. 316<sup>b</sup>*: we ðe næron *wurðe beon* his wealas *gecigde.*

For the infinitive with adjectives (and adverbs) in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section xi.

### NOTES.

1. *The Infinitive in a Series with Adjectives.* — In the following passages, of which only the last is cited by Dr. Farrar,<sup>2</sup> we have a series of infinitives with adjectives in which the first infinitive is inflected, but the succeeding is not: *Ælf. Hom. I. 534<sup>b</sup>*,<sup>2</sup>, quoted on p. 150; *II. 130<sup>t</sup>*,<sup>2</sup>, quoted on p. 151; *Ælf. L. S. 138.353<sup>a,b</sup>*, quoted on p. 151. In the following passages we have a series of infinitives in which each infinitive is inflected: *Bede* 410.4<sup>b</sup>, 5<sup>b</sup>; 450.3<sup>a,b</sup>; — *Boeth.* 50.24<sup>a,b</sup>, 81.3<sup>a,b</sup>; — *Greg.* 91.15<sup>a,b</sup>; 173.8<sup>a,b</sup>; 239.10, 11; 385.10, 11; 459.9<sup>a,b</sup>; — *Oros.* 80.11, 12<sup>a,b</sup>; 286.8<sup>a,b</sup>; — *Wærf.* 27.8, 9; — *Bl. Hom.* 81.35, 36; 111.26<sup>a,b</sup>; — *Ælf. Hom. II. 170<sup>b</sup>*,<sup>2</sup>; — *Ælf. L. S. XXV. 113<sup>a,b</sup>*; — *Læce.* 87.15, 16.

2. *An Infinitive with an Adjective That Is to Be Supplied.* — We have an inflected infinitive dependent upon an adjective that is to be supplied from the context in the following: *Oros.* 120.9: ðonne sceoldon ge swa lustlice eowre agnu brocu araefnan, ðeh hie læssan sien, swa ge heora sint to gehieranne [= (as Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> l. c., II, p. 199, states) swa ge *lustlice* sint heora to *gehieranne*].

<sup>1</sup> Except in *Gu.* 1051, in which only one word intervenes: see pp. 149 and 150.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, pp. 25 and 34.

3. *An Inflected Infinitive Alternates with a Prepositional Phrase in Ælf. Hom. II. 322<sup>m</sup>:* Wa ðan ðe strang bið to swiðlicum drencum and to gemencenne ða micclan druncennysse.

4. *Confusion of Adjective with Adverb.* — Occasionally confusion seems to arise between an adjective and an adverb, as in the following: *Bede* 240.21: Ða wæs geworden ymb syx hund wintra 7 feower 7 syxtig æfter Drihtnes menniscnesse *eclipsis solis*, ðæt is sunnan asprungennis, ðæt heo seiman ne hæfde: 7 wæs *eatolice* on to *seonne* = 191.29: facta erat *eclipsis solis*; — *Wærf.* 49.8: ðohte . . . ðæt seo ylce stow mihte beon *gecoplice* wyrta on to *settanne* = 184 A: cogitaret, quod saltem *ad condimenta olerum nutrienda* locus idem *aptus* potuisset existere; — *Alex.* 66: Ðy læs ðæt eow seo sægen *monigfealdlicor* bi ðon ðuhte to *writanne*.

5. *The Infinitive with Adverbs.* — In the following passages, all quoted in the preceding note, we have an inflected infinitive modifying an adverb, not an adjective: *Bede* 240.21: *eatolice*; *Wærf.* 49.8: *gecoplice*; *Alex.* 66: *monigfealdlicor*. Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 26, would put here the following, the only examples given by him of the infinitive with adverbs: "In two instances the infinitive depends upon an adverb in the main clause and the purpose idea fades into one of mere reference, e. g. *Æ. H. ii. 78.14* [= my *Ælf. Hom. II. 78.14*]: ge habbað hwonlice to swincenne = 'little time to labor;' *Int. Sig. 285* [= my *Ælf. Int. 285*]: Hwæt is, ðæt God gelogode Cherubim and fyren swurd and awendedlic to gehealdenne (= *Quid est: Cherubin vel flammeum gladium atque versatilem ad custodiendum viam ligni vitæ posuit.*") To me, however, to *swincenne* seems rather the object of *habbað* (see p. 43 above, in Chapter II); and to *gehealdenne*, the adverbial (final) modifier of *gelogode*. Dr. Kühn, *l. c.*, p. 36, considers that the infinitive depends on an adverb in the following passages in *Ælf. L. S.*: — 126.150: gearcodon heora mod to ðam martyrdome *caſlice* to *campienne* for cristes geleafan; 182.226: Eala ðu ælmihtiga god, ana to gebiddenne, ondrædendlic scyppend, soðlic to wurðigenne; 274.186: Hi wurdon ða beswungene and swyðlice getintregode, swa swa ða wæs *gewunelic* to *witnigenne* forligr. But to me it seems that, in the first example, the adverb modifies the infinitive, which latter is final; that, in the other two examples, we have, not adverbs, but adjectives; that, in the second example, the infinitive modifies the adjective; and that, in the third example, the infinitive is the subject of the verbal phrase made up of the copula plus the adjective.

## CHAPTER XII.

### OTHER ADVERBIAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.

Besides denoting purpose and specification (with Adjectives), the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is occasionally used to denote other adverbial relationships: (A) Cause; (B) Specification with Verbs; (C) Result; and (D) Absoluteness. Possible examples of an infinitive denoting (E) Condition and (F) Manner, are given at the end of this chapter.

In each of these uses, the infinitive that is active in form seems to me active in sense with the possible exception of the absolute infinitives, *to metanne wið* and *to gesettanne wið*: see D below.

#### A. THE CAUSAL INFINITIVE.

With a few verbs denoting emotion the infinitive is occasionally used to denote the Cause of the emotion. The little that has been written about this use of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is referred to under the specific examples. At this place I need to quote only the statement of Mätzner, who, *l. c.*, III, p. 40, in speaking of the inflected infinitive of cause after verbs of emotion in Modern and in Middle English, declares: "Im Ags. trifft man nichts Entsprechendes." While some of my examples are doubtful, I think those with the inflected infinitive (especially after *forsceamigan*) are less doubtful than those with the simple infinitive. I give all the clearer examples that I have observed:—

##### (1) The Uninflected Infinitive:

**cearian, care:**

*Gen.* 2279: Ne *ceara* ðu feor heonon fleame, *dælan* somwist incre (or objective?). — *Ib.* 2733: Ne *ceara* incit duguða of ðisse eðeltyrf ellor *secan* winas uncuðe, ac wuniað her (or objective?). [Cf. Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 40, who also seems in doubt as to whether to consider the infinitive here as objective or as causal.]

**gefeon, rejoice, delight:**

*Bede* 484.15: mynstres, on ðam ic *gefeo* ðiowian ðære uplican arfæstnesse = 359.13: in quo supernae pietati *deservire gaudeo*. — *Ib.* 478.32: sibbe 7 soðfæstnesse mid . . . Godes circean *gifeð* (= *gifehð*) dælnimende *beon* = 351.7: pacis ac ueritatis cum universali ecclesia particeps *existere gaudet*. [Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 69, cites this example, and adds: "*Gefeon* takes the simple infinitive, but it may as well be complementary as causal in conception. I find in Wulfing no cases of the prepositional infinitive that can be distinctly treated as causal."]

**gelustfullian, rejoice in:**

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 535: ic gewilnode ðæs wines on ðam ic ær *gelustfullode* to oferdruncennysse *brucan*.

**lustfullian, rejoice in:**

*Bede* 432.32: ic *lustfullede* ðære stowe swetnesse 7 wlite, ðe ic ðær geseah, 7 eac somod ðara gemænan 7 eadignesse *brucan*, ðe ic on ðære stowe sceawade

= 309.11: *delectatus* nimirum suauitate ac decore loci illius, quem intuebar, simul et *consortio* eorum quos in illo uidebam.

(2) The Inflected Infinitive:

**aforhtian**, *be afraid*:

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 18.357: ic earma nu *aforhtige to secgenne* hwæt me becom (or objective?).

**bisorgian**, *regret*:

*Chr.* 1555: Ne *bisorgað* he synne *to fremman* (*sic!*), wonhydig mon. [On this infinitive, Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 71, speaks as follows: "In a sentence like Christ, 1556, Ne *bisorgað* he synne *to fremman*, it is hard to say whether we have a complementary or a true causal infinitive. Such an example in O. F. would be explicable as causal, with *a* or *de* + infinitive, on the ground of the original meaning of the preposition itself, but hardly so in O. E. It may be that in many such cases in O. E. the present object of the infinitive (*synne*) was originally object of the main verb (*bisorgað*), so that the infinitive could have its natural purpose force, as further explication. But in both O. F. and O. E., constructions like this with verbs of *dislike*, *sorrowing*, etc., would easily arise by analogy of words like *desire* + infinitive."]

**forhtian**, *be afraid, fear*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 538<sup>b</sup>: Be ðam we *forhtiað fela to sprecenne* (or objective?). — *Ib.* II. 554<sup>t3</sup>: ðeah ne *forhtiað to wunigenne* on heora unrihtwisnyssum (or objective?).

**forsc(e)ami(g)an**, *be ashamed*:

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* 18.189: ic nu *forsceamige to secganne* mine ungeleafulness.

*Wulf.* 275.23: forðam na ðet he naht, *forsceame* he ðæt riht *to secgenne*.

**geunlustian**, *loathe*:

*Bl. Hom.* 59.9: se lichoma *geunlustað* ða geogoðlustas *to fremmenne* (or objective?).

## B. THE INFINITIVE OF SPECIFICATION WITH VERBS.

Aside from denoting Specification (or Respect Wherein) with Adjectives (already treated in Chapter XI), occasionally the infinitive, always inflected, seems to be used with a verb to denote Specification: —

### 1. With an Active Finite Verb.

**drefan**, *trouble*:

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B.* 283: To hwy *gedrefest* ðu abbot ðine geðohtas *to geæswicianne* on me (or final?).

**efstan**, *hasten*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 364: swa miccle swiðor we *efstað to lybbenne* swa micclum swa we swiðor on ðissere oncnawennysse ðeonde beoð (or final?).

**forlætan**, *leave*:

*Bede* 82.22: ðes mon is his seolfes dome *to forlætenne*, oððe be cirican ingonge, oððe *to onfonne* ðam geryne = 58.25: iste profecto siue de ingressu ecclesiae, seu de *sumendo* dominici corporis sanguinisque mysterio, suo *est* iudicio *relinquendus*. [Cf. Chapter III, p. 78.]

**slawian**, *be or become sluggish*:

*Ælf. L. S. XXIII B. 224:* hwæs wilnast ðu fram me to hæbbenne oððe to witenne ðæt ðu ne *slawedest* swa micel geswinc to *gefremmanne* for minum ðingum?

## 2. With a Passive Finite Verb.

**abysgian, occupy, engage:**

*Wærf. 88.18:* ðæt se mæssepreost *wæs* unwenlice *abysgod* wingearð to settanne = 212 C<sup>1</sup>: Qui uidelicet sacerdos inopinate contigit ut *ad putandam vineam esset occupatus* (or final?).

(ge)læran, teach, instruct:

*Wærf. 180.26:* ðæt he *gelæred wæs* wyrta to *begangenne* = 217 C<sup>1</sup>: Quod vir gentilis valde libenter accepit, cum *in nutriendis oleribus quia peritus esset* audivit.

All of the foregoing examples, with both active and passive verbs, seem doubtful to me except *Wærf. 180.26*.

## C. THE CONSECUTIVE INFINITIVE.

I have found very little concerning the Consecutive Use of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. Dr. K. Köhler and Dr. Wülfing do not treat this use apart from that of purpose. In his "The Clause of Result in Old English Prose," Dr. A. R. Benham does not include the infinitive. Professor Einenkel treats the construction in Middle English, but says nothing of it in Anglo-Saxon. Mätzner treats the consecutive infinitive after particles (*so, as, such, enough, too, more than*), in III, 48-49, and the infinitive of result that is loosely connected with the rest of the sentence, in III, 49-50, but he says nothing of either use in Anglo-Saxon. Koch, too, has a word about the infinitive after particles, in II, 64, but likewise says nothing of the idiom in Anglo-Saxon. Aside from these two statements, the most specific comments are those by Dr. Buchtenkirch, Dr. Höser, and Dr. Kenyon, which are quoted below.

At times the inflected infinitive denotes Tendency or Result, and in such use is found (a) with Adjectives and (b) with Verbs.

### 1. With Adjectives.

It is difficult to distinguish this use of the inflected infinitive with adjectives to denote tendency or result from its use with adjectives to denote specification (or respect wherein). But in the examples below, those in which the adjective is preceded by an adverb (*swa* or *to*) seem to me pretty certainly to denote tendency or result, and thus to be clearly differentiated from the inflected infinitive with adjectives as treated in Chapter XI. Even this use with *swa* and *to* has been denied to Anglo-Saxon, as by Dr. Buchtenkirch, *l. c.*, p. 41, who, in speaking of this construction in Occleve, declares: "Im Angelsächsischen scheint der Infinitiv in dieser Verbindung garnicht vorzukommen; wenigstens führen Mätzner und Köhler keine Belege an."

I cite all of what seem to me the clearer examples:—

With several adjectives:

*Bl. Hom. 109.29, 30:* Ne beo nænig man her on worldrice on his geðohte to *modig*, ne on his lichoman to *strang*, ne niða to *georn*, ne bealwes to *beald*, ne bregda to *full*, ne inwit (*sic!*) to *leaf*, ne wrohtas to *webgenne*, ne searo to *renigenne*.



*Nic.* 506.1: Oððe hwæt eart ðu *swa mycel* 7 eac *swa lytel* 7 *swa nyðerlic* 7 eft up *swa heah* 7 *swa wunderlic* on anes mannes hywe us to *oferdryfenne*?

*Wulf.* 253.7<sup>a, b</sup>, 8<sup>a, b, c</sup>: ne syn we to *gifre* ne to *frece* ne to *firenlustgeorne* ne to *æfestige* ne to *inwitfulle* ne to *tælende* ne to *twigspræce* ne morðor to *benganenne* ne aðas to *swerianne* ne niðas to *fremmanne* ne leasunga to *sæcganne* ne ðeofenda to *benganenne*.

**ælenge, tedious:**

*Solil.* 59.31: ac me ðincð nu ðæt to lang æall to rimande (*sic!*) and ðe to *ælenge* to *gehyranne* = 0.

**beald, bold:**

*Wærf.* 132.13: he næs naht *beald* him to to *ganne* = B. 162.A<sup>2</sup>: non ausus accedere sese in terram dedit.

**carful, careful:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 340<sup>b</sup> 2: ðæt hi ne beoð ealles *swa carfulle* to *beganne* ða earfoðlican drohtnunge.

**eald, old:**

*Ælf. L. S.* XXV. 94: ic eom *eald* to *hiwigenne* (or specification?).

**genoh, enough:**

*Boeth.* 135.9: Ac on ðæm hi habbað *genoh* to *ongitanne* ðæt etc. = 114.189: Hoc tantum perspexisse sufficiat.

*Greg.* 415.35: hwilum him ðyncð ðæt he hæbbe fierst *genogne* to *hreowsianne* = 338.2: modo adhuc tempus subsequens ad penitentiam pollicetur.

*Wærf.* 49.16: gewearð ðam gebroðrum ðær *genoh* rum stow wyrta on to *settanne* = 184 B: invenerunt . . . suoque secessu largum fratribus spatium dedisse.

*Hept.: Ex.* 16.16: ðæt ælc man gadrie *swa micel* ðæt he *genoh* hæbbe to *etanne* = colligat . . . quantum sufficit ad vescendum. — *Ex.* 17.6: ðæt wæter gæð ut of him, ðæt ðæt folc hæfð *genoh* to *drincanne* = exhibit ex ea aqua, ut bibat populus.

**geornful, eager:**

*Solil.* 63.11: Acsa ðin agen mod for hwi hyt *swa willen* si and *swa geornful* to *witanne* ðætte ær wæs = 0.

**lang [-o-], long, tedious:**

*Bede* 174.22: wundro . . . , ða ðe nu to *long* to *secgenne* syndon = 143.30: sed haec nos ad alia tendentes, suis narrare permittimus.

*Solil.* 59.30: ac me ðincð nu ðæt to lang æall to rimande (*sic!*), and ðe to *ælenge* to *gehyranne*.

*Læce.* 56.19: læcedomas . . . ne sculon on ane ðrage to *lange* beon to *donne*.

**lustsumlic, pleasant:**

*Oros.* 120.3: Ic nat . . . for hwi eow Romanum sindon ða ærran gewin *swa wel gelicad* 7 *swa lustsumlice* on leoðcwidum to *gehieranne* = 0.

**mihtig, powerful:**

*Bl. Hom.* 223.22: Toðæs *mihtig* he . . . wæs . . . untrumnesse to *hælenne*. — *Ib.* 235.36, 237.1: ic eom *mihtig* . . . eal to *donne* & . . . to *æteowenne* *swa* hwæt me licað.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 296<sup>b</sup> 1: we beoð . . . *mihtige* to *gefremmenne* *swa* hwæt *swa* us licað.

**strang [mihtig and —], strong:**

A. S. *Hom. & L. S. I.* 9.127<sup>a</sup> b: he gedyde hi sona *mihtige* and *strange* to *wiðstandenne* heora feondum.

**swið**, *strong, powerful*:

Dan. 285: ðu eart mihtum *swið* niðas to *nergenne*!

Az. 6: ðu eart meahum *swið* niðas to *nergenne*.

**ungeornful**, *negligent*:

Greg. 239.2: oððe eft sio bilewitnes & sio anfealdnes hine to *ungeornfulne* gedoo to *ongietanne*, ðylæs he weorðe besolcen = 180.14: quatenus nec seducti per prudentiam calleant, nec ab intellectus studio ex simplicitate torpescant.

**unstrang**, *not strong*:

Mart. 146.14: his ðrowung wæs ðe lengre ond ðy heardre ðy ðe hyra handa wæron *unstrange* hine to *acwellane*.

Wærf. 63.19: se ðe naht *unstrang* nis wræce to *donne* = 193 B<sup>3</sup>: qui *ad inferendam* ultionem quam voluerit, invalidus non est (or final?).

**unswete**, *unsweet*:

Læce. 16.2: gif ðu hine nimest 7 gaderast æt fylne ðonne ne bið he to *unswete* to *gestincanne*.

## 2. With Verbs.

Verbs meaning *to incite, to persuade, to compel, to prepare, to suffice*, and the like are followed by an inflected infinitive denoting tendency or result. It is difficult, if not impossible, to draw a hard-and-fast line between the consecutive use of the infinitive denoting tendency or result and the final use of the infinitive denoting purpose, so imperceptibly does the one use pass into the other. Accordingly, as noted below, a few of my examples for the consecutive use are by others, notably by Dr. Kenyon, put under the final use. Indeed, Dr. Kenyon's second subdivision of the "The Prepositional Infinitive of Purpose," in which, as he states, *l. c.*, p. 18, "The infinitive often denotes, not so much a consciously conceived, final purpose of the action of the governing verb, as simply the direction, tendency, or destiny of it," is scarcely distinguishable from what he (on p. 59) and I both consider the consecutive use. On the other hand, Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 60, considers that, in *Ælf. L. S.* 368.78 (ne galdras ne *sece*, to *gremigenne* his scyppend), the infinitive is consecutive, but to me it seems final. Once more: unquestionably to some the inflected infinitive after verbs like *tilian*, 'strive for,' may seem to belong either here under the consecutive use or in Chapter X under the final use; but, as this verb is followed also by the uninflected infinitive, I have considered the infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, after it as objective rather than as adverbial. Again, in some of the examples below (especially with verbs of compelling) we may have an inflected predicative instead of a consecutive infinitive: see the note to *neadian*. Finally, it should be added that Dr. Höser, *l. c.*, p. 38, cites *Doomsday*, l. 186 (nænig spræc mæg beon, spellum *areccan* ænegum on eorðan earmlice witu), as having an uninflected infinitive of result, and that he is quoted approvingly by Professor Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 60, but to me *areccan* seems predicative after *mæg*.

## I. WITH AN ACTIVE FINITE VERB.

The inflected infinitive is found after the active of the following verbs to denote tendency or result: —

**aweccan**, *awake, incite.*

**bædan**, *compel.*

**deah**, *avail.*

**gearcian**, *prepare.*

**gebiegan**, *bend, force.*

**gegearwian**, *make ready.*

**gehwierfan**, *turn.*

**gelædan**, *lead.*

**gemedemian (hine)**, *humble one's self, condescend.*

**geneah**, *suffice.*

**geniedan**, *force.*

**genihtsumian**, *suffice.*

**gescierpan**, *sharpen.*

**geweman**, *persuade.*

**gremian**, *provoke.*

**hleonian**, *lean, incline.*

**manian**, *admonish, urge.*

**neadian**, *compel.*

**niedan** [-y-], *compel.*

**onælan**, *incite.*

**onstýrian**, *stir.*

**sellan**, *give.*

**teon**, *draw, induce.*

**trymman**, *strengthen, encourage.*

**ðeowan**, *force, threaten.*

**ðreatian**, *force.*

**ðywan** [-i-], *force, threaten.*

**weaxan**, *grow.*

The clearer examples in full are: —

**aweccan**, *awaken, incite:*

*Bede* 268.31: *ðæt he eorð-bigengan awecce hine to ondrædanne* = 211.1: *ut terrigenas ad timendum se suscitet* (considered by Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 217, as final; by Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 60, as consecutive).

*Chad* 185: *he leoðrað of heofone ðæt he ða eorðlican mod awecceð hine to ondreðenne.*

**bædan**, *compel:*

*Læce*. 86.27<sup>a</sup>: *bæde to spiwanne.*

**deah**, *avail:*

*Læce*. 68.27: *Ðicge ðæt broð 7 eac deah netle gesoden on wætre 7 geselt to ðicganne 7 eac ellenes leaf etc.* — *Ib.* 72.11: *wyrt, seo deah to drincanne.* — *Ib.* 122.12<sup>a, b</sup>: *ðeos sealf deah wið æghwylcum geswelle to ðicganne 7 to smergenne on swa hwylcum lime swa hit on bið.*

**gearcian**, *prepare:*

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 84<sup>m</sup>: *He gearcað urne godan willan to fultumigenne.*

**gebiegan**, *bend:*

*Pr. Ps.* 34.13: *Ic . . . gebigde min mod to fæstenne* = *humiliabam in jejuniō animam meam.* [Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 31, seems to consider this an instance of the accusative with predicative inflected infinitive, while Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 19, considers the infinitive to be final in sense; but see *neadian*.]

**gegearwian**, *make ready:*

*Wulf.* 35.11: *ðæt is, ðæt he gegearwað his heortan gode on to wunianne.*

**gehwierfan**, *turn:*

*Greg.* 255.16: *for ðæm sio medtrymnes ðæt mod gehwierfð gehwelces monnes hine selfne to ongieltanne* = 192.26: *molestia corporalis, quæ ad cognitionem sui mentem revocat.*

**gelædan**, *lead:*

*Bede* 468.7<sup>a, b</sup>: *he hine 7 his ðeode gelædde to mærsianne 7 to weorðianne ða . . . tide* = 332.19: *se suosque omnes ad . . . tempus celebrandum perduxit.*

**gemedemian (hine)**, *humble one's self, condescend:* see pp. 54–55 above.

**geneah**, *suffice:*

*Bl. Hom.* 165.5: *nænig . . . tunge ne geneah ðæs . . . engles godcund mægen to gesecgenne.*

**geniedan** [-y-], *force, compel:*

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 360: *miltsa me ðæt ðu me ne genyde to areccenne mine gescyndnysse.* — *Ib.* XXIII B. 381: *hu ic to syngigenne genydde ægðer ge ða earman willendan and ða earman syllendan.*

*Wulf.* 200.6: arærað him anlicnesse, and ðærto hi *genydað* men to *gebiddanne*.  
**genihtsumian** [-y-], *suffice*:

*Mart.* 104.12: ne *genyhtsumað* ænigum men to *asecganne* ðæs acennedan engles mægen Iohannes.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 90<sup>m 1. 2</sup>: heorte . . . , ðe ne *genihtsumað* to *underfonne* Godes word, ne nænne wæstm to *spryttanne*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 788: seo leo . . . scræf geworhte swa micel swa *genihtsumode* ðære halgan to *byrgenne*.

**gescierpan** [-y-], *sharpen*:

*Wærf.* 269.21: buton hit *gescyrpe* ða ðing to *geseonne* seo unlichamlice wise = 329 A<sup>1</sup>: nisi hunc res incorporea ad *videndum* acueret.

**geweman**, *persuade*:

*Ælf. Int.* 504: ðæt is seo costnung ðe *gewemð* ðone man to *synnigenne* = qua [= tentatione] *peccato implicamur*.

**gremian**, *provoke*:

*Læce.* 55.26: hine mon scel neahtnestigne tyhtan and *gremian* to *spiwanne*.

**hleonian**, *lean, incline*:

*Bede* 258.21: ealra willa *hleonade* to *geheranne* ða gefean = 205.8: omnium uota ad nuper *audita* . . . gaudia *penderent*.

**manian** [-o-], *admonish, urge*:

*Seafarer* 38: *monað* modes lust mæla gehwylce ferð to *feran* (*sic!*), ðæt ic feor heonan elðeodigra eard gesece.

*Wærf.* 265.20: for hwan wolde he ðonne ealle men *manegian* samod mid him to *gehyranne* ðone ænde ðære spræce? = 324 B: cur ad *audiendum* loquendi finem secum pariter omnes *admonebat*?

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 520<sup>b 1. 2</sup>: Ðes apostolica freolsdæg *manað* us to *sprecenne*, and sum ðing eow to *secgenne* be ðam gesæligan heape.

**neadian**, *compel*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 114<sup>t</sup>: *Healdað* ðis fæste on eowerum heortum, ðæt se . . . God nænne mann ne *neadað* to *syngigenne*. [Cf. Mätzner, *l. c.*, III. p. 31, who seems inclined to consider this an instance of the predicative infinitive with accusative subject.]

*Ælf. Hept.: De N. T.* 21.31: se ðe oðerne *neadað* ofer his mihte to *drincenne*.

**niedan** [-y-], *compel*:

*Greg.* 271.16: forðæm hie hie selfe *nidað* to *healdonne* ungemetlice swigean, & forðæm beoð suiðe forðrycte = 204.19: ut eo plus cogitationes in mente ferveant, quo illas violenta *custodia indiscreti silentii angustat*.

*Mart.* 166.21: Ðone *nydde* Decius se casere deofolgeld to *begangenne*.

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 376<sup>m</sup>: Far nu geond wegas and hegas, and *nyd* hi inn to *farenne*. [Cf. *L.* 14.23: Ga geond ðas wegas and hegas and *nyd* hig ðæt hig gan in = Exi in vias et sepes, et *compelle intrare*.]

*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.36<sup>t</sup>: Ga geond wegas and hegas, and *nyd* hi in to *farenne*.

*Læce.* 86.24: *nede* hine to *spiwanne*.

**onælan**, *incite*:

*Wærf.* 109.30: he tihte and *onælde* oðre men ðus to *aræfnienne* = B. 140 A<sup>2</sup>: qui passionum certamina non solum ipse appetit, sed ad *toleranda* hæc et alios *accendit*.

**onstyrian**, *stir*:

*Wærf.* 224.23: ne mihte na onstyrian his fet to ganne = 273 C<sup>1</sup>: *gressum movere non potuit.*

**sellan** [-i-], *give*:

*Ælf. Hept. Num.* 11.13: *Sile us flæsc to etanne* = *Da nobis carnes, ut comedamas* (or final?).

**teon**, *draw, induce*:

*Ælf. L. S.* 316.148: On hwilcūm godum tihst ðu us to gelyfenne?

**trymman**, *strengthen, encourage*:

*Bede* 124.26: gewrit, mid ðy he hine trymede to onfonne Cristes leafan = 100.18: *exhortatorias ad fidem litteras . . . accepit* (or final?).

**ðeowan**, *force, threaten*:

*A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* 9.342: ðeah ðe he mid huxe hine hete gebindan and hine ðeowde to ofsleanne mid ðam folce (or objective?).

**ðreatian**, *force*:

*Boeth.* 138.2: wyrde ðe oft ðreatað ða yflan to witnianne = 117.27: *iusto supplicio malos coercet.*

**ðywan** [-i-], *force, threaten*:

*Ælf. Hom. II.* 174<sup>b</sup> 2: Benedicte, ðe hi ær for heora stuntum wordum ðiwde to amansumigenne (or objective?). — *Ib. II.* 308<sup>b</sup>: Ða ðywde se casere hine to swingenne (or objective?).

**weaxan**, *grow*:

*Greg.* 263.18: hie sculon uparisan & weaxan a ma & ma to lufigeanne ða godeundan weorc = 198.20: *sed ad amoris gratiam nutrimento caritatis crescant* (cited also by Dr. Kenyon, p. 60, as consecutive).

## II. WITH PASSIVE VERBS.

Occasionally the inflected infinitive is used after the passive of the following verbs to denote tendency or result:—

**afysan**, *impel*.

**ascierpan**, *sharpen*.

**bærnan**, *incite*.

**forðgelædan**, *lead forth*.

(ge)bædan, *compel*.

(ge)cierran, *turn, move*.

(ge)fysan, *incite*.

(ge)lædan, *lead*.

(ge)manian, *admonish*.

(ge)neadian, *compel*.

(ge)niedan, *compel*.

onælan, *kindle, incite*.

onwendan [-wænd-], *move*.

settan, *set, appoint*.

sponan, *persuade*.

underðeodan, *subject*.

I cite all the clearer examples that I have observed:—

**afysan**, *impel*:

*Ph.* 275: Ðonne afysed bið agenne eard eft to secan (*sic!*).

**ascierpan**, *sharpen*:

*Greg.* 69.13: Ðonne we mid ðam læcedome godra weorca gefultumað urum ondgitæ dæt hit bið ascirped to ongieltenne ða bierhtu ðæs soðan leohtes = 44.1: *cum ad cognoscendam veri luminis claritatem intellectus nostri aciem medicamine operationis adjuvamus* (or final, as Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 19, holds?).

**bærnan**, *incite*:

*Bede* 330.18<sup>a, b</sup>, 19: men . . . wæron bærnde . . . to gebiddenne ge ælnessan to sellenne ge Gode asægðnesse to beranne = 252.5<sup>a, b, c</sup>: *accensi sunt . . . ad orandum uel ad elimosynas faciendas, uel ad offerendas Deo uictimas sacræ oblationis* (or final, as Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 31, holds?).

**forðgelædan**, *lead, induce*:

*Oros.* 290.10: Firmus wearð gefangen, 7 forðgelæded to sleanne = 291.9: *Firmum coegit ad mortem.*

(ge)bædan, *compel*:

*Greg.* 251.13: ðonne hio hire unðonces gebædd wierð ðæt yfel to forlætanne = 190.14: cum jam egredi anima urgetur.

(ge)cierran, *turn, move*:

*Greg.* 99.19: for mildheortnesse wæs ðonon gecierred to smeaganne hu flæsclī-cum mo(n)num gedafenode on hira burcotum & on hira beddum to donne = 68.17: tamen per condescensionis viscera carnalium cubile perscrutatur.

(ge)fysan, *incite*:

*Beow.* 2562: ða wæs hringbogan heorte gefysed sæcce to seceanne.

(ge)lædan, *lead*:

*Wærf.* 227.26: ðonne ðæt . . . mod byð gelæded ofer hit self hwæthwylces to geseonne = 277 D<sup>1</sup>: cum mens . . . ultra se ad videndum ducitur, necesse est ut etc.

(ge)manian, *admonish*:

*Greg.* 259.20: ðonne beo we suigende gemanode mid ðære mettrymnesse ura synna to gemunanne = 196.9: ad peccatorum nostrorum memoriam taciti afflictique revocamur.

(ge)neadian, *force*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 376<sup>b</sup> 4: Se bið geneadod to cumenne.

(ge)niedan [-e-], *compel*:

*Bede* 368.17: he wæs oferswiðed 7 geneded to onfonne ða ðegnunge bisco-phades = 272.29: ad suscipiendum episcopatus officium collum submittere compellitur.

*Greg.* 302.19<sup>a, b</sup>: weorðen geniedde h[il]era unðeawas to herianne & to weorðianne = 230.2: compellantur eorum etiam vitia venerari.

onælan, *kindle, incite*:

*Greg.* 383.18, 19: Godes ðegn se ðe mid ðæm andan onæled bið godcundre lufan unðeawas to ofsleanne = 298.16: Si ergo ille Dei dicitur qui ad ferienda vitia zelo divini amoris excitatur.

onwendan [-wænd-], *move*:

*Wærf.* 195.10: ða wæs eac se cyning . . . onwænded to begangenne ðæs biscopes arwyrðnyse = 237 C<sup>1</sup>: Tunc ad ejus reverentiam colendam rex ipse permotus est.

settan, *set, appoint*:

*Wulf.* 304.29: eac is geset swiðe micel dædbot swylcum mannum to donne and to betenne (or final?).

sponan, *persuade*:

*Bede* 220.31: he wæs swiðust gesponen to onfonne Cristes geleafan from Oswies suna = 170.7: persuasus maxime ad percipiendam fidem a filio regis Osuii.

underðeodan, *subject*:

*Ælf. Hom.* II. 116<sup>a</sup>: forðan ðe we sind eadmodlice, mid lichaman and mid sawle, godcundlicum spræcum underðeodde to gefyllenne his beboda, ðæt he us his behat gelæste.

*Note.* — Possible but not Probable Examples of the Inflected Infinitive of Result occur after the active of the following verbs, which have been left under the Objective Use: — *ateowan*, 'show:' *Bl. Hom.* 169.9; *beotigan*, 'boast,' 'threaten:' *Chad* 193; *elcian*, 'delay:' *Ælf. Hom.* II. 282; *gedihtan*, 'direct:' *Wulf.* 10.10; *higian*, 'strive for,' 'be intent on:' *Wærf.* 178.3<sup>b</sup>; *tæcan*, 'teach:' *Greg.* 165.10; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 216<sup>b</sup>.

## D. THE ABSOLUTE INFINITIVE.

The Absolute Use of the Infinitive Mätzner, *l. c.*, III, p. 53, characterizes as follows: "Von anderer Art sind präpositionale Infinitive, zum Theil parenthetischer Natur, welche eine Reflexion des Redenden, die Absicht desselben bei der Darstellung ihrem Gehalte oder ihrer Form nach, eine Erklärung, Erinnerung oder Versicherung dem Zuhörer oder Leser gegenüber enthalten." After giving examples like *to be short*, *to say truth*, etc., in Modern English and in Middle English, he adds, p. 54: "Im Ags. sind mir dergleichen unabhängige Infinitive nicht aufgestossen." I had discovered the examples of the absolute use of *hrædest to secgenne* in Wulfstan before I came upon the following from Sohrauer, who, *l. c.*, p. 27, after quoting the foregoing passage from Mätzner, adds: "Einen beleg für das ae. bietet Napier's Wulfstan, 36.6," and quotes one example of *hrædest to secganne*<sup>1</sup> given below, but not the others. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 224, calls attention to the absolute use of *to metanne wið* in *Boethius*. Professor Eienkel,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 240, speaks of the construction in Middle English and declares that it exists in Anglo-Saxon, but he does not give any examples from the latter. Koch, *l. c.*, II, p. 69, Dr. Scholz, and Dr. Druve treat the idiom in Modern English only; Dr. Zeitlin, in Middle English only. The idiom is not discussed by Dr. Karl Köhler. For the construction in Anglo-Saxon, Dr. Kenyon merely refers to the above passage from Sohrauer. Drs. Farrar and Riggert do not mention the idiom.

The infinitive is inflected in all cases except two. The two uninflected infinitives and several of the inflected infinitives are doubtful. I give all the examples that I have observed:—

## (1) The Uninflected Infinitive:

*Oros.* 46.16, 17<sup>b</sup>: Heora twa wæron heora cwena, Marsepia 7 Lampida wæron hatene. Hie heora here on tu todældon; oðer æt ham *beon* heora lond to healdanne, oðer ut *faran* to winnanne = 47.16: Harum duae fuere reginae, Marsepia et Lampedo, quae agmine diviso in duas partes, vicissim curam belli et domus custodiam sortiebantur. [The foregoing seems to me to be a possible instance of what I should call an absolute infinitive with an accusative subject, by which I mean an accusative-and-infinitive phrase standing in an absolute or loose relation to the rest of the sentence; and I have put the passage in Chapter VIII, p. 118. It is possible, of course, as claimed by Drs. Eienkel<sup>2</sup> and Zeitlin,<sup>3</sup> that *oðer* here is nominative, not accusative; but I prefer to believe with Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 137, that *oðer* is accusative neuter, possibly due to the influence of *tu*. Dr. Kenyon, however, considers *oðer* to be, not the subject of the infinitive, but an appositive each to *butu*; and the infinitives to denote purpose after *todældon*. Somewhat similar, apparently, is the view of Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, § 487: "Im Or. [46.16, 17<sup>b</sup>] steht der Infinitiv einmal ganz unabhängig zur Angabe des Zweckes;" though he clearly considers that the use leans more to the absolute than does Dr. Kenyon. Whether Dr. Wülfing considers these infinitives, also, to be the predicates of *oðer-oðer* is not clear. And there is the same uncertainty on this point in the statement of Dr. Shearin,<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mohrbutter, *l. c.*, p. 35, considers that the infinitive is, not absolute, but dependent on *hrædest*, which he takes to be an adjective.

<sup>2</sup> Eienkel,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 1076.

<sup>3</sup> Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 145.

<sup>4</sup> Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 224.

*l. c.*, p. 15: "Twice we find the simple infinitive following loosely the main verb as a final element." He then cites the *Orosius* passage as one example and *Luke* 1.17 as another. Concerning the latter see Chapter X, p. 148, Note 2.]

## (2) The Inflected Infinitive:

Perhaps the clearest example of the absolute use of the inflected infinitive is to be found in the phrase *hrædest to secganne*, 'to speak briefly,' of which I give all the clearer examples observed: *Wulf.* 27.1: *ðyder sculan wiccan and wigleras and, hrædest to secganne, ealle ða manfullan, ðe ær yfel worhton and noldan geswicu ne wið god ðingian*; — *ib.* 36.7: *ðonne wyrð ðæt wæter mid ðam halgan gaste ðurhgoten, and, hrædest to secganne, eal, ðæt se sacerd deð ðurh ða halgan ðenunge gesawenlice, eal hit fulfremeð se halga gast gerynelice*; — *ib.* 115.3: *ðider sculan ðeofas . . . and, hrædest to secganne, ealle ða manfullan*. — With this infinitive phrase compare the following: *Boeth.* 39.10: *Swa hit is nu hraðost to secganne be eallum ðam woruldgesælðum ðe seo wyrð brengð, ðæt etc. = 42.63: Postremo idem de tota concludere fortuna licet etc.*; — *ib.* 41.3: *Ðæt is nu hraðost to secganne, [ðæt ic wilnode] weorðfullice to libbanne = 46.80: 0; — Wulf.* 158.16: *godcunde hadas wæron nu lange swa forsaewene . . . and hrædest is to cweðenne godes laga laðe and lara forsewene*; — *ib.* 204.2: *ðider scylan wiccan and wigleras, and, raðest is to sæcgenne, ealle ða manfullan*.

Another phrase used absolutely is *to metanne wið*, 'to compare with,' 'in comparison with,' which, as stated above, is mentioned by Wūlfing,<sup>1</sup> and occurs as follows: *Boeth.* 29.6: *forðæm ðe oðer twega oððe hit nan god nis for eow selfe, oððe ðeah forlytel god wið eow to metanne = 36.28: quæ tametsi conditoris opera suiue distinctione postremo aliquid pulchritudinis trahunt, infra uestram tamen excellentiam conlocatae ammirationem uestram nullo modo merebantur*; — *ib.* 36.3: *Hu micle mare is ðonne ðæs monnes lichoma to metanne wið ðæt mod ðonne seo mus wið ðone mon = 41.18: 0; — ib.* 41.24: *ðonne meah tū ongetan ðæt he is eal wið ðone heofon to metanne swilce an lytlu price on bradum brede = 44.11: ad caeli spatium puncti constat optinere rationem, id est ut, si ad caelestis globi magnitudinem conferatur, nihil spatii prorsus habere iudicetur*; — *ib.* 44.26: *ðeah he [= hlisa] hwilum lang sie, 7 fela geara ðurhwunige, he bið ðeah swiðe scort to metanne wið ðone ðe næfre ne geendað = 46.58: ita fit, ut quamlibet prolixi temporis fama, si cum inexhausta aeternitate cogitur, non parua sed plane nulla esse uideatur*; — *ib.* 72.18: *ðonne magon ge ongitan ðæt he [= heofon] is ealles nauht wið his sceppend to metanne 7 wið his wealdend = 65.17: 0; — ib.* 89.22: *ðonne wile he cweðan ðæt sio beorhtnes ðære sunnan sciman sie ðesternes to metanne wið ða ecan birhtu Godes = 77.17: 0; — ib.* 130.29, 31<sup>a, b</sup>: *Swylce is ðæt ðæt we wyrð hatað be ðam godcundan foreðonce, swylce sio smeauing 7 sio gesceadwisnes is to metanne wið ðone gearowitan, 7 swylce ðas lænan ðing bioð to metanne wið ða ecan, 7 swilce ðæt hweol bið to metanne wið ða eaxe = 110.74, 75, 76: Igitur uti est ad intellectum ratiocinatio, ad id quod est id quod gignitur, ad aeternitatem tempus, ad punctum medium circulus: id est fati series mobilis ad prouidentiae stabilem simplicitatem*. — *Boeth.* 36.3 above, Dr. Wūlfing<sup>2</sup> (II, 213) puts, allowably, under the infinitive with *beon* denoting necessity, as he probably does *Boeth.* 72.18 and 130.29, 31<sup>a, b</sup>, none of which are given by him



under the absolute infinitive. I have put these examples here, despite their doubtfulness, primarily to show how the predicative infinitive of necessity passes over to the absolute infinitive. With the examples of *to metanne* above given, compare those that I have given under the Infinitive of Necessity with *beon*, Chapter VII. Perhaps *Met.* 21.42 (*ðonne wile he secgan ðæt ðære sunnan sie beorhtnes ðiostro beorna gehwylcum to metanne wið ðæt micle leoht godes ælmihtiges*) belongs under the absolute use rather than under necessity.

Possibly we have the absolute use of the infinitive in the *Metres of Boethius* 6.7: *forðæm hiora birhtu ne bið auht to gesettanne wið ðære sunnan leoht*; if not, we have an infinitive of necessity on the road to becoming an absolute infinitive.

In the following, the infinitive, though predicative and therefore given in Chapter VII, reminds one of our modern idiom, 'so to speak:' *Bede* 88.23: *ðæs ðe swa to cweðenne sy* = 62.1: *ut ita dixerim*.

We have an infinitive loosely connected with the rest of the sentence in the following from the *Læceboc*: 1.26<sup>a, b</sup>: *Læcedomas gif men yrne blod of nebbe; eft blodsetena, ge on to bindanne ge on eare, to donne ge horse ge menn*; 57.3: *Wið wlættan 7 to hættanne magan*. But the idea of purpose is evident, and I put these examples in the present chapter only because of the looseness of the connection with the rest of the sentence, or, better, because of the elliptical nature of the sentence. To the same purport is the following from Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 23: "The following infinitives are used absolutely, yet implying a purpose relation to a main verb to be supplied, whose grammatical subject will be logically the subject of the phrase; e. g., *Lch.* ii, 188.19: *To rymanne*<sup>1</sup> *ðone cealdan magan . . .* (sc. 'genim'); *id.* 304.9: *gealdor on to singanne*."

### E. THE CONDITIONAL INFINITIVE.

In the *Martyrology* 54.11 (*Des biscop is swiðe mihtig on frecnum wisum gescyldnesse to biddanne*), Dr. Herzfeld, the editor, translates the infinitive as if it were used to denote a condition: "This bishop is very powerful, if asked for protection in dangerous condition." To me, however, the infinitive seems to specify the respect wherein the bishop was powerful, viz., 'in praying for protection,' and to belong in Chapter XI.

### F. THE MODAL INFINITIVE.

As stated in Chapter V, some consider that the infinitive in the *com . . . fleogan* construction denotes manner. But I have there tried to show why it seems better to me to consider that the infinitive is predicative in use rather than modal.

Possible, but not probable, examples of the inflected infinitive used to denote manner are found in the *Prose Psalms*, 34.13 (quoted under *gebiegan*) and *Boeth.* 138.2 (quoted under *ðreatian*) in the section on the consecutive use of the infinitive. See *gemedemian* in the same section.

In *Orosius* 188.10, 11 (*sum his folc sende gind ðæt lond to bærnanne 7 to hangenne* = 189.7: *vastatione circumjacentium locorum Flaminium in bellum*

<sup>1</sup> *To rymanne* should read to *wyrmanne*: see Cockayne, *l. c.*, II, 188.22; and *Læce.* 57.9. In the former of these two passages, the infinitive is probably absolute; but, in the latter, the infinitive seems to me to modify the noun, *gealdor*. See *Læce.* 93.22.

excitavit) and in *Bede* 66.5<sup>a, b</sup> (ðæt heo godum ðeawum lifgen under ciriclecum regole 7 sealmas to singenne 7 wæccan to bigongene, 7 from . . . unalyfednessum heora heortan . . . clæne healden = 49.10<sup>a, b</sup>: bonis moribus uiuant et canendis psalmis inuigilent, et ab . . . illicitis et cor et linguam et corpus Deo auctore conseruent), the infinitives are possibly modal, but are probably final, and have been left in Chapter X.

#### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

In the main, the differentiation between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive in the preceding adverbial uses is clear. The infinitive of specification with verbs, the consecutive infinitive, and the absolute infinitive are regularly inflected, as would be expected from the meaning, the infinitive habitually denoting a relationship normally expressed, in nouns, by a case other than the nominative or the accusative. In the only two instances in which we have an uninflected infinitive in the adverbial uses just named, in *Oros.* 46.16, 17<sup>b</sup> (already quoted), we have, as I believe, an accusative and infinitive very loosely connected with the remainder of the sentence, and it is natural that the infinitive is not inflected. In the causal use of the infinitive we have both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected, but in the former the infinitive may possibly, as there indicated, be considered objective (accusative). We naturally expect cause to be expressed by the inflected infinitive, as we know that, with nouns, cause is often expressed by the genitive case in Anglo-Saxon.

For the other adverbial uses of the infinitive in the kindred Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section xii.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS.<sup>1</sup>

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

When a Noun is modified by an infinitive, the infinitive normally is inflected, but in a few cases is uninflected. About 242 instances of the former occur to four of the latter.

The infinitive regularly follows the noun that it modifies, sometimes immediately, as in *Wærf.* 198.17 (onfangenre *leafe to lifigenne* = 241 C<sup>1</sup>: *vivendi licentia accepta*); sometimes with a few words intervening, as in *Wærf.* 211.20<sup>a, b</sup> (gif ðu hwylce *leafe* habbe me *to sleanne* 7 *to wundianne* = 257 C<sup>2</sup>: *Si licentiam accepisti ut ferias, ego non prohibeo*).

To me the infinitive with nouns seems prevailingly, if not exclusively, active in sense as in form. Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 71, declares, "Es steht nur der Infinitiv des Aktivs, der jedoch passiven Sinn haben kann," but he does not specifically cite any infinitives as passive in sense. If we have an infinitive that is passive in sense when used with a noun, we probably have it in such sentences as these: *And.* 23: næs ðær hlafes wist werum on ðam wonge, ne wæteres *drync to bruconne*; *Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 16.12: ic sende ðisum folce *flæsc to etanne* = *Vespere comedetis carnes*; *Mk.* 3.20: ðæt hi næfdon *hlaf to etanne* = *ita ut non possent neque panem manducare*. But, as the Latin suggests, there is no necessity for considering the infinitive passive, and, in all probability, to the Anglo-Saxon mind the infinitive was active in his translation as in his Latin original; perhaps it was active to him even when translating a Latin passive, as in *L.* 24.41: Hæbbe ge her ænig *ðing to etanne*? = *Habetis hic aliquid quod manducetur?* though, of course, it is possible that in the latter case it seemed to him passive. Dr. K. Köhler and Dr. Farrar say nothing as to the voice of the infinitive with nouns; nor do Dr. Wülfing and Dr. Kenyon. — In the adjectivized infinitive, discussed below (pp. 180 ff.), on the other hand, the inflected infinitive is probably passive in sense.

#### I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED.

Of the four examples of the active uninflected infinitive modifying a noun, three occur in the prose and one in the poetry: —

**anweald, power:**

*L.* 12.5: adrædað ðone ðe *anweald* hæfð, seððan he ofslyhð, on helle *asendan* = *timete eum qui, postquam occiderit, habet potestatem mittere in gehennam*.

**myne, purpose, intention:**

*And.* 1538: Weox wæteres ðrym; weras cwanedon, ealde æscherend; wæs him ut *myne fleon* fealone stream, woldon feore beorgan, to dunscrefum drohtað secan, eorðan ondwest. [On this passage Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, p. 67, comments as follows: "Der reine Infinitiv nach einem Substantive erscheint nur An. 1537 [= my 1538], und zwar bezeichnet das Hauptwort eine Absicht, einen Plan."]

<sup>1</sup> In some instances the infinitive modifies, not a noun, but a pronoun.

*neod, need, necessity:*

*Ælf. Hom. II. 372<sup>m 2</sup>*: Ic bohte ænne tun, and me is *neod* to farenne and ðone *geseon* (*sic!*) [Cf. *L. 14.18*: Ic bohte ænne tun, ic hæbbe neode ðæt ic fare and hine geseo = *Villam emi, et necesse habeo exire, et videre illam.*]

*Napier's Ad. to Th. 102.35<sup>b 4</sup>*: me is *neod* to farenne and ðone *sceawian* (*sic!*).

## II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED.

The inflected infinitive modifies a large number of nouns. As is shown by the Latin originals, this infinitive often stands in the relation of a genitive modifier of the noun, and translates a Latin gerund or gerundive in the genitive (occasionally a noun in the genitive). This genitival infinitive, like the Latin genitive, has various uses, and denotes the characteristic, the object, the tendency, the purpose, etc. But the infinitive at times stands in a dative relation, and translates a Latin gerundive in the dative or accusative, or *ad* plus a gerund or gerundive in the accusative, or an infinitive that modifies a noun; and this dative infinitive habitually denotes the tendency or the purpose of the thing indicated by the noun. At other times the infinitive stands in an ablative relation, and translates a supine in *-u*. This is not a complete list of the Latin correspondents of our infinitive, for that is not called for here;<sup>1</sup> but these correspondents are given merely to help define the use of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon.

The idiom is not common in the poems, less than a dozen examples having been found in a total, in prose and poetry, of about 242 examples. It is relatively frequent in Early West Saxon, Alfred having about 81 examples, not a few suggested by the Latin gerund or gerundive. It is rare in the *Chronicle* and in the *Laws*, neither furnishing more than a half dozen examples. It is not infrequent in *Ælfric* and in the *Gospels*, but is rare in *Wulfstan*.

At times it is difficult to decide whether the infinitive modifies a noun and is adjectival, or a verb and is adverbial; and this difficulty accounts for the chief differences between my statistics and those of others. For instance, Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, pp. 219 ff., puts here *Bede* 98.18 (502.9<sup>2</sup>), 242.7 (558.27), 330.18<sup>a, b</sup> (592.25<sup>a, b</sup>), 480.29, 30 (647.26<sup>a, b</sup>), while to me the infinitive seems rather to modify the verb.

The nouns modified by an infinitive may be roughly subdivided, as by Dr. Wülfing,<sup>3</sup> into two big classes: (a) those Denoting Ideas and (b) those Denoting Things.

### 1. Nouns Denoting Ideas.

Nouns denoting ideas may be subdivided as follows:—

#### 1. Nouns Denoting Permission and Prohibition:—

*bewerenis, prohibition.*  
*leaf, leave, permission.*

*leafnes, leave, permission.*

#### 2. Nouns Denoting Power, Might, Capacity, and the like:—

*andgi(e)t, intelligence, ability.*  
*anweald, power, authority.*  
*bioldo, boldness.*

*gelæredness, learning, skill.*  
*getyðnes, learning, skill.*  
*geweald, power, authority.*

<sup>1</sup> The complete list of Latin correspondents is given in Chapter XIV, section xiii.

<sup>2</sup> The numbers in parenthesis refer to the edition of *Bede* used by Dr. Wülfing, namely, Smith's.

<sup>3</sup> Wülfing, *l. c.*, II, pp. 219 ff. My minor subdivisions, too, in the main follow Dr. Wülfing's.

**giefu**, *gift, power.*  
**gleawnes**, *wisdom, intelligence.*  
**mægen**, *strength, ability.*  
**mæð**, *power.*

**miht**[*meaht*], *might, power.*  
**ondefn** [*an-*], *capacity.*  
**strengð**(*o*), *strength.*

### 3. Nouns Denoting Time and Place:—

**fæc**, *interval.*  
**fierst** [*-y-*], *period of time.*  
**ielden** [*y-*], *delay, respite.*  
**mæl**, *time.*  
**rum**, *space, opportunity.*

**sped** [*and leafnes*], *opportunity (?)*.  
**stow**, *place.*  
**tid**, *time.*  
**tima**, *time.*

### 4. Nouns Denoting Necessity:—

**neod**, *need, necessity.*  
**niedðearf** [*nyd-*], *need, necessity.*

**ðearf** [*ðerf*], *need, necessity.*

### 5. Nouns Denoting Will, Purpose, Inclination, and the like:—

**bliss**, *bliss, joy.*  
**geornfulnes**, *eagerness, desire.*  
**gescea(d)wisnes**, *intelligence.*  
**geðoht**, *thought, intention.*  
**geðyld**, *patience.*  
**giemen**, *care, concern.*  
**hyht** [*-i-*], *hope.*  
**intinga**, *cause, sake.*

**lufu**, *love.*  
**lustbærnes**, *desire.*  
**mod**, *mind, mood.*  
**riht**, *right, reason.*  
**sorg**, *sorrow, grief.*  
**wen**, *hope, expectation.*  
**willa**, *will, desire.*

### 6. Nouns Denoting Help:—

**fultum**, *help, assistance.*

### 7. Nouns Denoting Office and Work:—

**ealdorlicnes**, *authority, office.*  
**ðegnung** [*ðenung*], *service.*

**weorc**, *work.*

### 8. Nouns Denoting Usage, Custom:—

**æðelo**, *habit (?)*.

**ðeaw**, *custom, habit.*

### 9. Nouns Denoting Example and Teaching:—

**bisn** [*-y-*], *example.*

**lar**, *teaching.*

## 2. Nouns Denoting Things.

As I cannot think of any helpful grouping of these nouns, I merely give them in alphabetic sequence:—

**æcer**, *field.*  
**æht**, *property.*  
**anweald**, *power.*  
**að**, *oath.*  
**auht**, *ought.*  
**cild**, *child.*  
**cyre**, *choice.*  
**drenc**, *drink.*  
**drinc**, *drink.*  
**eage**, *eye.*  
**eare**, *ear.*  
**fela**, *much.*  
**feoh**, *money.*  
**flæsc**, *flesh.*  
**forebeacen**, *portent.*  
**gast**, *spirit.*  
**gealdor**, *charm.*

**genob** [*-g*], *sufficiency.*  
**gierd** [*-y-*], *rod.*  
**god**, *god, God.*  
**gōd**, *good.*  
**gryre**, *horror.*  
**heafod** [*hæfod*], *head (metaphorically chief).*  
**hlaf**, *loaf, bread.*  
**hol**, *hole, cave.*  
**hwæt**, *what, something.*  
**lac**, *offering.*  
**læcedom**, *remedy.*  
**lacnung**, *remedy.*  
**lamb** [*-o-*], *lamb.*  
**land** [*-o-*], *land.*  
**mare**, *more.*  
**mete**, *meat, food.*  
**mildheortnes**, *clemency.*

naht, *naught*.  
 nanwiht [-wuht], *naught*.  
 onlegen, *medicinal application*.  
 pening, *penny*.  
 petraoleum, *petroleum*.  
 rod, *rood, cross*.  
 son, *sound, music*.  
 spell, *story, narrative*.

spræc, *speech*.  
 stæf, *stick*.  
 tol, *tool*.  
 ðearfa, *poor man*.  
 ðing, *thing*.  
 wegnest, *provisions for a journey*.  
 wela, *wealth*.  
 wundor, *wonder*.

Typical examples are: —

### 1. Nouns Denoting Ideas.

#### 1. Nouns Denoting Permission and Prohibition: —

**beweren(n)is**, *prohibition*:

*Bede* 86.13<sup>a, b</sup>: ðonon hafað ðæt mod hwylcehugu scylde, nales hwæðre oð bewerennisse *to onfonne* ðæm halgan geryne, oððe ða symbelnesse *to mærsienne* mæssesonges = 60.12<sup>a, b</sup>: non tamen usque ad *prohibitionem* pecipiendi sancti mysterii uel missarum solemnia *celebrandi*.

**leaf**, *permission*:

*Boeth.* 120.28: habbað *leaf* yfel *to donne* = 102.76: *malorum potestas*.

*Greg.* 397.26: æfterðæmðe he hwelcehwugu gerisenlice *leaf* dyde ðæm gesinhiwon hira willan *to fremmanne*, he cwæð = 316.8: Quibusdum in magna honestate conjugii aliquid de voluptate largiretur, adjunxit.

*Chron.* 260<sup>t</sup>, 1129 E: se kyng hem geaf ealle *leue* ham *to farene*.

*Laws* 483, Wilhelm I, c. 1<sup>b</sup>: habbe he fulle *leaf* swa *to donne*.

*Wær.* 10.2: Hu Æquitius onfeng *leaf* *to bodianne* = 0.

*Bened.* 21.17: *leaf* geseald sie *to sprecenne* = 42.17: *loquendi* concedatur *licentia*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 384, 385: sealde him *leaf* *to siðigenne* forð and ðæt lic *to berenne*.

*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 42.34: ðæt ge . . . *leaf* habbon (*sic!*) *to bicgeanne* ðæt ðæt ge wyllað = *emendi* habeatis *licentiam*.

**leafnes** [lef-], *permission*:

*Bede* 112.6: heo . . . *lefnesse* sealdon deofolgyld *to bigongenne* ðam folcum = 91.9: *idola colendi* . . . dare *licentiam*. — *Ib.* 400.8<sup>a, b</sup>: *lefnes* . . . *to ærnenne* 7 *to flitenne* = 289.29: *certandi* . . . *copia*.

#### 2. Nouns Denoting Power, Might, Capacity, etc.: —

**andgi(e)t**, *intelligence, ability*:

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 344<sup>m</sup>: men . . . ðe habbað lytel *andgit* *to understandenne* ða deopnysse Godes lare.

**anweald**, *power, authority*:

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIV. 322<sup>a, b</sup>: me is geseald *anweald* *to ofsleanne* and *to edcucigenne*.

*Mk.* 3.15<sup>a, b</sup>: he him *anweald* sealde untrumnessa *to hælanne*, and deofol-seocnessa *ut to adrifanne* = dedit illis potestatem *curandi* infirmitates et *eficiendi* dæmonia.

**gelæredness**  
 and  
**getydnness** } , *learning, skill*:

*Bede* 362.28<sup>a, b</sup>: wæs . . . Cuðbyrhte swa mycel *getydnnes* 7 *gelærednes* *to sprecenne* = 269.32: Cudbercto tanta erat *dicendi* *peritia*.

**geweald, power, authority:**

*Ermahnung* 36: Ceapa ðe mid æhtum eces leohtes, ðy læs ðu forweorðe, ðænne ðu hyra *geweald* nafast to *syllanne*.

*Gen.* 281: ic hæbbe *geweald* micel to *gyrwanne* godlecran stol, hearran on heofne.

*Pr. Gu.* V. 227: ðæt ge min ahton *geweald* on ðas witu to *sendanne* = si *vestrae potentiae* sit istis me *tradere* poenis.

**giefu, gift, power:**

*Bede* 20.22: ðam . . . forgifen wæs seo *gyfu* to *singanne* = 258.25: cui *donum canendi* . . . sit . . . *concessum*.

**gleawnes, wisdom, intelligence:**

*Bede* 206.10<sup>a, b</sup>: He hæfde ða *gleawnesse* Godes bebodu to *healdanne* 7 to *læranne* = 161.20<sup>a, b</sup>: *industriam faciendi* simul et *docendi* mandata caelestia.

**mægen, strength, ability:**

*Wærf.* 244.1: he sealde me ðy dæge *mægn* to *fæstane* = 297 C<sup>1</sup>: eumque peterem quatenus mihi ut die illo *virtus ad jejunandum* daretur.

**miht [meaht], might, power:**

*Bede* 146.22: hæfde *meahte* oðerne biscop his stowe to *halgianne* = 120.20: habeat *potestatem* alterum *ordinandi* in loco eius.

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 560<sup>t 1, 2</sup>: Si ðe forgyfen *miht* to *gebindenne* and to *alysenne*.

*J.* 19.10<sup>a, b</sup> Nast ðu ðæt ic hæbbe *mihte* ðe to *honne*, and ic hæbbe *mihte* ðe to *forlætenne*? = nescis quia *potestatem* habeo *crucifigere* te, et *potestatem* habeo *dimittere* te?

### 3. Nouns Denoting Time and Place:—

**mæl, time:**

*Beow.* 316: *Mæl* is me to *feran* (sic!). [Cf. K. Köhler, *l. c.*, p. 48, and Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 31.]

**rum, time, opportunity:**

*Jud.* 314: *rum* wæs to *nimanne* londbuendum on ðam laðestan, hyra ealdfeondum . . . heolfrig herereaf.

**stow, place:**

*Bede* 230.17: *stowe* geceas mynster to *getimbrigenne* = 175.13: elegit sibi *locum* monasterii *construendi*. — *Ib.* 238.24: ðæt he . . . forgefe *stowe* mynster on to *timbrenne* = 180.1: ut donaret . . . *locum* monasterio *construendo*. — *Ib.* 436.7, 8: ðæt he *stowe* hæfde in ðæm streame to *standenne* oððe hiene to *bisæncenne* = 310.23<sup>a, b</sup>: *locum* *standi* siue *inmergendi* in fluio.

*Wærf.* 231.14: sohton maran *stowe* on to *sittanne* = 281 C: *majora sessionis* *loca* quærentibus dicit.

**tid, time:**

*Bede* 262.21<sup>a, o</sup>: ðætte *tid* wære stanas to *sendenne* 7 *tid* to *somnienne* = 207.19, 20: *tempus mittendi* lapides, et *tempus colligendi*.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 478<sup>a, b</sup>: nu is seo *tid* to *gefylenne* and to *gefremmane*.

**tima, time:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 602<sup>t</sup>: nu is *tima* us of slæpe to *arisenne*. — *Ib.* II. 360<sup>b 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>: He geceas him *timan* to *acennenne* on menniscnysse, to *ðrowigenne*, to *arisenne* of deaðe, to *astigenne* up to heofenan.

*Ælf. Gr.* 135.3: hit ys *tima* to *erigenne* = *tempus est arandi*. — *Ib.* 151.11: *tima* hyt ys to *tæcenne* = *tempus est docendi*.

**4. Nouns Denoting Necessity: —****neod, need, necessity:***Laws* 256, VI Æthelred, c. 42: ealswa us *neod* is gelome to *donne*.*Bened.* 127.7<sup>b</sup>: *ðæt nan neod ne sy munecum utan to farenne* = 194.14: ut non sit *necessitas* Monachis *vagandi* foras.*Ælf. Hom.* II. 372<sup>m</sup> 1: Ic bohte ænne tun, and me is *neod to farenne* and *ðone geseon (sic!)*.*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 70: Nis me nan *neod fæder ðe to secgenne hwanon* ic come.*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.35<sup>b</sup> 3: me is *neod to farenne* and *ðone sceawian (sic!)*.*Mat.* 14.16<sup>a</sup>: Nabbað hi *neode to farenne* = Non habent *necesse ire*.**niedðearf [nyd-], need, necessity:***Pr. Ps.* 15.1: for ðam ðu me eall ða god sealdest ðe ic hæbbe, and ðe heora nan *nydðearf* nis eft on me to *nimenne* = 15.2: quoniam bonorum meorum non eges.**ðearf, need, necessity:***Gen.* 279: Nis me wihtæ *ðearf* hearran to *habbanne*.*Greg.* 67.4<sup>b</sup>: angiennað ðonne . . . mare secgean & smeagean suiðor ðonne him *ðearf* sie to *begonganne* = 40.26: sæpe se in quibusdam inquisitionibus plus, quam *necesse est*, exercentes, ex nimia subtilitate falluntur.*Laws* 256, VI Æthelred, c. 42, § 2: *ðæt mannum is mæst ðearf oftost to gemunenne*.*Wær.* 79.6: he gebohte *ðæt* him nan *ðearf næs to habbenne* = 205 A: emit quod *necessarium non habebat*.*Bl. Hom.* 63.5: us is mycel *ðearf to witenne*.*Wulf.* 308.22: *ðæt mannum is mæst ðearf oftost to gemunanne*.**5. Nouns Denoting Will, Purpose, Inclination, etc.: —****geornfulnes, eagerness, desire:***Bede* 206.11, 12: he hæfde ða *geornfulnesse* haligu gewritu to *ræðanne* 7 *wæccēan to begonganne* = 161.21<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>: *solertiam lectionis et uigiliarum*.**gi(e)men, care, concern:***Bede* 482.1: ða dæghwamlican *gimene to singanne* = 357.13: *cotidianam cantandi in ecclesia curam*.**intinga, cause, occasion:***Bede* 120.7: *intinga to onfonne Cristes geleafan* = 97.21: *occasio . . . percipiendae fidei*.**lufu, love:***Bede* 82.25: Mid ðy ðonne seo *lufu* ne bið tudres to *tilienne* = 58.29: Cum uero non *amor ortandi* subolis . . . dominatur.**lustbærnes, desire:***Boeth.* 74.7: ne furðum nane *lustbærnesse* nabbað hi to *secanne* = 66.16: 0.**willa, will, desire:***Boeth.* 107.13: habbað emnmicelne *willan to to cumenne* = 0.*Ælf. Hom.* I. 394<sup>t</sup>: ðaða hi forleton *ðone willan to agenne*.**6. Nouns Denoting Help: —****fultum, help, assistance:***Solil.* 39.15, 16: Ic hi lufige for freondscype and for geferæðenne and ða



ðeah ofer æalle oðre ðe me mæstne *fulthum* doð to *ongyttanne* and to *witanne* gesceadwisnesse and wisdom = 0.

### 7. Nouns Denoting Office and Work: —

**ealdorlicnes**, *authority*:

*Bede* 206.13: he hæfde . . . *ealdorlicnesse* ða ofermedan to ðreageanne = 161.22: *auctoritatem* . . . *redarguendi* superbos.

**ðegnung** [ðenung], *service, office*:

*Bede* 402.30<sup>a, b</sup>: he næfre . . . ða ðenunge to cristienne oððe to fullwienne . . . leornian meakte = 291.18<sup>a, b</sup>: *cathecizandi* uel *baptizandi ministerium*.

**weorc**, *work*:

*Bede* 418.27: ðæt willsume *weorc* . . . godspel to læranne = 301.23: *euangelizandi* gentibus *opus*.

### 8. Nouns Denoting Usage, Custom: —

**æðelo**, *habit* (?):

*Boeth.* 91.20: of ðære stowe ðe his eard and æðelo bið on to *wexanne* = 79.56:0.

**ðeaw**, *custom, habit*:

*Beow.* 1941: Ne bið swylc cwenlic ðeaw idese to *efnanne* ðeah ðe hio ænlicu sy (?).

*Bede* 258.31: se . . . regollicne ðeaw to *lifgenne* Ongolcynnnes ciricum sægde 7 lærde = 205.18: *catholicum uiuendi morem* . . . *didicit*.

### 9. Nouns Denoting Example and Teaching: —

**bisn** [bysn], *example*:

*Greg.* 307.9: us salde *bisne* ur[ne] willan to *brecanne* = 234.27: ut *exemplum* nobis *frangendæ* nostræ voluntatis præbeat.

**lar**, *teaching*:

*Bede* 160.8: betwih oðre lare mannum to *lyfgeanne* = 135.21: inter alia *uiuendi documenta*.

## 2. Nouns Denoting Things.

I give only a few examples: —

**drenc**, *drink*:

*Læce.* 42.1: *Drenc* wið feondseocum men of ciricbellan to *drincanne*.

**drinc**, *drink*:

*And.* 23: næs ðær hlafes wist werum on ðam wonge ne wæteres *drync* to *bruconne*.

**eage**, *eye*:

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Deut.* 29.4<sup>a</sup>: drihten eow ne sealde undergitende heortan, ne eagan to geseonne ne earan to gehirennne = non dedit vobis dominus cor intelligens et oculos *videntes* et aures quæ possunt audire.

**eare**, *ear*:

*Ælf. Hept.*: *Deut.* 29.4<sup>b</sup>, quoted under *eage*.

*Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.32<sup>t</sup>: Se ðe hæbbe earan to *gehyrenne*, gehyre ðas word. [Cf. the following examples from the Gospels.]

*Gosp.*: *Mat.* 11.15: Se ðe earan hæbbe to *gehyrynnne* (*sic!*), gehyre = Qui habet aures *audiendi*, audiat. So: *Mat.* 13.9, 43; *Mk.* 4.9, 23; *L.* 14.35.

**fela**, *much*:

*Greg.* 237.13: *Fela* ic hæbbe eow to *secganne* = 178.28: *Multa* habeo vobis *dicere* (or objective?).

**gast, spirit:**

*Greg.* 263.21: Ne underfengon ge no ðone *Gast* æt fulluhte to ðeowigeanne for ege = 198.22: Non accepistis *spiritum servitutis* iterum in timore.

**gierd [gyrd], rod:**

*Greg.* 127.1: Gif ðær ðonne sie *gierd* mid to ðreageanne, sie ðær eac stæf mid to wreðianne = 88.14: Si ergo est districtio virgæ, quæ *feriat*, sit et consolatio baculi, quæ sustentet.

*Wærf.* 20.27: he næfde *gyrde* hine mid to *sleanne* = 161 C: Et quia *virgam* qua eum *ferire* posset.

**gryre, horror:**

*Bede* 364.5: Ða ðe . . . oðrum on *gryre* wæron to *neosienne* = 270.6: qui . . . aliis *horrori* erant ad *uisendum*.

**mete, meat:**

*J.* 4.32: Ic hæbbe ðone *mete* to *etanne* ðe ge nyton = Ego *cibum* habeo *manducare* quem vos nescitis.

**son, sound:**

*Bede* 258.24: Swylce eac sonas to *singenne* = 205.11: *sonos cantandi*.

**stæf, stick, staff:**

*Greg.* 127.2: quoted under *gierd*.

**ðing, thing:**

*Ælf. Hom.* I. 222<sup>b</sup>: ðeos dæd getacnað sum *ðing* to *donne* on Godes gelaðunge.

*Ælf. Gr.* 119.10<sup>a, b</sup>: verbum ys word . . . getacniende oððe sum *ðing* to *donne* oððe sum *ðing* to ðrowigenne oððe naðor = Verbum est pars orationis . . . aut *agere aliquid* aut *pati* aut neutrum significans.

*Gosp.*: *L.* 7.40: Symon, ic habbe ðe to *secgenne* sum *ðing* = Simon, habeo tibi *aliquid dicere* (or objective?). — *L.* 24.41: Hæbbe ge her ænig *ðing* to *etenne*? = Habetis hic *aliquid quod manducetur*. — *J.* 4.11: Leof, ne ðu næfst nan *ðing* mid to *hladanne* = Domine, neque in quo *haurias* habes.

**wela, wealth:**

*And.* 1160: *welan* ne benohton beornas to *brucanne*. [Dr. Reussner, *l. c.*, p. 27, and Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 19, consider the infinitive to be a final modifier of the verb, not of the noun.]

**wundor, wonder:**

*Bede* 164.27: Ðæt is *wundor* to *cweðanne* = 138.9: *quod mirum dictu* est.

Aside from the foregoing use of the inflected infinitive with nouns, which may be called the regular use, we have, as remarked by Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 225, a use of the inflected infinitive in which it is almost a pure adjective. Or perhaps it would be better to consider that we have, as it were, an elliptical gerundial periphrastic; in these examples, as usually in the predicative infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*), the infinitive is passive in sense, and translates a Latin gerundive. I note all of what seem to me the clearer cases: —

*Bened.* 134.4: Syx synt muneca cynerena, ðara synt ðreo ða selestan, ða oðere ðreo ða forcuðestan and eallum gemete to *forbugenne* = 0.

*Bede* 100.2: ðisses *geleafa* 7 *wyrnis* seo lefed Gode onfenge 7 allum to *fylgenne* = 82.2: *huius fides et operatio* Deo deuota atque omnibus *sequenda* credatur.

*Ælf. L. S.* XXXIV. 67: *hwæt* bið æfre soðlicre oððe to *gelyfenne* ænigum lifigendum menn?

*Pr. Ps.* 47.1: Mycel ys se *Dryhten* ure God, and swyðe to *herianne* on ðære byrig ures Drihtnes = Magnus Dominus et *laudabile* nimis in civitate Dei nostri.

*Wærf.* 240.5: Petrus cwæð: 'is ðæt forwundorlic wise and in urum tidum to *wafienne*' = 293 A<sup>2</sup>: Res mira, et nostris *stupenda* temporibus. — *Ib.* 252.25: wundorlic wise ðæt wæs 7 in ðære bysne ðæs drihtenlican weorces swiðe to *wafienne* = 309 A<sup>1</sup>: Mira res, atque in exemplum Dominici operis vehementer omnibus *stupenda*.

*Bede* 448.8: wæs he ge on wordum hluttur 7 seinende ge eac on gelærednesse gewrito (*sic!*) ge freora ge cyriclicra to *wundrienne* = 321.10: nam et sermone nitidus, et scripturarum, ut dixi, tam liberalium quam ecclesiasticarum erat eruditione *mirandus*.

In the foregoing examples the adjectivized infinitive is in the predicate nominative;<sup>1</sup> in the following example it is used attributively:

*Bede* 472.3: ða com . . . se leofa fæder 7 sacerð 7 mid ealle are to *nemnenne* Ecgbyrht se halga = 346.23: cum uenisset . . . Deo amabilis, et cum omni honorificentia *nominandus* pater ac sacerdos, Ecgberet.

In the following passage it is difficult to decide whether the infinitive is adjectivized or substantivized: *Bede* 24.1: Ðæt sum on Norðanhymbra mægðe of deaðe arisende sume swiðe ondryslicu 7 eac to *gewilnienne*, ða ðe he geseah, seegende wæs = 303.25: Ut quidam in prouincia Nordanhymbrorum a mortuis resurgens multa et tremenda et *desideranda*, quae uiderat, narrauerit. Dr. Wülfing,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, II, p. 225, considers the infinitive adjectivized.

#### Differentiation of the Two Infinitives.

As already stated, out of a total of about 246 infinitives with nouns, only four are uninflected. The solitary example of the uninflected infinitive in the poems (*And.* 1538) may be due, as suggested by Dr. Riggert, to the peculiar sense of the noun modified, *myne*; or, as privately suggested by Professor J. W. Bright, it may be due to the exigencies of the meter. In the three examples from the prose, the lack of inflection is probably due to the remoteness of the infinitive from the noun that it modifies, for twice the uninflected infinitive is the second in a series of two infinitives the first of which is inflected, while in the third instance (*L.* 12.5) the single infinitive is appreciably removed from its noun. All four examples have been quoted in full at the beginning of this chapter.

#### B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

I have not found an example of the compound passive infinitive modifying a noun.

For the Infinitive with Nouns in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section xiii.

#### NOTES.

1. *The Infinitive in a Series with Nouns.* — In the following passages we have a series of two infinitives the first of which is inflected, but the second is not: *Ælf. Hom.* II. 372<sup>m</sup> 1, 2 and *Napier's Ad. to Th.* 102.35<sup>b</sup> 3, 4, both quoted on p. 174 above. Dr. Farrar, *l. c.*, pp. 28

<sup>1</sup> For the infinitive as the substantival predicate nominative, see Chapter III, pp. 73 ff.

and 34, declares that the inflected infinitive is used parallel with the simple infinitive as the complement of a noun in *L.* 1.72, 79, but the infinitives are, in my judgment, final, and modify the verb. In the following passages we have a series of inflected infinitives: *Bede* 62.8<sup>a, b</sup>, 9; 86.13<sup>a, b</sup>; 206.10<sup>a, b</sup>; 206.11, 12; 400. 8<sup>a, b</sup>; 402.30<sup>a, b</sup>; 436.7, 8; — *Solil.* 39.15, 16; — *Wærf.* 211.20<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Mart.* 86.5<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Ælf. Hom.* I. 560<sup>a 1, 2</sup>; II. 360<sup>b 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXIII B. 478<sup>a, b</sup>; XXXI. 384, 385; XXXIV. 322<sup>a, b</sup>; XXXIV. 328, 329; — *Mk.* 3.15<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Wulf.* 52.3<sup>a, b</sup>; 202.1<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Læce.* 52.30, 31; 54.36<sup>b</sup>, 37; — *Chad* 71, 72.

2. *The Inflected Infinitive Used as a Latin Gerundive.* — In sentences like the following, the Anglo-Saxon inflected infinitive closely approximates a Latin gerundive: *Bede* 82.19: seo gemengnes ðæs flæsces seo for *intingan* bearna (*sic!*) to *cennenne* = 58.22: carnis commixtio creandorum liberorum sit *gratia*. Clearly the genitive *bearna* is due to the too close following of the Latin idiom, for I do not find in Bosworth-Toller's *Anglo-Saxon Dictionary* any example of *cennan's* governing a genitive. This same influence of the Latin gerundive is seen in this passage: *Wærf.* 114.1: ðæt ðær næs eallunga nan *wen* ðæs geloman ofer ðæt to *secanne* = B. 144 C<sup>2</sup>: ut *spes requirendi ferramenti* nulla jam esset.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### ORIGIN OF THE CONSTRUCTIONS OF THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

#### I. THE SUBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

##### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

##### 1. *With an Active Finite Verb.*

The active infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, as the subject of active verbs was probably an idiom native to Anglo-Saxon. For we find:—

1. That about 34 examples occur of the subjective infinitive in the poems, of which 8 are uninflected and 26 are inflected. Of this total, several examples are found in *Beowulf*, all with *beon* plus an adjective except in one instance.

2. That while, in the prose translations, the Anglo-Saxon subjective infinitive corresponds nearly a fourth of the time to a Latin infinitive that is the subject of a finite verb, about half the time it corresponds to various other idioms; and in numerous cases the subjective infinitive is found without any Latin correspondent. It should be added, however, that, in the case of no Latin correspondents, the Anglo-Saxon subjective infinitive occasionally is identical with an infinitive that elsewhere has a Latin infinitive as its original; and that, in the case of some of the Latin correspondents other than a subjective infinitive (as, for example, with the other uses of the infinitive indicated below and with the uses of the gerund and the gerundive), some, though not, perhaps, a determining, influence is exercised by the Latin original. It is noteworthy, too, that the Latin expressions containing an adjective are usually rendered by an inflected infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. In a word, the Latin influence is probably stronger than a first glance at my statistics would lead one to suppose.

The Latin chief correspondents are: an infinitive that is the subject of a finite verb (U.<sup>2</sup>: 24, I.: 7) or of a finite verb + an adjective (U.: 1, I.: 13). About half the time it corresponds to various other idioms, as follows: an objective infinitive, U.: 4, I.: 2; an infinitive as predicate nominative, U.: 0, I.: 2; a predicative infinitive with an auxiliary verb, U.: 0, I.: 1; an accusative and infinitive as subject to a finite verb, U.: 9, I.: 5; an accusative and infinitive as subject to a finite verb + an adjective, U.: 0, I.: 5; an accusative and infinitive as object, U.: 8, I.: 3; a gerundial periphrastic, U.: 0, I.: 4; a gerund in the genitive, U.: 1, I.: 0; a gerund in the ablative, U.: 1, I.: 0; a gerund in the accusative, U.: 0, I.: 1; an adjective + an infinitive, U.: 0, I.: 1; an adjective + *ad* + a gerund in the accusative, U.: 0, I.: 1; an adjective + *est* + a supine in *-u*, U.: 0, I.: 3; an adjective + a noun in the ablative, U.: 0, I.: 2; an adjective + a supine in *-u*, U.: 0, I.: 1; an adjective + *est* without an infinitive, U.: 0, I.: 4; an indicative + the adverb *facile*, U.: 0, I.: 1; *opus est* + an *ut*-clause, U.: 0, I.: 1; a relative clause with *est* + an adjective, U.: 0, I.: 1; a passive indicative with an ablative phrase, U.: 0, I.: 1; an indicative active, U.: 2, I.: 1; an adhortative subjunctive, U.: 0, I.: 2; a noun in *-io*, U.: 7, I.: 0; a noun in the genitive, U.: 1, I.: 1; a noun in the accusative, U.: 1, I.: 0; a noun in the ablative, U.: 2, I.: 1; a substantivized past participle + an indicative, U.: 0, I.: 1; a prepositional phrase + a verb, U.: 1, I.: 1; a loose paraphrase, U.: 0, I.: 5; no Latin, U.: 17, I.: 43.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter I, pp. 7 ff.

<sup>2</sup> U. = uninflected; I. = inflected.

3. That the construction occurs, though not frequently, in the more original prose: the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and *Wulfstan*.

## 2. With a Passive Finite Verb.

On the other hand, the active infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, as the subject of a passive verb in Anglo-Saxon, is probably due to Latin influence; or, at any rate, the influence of the Latin is stronger here than with the active infinitive as the subject of an active verb, for we find:—

1. That only one example, that inflected, occurs in the poetry, in *Guthlac*, and that as the subject of *aliefan*. *Guthlac*, it is well known, is based on a Latin original; moreover, as we shall see below, *aliefan* with a subject infinitive, in the prose translations, is usually due to Latin influence.

2. That, in the prose translations, the Anglo-Saxon subjective infinitive usually occurs in translation of a Latin infinitive that is the subject of a finite verb (active, U.: 6, I.: 9; passive, U.: 1, I.: 2), though occasionally in translation of other idioms (an accusative and infinitive as the object of an active verb, U.: 0, I.: 2; a gerund in the genitive, U.: 0, I.: 1; *ut* + a passive subjunctive as the object of an active verb, U.: 0, I.: 1), and very rarely without any Latin correspondent (U.: 0, I.: 2). It is noteworthy that the active infinitive occurs most frequently as the subject of the passive of *aliefan*, and that, in the prose translations, the Anglo-Saxon *aliefan* with a subject infinitive corresponds to the Latin *licere* with a subject infinitive.

3. That in only one of the more original prose monuments, *Wulfstan*, is the idiom found, then only a few times and only as the subject of the one verb, *aliefan*, which idiom, as we have above seen, is an imitation of the Latin in the Early West Saxon translations.

It should be added that, as subject to both active and passive verbs, the active infinitive is more frequently inflected than not, both in prose and in poetry, — a fact discussed in Chapter I; and that both infinitives are found as subjects from the outset, the differentiation resting upon the principles discussed in the conclusion of Chapter I.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

In all probability, the Anglo-Saxon passive infinitive as the subject of active verbs (of which only a few examples occur, all quoted above, Chapter I, pp. 26-27) is due to Latin influence. No example has been found in the poems. In the prose translations the idiom is found very rarely, and always in translations of a Latin passive infinitive, though the infinitive in Latin is occasionally used objectively, as in *Wærferth*, and occasionally predicatively with a subject accusative, as in *Bede* and in *Luke* 17.25. The idiom is not found in the more original prose, and is very rare even in *Ælfric*.

The situation is much the same in the other Germanic languages with reference both to the active and to the passive infinitive: see Chapter XVI, section i.

## II. THE OBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

1. *With an Active Finite Verb.*

## I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED ONLY.

1. Verbs of Commanding.<sup>1</sup>

The objective infinitive after *hatan* is undoubtedly of native origin in Anglo-Saxon. (1) It occurs over a hundred times in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and nearly twenty times in *Beowulf*. (2) In the Early West Saxon translations, though it occasionally answers to a Latin objective infinitive (active or passive), it usually answers to some other idiom, most commonly to a Latin co-ordinated finite verb. (3) It is common in the *Chronicle*. (4) It is very common with Ælfric, who has nearly 500 examples. (5) The idiom is, we know, characteristic of the Germanic languages as a whole. — As to *abiddan* we cannot decide, as only one example occurs, in Ælfric.

The Latin correspondents are: a co-ordinated finite verb (usually active (63), but occasionally passive (13)) or a Latin accusative and infinitive (usually passive (58), but occasionally active (5)). Other correspondents are: the infinitive as retained object (active, 1; passive, 5); a subordinated finite verb (active, 15; passive, 1); an absolute participle (active, 2; passive, 7); an appositive participle (active, 2; passive, 8); *ad* + a gerund, 4; a gerundive in the accusative, 1; an indicative with an accusative + *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 1; an accusative and a gerundial infinitive passive, 2; an indicative with *ad* + a gerund, 1; an indicative with *ut* + a subjunctive clause as object, 2; an adhortative subjunctive, 1; a loose paraphrase, 4; no Latin, 35.

2. Verbs of Causing and Permitting.<sup>2</sup>

The objective infinitive after *latan* is probably of native origin. (1) It occurs in the poems, though rarely. (2) In the Early West Saxon translations, it corresponds once to a Latin objective infinitive (active), but usually to a co-ordinated finite verb (active, 3; passive, 1) or to an accusative and infinitive (active, 1; passive, 2), but occasionally to other idioms (a passive final infinitive, 1; a passive subordinated finite verb, 1; a supine in *-um*, 1; no Latin, 3). (3) It is very common in the *Chronicle*, occurring over fifty times, though usually in the later years. (4) The idiom is common in the other Germanic languages. — As only two examples occur after *don* and one after *forgiefan* (the text of the former is in doubt), we cannot decide as to them, though the Anglo-Saxon infinitive after *forgiefan* corresponds to a Latin objective infinitive after *donare*.

3. Verbs of Sense Perception.<sup>3</sup>

The objective infinitive with each of the verbs of sense perception (*gehieran*, *geseon*, *hieran*, *ofseon*, and *seon*) is doubtless of native origin in Anglo-Saxon. *Seon* is found only in the poetry; *ofseon* only once, in Ælfric. As to the objective infinitive with the remaining three verbs: (1) it is found in the poems; (2) in the Early West Saxon translations it corresponds to various Latin idioms; and (3) it is found in the *Chronicle* except with *geseon*.

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.  
<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.

The Latin correspondents are: — for *gehieran*: objective active infinitive, 1; predicative passive infinitive with an auxiliary verb, 1; co-ordinated finite verb (active, 5; passive, 1); subordinated finite verb, active, 3; appositional participle (active, 5; passive, 1); no Latin, 6; — for *geseon*: objective active infinitive, 5; predicative accusative of the participle (active, 1; passive, 1); accusative and passive infinitive, 2; no Latin, 1; — for *hieran*: objective passive infinitive, 2; subordinated finite verb (active, 1; passive, 1); predicative accusative of the past participle, 1; accusative and infinitive (active), 1; no Latin, 2.

#### 4. Verbs of Mental Perception.<sup>1</sup>

The objective infinitive occurs so seldom with verbs of mental perception that it is difficult to arrive at a positive conclusion concerning its origin in Anglo-Saxon. But what evidence we have seems to indicate that the idiom is, in the main, native. With two of the verbs concerned (*gefriġnan* and *gehogian*), the objective infinitive is found only in the poetry, two out of three times in *Beowulf*. With *geteon*, on the other hand, the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon corresponds to a Latin objective infinitive active, and may have been suggested by the Latin. With *hogian*, the infinitive is found four times in the poetry and twice in the prose (in the *Soliloquies* and in *Ælfric*), in the former translating a Latin accusative and gerundial infinitive. With *tweogan* [*tweon*], the infinitive translates a Latin accusative and future active infinitive.

#### 5. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing.<sup>2</sup>

With each of the three verbs of beginning, delaying, and ceasing (*blinnan*, *forieldan*, and *ginnan*) the objective infinitive translates, in *Bede*, in which alone it occurs, a Latin objective infinitive active. Probably, therefore, the objective infinitive with these verbs is due to the Latin.

#### 6. Verbs of Inclination and of Will.<sup>3</sup>

Of the verbs of inclination and of will, two (*behealdan* and *onmedan*) are found with the objective infinitive only in the poetry; two (*cunnian* and *geġiernian*) are found only in *Ælfric*; while with five (*forefon*, *ge-eaðmodi(g)an*, *geðyrsti(g)an*, *lystan*, and *wunian*) the Anglo-Saxon infinitive invariably translates a Latin objective infinitive active. Possibly the infinitive in the last group is due to the Latin.

To sum up the matter thus far: the uninflected infinitive as object is doubtless a native idiom with the first four classes of verbs enumerated above ( (1) of Commanding, (2) of Causing and Permitting, (3) of Sense Perception, (4) of Mental Perception (except with *geteon*) ); it is possibly due to Latin influence in the fifth class (verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing); and it is partly of native origin and partly of foreign origin in the sixth class (verbs of Inclination and of Will).

## II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED ONLY.

### 1. Verbs of Commanding.<sup>4</sup>

With only one verb of commanding (*gedihtan*) do we find the inflected objective infinitive, once, in *Wulfstan*. The infinitive seems to be a dative object, and the idiom here seems of native origin.

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.

<sup>3</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 37.



## 2. Verbs of Permitting.<sup>1</sup>

With this group, only two verbs (*liefan* and *lofian* in the sense of 'allow') are found with the objective infinitive. *Liefan* is not found in the poetry; in the translations it corresponds once (*Mat.* 19.8) to a Latin objective infinitive active, once (*Ælf. Hept.: Num.* 21.22) to a subjective infinitive, and once (*Greg.* 451.29) it has no Latin correspondent; the other example is found in *Wulfstan*. *Lofian* is found once, in the *Chronicle*. The infinitive with these verbs is probably of native origin.

## 3. Verbs of Mental Perception.<sup>2</sup>

Of this group, only three verbs (*aðencan*, *mynnan*, and *witan* [*nytan*]) are found with the inflected objective infinitive in the poems. The following fifteen are found in the Anglo-Saxon translations: *behatan*, *gehyhtan*, *geliefan*, *geswutelian*, *geteohhian*, *geðencan*, *læran*, *sirwan*, *smeagan* [*smean*], *tæcan*, *teohhian* [*tioh-*], *ðeahthi(g)an*, *understandan*, *weddian*, and *witan*; and have various Latin correspondents, as indicated below. The following occur in texts other than the poems or the translations: *æteowan*, *anbidian*, *bodian*, *cyðan*, *geceosan*, *tacan*, and *tellan*. In all probability, therefore, the inflected infinitive as object with the verbs of mental perception as a whole is a native idiom.

The Latin correspondents for the words above specified are:—for *behatan*: objective active infinitive, 1; accusative and future active infinitive as object, 1; *ut* + the subjunctive in an object clause, 1;—for *gehyhtan*: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *geliefan*: accusative and gerundial infinitive as object, 1;—for *geswutelian*: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *geteohhian*: objective active infinitive, 1; accusative and active infinitive as object, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1; subordinated finite verb, active, 1; substantivized past participle, 1; no Latin, 3;—for *geðencan*: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *læran*: gerundive in the genitive, 1; gerundive in the accusative, 1; no Latin, 1;—for *sirwan*: final active infinitive, 1;—for *smeagan* [*smean*]: accusative and future active infinitive, 1; no Latin, 1;—for *tæcan*: co-ordinated finite verb, passive, 1;—for *teohhian*: objective active infinitive, 1; complementary infinitive to an auxiliary verb, 1; *ut* + a subjunctive, 2; gerundive in the predicate nominative, 1; no Latin, 3;—for *ðeahthi(g)an*: accusative and future active infinitive, 1;—for *understandan*: no Latin, 1;—for *weddian*: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *witan*: no Latin, 1.

## 4. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing.<sup>3</sup>

The inflected infinitive as object with this group of verbs is not found in the poems. Except with three verbs found in this idiom only in *Ælfric* (*elcian*, *forwiernan*, and *gefon*), it is represented in the Anglo-Saxon translations; in which, as my statistics below show, it answers most frequently to a Latin objective infinitive active or to various locutions made up of the Latin gerund or gerundive, and occasionally to other idioms. As the simplex, *wiernan*, and other compounds of *fon* occur in the translations, it is probable that, in the main, the infinitive in this group of verbs was due to the influence of the Latin originals.

The Latin correspondents are:—for *anforlætan*: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *gelan*: co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1;—for *ieldan* [*eldan*, *ylðan*]: objective active infinitive, 3; appositive participle, deponent, 1;—for *onfon*: gerundive in the accusative, 3; gerund in the genitive, 1;—for *underfon*: gerundive in the accusative, 2; *ad* + a gerund, 1; *ut* + a subjunctive of purpose, 1; no Latin, 2;—for *wiernan*: objective active infinitive, 1.

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 37.

<sup>3</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 37.

<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 37.

5. Verbs of Inclination and of Will.<sup>1</sup>

Of the verbs belonging to this group, none is found with an inflected objective infinitive in the poems. In the translations, the Anglo-Saxon infinitive corresponds oftenest to a Latin objective infinitive active, but occasionally to other idioms. A number of the verbs do not occur in the translations (*anðracian*, *forsacan*, *murnan*, *oferhogian*, *reccan*, *swerian*, *teon*, *wandian*), but with the exception of the first two (in Ælfric) they are found in the *Chronicle* or in the *Laws*, and with them all the infinitive is probably native. The verbs followed by an objective infinitive in the translations are so sparingly represented as to preclude confident conclusions, but to me the infinitive with these, as with the verbs above mentioned, seems in the main of native origin.

The Latin correspondents are: — for *adrædan*: objective active infinitive, 1; — for *beotigan*: *ad* + a gerund in the accusative, 1; — for *fleon*: objective active infinitive, 1; — for *forseon*: objective active infinitive, 1; — for *gedyrstlæcan*: objective active infinitive, 5; adhortative subjunctive, 2; — for *getilian*: accusative and gerundial infinitive, 1; — for *giernan*: objective active infinitive, 2; absolute passive participle, 1; — for *higian*: objective active infinitive (or final?), 1; *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 2; — for *onscunian*: loose paraphrase, 1; — for *warenian*: co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1; — for *wiðsacan*: accusative and active infinitive as object, 1.

## 6. "Habban," 'have.'

An inflected infinitive is not found with *habban* in the poems; in the translations, the infinitive corresponds to several Latin idioms (*ad* + an accusative, a gerundial periphrastic, a co-ordinated indicative active; and a periphrastic future indicative active). It is possible, perhaps probable, that the Latin exercised a slight influence in these instances.

In a word, the inflected infinitive as object seems of native origin in the first three groups of verbs above given ((1) of Commanding, (2) of Permitting, (3) of Mental Perception), also in group 5 (verbs of Inclination and of Will) in the main; but the idiom is more or less due to Latin influence in group 4 (verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing) and in group 6 (*habban*).

## III. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED AND INFLECTED.

1. Verbs of Commanding.<sup>2</sup>

Of this group of verbs, *bebeodan*, *beodan*, and *biddan* are found with an objective infinitive in the poems. In the translations the Anglo-Saxon objective infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, corresponds to several different Latin idioms, and in all probability the idiom is native to Anglo-Saxon with this whole group of verbs.

The correspondents in Latin are: — for *bebeodan*: U.: accusative and passive infinitive as object, 3; — I.: gerundive in the accusative, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1; — for *beodan*: U.: 0; — I.: subjective active infinitive, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1; — for *bewerigan*: U.: subjective passive infinitive, 1; — I.: objective active infinitive, 1; — for *biddan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; accusative and passive infinitive as object, 2; appositive participle active, 1; no Latin, 1; — I.: 0; — for *forbeodan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; — I.: noun in the accusative, 1; no Latin, 1; — for *gehatan*: U.: absolute participle passive, 1; accusative and passive infinitive as object, 1; — I.: accusative and a future active infinitive, 1.

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 37.<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 44.

## 2. Verbs of Permitting.<sup>1</sup>

Of the three verbs in this group (*aliefan*, *geðafian*, and *sellan*), *sellan* is found with an objective infinitive (U.: 1, I.: 1) only in the poems. In the translations, *aliefan* is found with an infinitive, uninflected and inflected, that corresponds now to an objective infinitive, now to a predicative infinitive with accusative subject, now to a finite verb in the Latin original; and *geðafian* is found once with an inflected infinitive as object translating a Latin objective infinitive active. *Aliefan* and *geðafian* are each found, also, in works not known to be translations. The infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, with this whole group of verbs is probably of native origin.

## 3. Verbs of Mental Perception.<sup>2</sup>

Of this group of verbs, *findan*, *gemyntan*, *myntan*, *ðencan*, and *wenan* are found with the objective infinitive in the poems, *findan* and *ðencan* with the infinitive both uninflected and inflected, the other verbs named with the uninflected only. In the translations, the Anglo-Saxon infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, has various Latin correspondents. In all probability, therefore, the objective infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, is of native origin with this group of verbs, though no doubt the Latin original occasionally accounts (as in *geleornian*) for the infinitive's being inflected.

The Latin correspondents are: — for *geleornian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; — I.: gerundive in the accusative, 1; — for *gemyntan*: U.: 0; — I.: objective active infinitive, 1; — for *gestihhian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; — I.: no Latin, 1; — for *leornian*: U.: 0; — I.: objective active infinitive, 2; gerundive in the accusative, 1; — for *myntan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; no Latin, 2; — I.: 0; — for *ðencan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 11; *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 2; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 2; accusative and active infinitive as object, 1; accusative and passive infinitive as object, 1; noun in the accusative, 1; loose paraphrase, 1; no Latin, 9; — I.: objective active infinitive, 7; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 2; subordinated finite verb, active, 1; *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 1; noun in the ablative modified by a genitive, 1; indicative passive with a prepositional phrase, 1; no Latin, 5.

## 4. Verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing.<sup>3</sup>

Of this group of verbs, only the following have the objective infinitive in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and that uninflected: *forlætan*, and *beginnan* and *onginnan*, the two most frequently recurring of the whole class. In the *Chronicle*, this idiom with these two last verbs occurs, though not frequently: in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon objective infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, has various Latin originals, though the most frequent is an objective infinitive. That the objective infinitive, when uninflected, was a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon with these two verbs seems highly probable, therefore, though the frequency of the construction in the translations must be in no small part due to the frequency of *coepit* (and kindred verbs of beginning) followed by an objective infinitive in the Latin original. As to the inflected infinitive as object after these two verbs, I have spoken above, in Chapter II, pp. 67 ff.; where I have tried to show that the use of the inflected form was not due to foreign in-

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 44.

<sup>2</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 44.

<sup>3</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 44.

fluence. The objective infinitive after the other verb of beginning (*aginnan*), when uninflected, is doubtless original, and on substantially the same grounds given for *beginnan* and *onginnan*. The inflected infinitive as object with *aginnan* is found only in the later *Chronicle* (1006 E<sup>b</sup>) or in the early years in the late and imperfect MS. F.

The objective infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, after *fon* is doubtless of native origin. The uninflected infinitive occurs only twice, in Wulfstan; the inflected is found in Wærferth, in Ælfric, and in Wulfstan, though the example in Wærferth, corresponding to a Latin gerundive in the accusative, may be considered final in sense.

As to the verbs of Ceasing (*ablinnan* and *geswican*), as the objective infinitive occurs only in Late West Saxon (Ælfric and the *Gospels*), we cannot decide as to its origin. *Forlætan*, as stated above, is found once in the poems uninflected (in *And.*), and once in the prose inflected (in *Greg.*), translating here an objective active infinitive; and the idiom with this verb may be partly due to Latin influence.

The Latin correspondents are:—for *aginnan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 13; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 2; appositive participle, active, 2;—I.: 0;—for *beginnan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; no Latin, 2;—I.: objective infinitive (active, 5; passive, 1); co-ordinated finite verb, active, 4; *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 1; appositive participle, active, 1; no Latin, 7;—for *fon*: U.: 0;—I.: gerundive in the accusative, 1; co-ordinative finite verb, active, 1; no Latin, 1;—for *forlætan*: U.: 0;—I.: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *geswican*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1;—I.: 0;—for *onginnan*: U.: objective infinitive (active, 333; passive, 5); subjective active infinitive, 1; active infinitive as retained object, 2; accusative and active infinitive as object, 1; complementary infinitive (active, 2; passive, 1); causal active infinitive + a predicate nominative, 1; co-ordinated finite verb (active, 31; passive, 2); subordinated finite verb, active, 20; gerund in the ablative, 2; *a* + a gerund in the ablative, 1; absolute participle (active, 4; passive, 6); appositive participle (active, 25; passive, 6); noun in the ablative, 5; loose paraphrase, 6; no Latin, 87;—I.: objective active infinitive, 4; subordinated finite verb, active, 1; appositive participle, active, 1; inchoative indicative, 3; loose paraphrase, 1.

### 5. Verbs of Inclination and of Will.<sup>1</sup>

Of this group, the following are found in this idiom in the poetry: *forhogian* (I.: 1), *gieman* (I.: 1), *secan* (U.: 2), *tilian* (U.: 2), *wil(l)nian* (U.: 1, I.: 1). Two of these (*tilian* and *wil(l)nian*) are the most frequently used of the whole group, the next most frequent being *gewil(l)nian*. Although only the first of the following verbs is found in either the *Chronicle* or the *Laws*, the objective infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, with these three verbs (*gewil(l)nian*, *tilian*, *wil(l)nian*) is probably of native origin: as we have seen, two of the three are found in the poems; and in the translations, the objective infinitive, though often translating a Latin objective infinitive, often has other correspondents in the original. For substantially the same reasons, the objective infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, is probably of native origin after *forhogian*, *gieman*, and *secan*.

With *forhycgan*, the objective infinitive occurs twice uninflected in *Bede* in translation of a Latin objective infinitive, and once inflected in the *Blickling Homilies*, but, as with the kindred *forhogian*, the infinitive with *forhycgan* may be native.

<sup>1</sup> Given in Chapter II, p. 44.

Twice the uninflected infinitive is found as object to *ge-earnian*, in *Bede*, each time answering to a Latin objective infinitive, and thrice in *Ælfric*; and once inflected in *Ælfric*. The examples are too few for a confident decision; but the sentences in *Bede* sound stiff and unnatural to me.

Similarly with the objective infinitive after *gemedemian*, occurring twice uninflected in the *Laws*, and once inflected in *Ælfric*, in each translating a Latin objective infinitive, decision is impossible, but my feeling is against the native origin.

The objective infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, after *geðristlæcan*, occurring as it does in the *Laws*, is probably of native origin, although in *Wærferth* it translates a Latin objective infinitive.

The objective infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, after *gewunian*, is probably due to Latin influence: the infinitive is not found in the poems; in the prose occurs chiefly in the translations, and usually renders a Latin objective infinitive with *consuescere* or with *solere*.

The objective infinitive after *ondrædan*, whether uninflected or inflected, is probably of native origin, for, while we find in the translations the Anglo-Saxon infinitive corresponding usually to a Latin objective infinitive, it at times (as in *Greg.* 49.18) corresponds to a Latin finite verb without an infinitive.

The Latin correspondents are:—for *forhogian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *forhycgan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: 0;—for *ge-earnian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: 0;—for *gemedemian*: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: objective active infinitive, 1;—for *geðristlæcan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1;—I.: 0;—for *gewilnian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 4;—I.: objective active infinitive, 2;—for *gewunian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 25;—I.: objective active infinitive, 3; loose paraphrase, 1; no Latin, 1;—for *gieman*: U.: objective active infinitive, 3; no Latin, 1;—I.: objective active infinitive, 2;—for *ondrædan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: objective active infinitive, 2; accusative and active infinitive as object, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1;—for *secan*: U.: objective active infinitive, 2;—I.: objective active infinitive, 10; appositive participle, active, 1;—for *tilian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 1; gerund in the ablative, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1;—I.: objective active infinitive, 11; co-ordinated finite verb (active, 3; passive, 2); subordinated finite verb, active, 1; loose paraphrase, 2; appositive participle, active, 1; no Latin, 3;—for *wil(l)nian*: U.: objective active infinitive, 22; accusative and active infinitive as object, 1; co-ordinated finite verb (active, 6; passive, 1); subordinated finite verb, active, 1; no Latin, 9;—I.: objective active infinitive, 19; complementary infinitive, active, 1; co-ordinated finite verb, active, 2; subordinated finite verb (active, 2; passive, 1); gerundial periphrastic, passive, 2; gerundive in the genitive, 2; *de* + a gerundive in the ablative, 1; noun in the accusative with a gerund in the genitive, 1; noun in the accusative, 1; noun in the accusative modified by an infinitive, 1; absolute participle, passive, 1; loose paraphrase, 2; no Latin, 30.

In brief, the objective infinitive, uninflected and inflected, is probably of native origin with group 1 (verbs of Commanding); group 2 (verbs of Permitting); group 3 (verbs of Mental Perception), though, no doubt, the Latin original occasionally accounts for the infinitive's being inflected (as with *geleornian*); with *fon* of group 4 (verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing); and with all the verbs of group 5 (verbs of Inclination and of Will) except possibly *ge-earnian*, *gemedemian*, and *gewunian*. The infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, as the object of *aginnan*, *beginnan*, and *onginnan*, in group 4 (verbs of Beginning, Delaying, and Ceasing), is doubtless of native origin, though the frequency of the idiom is partly due to the Latin original. With the verbs of Ceasing (*ablinnan* and *geswican*) in group 4, the origin of the

objective infinitive, uninflected and inflected, is indeterminable, so few are the examples; with *forlætan*, the infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, is partly due to Latin influence.

## 2. With a Passive Finite Verb.<sup>1</sup>

The active infinitive as "the retained object" of passive verbs is most probably of Latin<sup>2</sup> origin. The idiom is found only once, if at all, in Anglo-Saxon poetry (*Exod.* 44), and then in a poem based on a Latin original. In the Anglo-Saxon translations it is rare, and usually corresponds to the same construction in the Latin originals (8), though occasionally to other Latin idioms (an indicative active, 1; a gerundial periphrastic passive, 1; *ad* + a gerund in the accusative after a passive verb, 1). It is almost unknown in the more original Anglo-Saxon prose (the *Chronicle* and the *Laws*) and, strange to say, in Ælfric. The foregoing statement is substantially true whether the objective infinitive is uninflected or inflected, concerning which see Chapter II, p. 69 above.

As stated in Note 2 to Chapter II, owing to the Anglo-Saxon translator's mistaking a deponent verb for a passive verb, he occasionally gives an active infinitive (uninflected and inflected) after an Anglo-Saxon finite verb that is passive in form but active in sense.

Despite the statement of Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 100, that "In O. E. [= A. S.] the simple infinitive seems to have been the original construction, but the prepositional came in early," it seems probable that, from the outset, both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive could be used as the object of active verbs, the differentiation between the two forms resting on the principles laid down in Chapter II, pp. 60-69.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.<sup>3</sup>

### 1. With an Active Finite Verb.

The passive infinitive as the object of active verbs is of Latin origin. The idiom is not found in the poetry. In the Anglo-Saxon translations it is rare, and almost invariably corresponds to the same construction in the Latin, though occasionally it corresponds to a Latin objective infinitive active (*Wærf.* 206.14, 24), occasionally to a Latin passive subjunctive (*Bede* 402.24), and once it has no Latin correspondent (*Mat.* 20.28<sup>b</sup>). It is unknown in the more original Anglo-Saxon prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and *Wulfstan*) and, strange to say, in Ælfric.

### 2. With a Passive Finite Verb.

The passive infinitive as "the retained object" after passive verbs, found four times in *Bede*, each time translates the same idiom in the Latin original, as it does also in the one example in *Wærfeth*.

In the other Germanic Languages we find matters surprisingly similar as regards the objective infinitive, both active and passive: see Chapter XVI, section ii.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter II, p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Erckmann, *l. c.*, p. 11: "This personal construction [= infinitive as retained object of a passive verb] is very rarely to be found in the former stages of the language, in Anglo-Saxon and Semi-Saxon. We may therefore ascribe the modern usage principally to the influence of the classic languages."

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter II, pp. 71 ff.

### III. OTHER SUBSTANTIVAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

#### A. AS A PREDICATE NOMINATIVE.

As to the origin of the infinitive as a predicate nominative, it is difficult to speak with any confidence. Only two examples occur in the poetry (*Beow.* 473: Sorh is me *to secganne*, and *ib.* 1724: Wundor is *to secganne*), both of which are doubtful, and only one in Early West Saxon (*Bede* 202.29: Ðæt eac swilce his ðeaw wæs on oðrum cyninges tune *to donne* = 160.1: quod ipsum et in aliis uillis regiis *facere* solebat), which is also doubtful. One example each occurs in the *Gosp.* (*J.* 19.40) and in the *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* (10.521); three, in *Wulf.* (214.22, 279.5<sup>a, b</sup>); and the remainder, constituting the majority, in *Ælfric*. It is possible that the infinitive as a predicate nominative is an extension of the inflected infinitive as subject of a verb + a noun or pronoun, or as the modifier of a noun, but the fact that the predicate infinitive does not occur, save sporadically, until Late West Saxon times, and that, in the example from the *Gospels*, the Anglo-Saxon infinitive corresponds to a Latin infinitive as predicate nominative, makes it probable that Latin influence contributed somewhat to the result. What is here written applies primarily to the inflected infinitive, which, as we have seen above, Chapter III, p. 74, is the normal form in this idiom. For the explanation of the few uninflected infinitives in this construction, see above, Chapter III, p. 75.

In the other Germanic languages the infinitive as predicate nominative is rare: see Chapter XVI, section iii.

#### B. AS AN APPOSITIVE.

The appositive infinitive, normally uninflected, is rare in Early West Saxon and in Late West Saxon, and only three examples, all uninflected, occur in the poetry (*Beow.* 76, *Maldon* 208<sup>a, b</sup>). In the translations it corresponds to an appositive infinitive (*Gosp.*: *Mk.* 2.9<sup>a, b</sup>; *L.* 5.23<sup>a, b</sup>; *Mat.* 9.5<sup>a, b</sup>); to a subjective infinitive (*Bede* 78.22<sup>a, b, c, d, e</sup>; *Greg.* 355.22<sup>a, b</sup>; *Oros.* 50.16; *Solil.* 16.16, 17; *Mk.* 12.33 (?) ); to a subjunctive (*Greg.* 273.3 (?) ); to an objective infinitive (*Boeth.* 53.20<sup>a, b</sup>; *Pr. Gu.* IV. 58, XVI. 14<sup>a, b</sup>); to an attributive adjective (*Bede* 458.24); to a prepositional phrase (*Bede* 56.24); and occasionally has no Latin correspondent (*Boeth.* 84.32; *Pr. Ps.* 39. Intr.; *Solil.* 2.16, 17; *Oros.* 44.9, 10<sup>a, b</sup>; 120.31<sup>a, b</sup>; 138.32<sup>a, b</sup>; 178.10, 11). The construction is found occasionally, too, in the *Chronicle* and in the *Laws*. The idiom may be native, but it is probable that in a number of instances the construction is due to Latin influence: probably but not necessarily, in those in which the appositive infinitive occurs both in the Latin original and in the Anglo-Saxon translation, but also in a number of other instances in which there is no such correspondence in the specific sentences, but in which the Latin pattern (of other sentences) is followed. The occasional inflection of the appositive infinitive is due to its proximity to some word requiring a case other than the accusative, as explained in Chapter III.

In the other Germanic languages this use, also, is rare: see Chapter XVI, section iii.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter III, p. 73.

IV. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH AUXILIARY VERBS.<sup>1</sup>

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

The predicative use of the active uninflected infinitive with auxiliary verbs is of native origin in Anglo-Saxon, for it is found innumerable times in poetry and in prose of all periods and authors in the Anglo-Saxon epoch. It has seemed unnecessary to gather statistics on this construction. The predicative use of the inflected infinitive active with auxiliaries occurs only sporadically except with *agan*, concerning which see Chapter IV, pp. 80-81, 82-83.

The construction with the uninflected infinitive active is likewise native in the other Germanic languages; with the inflected infinitive, only sporadic: concerning both see Chapter XVI, section iv.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

Contrary to my expectation, the passive infinitive as complement to the auxiliary verb is due to Latin influence. This use is almost unknown in the poetry, only 25 examples being found (1 with the infinitive made up of the past participle and *beon*; 7 with the infinitive made up of the past participle and *wesan*; and 17 with the infinitive made up of the past participle and *weorðan*), and all of these in poems known to be based on Latin originals (*Gen.*, *Dan.*, *Chr.*, *Gu.*, *Ju.*, *El.*, *And.*, *Ph.*, and *Met.*). In the prose translations, the passive infinitive regularly corresponds to a complementary passive infinitive in the Latin, though occasionally it has other correspondents.

The other correspondents in Latin are: the passive subjunctive, 45; the passive indicative, 32; the accusative and passive infinitive (as subject, 1; as object, 19); the passive infinitive as retained object, 1; the objective passive infinitive, 5; the appositive participle, passive, 8; the attributive participle, passive, 1; the complementary infinitive, active, 5; the objective active infinitive, 1; the accusative and active infinitive as object, 4; the active indicative, 4; the active subjunctive, 15; a noun, 3; a gerundive, 1; a gerund, 2; a loose paraphrase, 1; no Latin, 14.

V. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF MOTION AND OF REST.<sup>2</sup>

Of the nature and the origin of the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion and of rest in Anglo-Saxon, I have seen no thoroughly satisfactory explanation. But several helpful suggestions have been offered, and in the following pages I attempt a synthesis of these suggestions.

The more modern view seems to be that the infinitive in this construction at times denotes the manner of motion indicated by the chief verb, and at times expresses an action co-ordinate with that of the chief verb, which uses may be designated as modal and co-ordinate respectively.

C. F. Koch's<sup>3</sup> statement, in his *Englische Grammatik* (1865), II, p. 61, is brief and explicit. Speaking of the simple infinitive after verbs of motion, he says: "Hier erscheint der Infinitiv in doppelter Bedeutung. Er nennt aa) die Weise der Bewegung oder eine sie begleitende Handlung: Fleon gewat (er

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter IV, p. 79.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter V, p. 89.

<sup>3</sup> Koch's first ed. of Vol. II appeared in 1865; my quotation is from the second ed. (1878).



gieng fliehen = floh), C. 136.23; . . . bb) den Zweck der Bewegung: Gewat se wilda fugel earce secan," etc. Clearly our idiom is referred to in Koch's first subdivision, which takes account of both the modal and the co-ordinate uses.

Since in his discussion of the infinitive after verbs of motion, especially in his paragraph on this construction in Anglo-Saxon, Mätzner<sup>1</sup> clumps together examples in which the infinitive is purely final (as in *Beow.* 396: *Nu ge moton gangan . . . Hroðgar geseon*) with examples of the dubious sort now under discussion (as in *Beow.* 234: *Gewat him ða to waroðe wicge ridan ðegn Hroðgares*), it is impossible for me to be sure of his view as to the ultimate nature of the infinitive in question. I quote, however, his introductory comment (p. 16): "Bei intransitiven Verben der Bewegung war in älterer Zeit der reine Infinitiv geläufig; gegenwärtig trifft man ihn noch bei *go*, früher auch bei *come*. In diesem Falle bezeichnet der Infinitiv theils eine zweite Thätigkeit, welche mit der Bewegung verbunden ist, theils eine solche, welche ihren Zweck ausmacht." Then follow examples of the sort indicated from Modern English and from Middle English. The paragraph on this infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is thus introduced (p. 17): "Wie im Französischen bei *aller*, *venir*, *courir* und bei denselben Begriffen in altgermanischen Mundarten, steht auch im Ags. bei *gangan*, *gewitan*, *cuman*, *faran*, *feran* häufig der reine Infinitiv." Then follow examples from Anglo-Saxon, specimens of which I have already quoted. Then comes this concluding paragraph concerning the infinitive after verbs of motion in English of the three epochs: "Dass in den angeführten Beispielen theils eine mit der Bewegung zeitlich zusammenfallende Bethätigung, theils eine der Bewegung folgende und durch sie erzielte Handlung dargestellt wird, ergibt sich leicht; wie aber beide Verhältnisse oft thatsächlich nahe an einander grenzen und selbst in einander übergehen, so ist beiden syntaktisch dieselbe Form zu Theil geworden, worin die Bewegung gleichmässig als die Voraussetzung einer anderen Handlung erscheint. Wo der begriff des Zweckes hervorgehoben wird, tritt auch in frühester Zeit schon *to* zum Infinitiv, worüber beim präpositionalen Infinitiv gehandelt wird." (Cf. *ibidem*, p. 38.) He seems, also, to attribute to our infinitive both the modal and the co-ordinate uses.

Professor March, in his *A Comparative Grammar of the Anglo-Saxon Language* (1869), § 448 (4), under "Direct Object," speaks of this use of the infinitive as follows: "General motion defined by specific motion: *fleon gewat*, 'he went to fly' = 'he flew away' (C. 136, 23); *com fleogan*, 'came flying' (89, 10); *com gongan* (B. 710); *com drifan*, 'came driving' = 'fell (on a rock)' (Bed., 5, 6); so with *faran*, *feran*, *glidan*, *ridan*, *scriðan*, *siðian*, *tredan*, etc. See further under Participles, § 458, 2." This section on the participle deserves quoting, as throwing some light on the statement just quoted concerning the infinitive. In § 458, under the heading "Objective," we read in (2): "Definitive after verbs of motion: *com ridende*, 'came riding' (Hom., 2, 134); *com gangende* (Matt., XIV, 25, and often); *cwom gefered* (Sal., 178; perhaps never exactly the Germ. *kam gegangen*); *wind wedende færeð* (El., 1274); *ðurhwunedon acsiende*, 'they continued asking' (John, VIII, 7)." <sup>2</sup> It may be, however, that Professor March, by his translation of *fleon gewat* as "he went to fly"

<sup>1</sup> *Englische Grammatik* (1865), Vol. III, pp. 16-17; my quotation is from the third ed. (1880).

<sup>2</sup> Of these examples only the first two seem to me strictly analogous in use with the infinitive under discussion. *Gefered* is excluded as being a past participle; *wedende* is more a participial adverb than an adverbial participle, as I have tried to show in my *The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, p. 275; while *acsiende* is in sense utterly different from the infinitives like *gangan*, *fleogan*, etc.

intends to imply that ultimately *fleon* denotes purpose, though the probability of such an implication is somewhat weakened by his adding immediately " = he flew away," as also by his translation of the other infinitives above. In a word, he seems to consider the infinitive modal in use.

Quite similar to the statement of C. F. Koch is that of Theodor Müller, in his *Angelsächsische Grammatik* (1883), p. 247: "Der reine Inf. steht . . . c) nach Verben der Bewegung, um den Zweck der Bewegung auszudrücken; zuweilen auch um die Art und Weise der Bewegung näher zu bezeichnen, im letzteren Falle das Part. Praes. vertretend: Gewat ða neosian . . . hean huses, Beow. 115; he com gangan, Beow. 710 (cf. Koch, II, 55)."

The view of Dr. Steig is given in his discussion of *kuman*, in his article "Ueber den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altniederdeutschen" (1884): "Bei *kuman* scheint die Infinitiv-Construction besonders beliebt gewesen zu sein. Indess ist eine doppelte Gebrauchsweise wohl zu unterscheiden: Erstens wird nämlich dem Verbum *kuman* pleonastisch der Infinitiv eines Verbs der Bewegung beigefügt; ähnlich bei Homer, z. B. ἔβη ἵμεν, ἔβη θέειν u. dgl. m."<sup>1</sup> He then cites examples, of which I quote only one, *Heliand* 503: *tho quam en uuif gangan*. The second use of the infinitive after *kuman* is, as Steig indicates, purely final.

Quite similar is the view of Dr. Pratje, in his "Syntax des Heliand" (1885), § 142, which is headed "Einfacher Infinitiv, abhängig von Verben der Bewegung:" "Man kann zwischen dem phraseologischen, oder, wie Steig es ausdrückt, pleonastischen und dem finalen Gebrauch des Infinitiv unterscheiden." He then gives illustrations of these two uses of the infinitive with various verbs of motion. But neither he nor Steig expresses a definite opinion as to the origin of the phraseological (or pleonastic) infinitive.

Of the same import is the statement of Dr. Karl Köhler, who, in his dissertation, *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs und Particips im "Beowulf"* (1886), p. 29, declares that the infinitive expresses "entweder die Weise der Bewegung oder eine sie begleitende Handlung."

Dr. B. Schrader, in his *Studien zur Ælfricschen Syntax* (1887), p. 70, attributes to the infinitive the modal use: "Um bei Verben der Bewegung die Art derselben zu bezeichnen, wird im älteren ae. [= A. S.] stets der einfache Inf. gebraucht (*he com gangan*)."

Dr. Sweet's statement, in his *Anglo-Saxon Reader* (1894), p. lxxxiv, is brief, and non-committal as to the origin of the idiom: "The infinitive is often used in poetry after a verb of motion where we should use the present participle: *ða com inn gan ealdor ðegna*, 'the prince of thanes came walking in' (20.394)."

Professor C. A. Smith seems to think that the infinitive is primarily modal in sense. In his *Anglo-Saxon Grammar* (1898), p. 138, in commenting on *Beowulf*, l. 651 (*scaduhelma gesceapu scriðan cwoman*), he expresses himself as follows: "The student will note that the infinitive (*scriðan*) is here employed as a present participle after a verb of motion (*cwoman*). This construction with *kuman* is frequent in prose and poetry. The infinitive expresses the kind of motion: *ic com drifan* = 'I came driving.'"

Dr. Wülffing's statement, in his *Syntax* (1900), II, p. 194, is as follows: "Der Infinitiv bezeichnet die Art und Weise der Bewegung oder eine gleichzeitige Handlung, als Vertreter eines Partizips. Diese in der Poesie so überaus häufige Redewendung habe ich bei Ælfred nur zweimal bei *cuman* gefunden."

<sup>1</sup> Steig, l. c., p. 337.

He then quotes *Bede* 619.23 and *Boethius* 6.9, and refers to Mätzner, to Schrader, and to an article by himself in *Englische Studien*, Vol. XIX, 1894, pp. 118-119. In this last article, in reviewing A. Müller's *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedichte von der Judith* (a Leipzig dissertation of 1892), Dr. Wülfing discusses the origin of the infinitive with *gehen* in such expressions as *essen gehen*, *sitzen gehen*, *stehen gehen*, *schlafen gehen*, *liegen gehen*, particularly in modern Niederdeutsch (*liggen gan* = 'sich legen;,' *lophen gan* = 'weglaufen;,' *stan gan* = 'sich stellen'), and concludes: "Sicher ist die Beziehung des Zweckes in diesen Infinitiven bei *gan* das ursprüngliche, später aber verwischte sich die Bezeichnung des Zweckes mit der der Gleichzeitigkeit, und das Ganze wurde zu einer pleonastischen Umschreibung; ob dies aber schon in ags. Zeit der Fall war, lässt sich bezweifeln."

In his *The Expression of Purpose in Old English Prose* (1903), p. 13, Professor Shearin thus comments on the idiom: "There is met four times, in the prose of the early period, the infinitive of a verb of motion after another verb of like kind, used pleonastically to express manner of motion."

Professor Strunk, in his *Juliana* (1904), thus comments on *cwom blican*, ll. 563-564: "A common idiom in O. E. poetry: a verb of motion followed by a complementary infinitive," a definition which seems to hark back to the statement of Grimm given below.

The most recent expressions of opinion as to the nature of the idiom that I have seen are by Dr. Kenyon, in his *The Syntax of the Infinitive in Chaucer* (1909), and by Dr. Riggert, in his *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs in der Altenglischen Poesie* (1909). Says the former, *l. c.*, p. 6: "As in O. E., so sometimes in Chaucer, the simple infinitive with verbs of motion represents a simultaneous action, denoting the manner or specifying the nature of the governing verb. Cf. *Beow.* 711: *ða com of more under misthleoðum Grendel gongan* (K[öhler], p. 31)." Dr. Riggert, *l. c.*, pp. 38 ff., lists the examples of our idiom under this heading: "Der Infinitiv bezeichnet die Art und Weise der Bewegung oder eine gleichzeitige Handlung." He adds: "Der Infinitiv, der die Art und Weise der Bewegung ausdrückt, enthält ein Verbum, das mit dem Verbum Finitum sinn-verwandt ist; in Ausdrücken wie *gewat him ða Andreas gangan* steht der Infinitiv rein pleonastisch."

But, while helpful, none of these more modern statements are so helpful as this brief statement by Grimm: "Ferner stehn die Verba *gehen*, *fahren*, *kommen* auxiliärisch mit dem blossen Inf."<sup>1</sup> Grimm then cites numerous examples of the uninflected infinitive after these and similar verbs of motion in the various Germanic languages, among the rest (p. 108) in Anglo-Saxon. In the last, as in the other Germanic languages illustrated by Grimm, sometimes the infinitive is clearly final (as in *Beow.* 1601 (Grimm's reading): *gewat him secan*) and sometimes predicative (as in *Gen.* 1471: *gewat fleogan*).

Personally I believe that the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion was originally final in sense in Anglo-Saxon, a use of the uninflected infinitive very common in the poems and not unknown in the prose. Later the principal verb of motion faded down to a mere auxiliary (whence Grimm speaks of the use of the finite verb of motion as auxiliary, as already stated), and the infinitive after this verb of motion came to complete the sense of this verb of incomplete sense when used as an auxiliary: thus, to take again the example cited by

<sup>1</sup> Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 107.

Professor March, *fleon gewat* first meant "he went (in order) to fly," or "he tended to fly," and finally merely "he flew." How close the border line is between the final infinitive and the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon, and how easily the former may pass into the latter, may be made clear by a few illustrations, I believe. Take this sentence from the *Læceboc*, edited by Dr. Leonhardi, 68.29: *Sume aþwan leaƿ sellað, ðonne mon wile slapan gan*; or this from *Beowulf*, 239: *ðus brontne ceol ofer lagustræte lædan cwomon?* or these from *Genesis*: — 1774: *Ða com leaƿ gode on ða eðelturf idesa lædan*; 1746: *Gewit ðu nu feras 7 ðine fare lædan, ceapas to cnosle*; 1767: *Him ða Abraham gewat æhte lædan on Egipta eðelmeorce*. The infinitive in each of these sentences may be considered either as final or as predicative, though it now seems to me to lean slightly more to the former use in the passages in question. But, in most of the examples cited as predicative in Anglo-Saxon, the final sense has well nigh completely faded away from the infinitive; the infinitive seems to carry the chief idea in the verb phrase; and the principal verb seems to have become a mere auxiliary; for which reason it has seemed to me best to call this the predicative use of the uninflected infinitive after a verb of motion which has faded into an auxiliary, as has long been the habit in characterizing the infinitive after (*w*)*uton*. This seems more nearly in accord with the facts than to consider that the infinitive has faded, and that the finite verb carries the sense of the verbal phrase, as do those who call the infinitive pleonastic; or than to consider that neither finite verb nor infinitive has faded, as apparently do those who call the infinitive either modal or co-ordinate.

This development of the verb of motion into an auxiliary and of the final infinitive into a predicative infinitive, here postulated as a fact for the Anglo-Saxon, is supported by what we learn of similar constructions in the kindred languages, especially in the Germanic languages. Thus, the infinitives *θέειν* and *ἔμειν*, cited from Homer by Dr. Steig and by Dr. Shearin, are considered final by Goodwin, in his *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses of the Greek Verb*, § 772. Grimm's numerous examples prove that such may have been the evolution in High German with verbs of rest; and Dr. Wülfing holds that such has been the case in Low German as a whole after verbs of motion, a fact already illustrated in this section for Old Saxon. Again, this explanation is in line with Grimm's explanation of the High Germanic *kam gelaufen*.<sup>1</sup> For further details as to the idiom in the Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section v.

More than this: as we have tried to show, this theory comes nearest to explaining the numerous infinitives after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon poetry and prose, whether final or predicative. It corresponds to the well nigh universally accepted belief that the infinitive after (*w*)*uton* in Anglo-Saxon was originally final in sense, but early in Anglo-Saxon times became predicative, as will be seen in the chapter on this idiom. It tallies with the development of the infinitive with *to* in Modern English after verbs of motion, as in *I went to sleep* = 'I slept,' etc.

Finally, that the Latin had no influence in the development of this use, is evident from the fact that, in the very few examples of the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion in the Anglo-Saxon translations, no such infinitive occurs in the Latin original.

<sup>1</sup> See Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 9.

This theory as to the origin of the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion seems applicable likewise to the predicative infinitive after verbs of rest, — a construction very rare in Anglo-Saxon (only four examples occur), but not uncommon in the High Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section v.

## VI. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH “(W)UTON.”<sup>1</sup>

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

As stated incidentally in the preceding section, the predicative infinitive after *(w)uton* was probably originally final in sense, as in the case of the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion in general. The purpose idea faded away, and the infinitive came to be complementary instead of final in sense. This view is generally accepted, and has been several times expressed by others, as by Professor C. A. Smith<sup>2</sup> and by Professor Shearin.<sup>3</sup> Not quite so definite is the statement of Professor Eienkel: “*gon* mit reinem Infinitiv ist entweder auxiliär und periphrastisch und zwar in den Fällen, in denen es dem AE. *wutan*, *utan* entspricht, also in der 1. Person Pluralis steht: *go we then soupe, quod he*, III, 16; . . . oder es ist Begriffsverbum und der abhängige Infinitiv hat, wie oben bei *gon to*, nur eine etwas schwächere, finale Bedeutung: *Go brynge hir forth and put hir in hir warde*, III, 81.”<sup>4</sup>

The idea of motion fades away in *(w)uton*, and it becomes equal to the modern *let* as an exhortation.

The infrequency of the construction in Anglo-Saxon poetry, where less than fifty examples are found, and in Alfred, where about twenty-five examples are found, was noted above, Chapter VI, p. 93. No example occurs in the *Chronicle*, but the construction is frequent in Ælfric, and very frequent in Wulfstan.

In the Anglo-Saxon translations, *(w)uton* plus an infinitive usually<sup>5</sup> renders a Latin adhortative subjunctive corresponding in sense to the Anglo-Saxon infinitive. In a few instances, however, the Latin has an adhortative verb of motion in addition, as in Ælf. *Hept.: Gen.* 37.20<sup>b</sup>: *Uton hine ofslean* and *don hine on ðone . . . pytt* and *secgan* = *Venite, occidamus eum et mittamus in cisternam veterem! dicamusque*. All examples observed of this use of *veni* and of *venite* are given in a note to Chapter VI, p. 95; as are, also, the Anglo-Saxon imitations of the same. While, as indicated in the preceding paragraphs, I believe the *(w)uton* construction to be of native English origin, it is impossible to resist the belief that its great vogue in Anglo-Saxon is in no small measure due to Latin influence. This belief rests not only on the statement just given as to the Latin correspondents in the Anglo-Saxon prose translations, but on the further fact that only four examples of the infinitive with *wuton* have been found in *Beowulf*, and that most of the remaining examples in Anglo-Saxon poetry occur in poems known to be based on Latin originals (*Gen.*, 3; *Chr.*, 4; *And.*, 1; *Ps.*, 14; *Minor Poems*, 16).

Concerning the predicative infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section vi.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter VI, p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> Shearin, *l. c.*, p. 12.

<sup>3</sup> About 76 times out of a total of 94 examples. The other correspondents are: an appositive participle, 1; an imperative, 1; no Latin, 15.

<sup>4</sup> In his explanation of *uton* in his *An Old English Grammar*, p. 184.

<sup>5</sup> Eienkel, *l. c.*, p. 238.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

As to the origin of the passive infinitive as complement to (*w*)*uton*, I cannot speak with certainty, as only three examples occur, all in Ælfric.

VII. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH "BEON" ("WESAN").<sup>1</sup>

## A. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES NECESSITY.

As to the inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denoting necessity and passive in sense, it seems to me highly probable that, in Anglo-Saxon, the construction was first suggested by the Latin, because:—

1. Only ten examples in all have been found in the poems (*S. & S.* 54: *to begonganne*; *Seizure and Death of Alfred* 13: *to gelyfenne*; *Rid.* 42.8: *to geðencanne*; *Rid.* 29.12 and 32.23: *to hycganne*; *Met.* 21.42: *to metanne*; *Gu.* 502 and 510: *to secganne*; *And.* 1481: *to secganne*; and *Ps.* 77.10: *to wenanne*); of which examples the majority come from poems known to be based on Latin originals (*Met.*, *And.*, *Gu.*, and *Ps.*). Three examples come from a poem (the *Riddles*) believed<sup>2</sup> to be by an author, Cynewulf, some of whose works are known to be based on Latin originals. As to the other two poems concerned, *Salomo and Saturnus* and the *Seizure and Death of Alfred*, although the direct source of the former has not been discovered, the poem is believed to be based on Latin originals;<sup>3</sup> and the second poem occurs in the later part of the *Chronicle*. Again, in three of the ten examples the same infinitive, *to secganne*, occurs, while two others show *to hycganne*; and all of the words so used in the poems occur also in the prose, most of them in direct translation of the Latin periphrastic conjugation. In the face of these facts, no one, I think, will claim that this construction is organic in Anglo-Saxon poetry.

2. Although, as we have seen already, the construction is very common in Early West Saxon, still, in Alfred and in Wærferth, out of a total of about 552 examples, 478 correspond to the Latin periphrastic conjugation (either complete, 445; or elliptical, 33) made up of *sum* and the gerundive; while 29 others correspond to Latin locutions of similar form or meaning (*ad* + a gerund (1), *ad* + a gerundive (3), an adjective in *-bilis* (2), *debeo* + an infinitive (5), a gerundive in the genitive (1), *dignum* + an ablative (2), *possum* + a passive infinitive (1), *sum* + an infinitive (2); *licet* + an infinitive (1);— and less closely akin: an accusative and a passive infinitive (1), a passive indicative (8), or a passive subjunctive (2)). I believe, therefore, that the inflected infinitive of necessity or obligation in Anglo-Saxon was first suggested by, and was used normally in translation of, the Latin passive periphrastic conjugation, though it was occasionally suggested by the other Latin locutions of kindred signification above named.

3. Nor is the induction of 2 invalidated, I think, by the fact that we have about forty-five infinitives in Early West Saxon not yet accounted for by the Latin originals. Of these forty-five, seven (*Bede* 88.23: *cweðan*; 128.13: *don*;

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter VII, p. 97.

<sup>2</sup> The claims of Cynewulf to the authorship of the *Riddles* has been much strengthened by Dr. F. Tupper. Jr.'s recent article, "The Cynewulfian Runes of the First Riddle," in *Modern Language Notes* for December, 1910.

<sup>3</sup> See Vincenti, *l. c.*, pp. 122 ff.

234.13: *geliefan*; 334.30: *secgan*; *Boeth.* 16.19: *ðencan*; *Greg.* 249.7: *habban*; 377.22: *ongietan*) correspond to an active subjunctive, which may suggest obligation or necessity.<sup>1</sup> While four (*Bede* 230.21: *ongietan*; *Boeth.* 64.18: *tælan*; *Boeth.* 64.19: *herian*; *Greg.* 455.28: *gieman*) correspond to a present indicative, each infinitive except *tælan* is one that has elsewhere occurred in translation of a Latin periphrastic conjugation; besides, such differences naturally arise owing to the difference in point of view of translator and of author. Two (*Boeth.* 113.14: *lufian*; 127.25 (?): *læran*) are loose periphrases of the Latin text. Of the 32 infinitives occurring without any Latin correspondent (*arian*: *Boeth.* 72.25, 27<sup>a</sup>;—*biddan*: *Solil.* 30.8;—*cyðan*: *Greg.* 287.3, 311.14;—*don*: *Bede* 72.26;—*geðencan*: *Boeth.* 52.2, 76.1; *Greg.* 29.6;—*ginnan*: *Boeth.* 90.13;—*herian*: *Boeth.* 69.3;—*læran*: *Greg.* 341.15;—*lufian*: *Boeth.* 108.21;—*manian*: *Greg.* 265.14;—*metan*: *Boeth.* 72.12;—*ondrædan*: *Greg.* 383.26;—*ongietan*: *Wærf.* 66.26, 245.21, 295.22, 322.25<sup>b</sup>;—*onscunian*: *Boeth.* 41.9;—*secgan*: *Boeth.* 41.3;—*sprecen*: *Wærf.* 263.6;—*tellan*: *Boeth.* 111.2;—*wenan*: *Boeth.* 37.30, 148.27;—*weorðian*: *Boeth.* 72.27<sup>a</sup>, 75.14; *Oros.* 126.32;—*wundrian*: *Boeth.* 72.27<sup>b</sup>; *Oros.* 34.31, 134.24), all, except *biddan*, *ginnan*, and *onscunian*, occur in Alfred and in Wærferth, in other places, in translations of the regular Latin correspondent, the periphrastic passive.

4. The construction is relatively rare in the more original Anglo-Saxon prose (*Chron.*, 4; *Laws*, 20; *Wulf.*, 34).

5. Save in this use with *beon* (*wesan*), the inflected infinitive is habitually active in sense.

6. The Latin gerundial periphrastic is often rendered otherwise than by the infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*).

7. Originally, no doubt, the inflected infinitive with the verb *beon* (*wesan*) denoted purpose, and the purpose idea passed into that of necessity, as has several times been conjectured. The most detailed statement of this view is that by Dr. Tanger, in his interesting article, "Englisch *to be to* im Vergleich mit *I shall*:" "Was bedeutet nun *to be* mit folgendem Infinitiv eigentlich? An eine Ergänzung von *obliged* (*to be obliged to do a thing*), wie sie früher öfters (so noch in Rauchs Rep. Gr., § 148) angenommen wurde, ist nicht zu denken, denn *to be obliged* heisst *müssen* und nicht *sollen*, und ferner schliessen ja auch die *ae.* Beispiele, die schon vorhanden waren, ehe *oblige* ins Englische aufgenommen wurde, eine solche Erklärung aus. Wir haben es hier vielmehr wohl mit der grundbegrifflichen Bedeutung von *to be* = 'da sein, existieren' zu thun. Die darauf folgende Präposition *to* deutet für die Verbindung auf einen Grundbegriff des Zweckes hin (vgl. Koch-Zup. II, § 78<sup>bb</sup>), wie wenn wir sagen: wir sind *da* oder existieren zum Arbeiten und zum Kämpfen. Aus diesem Zweckbegriff ergeben sich unschwer die anderen Schattierungen des Geeignetseins (es ist zum Lachen, zum Weinen, es ist zu bedauern, zu bewundern) und des Bestimmtheits (das ist zum Aufbewahren, zum Wegwerfen). Von hier gelangen wir leicht zu den weiteren Bedeutungen der Obliegenheit, Verpflichtung, Nötigung, d. h. zur Notwendigkeit, zum Sollen: *I am to stay at home*. Unsere Konstruktion bedeutet also ursprünglich: jemand oder etwas ist vorhanden (geeignet, bestimmt) zur Ausführung einer Thätigkeit (resp. zum Befinden in einem Zustande)."<sup>2</sup> This view of Dr. Tanger's is substantially the one held

<sup>1</sup> See Hale and Buck, *l. c.*, pp. 270-271; and Hale, *l. c.*, pp. 424-425.

<sup>2</sup> Tanger, *l. c.*, pp. 312-313.

by Dr. Shearin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 26, and by Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 133. No opinion as to the origin of the idiom is expressed by Dr. Farrar, Dr. K. Köhler, Dr. Jost, or Dr. Riggert.

In the kindred Germanic languages the origin was probably the same as in Anglo-Saxon: see Chapter XVI, section vii.

The inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denoting necessity or obligation and active in sense is, likewise, in all probability due to the Latin periphrastic passive conjugation, and for substantially the same reasons as those given in the discussion of the Anglo-Saxon inflected infinitive passive in sense. No example of this infinitive used in an active sense occurs in the poems; with one exception (*Boeth.* 44.20: Forðæm hit *nīs* no to *metanne* ðæt geendodlice wið ðæt ungeendodlice = 46.57: infiniti uero atque finiti nulla unquam poterit esse collatio) the infinitive in Alfred<sup>1</sup> corresponds each time to the Latin passive periphrastic (complete or elliptical), while the single example in *Wærferth* (340.29: *warnian*) corresponds to *ad* + a gerundive. If it should seem odd that the Latin passive periphrastic should suggest the active as well as the passive use of the inflected infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, the explanation seems to be this: in one instance (*Bede* 224.19, quoted in Chapter VII, p. 103) the active use comes from a too close following of the Latin accusative and periphrastic infinitive (*Deum potius intellegendum*); in some instances (as in *Greg.* 125.13, 187.15; *Pr. Gu.* III. 63), the fact that the Latin gerundive precedes the verb *sum* in the periphrastic conjugation has led the Anglo-Saxon translator to put the inflected infinitive first in his translation, to consider it active in sense, and consequently to put what is the subject nominative in Latin into the objective case (accusative, genitive, or dative) in Anglo-Saxon; in a word, in these latter cases the precedence of the infinitive (or occasionally of the finite verb, as in *Læce.* 68.30) seems to lead to the objectifying of the noun. This same principle of precedence may in part account for the active use in the examples from *Ælfric*, from the prose *Guthlac*, and from the *Læceboc*. But occasionally (as in *Mart.* 72.25 and *Læce.* 76.33 — with which latter, however, compare *Læce.* 63.37, in which the infinitive has precedence —) the infinitive is active in sense though it follows its object. — That *ad* + a gerundive should be translated actively (as in *Wærf.* 340.29) is what we should expect; but this is the only instance in which it is so translated: normally it is rendered by an inflected infinitive passive in sense. — The fact that the same form, *-ndus*, in Latin could be used actively or passively in all probability contributed to the double use of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon; as may, also, the fact that in other uses than with *beon* (*wesan*) the inflected infinitive is habitually active in sense in Anglo-Saxon.

## B. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES FUTURITY.

The inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denoting futurity corresponds regularly to the Latin periphrastic conjugation made up of *sum* + the future active participle in all the examples from the Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin given in Chapter VII, pp. 104 ff. above. The construction occurs but once in Alfred (*Bede* 224.26), and translates the Latin active periphrastic; is unknown in the poems, in the *Chronicle*, in the *Laws*, and in *Wulfstan*; is relatively frequent in the *Gospels*, where every occurrence corresponds to the

<sup>1</sup> The same is true of *Pr. Gu.* III, 63, but not of *Pr. Gu.* V, 58; for both of which, see Chapter VII, pp. 104 and 102 above.



Latin active periphrastic; and is very rare in Ælfric. I think, therefore, that we are justified in concluding that in Anglo-Saxon the inflected infinitive denoting futurity is due to Latin influence. I wish to add, however, that, as said earlier, there is at times room for difference of opinion as to whether an infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) is present or future in sense; but that, in Chapter VII, pp. 104 f. above, I have given all the instances in which the infinitive seemed to me clearly to denote futurity.

The inflected infinitive of futurity in the other Germanic languages, likewise, is probably due to Latin influence: see Chapter XVI, section vii.

### C. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES PURPOSE.

The inflected infinitive with *beon* (*wesan*) denoting purpose, in all of the few examples occurring in the Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin (given in Chapter VII, pp. 105 f.), corresponds to *ad* + a gerundive (or occasionally *ad* + a gerund) except in *Greg.* 131.21, in which it corresponds to a Latin complementary infinitive. One example only is found in the poems (*Gen.* 703), which is doubtful because of a defective text. It seems probable, therefore, that these inflected infinitives of purpose are here due to the Latin.

Concerning the infinitive of purpose with *be* in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section vii.

## VIII. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT.<sup>1</sup>

### AS OBJECT.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

##### I. UNINFLECTED.

It is not my purpose to give a survey of the various theories concerning the ultimate origin of the predicative infinitive with accusative subject in the Indo-Germanic languages; for an excellent survey has recently been given by Dr. Jacob Zeitlin in his dissertation, *The Accusative with Infinitive and Some Kindred Constructions in English* (1908), pp. 1–12. I merely wish to state that, with Dr. Zeitlin, I have long thought that the theory first suggested by Curtius and later amplified by Professors Brugmann and Delbrück comes nearest to solving the problem. Professor Brugmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, § 807, thus states the theory:—

“Ein bestimmtes Subjekt der Inf.-Handlung brauchte nicht vorhanden zu sein, ihr Subjekt konnte aber das Subjekt des regierenden Verbums sein oder ein zu diesem gehöriger Dat. oder Akk.

“Der letzte Fall, z. B. ai. *tvām indra srāvitavā apās kah*, ‘du, I., hast die Wasser fließen machen,’ gr. *θωρήξαι ἐκέλευε . . . Ἀχαιούς*, ‘heiss ihn wappnen die A.,’ gab die Grundlage für die Konstruktion des Acc. c. Inf. ab, wie sie das Griech., Ital., und teilweise das Germ. aufweisen. Der ursprünglich zu dem transit. Verbum gehörige Akk. wurde als Subjekt zum Inf. gezogen, eine Verschiebung der syntaktischen Gliederung, die zumteil sicher durch die Analogie zu abhängigen Sätzen mit selbständigem Subjekt hervorgerufen worden ist (vgl. etwa *ich sah ihn fliehen* = *ich sah*, [dass] *er floh*). Als dann eigneten sich auch Verba, die einen Objektsakk. nicht zu sich nahmen, diese Konstruktion an, z. B. hom. *ὅς σε εἶκε κακὸν ὥς δειδισσέσθαι*, ‘nicht ziemt es sich, dass du verzagst,’ lat. *gaudeo te valere*, got. *jah warþ afslauþnan allans*, ‘καὶ ἐγένετο θάμβος ἐπὶ πάντας.’ Vgl. § 815 über die absoluten Partizipialkonstruktionen.”

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, pp. 107 ff.

If, for the moment, we assume that the Anglo-Saxon developed the predicative infinitive with accusative subject for itself instead of merely inheriting it or borrowing it, it is easy to see a development parallel to that indicated by Professor Brugmann in the older Indo-Germanic languages going on in Anglo-Saxon itself, or, rather, to see what appear to be traces of such a development. For instance, despite the frequency of the infinitive with accusative subject in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of commanding (*hatan*, etc.) and of causing and permitting (*letan*, etc.), the infinitive without a subject accusative was far more frequent after *hatan* than the infinitive with a subject accusative, and was quite frequent with *letan*. Moreover, when the infinitives following these two groups of verbs have an accusative with them in the Germanic languages, the relation between accusative and infinitive, to many Germanic grammarians (among them the great Grimm<sup>1</sup>), seems so loose that they hold that the accusative is to be considered, not as the subject of the infinitive, but solely as the object of the finite verb, — a view that, though in my opinion not tenable, is enlightening in calling attention as it does to the looser<sup>2</sup> union between infinitive and accusative after these two groups of verbs than after other groups, as after verbs of mental perception. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon the infinitive without subject accusative is more common after *hieran*, 'hear,' than with subject. In a word, it seems to me that a careful study of the two constructions after these three groups of verbs in Anglo-Saxon lends considerable strength to the Brugmann theory as to the origin of the infinitive with accusative subject; and that we may consider that this theory likewise applies to Anglo-Saxon as a whole unless it can be shown that this idiom is merely an importation, say, from the Latin.

Is the infinitive with accusative subject in Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin, either in part or in whole? In attempting to answer this question, first purely from a consideration of the idiom in Anglo-Saxon, it will be best to consider group by group the verbs followed by an infinitive with accusative subject.

### 1. Verbs of Commanding.<sup>3</sup>

To begin with the most frequently used group, verbs of commanding (*bebeodan*, *biddan*, *forbeodan*, and *hatan*), it seems to me that, with the exception of *forbeodan* (of which we have only one example<sup>4</sup> followed by the infinitive with accusative subject, that in direct translation of the Latin), we are precluded from assuming that the predicative infinitive is due to the influence of the Latin originals, and for the following reasons: —

1. With each of the three remaining verbs the infinitive with accusative subject is found freely in the poetical as well as in the prose texts, with two of the verbs (*bebeodan* and *biddan*) more freely in the poetry than in the prose, though not in *Beowulf*.

2. That, while a goodly number of the examples in the Anglo-Saxon prose translations are in direct translation of the accusative and infinitive in the Latin originals, a not inconsiderable number are not, but correspond to various other constructions in the Latin.

<sup>1</sup> *L. c.*, IV, pp. 129 ff. Among those that have adopted this view of Grimm's I may mention T. Müller and Dr. Riggert.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 36-37.

<sup>4</sup> Cited in Chapter VIII, p. 109.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 107.

The Latin correspondents are:—for *bebeodan*: a noun in the accusative, 2;—for *bidan*: an accusative and active infinitive, 1;—for *hatan*: an accusative and infinitive (active, 30; passive, 5); a dative and infinitive, 3; an active infinitive as retained object, 3; a co-ordinated finite verb, active, 15; a subordinated finite verb, active, 4; an appositive participle (active present, in the nominative, 3; passive in the accusative, 1); an absolute participle, passive, 1; a gerund in the ablative, 1; *ad* + a gerund, 1; a noun in the accusative, 1; two nouns, 1; an adverb, 1; no Latin, 16.

## 2. Verbs of Causing and of Permitting.<sup>1</sup>

In verbs of causing and of permitting (*alætan*, *biegan* [*began*], *don*, *forlætan*, *gedon*, *geðafian*, *geðolian*, *geunnan*, *lætan*, and *niedan*), all, except *lætan* and its compound, *forlætan*, occur with a predicative infinitive so seldom as to make trustworthy conclusions concerning any of the words except *lætan* and *forlætan* difficult, if not impossible.

The probability seems to be, however, that *alætan*, occurring only twice, in the poems, is in no wise due to Latin influence.

*Began* [*biegan*] is followed by the accusative and infinitive only once (*Ps.* 143.14), and there the infinitive corresponds to a Latin appositive participle. See the statements concerning *don* and *niedan*.

The only instance in Early West Saxon (*Bede* 98.27<sup>b</sup>) of *don* followed by the accusative and infinitive is in translation of the same idiom in Latin, as is also true of the one example in the *Laws*; the only example in poetry is from the metrical *Psalms*; while the remaining examples are from Late West Saxon (*Ælfric* and *Wulfstan*). Latin influence is, therefore, highly probable in the case of *don*.

*Gedon* occurs only twice (once each in *Bl. Hom.* and in *Ælf. L. S.*), and, like *don*, is doubtless ultimately due to Latin influence.

*Geðafian*, occurring only four times (*Bl. Hom.*, 1 doubtful example; *Ælfric*, 3), is possibly indirectly due to Latin influence.

*Geðolian* is clearly due to Latin influence in the only example found (in the *Laws*), the Latin occurring by the side of the Anglo-Saxon.

*Geunnan* occurs only once (*Ælf. Æthelw.*), and is followed by what may indifferently be considered an accusative with predicative infinitive or a dative with objective infinitive. In either case, Latin influence is probable, the Latin having *concedas* followed by a dative and objective infinitive.

In the one example found of *niedan* (*Mk.* 6.45), the Anglo-Saxon accusative and infinitive translate the same idiom of the Latin.

As to both *lætan* and its compound, *forlætan*, Latin influence is out of the question; for, as our examples given above (pp. 110 ff.) show, the accusative-and-infinitive construction with each occurs frequently in the poetry, and in the prose translations often occurs when the accusative with infinitive is not found in the Latin original.

The correspondents in Latin are:—for *forlætan*: an accusative and infinitive (active, 2; passive, 1); an active infinitive as retained object, 1; a co-ordinated finite verb, active, 2; a predicative participle, passive, accusative, 1; no Latin, 1;—for *lætan*: an accusative and active infinitive, 38; a dative and active infinitive, 1; a complementary infinitive, active, to an auxiliary verb, 1; an active infinitive as retained object, 1; a subjective infinitive, active, 1; an active infinitive as predicate nominative, 1; a co-ordinated finite verb (active, 23;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 108.

passive, 1); a subordinated finite verb (active, 9; passive, 1); a gerundive in the accusative, 1; an appositive participle, passive, nominative, 1; a loose paraphrase, 1; doubtful, 1; no Latin, 16.

To sum up this group, the predicative infinitive with *lætan* and its compounds, *alætan* and *forlætan*, shows no trace of Latin influence; with all the other verbs of the group it shows appreciable traces of such influence.

### 3. Verbs of Sense Perception.<sup>1</sup>

As to the verbs of sense perception (*behealdan*, *gefelan*, *gehawian*, *gehieran*, *geseon*, *hieran*, *ofseon*, *sceawian*, and *seon*), with the exception of *hieran* and *seon* and their compounds, we have too few examples of them followed by the accusative-with-infinitive construction to draw confident conclusions.

*Behealdan* is found but once, in *Ælfric*, followed by an accusative and infinitive.

*Gefelan* is in each of its two occurrences (*Bede*, 1; *Wærƿ.*, 1) due to Latin influence.

*Gehawian*, occurring once, in *Wærƿ.*, is due to the Latin original.

*Sceawian*, occurring twice, in *Wærƿ.*, is likewise due to Latin influence.

On the contrary, *hieran* and its compound (*gehieran*) and *seon* and its compound<sup>2</sup> (*geseon*) show little or no trace of Latin influence, occurring with the accusative and infinitive frequently in poetry, and in the prose translations often not having the accusative and infinitive in the Latin originals.

The Latin correspondents are:— for *gehieran*: an accusative and infinitive (active, 11; passive, 1); a predicative present participle, accusative, 3; a loose paraphrase, 1;— for *geseon*: an accusative and infinitive (active, 51; passive, 2); an active infinitive as retained object, 6; a subjective infinitive, active, 1; a predicative participle (nominative: active, 3; accusative: active, 29; passive, 4); an appositive participle, passive, nominative, 1; an absolute participle (active, 1; passive, 1); a co-ordinated finite verb, active, 3; a subordinated finite verb, active, 4; a predicate noun in the accusative, 1; a prepositional phrase, 1; a gerundive in the nominative, 1; no Latin, 8;— for *hieran*: an accusative and active infinitive, 1;— for *ofseon*: 0;— for *seon*: 0.

In all probability, therefore, the accusative with infinitive after *hieran* and *seon* and their compounds is not due to Latin influence; but this idiom after all other verbs of sense perception in Anglo-Saxon (except *behealdan*) is probably due to Latin influence.

### 4. Verbs of Mental Perception.<sup>3</sup>

In the verbs of mental perception (*æteawan*, *afindan*, *eowan*, *findan*, *geacsian*, *gecyðan*, *gefrignan*, *gehatan*, *gehyhtan*, *geliefan*, *gemetan*, *gemittan*, *gemunan*, *getriewan*, *gewitan*, *leran*, *onfindan*, *ongietan*, *tali(g)an*, *tellan*, *wenan*, and *witan*), again, a number of words occur so seldom with the predicative infinitive as to make deductions difficult concerning them.

*Æteawan*, found only once, in *Bede*, has an accusative and an infinitive that are clearly due to the Latin original.

Of *afindan* all we can say with certainty is that the idiom occurs with it once only, in *A. S. Hom. & L. S.* In all probability, what is said below of the simplex, *findan*, is true of the compound, *afindan*.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 108.

<sup>3</sup> *Ofseon* occurs only once in this construction (in *Ælf. Hom.*).

*Eowan*, occurring once, in *Wærf.*, is due to the Latin original.

The predicative infinitive with *findan* is not due to Latin influence, for in the translations it corresponds to another idiom of the original (a predicative past participle, accusative, once), and is more frequent in poetry (7 examples, 5 in *Beowulf*) than in prose (3 examples).

*Geacsian* with accusative and infinitive is found twice each in the *Blickling Homilies* and in *Wulfstan*. Whether or not the idiom is due to Latin influence, cannot be decided.

In the single example of *gecyðan*, in *Wærf.*, the accusative and infinitive translate the same idiom of the Latin original.

The idiom with *gefrignan* is undoubtedly native, occurring only in poetry, there forty-one times, and being widely distributed.

With *gehatan* the idiom is probably due to Latin influence, two examples occurring in direct translation of the Latin, and a third example, though itself corresponding to a Latin ablative absolute, is perhaps suggested by a neighboring accusative and infinitive of the Latin.

As to *gehyhtan*, occurring only once, in *Ælf. L. S.*, there is no need of supposing direct Latin influence, as by *Ælfric's* time the idiom had become common.

With *geliefan*, occurring only once, in *Wærf.*, the accusative and infinitive correspond to the same idiom in the Latin.

With *gemetan* and *gemittan* the idiom is doubtless native: both are found in poetry, the latter in poetry only; and the former has, in the Anglo-Saxon translations, various Latin correspondents (an accusative and infinitive (active, 3; passive, 1); a predicative present participle, accusative, 6; a predicative adjective, accusative, 1; an appositive participle, passive, accusative, 1).

With *gemunan* the idiom is doubtless due to Latin<sup>1</sup> influence: the verb is not found with this construction in the poetry; and in *Bede* and in *Wærferth* the accusative and infinitive correspond to the same idiom in Latin.

With *getriewan*, the idiom occurs only once, in *Bede*, and in direct translation of the Latin.

With *gewitan*, found only once, in *Andreas*, the construction is doubtless native, as with the simplex, *witan*, which see below.

As to *læran*, the examples (only four in all, in prose, given in Chapter VIII, p. 116) are too few to be decisive, but Latin influence is clear in two of the examples (*Bede*<sup>2</sup> and *Gospels*), in each of which we have the accusative and infinitive in the original. The other two examples occur in *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.*

With *onfindan*, found only once (in *Beow.*), the idiom is doubtless of native origin, as with the simplex, *findan*, which see.

With *ongietan*, found once in poetry (*Beow.*) and 6 times in prose, the idiom is probably due to Latin influence, translating, as it does, a Latin accusative and infinitive in each of the examples in *Bede* and in *Wærferth*.<sup>3</sup>

As to *tali(g)an*, found twice with this construction, in *Alexander*, I dare not venture an opinion.

With *tellan*, the sole example of the idiom, in *Bede*, is in direct translation of the Latin.

With *wenan*, the idiom is doubtless due to Latin influence, the single ex-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, pp. 369, 475.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 375.

<sup>3</sup> Except that once in the latter (*Wærf.* 285.1) it translates a noun in the accusative modified by a substantivized present participle in the genitive.

ample each in *Bede* and in *Wærferth* corresponding to the Latin accusative and infinitive.

With *witan*, the idiom is possibly native, as with the compound, *gewitan*: the accusative with infinitive after *witan* is more common in poetry (7 examples) than in prose (3 examples). It should be observed, however, that, in the two examples from *Bede*, the accusative with infinitive translates the same idiom in Latin; and that several of the poetic examples occur in poems based on Latin originals (*Ju.*, 1; *Gu.*, 1; *And.*, 1).

To sum up the matter: the predicative infinitive is probably native after these verbs: *afindan*, *findan*, *gefrignan*, *gehyhtan*, *gemetan*, *gemittan*, *gewitan*, *onfindan*, and *witan*; but the idiom is probably due to Latin influence after these verbs: *æteawan*, *eowan*, *gecyðan*, *gehatan*, *geliefan*, *gemunan*, *getriewan*, *læran*, *tellan*, and *wenan*. The data are insufficient to decide about the idiom after these verbs: *geacsian* and *tali(g)an*.

### 5. Verbs of Declaring.<sup>1</sup>

With verbs of declaring (*cweðan*, *foresecgan*, *ondettan*, and *secgan*) the accusative with infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is clearly due to Latin influence, translating, as it does, in each of the few examples the same construction in the Latin.

### 6. Other Verbs: "habban" and "todælan."

The origin of the idiom is indeterminable with *habban*, found only once, in *Ælf. Hom.*, and with *todælan*, found only twice, in *Oros*. Concerning the latter, see Chapter VIII, p. 118, and Chapter XII, p. 169.

To sum up the matter as a whole, the predicative infinitive with accusative subject is probably native with: (1) certain verbs of Commanding (*bebeodan*, *biddan*, and *hatan*); (2) certain verbs of Causing and Permitting (*lætan* and its compounds, *alætan* and *forlætan*); (3) certain verbs of Sense Perception (*hieran* and *seon*, and their compounds); (4) certain verbs of Mental Perception (*afindan*, *findan*, *gefrignan*, *gehyhtan*, *gemetan*, *gemittan*, *gewitan*, *onfindan*, and *witan*).

It is probably due more or less to foreign (Latin) influence with: (1) this verb of Commanding, *forbeodan*; (2) certain verbs of Causing and Permitting (*biegan* [*began*], *don*, *gedon*, *geðafian*, *geðolian*, *geunnan*, and *niedan*); (3) certain verbs of Sense Perception (*gefelan*, *geharwian*, *sceawian*); (4) certain verbs of Mental Perception (*æteawan*, *eowan*, *gecyðan*, *gehatan*, *geliefan*, *gemunan*, *getriewan*, *læran*, *ongietan*, *tellan*, and *wenan*); (5) all the verbs of Declaring represented (*cweðan*, *foresecgan*, *ondettan*, and *secgan*).

Its origin is indeterminable with: (1) this verb of Sense Perception, *behealdan*; (2) certain verbs of Mental Perception (*geacsian* and *tali(g)an*); (3) with certain Other Verbs (*habban* and *todælan*).

In the large, the foregoing result tallies with the conclusion reached by previous students of the construction. No investigation of the idiom covering the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature has hitherto been made so far as I am aware; and, in the limited investigations that have been published, for the most part little direct consideration of the question as to the origin of the con-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 108.

struction has been given. Still, a few noteworthy deliverances have been made.

One of the earliest statements is that by Dr. Ludwig Erckmann, in his *Infinitive and Gerund as a Means of Abbreviating Substantive Sentences in the English Language* (1875), p. 21: "The Gothic followed upon the whole the Greek use of the accusative c. inf., whilst the Anglo-Saxon seems to prefer the substantive sentence."

Dr. Carl Krickau, whose work deals primarily with the construction in Elizabethan times, in 1877 declared (p. 4) "dass diejenigen Anwendungen, welche beiden<sup>1</sup> verwandten Sprachgruppen gemeinsam sind, als die ältesten und ursprünglichsten zu betrachten sind. Als solche ergeben sich sein Gebrauch nach den Verben, welche 1) ein Bewirken, eine Bitte oder einen Befehl, 2) eine sinnliche Wahrnehmung ausdrücken. Das Angelsächsische, Altsächsische und Althochdeutsche zeigen nämlich, soweit ihre Quellen nicht durch das Lateinische beeinflusst sind, unsere Construction nur nach jenen beiden Classen von Verben. Was das Angelsächsische betrifft, so kommt sie nach folgenden Verben vor: *letan*, *don*, *biddan*, *beodan*, *bebeodan*, *hatan*; *seon*, *geseon*, *heran*, *hyran*, *gehyran*, *findan*, *gemetan*, *gemittan*, *fandian*, *afandian*."

In Theodor Müller's *Angelsächsische Grammatik* (1883), p. 248, we read: "Es wird der reine Inf. auch in der Konstruktion des Acc. mit dem Inf. angewandt. Dieselbe findet sich aber im guten Ags. nur selten, eigentlich nur nach den Verben *gefrignan* und *gehyran*, wahrnehmen, erfahren . . . Wenn nach den Verben *hatan*, heissen, *letan*, lassen, und Verben des Wahrnehmens ein Acc. mit dem Inf. folgt (ic hate hine cuman) so ist das nicht die eigentliche Konstruktion des Acc. mit dem Inf., worin ja der Acc. und der Inf. zu einer Begriffseinheit verschmolzen sind, sondern es hängt der Acc. und der Inf. und zwar jeder besonders vom Verbum ab, jener als persönliches, dieser als sächliches Objekt. In ags. Uebersetzungen lat. Werke findet sich der eigentliche Acc. mit dem Inf. in ausgedehnterem Masse in folge willkürlicher Uebertragung lat. Konstruktionen auf das Ags."

Less definite is Dr. Karl Köhler, who, in his *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs und Particips im "Beowulf"* (1886), p. 52, declares: "Für das Ags. ist bislang auch die Untersuchung über die mehr oder weniger geringe Abhängigkeit der Acc. c. Inf.-Konstruktion vom Lateinischen noch nicht geführt worden.<sup>2</sup> Denn dass ein solcher Einfluss sich geltend gemacht hat, darf man von vornherein annehmen; hat doch wohl kein Volk des frühen Mittelalters sich so eifrig mit der Uebersetzung lateinischer Schriften befasst wie die Angelsachsen."

In his *Streifzüge durch die Mittelhochdeutsche Syntax* (1887), p. 252, Professor Eugen Eienkel thus delimits the construction in Anglo-Saxon: "Im AE. hält sich der Accusativ-mit-Infinitiv im wesentlichen innerhalb der bei uns im NHD. beobachteten Grenzen. Er steht vornehmlich nach den Verben des Veranlassens und Zulassens, sowie nach denen der geistigen Wahrnehmung. Doch finden sich schon im AE. nicht selten Belege freierer Verwendung," which statement is repeated in substance in his treatment of English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss der Germanischen Philologie*, 2nd ed., 1899, p. 1076.

<sup>1</sup> That is, the Classical and the Germanic.

<sup>2</sup> "Die einzige mir bekannte Specialschrift über den Acc. c. Inf. im Englischen von Carl Krickau (Gött. Dis., 1877) behandelt besonders die Elisabethanische Periode und giebt nur einen Gesamtüberblick über die vorübergehende Zeit."

Brief is the statement of Dr. Leon Kellner, in his *Historical Outlines of English Syntax* (1892), p. 253: "The accusative + inf. as object of verbs like *biddan* (ask), *hatan* (bid), *seon* (see), *gehyran* (hear), *findan* (find), is quite common in Old English."

In his "Indirect Discourse in Anglo-Saxon" (1895), p. 485, Professor J. H. Gorrell reaches this conclusion: "The infinitive clause is mostly used after *hatan*, with less frequency after other verbs of command. The subject-accusative construction is in general use only after verbs of perception in the picturesque language of poetry; its occurrence after verbs of saying or thinking is very rare, and is mostly confined to direct copyings of the corresponding Latin construction; this method of rendering the Latin prevails, however, to no great extent even in the closest translations." On pp. 476-477 we read: "There are in *Bede* 331 Latin infinitives following verbs which act as introductions to indirect discourse; in 263 instances the Latin infinitive is rendered by the regular Anglo-Saxon construction with the subordinate clause; in 68 cases only does the Anglo-Saxon agree in construction with the Latin: 28 of these are found after *hatan* (its usual native sequence), 8 follow *geseon*, 6 occur after *gehatan*, 4 after *gehyran*; *witan*, *twygean*, *gelyfan*, *gelimpan*, and *secgan* are each followed twice by the infinitive; while *bebeodan*, *biddan*, *bewerian*, *ætwiewan*, *gemunan*, *geleornian*, *læran*, *oncnawan*, *ongytan*, *tellan*, *ðyncan*, and *wenan* are followed once by this construction. Since the infinitive clause is quite frequent after *hatan* and verbs of perception, we may conclude from the above statistics that the influence of the Latin infinitive construction upon the Anglo-Saxon is very slight even in the closest translations." For reasons given below, in the discussion of the view of Dr. Zeitlin, it seems to me that Dr. Gorrell somewhat underestimates the influence of the Latin.

Dr. Wülffing, in his *Syntax in den Werken Alfreds des Grossen* (1900), II, p. 182, merely quotes with approbation the statement of T. Müller, given above.

In his *Studies in the Language of Pecoek* (1900), p. 119, Dr. Fredrik Schmidt incidentally expresses his view concerning the construction in Anglo-Saxon: "Pecoek's extensive use of the accusative and infinitive after this third group of verbs is characteristic of his style. Krickau (Acc. mit dem Inf., p. 17) calls him the writer 'welcher mit der Einführung des Acc. mit dem Inf. nach den Verben des Sagens und Denkens in Originalwerken begonnen hat.' And thus much is certain that before Pecoek this construction is very sporadically to be found. Einenkel (*Anglia* XIII, 94 sqq.) gives a few examples from Chaucer (after *conferme*, *deeme*, *holde*, *wite*) and two from O. E. (after *wene*)."<sup>1</sup> In substantial agreement with Dr. Schmidt are the views expressed by the following investigators of the idiom in Middle English and in Modern English, the title of whose works are given in my bibliography: Rohs, 1889; Zickner, 1900; De Reul, 1901; Ortmann, 1902; and Gärtner, 1904.

General but pronounced is the statement of Professor Otto Jespersen, in his *Growth and Structure of the English Language* (1905), p. 127: "The extensive use of the accusative with the infinitive is another permanent feature of English syntax which is largely due to Latin influence."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See, further, Schmidt, F., l. c., p. 112.

<sup>2</sup> As this statement is omitted in the second edition (1912) of this work, Professor Jespersen has probably changed his opinion with reference thereto.



One of the most recent as well as one of the most stimulating discussions of our idiom is that by Dr. Jacob Zeitlin, in his above mentioned dissertation (1908). On p. 108 we read: "From the very earliest times English, in common with other Indo-Germanic languages, employed, after certain verbs of express or implied causation (*lætan, forlætan, hatan, biddan*), an accusative with an infinitive. . . . Verbs like *beodan, don, macian, tacan, and læran*, though found very rarely with an accusative and infinitive in late Old English, began to employ the construction more and more frequently in early Middle English, and by the opening of the fourteenth century that was the prevailing locution and practically the only one employed." Concerning the idiom after verbs of sense perception, on p. 109 we are told: "This construction is regular in all periods of the English language with verbs expressing an immediate sense perception, and therefore requires no extensive comment." Of the idiom after verbs of mental perception, we read on p. 78: "The dividing line between verbs of sense and mental perception is not one which can be precisely marked. It will be noted that in a number of the citations grouped under *sense perception* the verbs have a derivative force which tends to place them in the other class. The fact that the same verbs assume the two significations naturally involves the extension of the construction in vogue after the primary class to the derivative class. But, further than this, there are in Old English a number of verbs which are not associated with any idea of sensation and which admit after them an accusative with infinitive of a more developed type than any thus far noticed." Finally, concerning the idiom after verbs of declaring, this statement is given, p. 99: "The accusative with infinitive after verbs of declaration is found in Old English only in translated documents in imitation of the Latin original." My own view of the construction with this last class of verbs could not be better expressed than by the sentence just quoted; and I was delighted to find my own view confirmed by the investigation of Dr. Zeitlin, for, although his study was published four years ago, my own statistics had been gathered and tabulated before the publication of his work. But Dr. Zeitlin's statement on page 99 seems to me to be considerably modified by that on page 110: "After verbs of declaration the early language, in its original literature, shows only the faintest beginnings of the construction in the form of an accusative followed by a predicate noun, adjective, or participle. The importance of the use of the latter forms as predicates is fundamental in the development of the accusative with infinitive. The frequency with which these predicate forms occur in Old English after verbs of mental perception, and their employment after verbs of declaration previous to any similar use of the infinitive, may be treated as a confirmation of the view that they preceded the accusative with infinitive in time, and, in fact, afforded the model<sup>1</sup> by analogy to which the latter construction was more fully developed. The relation between the accusative and the predicate, whatever form that predicate may take, — whether infinitive, substantive, adjective, or participle, — is the same. The practical identity of the two locutions is illustrated by the fact that it is possible to convert every non-infinitive predicate into an infinitive by the introduction of the copula *to be*."

<sup>1</sup> More guarded is the statement of Professor Gorrell, *l. c.*, p. 475: "After verbs of saying there is a near approach to this construction [infinitive-with-accusative] by the use of the accusative of the substantive and the predicate adjective, as Gu., 90, *ðas eorðan ealle sægde lene under lyfte*; similarly BH., 165, 3; Cr., 136." See too, Einkenel,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, p. 1077.

To this last statement there seem to me to be at least two cogent objections. First, the theory of the priority of the participle predicate (at least of the present participle) to the infinitive predicate, credited by Dr. Zeitlin on page 66 to Grimberg<sup>1</sup> and here indorsed by himself, is contrary to the facts in Anglo-Saxon, as I believe and try to show in Chapter XVI. As to the predicative accusative of nouns, of adjectives, and of past participles after verbs of perception and of declaring, which Dr. Zeitlin thinks has, also, contributed to the development of the accusative-with-infinitive construction, I do not know of any extensive collection<sup>2</sup> of data as to these uses. But, should the predicative use of nouns, of adjectives, and of the past participle be found frequent in Anglo-Saxon and in the Germanic languages as a whole, this fact would not substantiate the theory advocated by Drs. Becker, Primer, Grimberg, and Zeitlin, I think. It is in no small degree the fact that the present participle is more verbal and less adjectival in nature than a past participle (and, of course, than a predicate adjective or noun in the accusative) that in Anglo-Saxon and in High German precluded the use of the present participle in the predicative accusative except in translation of Latin participles with full verbal power, precisely as the more verbal present participle could not be used appositively except in imitation of the same idiom in Latin.<sup>3</sup>

Secondly, the statement unduly minimizes the influence of the Latin in the development of the accusative with an infinitive after verbs of declaring in Anglo-Saxon, so patly stated by Dr. Zeitlin on p. 99. That I am not misinterpreting the force intended to be conveyed in the passage just quoted, appears clear, I think, from the paragraph immediately following it: "The question of Latin influence in this period can be disposed of without difficulty. As is manifest from the Bede citations, the translator on a number of occasions imitates the Latin construction in rendering an accusative with infinitive after verbs of mental perception and declaration. But very seldom does he do violence to the English idiom in so translating. He refrains from imitating the construction after neuter and impersonal verbs, confining his translation within the same limitations that bound the native locution. That it should be found more frequently in translations than in original works is to be expected from the extensive use of this construction in Latin; and it is not surprising to find sporadical examples bearing the distinct stamp of foreign importation. But in expanding the great mass of Latin accusatives and infinitives into English clauses the translator has shown that his feeling for the native idiom has not been corrupted by the foreign language. Since Latin exerted so slight an influence on Old English translations, it may readily be inferred that it had no effect at all on original literature or spoken language." In support of my claim that these two statements unduly minimize the Latin influence upon the accusative-with-infinitive construction in Anglo-Saxon, I call attention to these additional facts: (1) Though rarely, the accusative with infinitive is found after impersonal verbs in Anglo-Saxon, — a matter treated below under the accusative with infinitive in subject clauses. (2) In imitation of the Latin

<sup>1</sup> Grimberg's article appeared in 1905, but this theory was proposed long before that time, as early as 1836, by K. F. Becker in his *Ausführliche Deutsche Grammatik*, Vol. I, pp. 193-194. See, further, Chapter XV and Chapter XVI, section viii.

<sup>2</sup> The fullest known to me is that by Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 732 ff., but in this collection very few examples are given from Anglo-Saxon. Dr. Wülffing's *Syntax* has not as yet reached the predicative use of the accusative.

<sup>3</sup> See the writer's *The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, pp. 142, 307 ff.

original, Alfred and other Anglo-Saxon writers not a few times use the accusative with passive infinitive, — a construction thoroughly un-English. (3) The history of this construction in the other Germanic languages tends to show that Dr. Zeitlin unduly minimizes the influence of the Latin upon the Anglo-Saxon. It is only fair to add, however, that what he says as to the influence of the Latin upon the Anglo-Saxon is more or less bound up with what he says as to the influence of the classical languages upon the Germanic languages, — a topic discussed by me in Chapter XVI, section viii.

Perhaps I should add that Dr. Kenyon does not discuss the origin of this idiom in Anglo-Saxon in his *The Syntax of the Infinitive in Chaucer* (1909); and that Dr. Riggert, in his *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs in der Alt-englischen Poesie* (1909), p. 52, adopts the view of T. Müller, which was given above.

## II. INFLECTED.

As we saw in Chapter VIII, the inflected infinitive with accusative subject occurs only sporadically in Anglo-Saxon, the less doubtful cases only in the later *Chronicle* and in Ælfrie, after the differentiation between the two infinitives had been appreciably weakened. A few of the remaining examples are due to the presence of a Latin gerund, gerundive, or future participle in the original; while in a few other instances the infinitive hovers between an adverbial (final or consecutive) use on the one hand and a predicative on the other. In a word, in Early West Saxon, most of the examples are doubtful, and are due partly to the Latin influences specified and partly to the natural tendency of the inflected infinitive after certain verbs of tendency (*tæcan*, etc.) to pass over from a final-consecutive to a predicative use.

For the accusative with an infinitive in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section viii.

### B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

That the passive infinitive with accusative subject, when the object of a transitive verb, is due to Latin influence, is highly probable, as was long ago declared by Dr. Kellner.<sup>2</sup> As we have seen above, only two examples of the construction have been found in Anglo-Saxon poetry, one each in *Genesis* and in *Guthlac*, each a poem based on Latin originals. In the prose translations, in each of the groups of verbs, the construction in question is in most cases in direct translation of the same idiom in Latin, though occasionally it corresponds to other constructions in Latin (an objective passive infinitive, 1; a predicative active infinitive, 3; a predicative past participle<sup>3</sup> in the accusative, 8; no Latin, 1; all of which have been illustrated above, pp. 120 ff.). Moreover, we find the Latin passive infinitive with accusative subject often rendered by an active infinitive (with or without an accusative subject). The passive construction is very rare in the more original Anglo-Saxon prose (no example is found in the *Chronicle* or the *Laws*, and only one example occurs in Wulfstan) and in Ælfrie (only three examples) despite his known proclivities for Latin

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter VIII, p. 120.

<sup>2</sup> See Kellner, <sup>3</sup> l. c., p. 306.

<sup>3</sup> Most of these may be considered passive infinitives with *esse* understood.

idioms. It is evident, therefore, not only that the idiom was not native to Anglo-Saxon, but also that it was never naturalized therein.

The situation is substantially the same in the other Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section viii.

### AS SUBJECT.

Whether containing an active or a passive infinitive as predicate to an accusative, the infinitive phrase as subject is manifestly of Latin origin,<sup>1</sup> occurring only<sup>2</sup> in the Anglo-Saxon translations and each time corresponding to the same idiom in the Latin originals (except in one instance, *Bede* 70.32, where it corresponds to a complementary passive infinitive after a passive verb), as will appear from an examination of the examples, already quoted on pp. 124 f. above.

In the other Germanic languages, the accusative with infinitive, as subject, is rare in subject clauses, and is an importation: see Chapter XVI, section viii.

### IX. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH DATIVE SUBJECT.<sup>3</sup>

In Chapter IX, I have tried to give grounds for the belief there stated that in Anglo-Saxon we have no genuine predicative infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, with dative subject; that the infinitives sometimes cited as predicative are either subjective or objective; and that the dative noun or pronoun depends on the finite verb instead of being subject to the infinitive. The origin of these so-called predicative infinitives with dative subject has been discussed in sections i and ii of the present chapter.

In Chapter IX, however, were given several sporadic examples of an apparent, if not a real, predicative use of an uninflected infinitive with a subject dative in form after *don* and *letan*, but these occur almost exclusively in the later *Chronicle*, by which time the dative and accusative forms of the personal pronoun of the third person may have become interchangeable. The solitary example cited of an inflected infinitive used predicatively with a dative subject (after *hieran*) occurs in a doubtful passage, but the inflection of the infinitive is probably due to the presence of a gerundive in the Latin original. In a word, the following statement of Professor Einkenkel<sup>4</sup> as to the interrelation of the infinitive-with-dative to the predicative infinitive-with-accusative construction is correct, but, as implied by him, the assumption of predicative force by the former did not occur until Middle English times: "Die gesamte altenglische so beliebte Konstruktion, Subjekts-Inf. + Dat. com. ist in diese Acc. mit Inf.-Bewegung hineingezogen worden [ae. *Micele swiðor gedafenað ðam mædenum to ðencanne*, Ags. Pr.]."

For the so-called predicative infinitive with dative subject in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section ix.

<sup>1</sup> De Reul, *l. c.*, p. 135, says of this idiom in Middle English: "The construction is a Latinism which was introduced either directly or through the French."

<sup>2</sup> Except that once we have an inflected infinitive with accusative subject as subject of a passive verb in the late *Chronicle*: see p. 124 above.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter IX, p. 127.

<sup>4</sup> Einkenkel, *l. c.*, p. 1076. See, too, De Reul, *l. c.*, pp. 136 ff.

X. THE FINAL INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

1. *With Active Verbs.*

In all probability, the uninflected infinitive of purpose after verbs of motion was a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon, for it is habitual in the poems, occurs several times in Early West Saxon prose, and is not infrequent in Late West Saxon prose, especially in the *Gospels*. The relative frequency of the idiom in the *Gospels* is due in part to the frequent presence of the final infinitive in the Latin vulgate. In Ælfric's *Grammar*, it may be added, the uninflected final infinitive several times translates the Latin supine in *-um*.

The infrequency of the uninflected final infinitive after verbs of rest makes it difficult to draw confident conclusions; but the idiom is probably of native origin, occurring as it does chiefly in the poems. In the one instance in the prose translations (*Ælf. Hept.: Judges* 4.18<sup>b</sup>), the Latin has no infinitive. This probability of native origin is further enhanced by the fact that we have the uninflected predicative infinitive after verbs of rest.

The uninflected infinitive of purpose after verbs of commanding and requesting is probably due to Latin influence, as no example occurs in the poetry, and in the three examples from the prose (*Bede* 392.32, *Ælf. Hept.: Judges* 4.19, and *J.* 4.9) the infinitive translates a Latin final infinitive (*petamus bibere, dedit . . . bibere, bibere . . . poscis*).

Probably, too, the uninflected final infinitive after verbs of giving was first suggested by the Latin *da bibere* and similar locutions. The idiom is very rare in the poetry: of the three examples, one occurs in the metrical *Psalms*, and two in the *Riddles*. When found in the translations, it is about two-thirds of the time in direct translation of a Latin final infinitive. The Latin correspondents are: a final infinitive, 18; a gerundive in the accusative, 2; a co-ordinated finite verb, active, 1; a subordinated finite verb, active, 1; a prepositional phrase, 1; a noun (dative, 1; accusative, 5); no Latin, 2.

The uninflected infinitive of purpose after "other verbs" occurs twice in the poetry (*Gifts* 66: *gewyrceð . . . gefegan*; *Gnomic Sayings* 129: *scop . . . healdan*), each doubtful, and once in prose (*L.* 1.72<sup>b</sup>: *alysde . . . to wyrcente . . . and gemunan*), in which last the uninflected infinitive is preceded by a co-ordinate inflected infinitive, and is appreciably separated from its principal verb. But the inflected infinitive and the uninflected infinitive in this verse may each be due to the Latin original: see p. 143 above.

The inflected infinitive of purpose, after verbs of whatever kind, was probably first suggested by the Latin; for we find:—

1. That, of the fifteen examples occurring in Anglo-Saxon poetry, all but two (*Beow.* 1731 and *Wids.* 134) occur in poems known to be based on Latin originals, and in the two exceptional examples the infinitive may modify the noun rather than the verb.

2. That while, in the Early West Saxon translations, the inflected infinitive of purpose occasionally<sup>2</sup> translates a Latin final infinitive, it usually translates

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter X, p. 132.

<sup>2</sup> In the Late West Saxon *Gospels*, the Latin final infinitive after verbs of motion is often translated by an inflected infinitive instead of an uninflected, there being 18 inflected to 24 uninflected infinitives in that text corresponding to a Latin final infinitive.

a Latin gerund or gerundive, each with and without a preposition, which Latin idioms doubtless first led to the use of the inflected infinitive to denote purpose in Anglo-Saxon, although the Latin prepositional phrase made up of a preposition and a noun instead of a gerund or a gerundive, and the Latin subordinated verb introduced by *ut* may have contributed somewhat thereto.

The Latin correspondents are approximately as follows: *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 38; *ad* + a gerund in the accusative, 31; *pro* + a gerundive in the ablative, 2; a gerund in the accusative, 4; a gerundive (nominative, 1; dative, 2; accusative, 13); an infinitive (final, 24 (18 in *Gosp.*); as predicate nominative, 1); a subordinated finite verb (active, 5; passive, 2); a co-ordinated finite verb, active, 3; an appositive participle, active, 6; an absolute participle, passive, 1; a prepositional phrase, 3; a noun (nominative, 1; accusative, 3; ablative, 2); a loose paraphrase, 2; no Latin, 13. Of the thirteen examples without a Latin correspondent, eleven occur in Alfred, but, in six of these examples, the inflected infinitive occurs elsewhere in Alfred corresponding to a Latin gerund or gerundive; while, in five examples (*Bede* 16.9: *onfindan*; *Boeth.* 19.22, 23: *onlænan*; and *Oros.* 292.28<sup>a</sup>: *betæcan*, 64.26: *geunman*), no such equivalent is found. Finally, it should be stated that it is possible that the Anglo-Saxon prepositional phrase of purpose, made up of a preposition + a noun or a pronoun, may have contributed somewhat to the development of the inflected infinitive of purpose.

3. That, according to Ælfric's *Grammar*, the Latin gerund and the Latin future active participle are properly rendered by the Anglo-Saxon inflected infinitive; for on p. 134 he has "*amandi = to lufigenne*;" on p. 135, "*amandum = to lufigenne*;" and on p. 167, "*ruiturus = to hreosenne*."

It seems likely that, because of its superior clarity,<sup>1</sup> the inflected infinitive became, in prose, the normal form of the final infinitive, though not to the total exclusion of the uninflected infinitive.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

The preceding applies to the active infinitive of purpose with active verbs. As to the active infinitive with passive verbs, it is habitually inflected; has substantially the same Latin correspondents as with the active infinitive except that the final infinitive is not found; and was probably suggested by the Latin substantially as when used with active verbs.

The correspondents in Latin are: *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative, 10; *ad* + a gerund in the accusative, 6; a gerundive (nominative, 4; accusative, 1); an infinitive (subjective, 3; as a retained objective, 1; predicative with an auxiliary, 1); a co-ordinated finite verb, passive, 4; a predicative participle, accusative, passive, 1; a prepositional phrase, 2; a noun in the accusative, 1; no Latin, 3. Of these last three examples, all except one (*Greg.* 347.6: *gadrina*) are elsewhere found in Alfred corresponding to a Latin gerund or gerundive.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

As already stated, I have not found in Anglo-Saxon a clear example of the passive infinitive denoting purpose.

I have found few suggestions as to the origin of the final infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. The most direct and the most helpful single statement is that of Professor Shearin, who, in discussing "the Prepositional Infinitive after *Sellan*," declares: "The prepositional infinitive seems to be preferred in translating the Latin gerund or gerundive constructions of purpose. As already seen (v. p. 13), the simple form is usual in translating the Latin infinitive and supine."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chapter X, p. 146 above.

<sup>2</sup> Shearin, <sup>1</sup> l. c., p. 27.

He then quotes a few examples of the inflected infinitive translating a Latin gerund or gerundive after *sellan*, and adds this note: "The presence or absence of *ad* may have been to some extent a determinant of the use or omission of *to*." These statements by Professor Shearin, however, are, as is evident from our statistics just given, far too restricted, being made solely with reference to the inflected infinitive after *sellan*, whereas the former statement is true of all verbs. As to the second statement, the absence of *ad*, in gerund or gerundive constructions, has next to no weight in bringing about the omission of *to*, as an inspection of our statistics will show. Dr. Shearin does not express any opinion as to the origin of the final infinitive in Anglo-Saxon after the other groups of verbs further than to cite (p. 17) with approbation Grimm's statement as to the origin of the inflected infinitive in general: "Anfangs verstärkte die präp. in gewissen fällen den infinitivischen ausdruck: *iddja du saian* sagt etwas mehr als das blosse *iddja saian*."<sup>1</sup> Dr. T. J. Farrar, in his *The Gerund in Old English*, p. 36, explicitly declines to discuss the origin of the construction in Anglo-Saxon; nor have I found any helpful comment in any of the other treatises on Anglo-Saxon syntax accessible to me.

In the other Germanic languages the origin of the final infinitive was probably the same as in Anglo-Saxon: see Chapter XVI, section x.

## XI. THE INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES.<sup>2</sup>

The inflected infinitive with adjectives seems to be a construction of native origin in Anglo-Saxon, because:—

1. It is found not infrequently in the poetry, occurring in *Beowulf* (4 times) as well as in the poems known to be based on Latin originals.
2. In the translations it corresponds to various Latin idioms, and not a few times occurs without any Latin correspondents.

The Latin correspondents are: an adjective with a preposition + a gerund in the accusative (11) or + a gerundive in the accusative (15); an adjective with a gerund (genitive, 4; dative, 1); an adjective with a preposition + a gerund in the ablative, 1; a verb + a gerund in the dative, 2; an adverb + a gerund in the ablative, 1; an adjective with a prepositional phrase (6), or a supine in *-u* (2), or a noun in the ablative (3), or an infinitive (8); an infinitive (subjective, 1; objective, 4; predicative with an auxiliary, 3; as a predicate nominative, 1); an accusative and passive infinitive as subject, 3; an indicative (active, 3; passive, 3); a subjunctive (active, 1; passive, 2); an imperative, 2; a noun in the nominative, 1; an adjective (attributive, 1; predicative, 8); a participle (attributive, passive, 1; appositive, active, 4); a gerundial periphrastic, passive, 1; a loose paraphrase, 3; no Latin, 21.

3. It occurs, though not frequently, in the *Chronicle*, in the *Laws*, and in *Wulfstan*.

But, while the construction is doubtless of native origin, and is analogous to the modification of an adjective by any other prepositional-adverbial phrase, the use of the idiom has doubtless been somewhat increased by the Latin original, especially by the frequency of the construction made up of gerund and gerundive just mentioned. And it is possible that, in the few examples in which the inflected infinitive is clearly genitival in function (as in *Boeth.* 50.10, 24<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 51.9), the idiom is an imitation of the Latin gerund in the genitive.

The construction of the adjective with an uninflected infinitive occurs only

<sup>1</sup> Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 121.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter XI, p. 149.

sporadically, and is probably due to the distance of the infinitive from the governing adjective: see Chapter XI, p. 158 above.

The passive infinitive with adjectives is probably, like the passive infinitive in other uses, due to Latin influence, though this cannot be demonstrated in the solitary example found, in Ælfric.

For the infinitive with adjectives in the other Germanic languages, see Chapter XVI, section xi.

## XII. OTHER ADVERBIAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.

### A. THE CAUSAL INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

So few examples of the causal infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, occur in Anglo-Saxon (only about a dozen in all) that a confident conclusion as to its origin is impossible. Still the fact that only three examples occur in the poetry (*Gen.* 2279 and 2733, after *cearian*; *Chr.* 1555, after *bisorgian*), each of which is doubtful; that, of the three examples in Early West Saxon, two (*Bede* 478.32, 484.15, after *gefeon*) are in translation of Latin infinitives of cause; and that most of the remaining examples occur in Ælfric or in Wulfstan, renders it probable that the construction in Anglo-Saxon was due in part to Latin influence. This seems the more probable to me in view of the fact that cause in Anglo-Saxon was from the beginning usually expressed by an oblique case of *ðæt* (with or without a preposition) plus a finite verb or plus a dependent clause in apposition to the oblique (adverbial) case of *ðæt*. It is possible, however, that the causal use in Anglo-Saxon may be in part merely an extension of the objective use of the infinitive.

The causal infinitive is rare in the other Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section xii.

### B. THE INFINITIVE OF SPECIFICATION WITH VERBS.<sup>2</sup>

In this use the infinitive is always inflected. No example has been found in the poetry. In the two examples from Wærferth (88.18 and 180.26), each after a passive verb, and in the solitary example from *Bede* (82.22), the infinitive corresponds in the Latin to a phrase made up of a preposition plus gerundive and noun. Only three other examples occur, in Ælfric. All of the examples are doubtful except *Wærf.* 180.26. It seems probable, therefore, that this use of the infinitive was first suggested by the Latin.

In the other Germanic languages, likewise, this use is of foreign importation: see Chapter XVI, section xii.

### C. THE CONSECUTIVE INFINITIVE.<sup>3</sup>

The consecutive use of the infinitive, always inflected, with adjectives is probably a native extension of the infinitive of specification with adjectives: this consecutive use is occasionally found in the Anglo-Saxon poems; though more frequent in the translations from the Latin, yet in only two of these examples (*Wærf.* 63.19 and *Ælf. Hept.: Ex.* 16.16, in each of which the Anglo-Saxon infinitive corresponds to a Latin phrase made up of *ad* + a gerund or a gerundive) does the Latin seem to have had any appreciable effect, for in the other examples the Latin equivalent is varied.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XII, p. 160.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter XII, p. 161.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter XII, p. 162.



The consecutive infinitive with active verbs is found in the poetry only once (*Seafarer* 38). In the Anglo-Saxon translations it corresponds most frequently to a Latin prepositional phrase made up of *ad* plus a gerund or gerundive, though occasionally to other idioms (an imperative; no Latin; a noun in the accusative; a noun in the dative; *in* + a noun in the ablative; a noun in the nominative; a noun in the accusative; *ut* + a subjunctive). It occurs a few times in the *Martyrology* and in the *Læceboc*, and relatively frequently in Ælfric. It seems probable, therefore, that the Latin influence, if appreciable, was very slight and indirect; more probably we have the native development of the idiom from the inflected infinitive after verbs naturally calling for an inflected infinitive or for a prepositional phrase (*to* plus a noun).

In the other Germanic languages the situation concerning the consecutive infinitive, both with adjectives and with verbs, is much the same as in Anglo-Saxon: see Chapter XVI, section xii.

The Latin influence is somewhat stronger in the consecutive use of the infinitive after passive verbs, the Anglo-Saxon infinitive oftener corresponding to a Latin gerund or gerundive here than with active verbs. But, on the other hand, two examples are found in the poems. On the whole, therefore, the situation is substantially the same as with the consecutive infinitive after active verbs: the construction is chiefly a native extension of the idiom with verbs calling for an inflected infinitive or for a prepositional phrase, somewhat influenced by the Latin idiom in gerund and gerundive constructions.

#### D. THE ABSOLUTE INFINITIVE.<sup>1</sup>

As was intimated in the citing of the examples of the absolute use of the infinitive above, pp. 169 ff., it is probable that, in the two examples of such use with the uninflected infinitive (*Oros.* 46.16, 17<sup>b</sup>), we have merely an accusative and infinitive loosely connected with the remainder of the sentence. In the examples of the absolute inflected infinitive, in the clearer cases (*hrædest to secganne*, *hrædest to cweðenne*, and *to metanne wið*), the absolute use has arisen from the shortening of fuller expressions (such as *Boeth.* 39.10: *Swa hit is nu hraðost to secganne be eallum* etc.; *Wulf.* 158.16: *godcunde hadas wæron nu lange swiðe forsawene . . .* and *hrædest is to cweðenne* etc.; see further examples in Chapter VII), in which we have the inflected infinitive of necessity after *beon*, in which latter idiom, as we have seen, the infinitive was originally final in sense. In the less clear cases, quoted in Chapter XII, section D, we seem to have the abridgment of a final clause into a phrase. I think, therefore, that the absolute infinitive is of native origin in Anglo-Saxon, sparing though its use is. This statement of the origin of the absolute use of the infinitive is, I think, in substantial accord with that of Professor Einenkel, who, in discussing the prepositional infinitive of purpose, writes "Hierher gehören auch die Fälle, wo ein Verbum (*don so, sayn so*) unterdrückt ist; und wo in Folge dessen die präpositionalen Infinitive elliptisch verwendet werden;"<sup>2</sup> and with that of Dr. Kenyon, *l. c.*, p. 79: "The purpose infinitive becomes stereotyped, sometimes by an ellipsis that can be more or less definitely supplied." Each of these scholars is writing of Middle English only.

The absolute infinitive probably arose in the same way in the other Germanic languages: see Chapter XVI, section xii.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XII, p. 169.

<sup>2</sup> Einenkel, *l. c.*, p. 240.

To sum up these adverbial uses: the causal is partly due to Latin influence, and is partly of native origin; the specificatory use with verbs is certainly due to the Latin original; the consecutive use, with adjectives is of native origin, and with verbs is largely native but partly foreign; and the absolute use is wholly native.

### XIII. THE INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS.<sup>1</sup>

The inflected infinitive with nouns is probably, in the main, of native origin in Anglo-Saxon, because:—

1. Though rare in the poems, eight clear examples occur, one of which is in *Beowulf* (316; *Beow.* 1941 is doubtful).

2. It is frequent in Alfred; and while, in the majority of instances (in about 48 examples out of a total of 81), it corresponds to a gerund or gerundive, which may partly have suggested the inflected infinitive in the Anglo-Saxon translation, in twelve of the examples there is no Latin, and in the remaining cases the Latin correspondents are too varied for the Latin to have had a determining influence in the choice of the Anglo-Saxon method of translation.

The Latin correspondents to this idiom in the Anglo-Saxon translations as a whole are: a noun (or a pronoun) with a gerund in the genitive (63); or with a gerundive in the genitive (9) or in the dative (1); or with *ad* + a gerund in the accusative (6) or with *ad* + a gerundive in the accusative (3); or with an infinitive modifying it (14); or with a noun in the genitive (5); an adjective with a supine in *-u* (1) or with a prepositional phrase (1); an infinitive (objective, 1; predicative with an auxiliary (4) or with an accusative subject (1)); a subjunctive (active, 5; passive, 2); an indicative, active (3); an attributive participle, active (1); a loose paraphrase (13); no Latin (15).

3. Though rare in the *Chronicle* and in the *Laws*, six clear examples occur in the former, and four in the latter.

I believe, therefore, that the idiom in Anglo-Saxon is probably in the main of native origin, and that the infinitive phrase modifying the noun is analogous to other prepositional adjectival phrases modifying a noun. I think, however, that it is highly probable that the frequency of the idiom in the Anglo-Saxon translations (especially in Alfred and in the *Gospels*) is partly due to the frequency of the constructions with gerund or gerundive in the Latin originals. Moreover, it seems likely that the use of the inflected infinitive as a *genitive* modifier of the noun is in no small measure due to the influence of the Latin genitive of gerund or of gerundive of the original, since (1) the clear cases of the genitive function of the inflected infinitive are restricted largely to those passages translating such Latin constructions; and since (2) we have next to no prepositional adjectival phrases of genitive function in Early West Saxon aside from those in which the inflected infinitive occurs.

As stated in Chapter XIII, p. 181, in the four instances of a noun modified by an uninflected infinitive, the lack of inflection is probably due to the remoteness of the infinitive from the noun in all cases except one (*And.* 1538), and in this instance it may be due to the peculiar significance of the noun modified (*myne*) or to the exigencies of the meter.

In the other Germanic languages the situation is much the same: see Chapter XVI, section xiii.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XIII, p. 173.

## CHAPTER XV.

### SOME SUBSTITUTES FOR THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

#### I. THE PREDICATE NOMINATIVE OF THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE FOR THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE AFTER VERBS OF MOTION.

Though not correct in saying that in Late West Saxon the present participle had completely supplanted the present infinitive after verbs of motion, Dr. Schrader <sup>1</sup> was undoubtedly pointing out, though by no means for the first time, a tendency of Anglo-Saxon that made large headway in Late West Saxon, and became the law in succeeding epochs. What led to this partial supplanting of the predicative infinitive of motion after verbs of motion by the present <sup>2</sup> participle in Anglo-Saxon? What led, for example, *He com fleogan*, *He com gangan*, *He com iernan*, and *He com ridan* to become *He com fleogende*, *He com gangende*, *He com iernende*, and *He com ridende*? If any adequate explanation of the fact has been offered either for Anglo-Saxon or for the Germanic languages as a whole, it has escaped me. Personally I think the chief causes of the substitution to be these:—

First, the relative rareness of the predicative infinitive of motion <sup>3</sup> even in Anglo-Saxon poetry and its still greater infrequency in Anglo-Saxon prose, would tend to bring about the disuse of the idiom, especially in prose.

Secondly, I doubt not that the well established, perhaps native, Anglo-Saxon use of an appositive participle to denote manner <sup>4</sup> with other verbs than those signifying motion (as in *Boeth.* 8.15: *Ða ic ða ðis leoð, cwæð B., geomriende asungen hæfde, ða com etc.*; *Gen.* 1582: *ac he hlihende broðrum sægde*) and its occasional use to denote what looks like manner with verbs of motion (as in *Ælf. Hom.* I. 566<sup>t</sup>: *com seo sæ færlice swegende*; *Az.* 144: *heofon-fugas, ða ðe lacende geond lyft farað*; *Met.* 20.216: *hwilum eft smeað ymb ðone ecan god sceppend hire, scriðende færð hweole gelicost, hwærfð ymb hi selfe*) tended to the gradual extension of the use of the participle.

Potent, too, was the influence of the periphrastic tenses made up of the verb *to be* plus a present participle, an idiom common in all stages of Anglo-Saxon, as shown by Dr. Constance Pessels, in his *The Present and Past Periphrastic Tenses in Anglo-Saxon*. Slight, if not inappreciable at first, this influence would become the stronger as the principal verb of motion paled more and more into a mere auxiliary.

Noteworthy, also, was the influence of the appositive participle of words not denoting motion used in connection with verbs of motion, as in *L.* 3.3: *he com into eall Iordanes rice, bodiende dædbote fulluht on synna forgytenesse = venit in omnem regionem Jordanis, prædicans baptismum poenitentiae in remissionem peccatorum*.

<sup>1</sup> *L. c.*, p. 70: see Chapter V, p. 89 above.

<sup>2</sup> Though Professor Eikenkel, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 238, considers that the past participle is similarly used in *Salomon and Saturn*, I. 178 (*hwæðre was on æslum, se ðe of siðe cwom feorran gefered*), and that *cwom . . . gefered* = the German *kam gegangen*, I must hold with Professor March, *l. c.*, p. 201, that the Anglo-Saxon phrase is not the equivalent of the German: *gefered* is used appositively, not predicatively, I think.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter V, p. 89.

<sup>4</sup> See the writer's *The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, pp. 274–278.

Strong, too, was the influence of the appositive participle of words denoting motion used with verbs of motion, as in *L.* 2.16: And hig *efstende comon* = *Et venerunt festinantes*; *Mat.* 14.25: Ða *com se Hælend embe ðone feorðan* hancro to him, ofer ða sæ *gangende* = *venit ad eos ambulans super mare*; *Chron.* 204<sup>m</sup>, 1069 D<sup>b</sup>: 7 heom *com* ðær togenes Eadgar cild . . . 7 ealle ða landleoden *ridinge 7 gangende* mid unsmætan here swiðe fægengende. How easily these appositive participles of motion may become predicative in function is easily seen by comparing with the sentence just quoted from the *Chronicle* such sentences as the following, in which the participle is clearly predicative: *Ælf. L. S.* 396.206: Ða *com him gangende* to se godes witega helias; *ibid.* 408.412: him *com gangende* to godes witega isaia; — *Ælf. Hom.* II. 134<sup>b</sup><sup>1</sup>: him *com* ða *ridinge* to sum arwurðe ridda; *Ælf. Hom.* I. 466<sup>b</sup>: ðær *com* ða *fleogende* Godes engel scinende swa swa sunne; — *Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1043: Heo *com* ða *yrnende* mid egeslicum eagum, with which compare *Ælf. L. S.* XXXI. 1039: ða *com* ðær færllice *yrnan* an ðearle wod cu.

Of no small weight, finally, was the predicative use of present participles not denoting motion after verbs of motion, as in *Mat.* 11.18<sup>a, b</sup>: Soðlice Iohannes *com ne etende ne drincende* = *Venit enim Joannes neque manducans neque bibens*, — a locution almost invariably borrowed from the Latin of the *Gospels*; — *J.* 9.7: He for and ðwoh hine, and *com geseonde* = *Abiit ergo, et lavit, et venit videns*.

Substantially the same evolution from infinitive to participle has taken place in the other Germanic languages. Examples of the predicative use of the infinitive after verbs of motion and of rest will be given in Chapter XVI. Here I merely give a few examples of the predicative participle in the nominative after verbs of motion: —

Gothic: I have found no examples in Gering or in Grimm; and Dr. A. Köhler declares that the idiom is not found in Gothic.

Scandinavian: Messrs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 218, write as follows: “Til koma og fara fôies i oldnorsk præsens particip for at betegne bevægelsens art: þa komu þar fljugandi hrafnar tveir. Ligatedan i det senere sprog ved ‘komme’: koma løbendiss (Mand.); komme ridende, roende. Ogsaa perfektum participium synes i ældre tid — vistnok efter tysk mønster (er kam gegangen) — at kunne anvendes saaledes: tha kom the in gongen (K. Magn.); oc Roland kom standen paa iorden (ib.).” — See, too, Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 9.

Old High German: Notker, I. 75.22: Tanne *cham* der uictor fone uige *ritende* in curru; *Rol.* 7129: Ther kuninc Marsilie *kom fliehende* etc.<sup>1</sup>

Middle High German: *Eneide* 4219: *Vliende skiet* he dannen met den bloden mannen; *Engelhard* 5345: Der brunne luter und kalt *gienc ruschende unde klingende*.<sup>2</sup>

Old Saxon: *Hel.* 4965: *huarbondi geng* forth. — *Ib.* 5962: *thuo quam* im thar thie belago tuo *gangandi* godes suno (or appositive?).<sup>3</sup>

Be the cause of this substitution of the predicative participle of motion after verbs of motion for the predicative infinitive of motion after verbs of motion what it may, that such an evolution actually took place in Anglo-Saxon is conclusively proved by a brief survey of the statistics of the construction of the predicative participle of motion with verbs of motion.

<sup>1</sup> From Crenshaw, *l. c.*, p. 36. Cf. Göcking, *l. c.*, p. 8; Rick, *l. c.*, pp. 28–31; K. Meyer, *l. c.*, pp. 29, 43.

<sup>2</sup> From Crenshaw, *l. c.*, p. 37.

<sup>3</sup> From Prati, *l. c.*, p. 76.

In Anglo-Saxon poetry clear examples are seldom if ever found. In the following I give all the apparent examples that I have observed in the poems; but, as is evident, in most instances the participle hovers between the predicative use on the one hand and the attributive or the appositive on the other:—

*Maldon* 65: *com flowende* flod æfter ebban (or attributive?).

*Az.* 144: heofonfugas, ða ðe *lacende* geond lyft *farað* (or appositive?).

*Met.* XX. 216: Swa deð monnes saul hweole gelicost; hwærfeð ymbe hy selfe, . . . hwilum eft smeað ymb ðone ecan God sceppend hire, *scriðende* færð hweole gelicost, hwærfeð ymb hi selfe = no exact Latin equivalent, but the corresponding passage of the Latin *Boethius* (III, metre 9) has numerous appositive participles (or appositive?).

*Met.* XXXI. 11: sume fotum twam foldan peððað, sume fierfete; sume *fleogende* windað under wolcnum = 138.5: Et liquido longi spatia aetheris enatet uolatu (or appositive?).

*Wids.* 127: Ful oft of ðam heape *hwinende* fleag giellende gar on grome ðeode (or attributive?).

*Wids.* 135: Swa *scriðende* gesceapum *hweorfað* gleomen gumena geond grunda fela, ðearfe secgað, ðoncword sprecað, etc. (or appositive?).

*Ps.* 103.24: His is mycel sæ 7 on gemærum wid: ðær is unrim on ealra cwyra mycelra 7 mætra, ofer ðæne mægene oft scipu *scriðende* scrinde *fleotað* = 103.26: Illic naves *pertranseunt* (or appositive?).

*Gen.* 2557: Strudende fyr steapes 7 geapes *swogende* forswealh eall eador, ðæt on Sodoma byrig seegas ahton 7 on Gomorra (or appositive?).

*Beow.* 2832: ðæt se widfloga wundum stille hreas on hrusan, hordærne neah, nalles æfter lyfte *lacende* *hwearf* middelnihum, maðm-æhta wlonc ansyn ywde: ac he eorðan gefeoll for ðæs hildefruman hondgeweorce (or appositive?). [Dr. K. Köhler, *l. c.*, p. 70, considers the participle predicative.]

In Early West Saxon, likewise, it is difficult, if not impossible, to find clear examples. A few examples occur in the *Chronicle* (265<sup>t</sup>, 1137 E<sup>d</sup>: Gif twa men oðer ðreo *coman ridend* (*sic!*) to an tun;—47<sup>t</sup>, 744 E: steorran *foran* swyðe *scotienda*;—244<sup>m</sup>, 1143<sup>b</sup>. c: on ðis ylcan geare wæs swa mycel ebba . . . swa ðæt man *ferde ridende* 7 *gangende* ofer Tæmese), but only in the late MS. E (written from 1121 to 1154<sup>1</sup>) and, with one exception, in the later entries (years) of that manuscript. Only one example have I found in Alfred, viz., in *Greg.* 415.21: ðonne gæð Dine ut sceawian ða elðiodigan wif, ðonne hwelces monnes mod forlæt his ægne tilunga, & sorgað ymb oðerra monna wisan, ðe [him] nauht to ne limpð, & færð swa *wandriende* from his hade & of his endebyrdnesse = 336.21: Dina quippe ut mulieres videat extraneæ regionis egreditur, quando unaquæque mens sua studia negligens, actiones alienas curans, extra habitum atque extra ordinem proprium *vagatur*. Here the complementary participle translates a finite verb, but the participle in Anglo-Saxon is doubtless due to the influence of the two Latin appositive participles immediately preceding *vagatur*. In Wærferth's translation of Gregory's *Dialogues*, also, one example occurs, 98.18: ða se halga man *ferde* ðider *fleonde*, hine gemette sum munuc = B. 128 C: Quo dum *fugiens pergeret*, monachus quidam Romanus nomine, hunc euntem reperit, quo tenderet requisivit.

<sup>1</sup> Plummer, *l. c.*, II, p. xxxv.

But in Late West Saxon the predicative participle is quite frequent, as may be seen from this list <sup>1</sup> of the clearer examples observed by me, arranged according to the words, not the authors:—

- becuman**, 'come' (3):—  
 — *iernende* [y-], 'running' (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 196.  
 — *rowende*, 'rowing' (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXII. 36.  
 — *swymmende*, 'swimming' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 162<sup>m</sup>.  
**cuman**, 'come' (20):—  
 — *creopende*, 'creeping' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 488<sup>b</sup>.  
 — *fleogende*, 'flying' (6): *Ælf. Hom.* (6): I. 466<sup>t</sup>; II. 14<sup>t</sup>, 144<sup>b</sup>, 342<sup>m</sup>, 504<sup>b</sup>, 510<sup>m</sup>.  
 — *gangende*, 'going,' 'walking' (7): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 388<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 206.199; 302.263; 396.206; 408.412. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Judges* 13.3. — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.37<sup>m</sup> <sup>1</sup> (but may be appositive).  
 — *iernende* [y-], 'running' (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 1043 (cf. xxxi. 1039: *com . . . yrrnan*).  
 — *ridende*, 'riding' (4): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 134<sup>b</sup> <sup>1</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXV. 491, 773; XXVII. 84.  
 — *stæppende*, 'stepping' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 452<sup>m</sup>.  
**faran**, 'go,' 'travel' (1):—  
 — *worigende*, 'wandering' (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 4.11.  
**feran**, 'go,' 'travel' (8):—  
 — *forðsiðigende*, 'journeying' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 140<sup>t</sup>.  
 — *ridende*, 'riding' (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 22.21 (or appositive?).  
 — *siðigende*, 'journeying' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 136<sup>b</sup>.  
 — *worigende*, 'wandering' (5): *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 148<sup>t</sup>, 168<sup>t</sup>; II. 30<sup>b</sup>, 188<sup>m</sup>.  
 — *Ælf. Int.* (1): 154.  
**gan** [gangan], 'go,' 'move' (1):—  
 — *worigende*, 'wandering' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 160<sup>m</sup>.  
**iernan** [y-], 'run' (1):—  
 — *dwoligende*, 'straying' (1): *Chad.* (1): 224.

To the foregoing verbs of motion followed by a predicative participle of motion, I add a few examples of the predicative present participle after verbs of rest:—

- licgan**, 'lie,' 'recline' (2):—  
 — *anbidiende*, 'awaiting' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 260<sup>b</sup>.  
 — *bemænende*, 'lamenting' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 312<sup>b</sup>.  
**sittan**, 'sit' (4):—  
 — *æteowinde*, 'showing' (1): *Wulf.* (1): 198.3 (or appositive?).  
 — *biddende*, 'begging' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 156<sup>t</sup>.  
 — *hleowinde*, 'warming' (1): *Neot* (1): 161.  
 — *wepende*, 'weeping' (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 21.16.  
**standan**, 'stand' (5):—  
 — *byuigende*, 'trembling' (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 206.176.  
 — *cwacigende*, 'trembling' (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 32<sup>b</sup>.  
 — *geanbidiende*, 'awaiting' (1): *Gosp.* (1): *L.* 23.35.  
 — *starigende*, 'gazing' (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 296<sup>t</sup> <sup>1, 2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> I do not here repeat the examples, above given, from the later *Chronicle*.

## II. THE PREDICATE ACCUSATIVE OF THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE FOR THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT.

It is interesting to trace the gradual springing up of the predicate accusative of the present participle as a partial substitute for the predicative infinitive with accusative subject. True, Dr. Zeitlin, as stated in Chapter XIV, section viii, p. 212, claims that in Anglo-Saxon the infinitive was substituted for the participle, a claim earlier made for the Germanic languages as a whole by Becker and after him by other scholars, as is shown below. But the claim is untenable, I believe, either for Anglo-Saxon alone or for the Germanic languages as a whole.

To begin with Anglo-Saxon: as our statistics show, the predicate accusative of the present participle is practically unknown in Anglo-Saxon poetry, only four examples being found therein, each in a poem believed to have a Latin original, as follows:—

*Chr.* 536: Gewitan him ða gongan to Hierusalem hæleð hygerofe in ða halgan burg geomormode, ðonan hy God nyhst up *stigende* eagum *segun*, hyra Wilgifan.

*Chr.* 891: Ðær mon mæg sorgende folc *gehyran*, hygegeomor, hearde gefysed, cearam *cwiðende* cwicra gewyrhtu forhte afærde.

*Gu.* 1120: Ongon ða snottor hæle ar onbehtðegn æðeles neosan to ðam halgan hofe, *fond* ða *hlingendne* fusne on forðsið frean unwenne gæsthaligne godes temple, soden sarwylmum.

*Charms* IV. 55 (really prose): Ic ana *wat* ea *rinnende* ond ða nygon nædran behealdað.

In Early West Saxon, the predicate participle is rare, and, in the translations, usually is traceable either directly or indirectly to a Latin predicate participle, though occasionally the Anglo-Saxon participle, especially if of slight verbal power, has other correspondents in the Latin (an accusative and infinitive, 2; a gerund in the ablative, 1; a predicate adjective, 3; an appositive adjective, 1; a noun in the accusative, 1; an ablative absolute (passive), 1; no Latin, 1). The examples in full are:—

ALFRED (20):—

*Bede* (8):—

*gefelan*, 'feel,' 'perceive' (2):

— *batiende*, 'convalescing' (1): 404.1<sup>a</sup>: ða sona instepe *gefelde* ic *mec batiende* 7 *werpende* = *confestim me melius habere sentirem*.

— *werpende* [-ie-], 'recovering from illness' (1): 404.1<sup>b</sup>: quoted in preceding.

*gemetan*, 'find' (2):—

— *sittende*, 'sitting' (1): 402.20<sup>a</sup>: Ða *gemette* he *mec sittende*, 7 ic spræcan *meahte* = 291.8: *me reuisens, inuenit sedentem, et iam loqui ualentem*.

— *slæpende*, 'sleeping' (1): 244.3: ða *gemette* ðone his *geðoftan slæpende* = 193.17: *inuenit sodalem dormientem*.

*geseon*, 'see' (4):—

— *fleogende*, 'flying' (1): 214.16: *Geseah* he eac swylce ða *wergan gastas* ðurh ðæt fyr *fleogende* = 166.9: *Uidit autem et dæmones per ignem uolantes incendia bellorum contra iustos struere*.

— *standende*, 'standing' (1): 444.15: *geseah he . . . ðone Hælend standende Godes on ða swiðran* = 314.31: *uidit . . . Iesum stantem a dextris Dei*.

— *utgangende* [-o-], 'going out' (1): 386.5: *ða gesegon we . . . ðone leofan fæder . . . of his deagolnissum utgongende* = 282.6: *uidimus . . . egressum de latibulis suis . . . patrem*.

— *wiðfeohende*, 'fighting' (1): 88.18: *Ic geseo oðere æ in minum leomum wiðfeohende ðære æ mines modes* = 61.26: *Uideo aliam legem in membris meis repugnantem legi mentis meae*.

BOETHIUS (7): —

**forlætan**, 'leave' (1):

— *sorgiende*, 'sorrowing' (1): 20.31: *Hwæðer ðe ðu hi forseo, 7 ðines agnes ðonces hi forlete buton sare, ðe ðu gebide hwonne hi ðe sorgiendne forlæten?* = 31.48: *Quid igitur referre putas, tunc illam moriendo deseras an te illa fugiendo?*

**gedon**, 'make,' 'cause' (3): —

— *wealdende*<sup>1</sup> [-a-], 'controlling' (3): 5.16: *mæge ænigne mon weligne 7 waldendne gedon* = 0. — *Ib.* 38.16: *ne se anweald ne mæg gedon his waldend wealdendne* = 42.55: *nec potestas sui compotem fecerit quem uitiosae libidines insolubilibus adstrictum retinent catenis*. — *Ib.* 38.30: *oððe se anweald, ðonne he ne mæg his waldend waldendne gedon* = 0, but cf. 42.55 in preceding.

**gehealdan**, 'hold,' 'keep' (1): —

— *wuniende*, 'continuing' (1): 27.12: *Forðamðe God hine gehelt æghwonan singallice wuniendne on his modes gesælðum* = 35.21: *Tu conditus quieti felix robore ualli, duces serenius aeuum*.

**geseon**, 'see' (2):

— *murciende*, 'complaining' (1): 11.3: *Sona swa ic ðe ærest on ðisse unrotnesse geseah ðus murciende* = 18.3: *Cum te . . . maestum lacrimantemque uidissem*.

— *sweltende*, 'dying' (1): 23.1<sup>a</sup>: *mænegum men is leofre ðæt he ær self swelte ær he gesio his wif 7 his bearn sweltende* = 0.

GREGORY (3): —

**findan**, 'find' (2): —

— *frinende*, 'interrogating' (1): 385.23<sup>b</sup>: *ða fundon hie hiene tomiddes ðara wietena ðe ðær wisoste wæron in Hierusalem, hlystende hiora worda & frinende hiora lara* = 300.29<sup>b</sup>: *Invenerunt illum in templo sedentem in medio doctorum, audientem illos et interrogantem*. [Cf. *L.* 2.46.]

— *hlystende*, 'listening' (1): 385.23<sup>a</sup>: quoted in preceding.

**geseon**, 'see' (1): —

— *eaciende*, 'increasing' (1): 231.19: *ðonne hie geseoð ðara oðer[r]la gesælða eaciende, ðonne ðyncð him ðæt hie wiellen acuelan etc.* = 174.27: *dumque augmenta alienæ prosperitatis aspiciunt*.

OROSIUS (2): —

**geseon**, 'see' (1): —

— *feohende*, 'fighting' (1). 92.10: *ða gesawan hie Romana ærendracan on hie feohende* = 93.7: *legatos . . . adversum se videre pugnantes*.

**metan**, 'find' (1): —

<sup>1</sup> As is evident from the three examples, *wealdende* is more an adjective than a participle here.



— *sittende*, 'sitting' (1): 134.31: *ðeh ðe hie hiene meðigne on cneowum sittende metten* = 135.18: *fixo genu eatenus pugnauit*.

In Wærferth, however, the construction is somewhat more frequent than in Alfred, Wærferth having, in his one book (*The Dialogues of Gregory*), 27 examples; of which number, 25 are in direct translation of Latin predicate accusatives of the present participle; 1 (169.7), of a Latin predicate past participle; and 1 (335.26), of a Latin accusative and infinitive.

No examples have been found in the early part of the *Chronicle*, the earliest occurring in the year 1107, in the late manuscript E. Only three examples occur in all, and these belong, therefore, to Late West Saxon.

Moreover, not only is the predicate accusative of the present participle with real verbal power rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry and in Early West Saxon prose, and, when occurring in either, is traceable to Latin influence, but we have unmistakable evidence that the Early West Saxon translators constantly shunned rendering the Latin predicate accusative of the present participle by the corresponding construction in Anglo-Saxon. A reference to the Latin correspondents to the predicative infinitive with accusative subject after verbs of perception (sense and mental), given on pp. 206 f., shows that often the predicate participle is translated by a predicate infinitive.

Once more: we find the idiom only sparingly used in the more original Anglo-Saxon prose, whether early or late; for the *Chronicle* has only three examples, all after the year 1100; and Wulfstan, only four; while the *Laws* and the *Læceboc* have no example.

As to other relatively early West Saxon works, the *Prose Psalms* shows only two examples, in one of which (34.14<sup>c</sup>) an Anglo-Saxon predicate participle = a Latin appositive participle, and in the other (41.10) a slightly verbal participle = a Latin genitive phrase; *Benedict*, three examples, in each of which the Anglo-Saxon predicate participle translates a Latin predicate participle; the *Blickling Homilies*, 17 examples; the prose *Guthlac*, two examples, in one of which (VI.9) the Anglo-Saxon predicate participle = a Latin appositive participle, and in the other (I.16) the Anglo-Saxon predicate participle in the accusative = a Latin predicate participle in the nominative with a passive verb; the *Martyrology*, five examples; the *A. S. Homilies and Lives of Saints II* (non-Ælfrician), three examples; *Apollonius*, no example; and the *Minor Prose*, ten examples, distributed as follows: *Nicodemus*, 1; Napier's *Additions to Thorpe* (really, therefore, to be credited to Ælfric), 4; *Benediktiner-Offizium*, 1; *Chad*, 2; *Alexander*, 2.

But in Late West Saxon times the idiom is quite common, about 75 examples occurring in Ælfric and 80 in the *Gospels*. Of these 80 examples, all except two<sup>1</sup> are in direct translation of a Latin predicate participle. Of Ælfric's familiarity with and his addiction to Latin idioms, especially those concerned with the participle, abundant evidence has been given in the present writer's discussion of Ælfric's frequent use of the absolute<sup>2</sup> participle and of the appositive participle,<sup>3</sup> in which discussion were pointed out the chief Latin sources of

<sup>1</sup> The two exceptions are: *Mat.* 15.32: *ic hig nelle fæstende forlatan* = *dimittere eos jejunos nolo*, in which a slightly verbal participle = a Latin adjective; *Mat.* 27.32: *ða gemetton hig senna Cyreniscne mann cumende heom togenes* = *Ezeuntes autem invenerunt hominem Cyrenæum nomine Simonem*, in which a predicate accusative participle is suggested by a Latin appositive participle.

<sup>2</sup> See *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, p. 28.

<sup>3</sup> See *The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, pp. 297 ff.

Ælfric's works. Here it needs only to be said that Ælfric is likewise strongly influenced by the Latin, especially by ecclesiastical Latin, in his use of the predicate accusative of the present participle, a construction that, as shown above, is very frequent in the vulgate *Gospels*. It is likewise not uncommon in the vulgate *Old Testament*. Ælfric several times translates the Latin predicate participle by an Anglo-Saxon predicate infinitive (about four times in all). And, while occasionally Ælfric, in his *Heptateuch*, has a predicate accusative of the participle where another construction is found in the original Latin,<sup>1</sup> the participles so occurring are such as are not infrequent elsewhere in Ælfric and in other Anglo-Saxon prose (especially the *Gospels*); and such as are frequent in ecclesiastical Latin. I believe, therefore, that no one who examines my statistics as a whole will question the statement that Ælfric's use of the predicate accusative of the participle is due to Latin influence.

When we consider, then, that the predicative use of the present participle with full verbal power is practically unknown in Anglo-Saxon poetry; that it very rarely occurs in Early West Saxon, and then usually in translating a Latin predicate participle; that it is very rare also in the more original prose; but that it is frequent in Late West Saxon, especially in the *Gospels* and in Ælfric, and that of the 80 examples in the *Gospels* all but two are in direct translation of Latin predicate participles;—when we consider all this, the conclusion seems irresistible that this predicative use of the present participle was not a native Anglo-Saxon idiom, but was imported from the Latin, chiefly through the instrumentality of Ælfric and of the translator(s) of the *Gospels*.

As to this theory of the Latin origin of this idiom in Anglo-Saxon, I have seen no statement favoring it except this of Dr. Axel Erdmann,<sup>2</sup> which statement, it will be noted, ascribes the frequency, not the origin, of the idiom to Latin influence: "In the ancient period, the infinitive [*i. e.*, the infinitive with accusative subject] prevailed instead of the Participle [*i. e.*, the predicative participle in the accusative]. In *Beowulf*, *Cædmon's Genesis*, and even in the *Enigmas* it is employed exclusively, and in the whole A. S. poetical literature in by far the majority of cases. The Part. seems to owe very much of its frequency at a later time to Latin influence. In the *Gospels* it is decidedly preponderant. The infin. for inst. *Lucas*, XIX.32, XXI.1, 2. Cf. March, § 449."

But we are told by scholars of the highest distinction that, on the contrary, in the Germanic languages as a whole, the infinitive has been substituted for the participle. As already incidentally stated, this latter theory was proposed at least as early as 1836, by K. F. Becker, who, in his *Ausführliche Deutsche Grammatik*, Vol. I, pp. 193–194, expressed himself as follows: "Der Gebrauch eines objectiven Infinitivs nach den Verben: *sehen, hören, fühlen, finden*, z. B., 'Ich sehe ihn laufen,' 'Ich höre ihn singen,' ist uralt und findet sich auch in dem Angelsächsischen.<sup>3</sup> Statt dieses Infinitivs finden wir aber nicht nur im Griechischen und Lateinischen, sondern auch im Gothischen das Partizip des

<sup>1</sup> The divergent examples are: *Deut.* 11.25: *gehirdon* his word *þus cweðende* = *et locutus est vobis*; *Judges*, Epilogue, p. 264, 1.22: *hi gemetton . . . godes engel him togeanes gangende* mid him = 0; *Exod.* 22.19: *ða gesæh he . . . ðæt folc eall singende* = *vidit . . . choros*; *Gen.* 18.2: *And Abrahām beseah upp and gesæh ƿri veras standende* him gehende = *Cumque elevasset oculos, apparuerunt ei tres viri stantes prope eum*. The remaining four examples of the predicate accusative in the Anglo-Saxon *Heptateuch* (*Gen.* 28.12<sup>b</sup>, <sup>c</sup>, 29.1; *Num.* 22.23) translate Latin predicate participles.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, p. 32.

<sup>3</sup> "S. Otfrid, I, 4.21; 15.47; 25.15, 23;—*Nibelungenlied*, 5365;—Hickes, a. a. O., p. 93."

Präsens, z. B., *L. vidit jacentem*, *G. gasahw ligandein*.<sup>1</sup> Auch im Alt- und Mitteldeutschen Kommt nicht selten das Partizip vor;<sup>2</sup> und im Englischen wird gewöhnlich das Partizip und nicht der Infinitiv gebraucht, z. B., *I heard him singing*. Obgleich wir im Neuhochdeutschen nur den Infinitiv gebrauchen, und auch die romanischen Sprachen diesen Gebrauch angenommen haben; so hat sich doch der Gebrauch des Partizips im Allgemeinen weiter verbreitet; und wir müssen schon darum das Partizip als die ursprüngliche Form dieses Verhältnisses ansehen und den Gebrauch des Infinitivs aus dem leichten Wechsel der Partizipialformen herleiten (§ 98). Aber noch bestimmter spricht für diese Annahme das Beziehungsverhältniss selbst. So ist zwar in: 'Ich höre den Vogel singen' das Mittelwort *singen* Objekt des Verbs *hören*; aber es wird vermittelt des Prädikats *hören* als ein Attribut von Vogel ausgesagt, und fordert daher die adjektivische Form des Partizips, an welchem auch in den alten Sprachen — auch im Gothischen — die attributive Beziehung durch die Flexion bezeichnet wird." Substantially this same view was taken by Grimm, in 1837, in the fourth volume of his *Deutsche Grammatik*, p. 740; and by Theodor Varnaleken, in 1861, in his *Deutsche Syntax*, Vol. I, p. 125. In more recent times, too, this theory has not lacked advocates. It was espoused in 1885, by Professor Sylvester Primer, in his "The Factitive in German," pp. 47 ff.; in 1905, by Dr. C. Grimberg, in his "Undersökningar om Konstruktioner Accusativ med Infinitiv i den Äldre Fornsvenskan," pp. 226–227; and in 1908, by Dr. Jacob Zeitlin, in his dissertation referred to above.

But, despite the contention of these scholars, I must hold that, as in Anglo-Saxon, so in the Germanic languages as a whole, the predicative participle was a borrowed, not a native idiom, — a view that is held by several Germanic grammarians of note, as will be seen below. True, in Gothic we find the predicative participle far more frequently than the predicative infinitive after verbs of sense perception, but this comes, as I believe, merely of the translator's slavish following of the Greek original; for Professor Gering, *l. c.*, p. 428, and Professor Streitberg,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, p. 216, tell us that only twice after this group of verbs does Ulfilas fail to render the predicative participle of the Greek by the same idiom in the Gothic.

Dr. Grimberg, *l. c.*, p. 226, holds that in the Scandinavian the use of the predicate participle preceded that of the predicate infinitive after verbs of sense perception, — a view adopted apparently by Dr. Zeitlin.<sup>3</sup> But Messrs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 218, seem to think that the predicative present participle was substituted for an original predicative infinitive: "Participiet betegner objektets tilstand under handlingen (se § 68, 1, b, γ): *þeir drapu hann sofanda; hann fann þa drepna*. Ved 'finde' er den gamle infinitiv (§ 127) nu erstattet af nutidsparticip (undtagen i overført betydning): han fandt samme Trolde siddende ved en Høj at græde (Holb, for: og græde); ved indflydelse heraf ogsaa: hvor jeg ofte saa ham siddende at flikke gamle Skoe (ib., for: sidde og flikke). Ved assimilation staar i ældre tid efter perfektum undertiden fortidsfor nutidsparticip: hvor tidt har jeg funden dig sprungen herom (Dass.)."

For the High Germanic languages, the evolution of the predicative infinitive from the predicative participle was denied by Dr. Arthur Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 26, who, in 1880, declared: "Die Ansicht Koch's (*Deutsche Gramm.*, § 269), dass

<sup>1</sup> "S. Ulfila, *Matth.*, 6.16, 18; 8.14; 9.9."

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, pp. 66 and 110.

<sup>3</sup> "S. Isidor, 4.1; *Parzival*, 516.23; *Iwein*, 283."

der Inf. bei den Verbis der Wahrnehmung aus Participle entstanden zu sein scheine, ist aus historischen Gründen falsch." That the predicative use of the accusative of the present participle was not native to the High German languages in general, but was with them, as with Anglo-Saxon, an importation from the Latin, was demonstrated by Professor J. B. Crenshaw, in his doctor's dissertation, *The Present Participle in Old High German and Middle High German*, Baltimore, 1901,<sup>1</sup> pp. 14-20: "Present Participle after Verbs of Perception." His general statement is given on p. 14: "In Old High German and in Middle High German the Infinitive was the regular construction after Verbs of this class; the Participle was the exception, and the instances, cited from the works examined, will show that the usage was borrowed from the Latin. In Middle High German the Infinitive alone<sup>2</sup> is used, and the Participle has been dropped entirely." The general results of Professor Crenshaw's investigation have been confirmed, so far as Old High German is concerned, by the investigation of Dr. Karl Rick, in his dissertation, *Das Prädikative Participium Praesentis im Althochdeutschen*, Bonn, 1905, pp. 34-37; and by the less specialized investigations by Dr. Göcking and by Dr. K. Meyer cited in my bibliography. How closely the Old High German parallels the Anglo-Saxon may be gathered from these few examples taken from Rick: — Tatian 19.3: *gisah*<sup>3</sup> *zuene bruoeder rihtenti iro nezi* = *vidit fratres reficientes retia*; *ib.* 16.2: *tho gihortun inan thie iungiron sprechantan* = *audierunt eum discipuli loquentem*; *ib.* 181.3: *fant sie slafente* = *invenit eos dormientes*.

Finally, in Old Saxon the predicative participle is very rare, Pratje, *l. c.*, p. 77, giving only four examples for the whole of the *Heliand*: — 4024: *that sia im uualdand Crist tuo . . . farandian uwissun*; 4356: *that hie in . . . slapandia . . . ne bifahe*; 4797: *fand sia slapandia*; 5731: *thar hie uissa that godes barn, hreo hangondi herren sines*.

What Professor Wilmanns, professedly following Dr. Rick, says (*l. c.*, p. 109) of Old High German, is true in my judgment of the Germanic languages as a whole: "Prädikativ gebrauchte Part. Präs. waren in der älteren Sprache offenbar wenig beliebt, wenn auch die Übersetzer sie nach dem Muster ihrer Vorlagen oft genug zulassen."

<sup>1</sup> Though 1893 appears on the title-page, the monograph was not printed until 1901.

<sup>2</sup> According to Professor Crenshaw himself, *alone* is too strong, for he cites on p. 15 sixteen examples of the predicate participle in Middle High German after the verb *sehen*.

<sup>3</sup> Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 110, tells us that after *sehan* Tatian uses the infinitive only 6 times, the participles 40 times, in strict accord with the Latin original; and that Otfrid uses the participle only once.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE INFINITIVE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

In this chapter I attempt to give a very brief conspectus of the Infinitive in the Germanic Languages other than Anglo-Saxon, primarily for the light thus to be derived for the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon. I trust, however, that the preceding detailed discussion of the uses of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon may enable me to throw some light on the construction in the kindred Germanic languages. The main authorities, aside from the standard grammars by Grimm and by Wilmanns (the latter still unfinished), are for Gothic: the *Elementarbuch* by Streitberg and the special articles by Arthur Köhler and Otto Apelt; for the Scandinavian languages: the treatises of Falk and Torp, of Holthausen, of Kahle, of Lund, of Nygaard, and of Grimberg; for Old High German: the works of Apelt, Crenshaw, Denecke, Dietz, O. Erdmann, Göcking, K. Meyer, Mourek, Rannow, Rick, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich; for Middle High German: those of Paul, of Michels, and of Monsterberg-Münckebau; for New High German: those of Blatz, Curme, Herford, Thomas, Von Jageman, and Whitney; and for Old Saxon: those of Behaghel, Holthausen, Prati, and Steig. It will not be considered improper, I trust, to add that, while the examples given below are borrowed from the aforementioned authorities, the interpretation thereof is my own.

#### I. THE SUBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.

In Gothic we find as subject both the simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive (with *du*): — *Mk. 7.27*: *unte ni goþ ist niman hlaiþ barne jah wairpan hundam* = οὐ γάρ ἐστιν λαβεῖν τὸν ἄρτον τῶν τέκνων καὶ βαλεῖν τοῖς κυναρίοις;<sup>1</sup> *Rom. 7.18*: *unte wiljan atligiþ mis* = τὸ γὰρ θέλειν παράκειται μοι;<sup>2</sup> *Mk. 10.24*: *hvaiwa aglu ist þaim hugjandam afar faihu in þiudangardja guþs galeiþan* = πῶς δύσκολόν ἐστι τοὺς πεποιθότας ἐπὶ τοῖς χρήμασιν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰσελθεῖν;<sup>3</sup> *I. Cor. 11.6*: *ip jabai agl ist qinon du kapillon aiþrau skaban* = εἰ δὲ αἰσχροὶν γυναικὶ τὸ κείρασθαι ἢ ξυρᾶσθαι.<sup>4</sup> As is evident from the preceding examples, the Greek articular infinitive is represented by both the simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive in Gothic. In Gothic itself the infinitive is at times preceded by the article, as in *Philip. 1.29*: *izwis fragiban ist faur Xristu ni þatainei du imma galaubjan, ak jah þata faur ina winnan* = ὅτι ὑμῶν ἐχαρίσθη τὸ ὑπὲρ Χριστοῦ, οὐ μόνον τὸ εἰς αὐτὸν πιστεύειν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πάσχειν.<sup>4</sup> Worthy of note, too, is the tendency to use the prepositional infinitive instead of the simple infinitive after the verb *to be* plus an adjective, but the tendency is not so strong as in Anglo-Saxon. Finally, it should be mentioned that Professor Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, § 318, considers as predicative infin-

<sup>1</sup> From Wright,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, § 435.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 434.

<sup>3</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *A. l. c.*, p. 421.

<sup>4</sup> From Bernhardt,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 111.

itive with dative subject what to me seems a subjective infinitive, a topic discussed in section ix of the present chapter.

In Old Norse, likewise, we find, as subject, both the simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive (with *at*), but the latter the oftener, as we learn from Drs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 195: "Som subjekt staaar infinitiven særlig hyppig ved upersonlige udtryk: *mik fara tiðir; lysti hann at kyssa hana*; samt i udtryk med *vera*: *lett er lauss at fara*. Modsat af hvad man skulde vente, staaar her allerede i oldnorsk mest *at*. Sagen er den, at i de fleste tilfælde var en dobbelt opfatning mulig: i *mik fara tiðir* er infinitiven ligefrem subjekt for verbet (at fare udgjør min lyst); men verbet kan ogsaa tages rent upersonligt: jeg har en lyst som gaar i retning af at reise = *mik tiðir at fara*. Den af denne dobbelte opfatning fremkaldte vaklen i brugen af *at* ophørte efterhaanden, og 'at' blev det herskende." See, further, Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 357 ff.; Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 220.

In Old High German we find the same fluctuation between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive as subject that we have found in Anglo-Saxon:—uninflected: *Tatian* 148.11: *oba iz arloubit si wola tuon, heila tuon oda furliosan* = *si licet bene facere, salvam facere an perdere*;<sup>1</sup>—*B. R.* 35.3: *pezzira ist swigeen denne kispreehan wesam* = *melius est silire, quam loqui*;<sup>2</sup>—*Tatian* 191.26: *quot ist thir einougen richison, thanna habenten gisentit werden* = *bonum tibi est luscum regnare quam habentem mitti*;<sup>3</sup>—inflected: *Hom. de voc.* 29.14: *iu garisit gotes wort za quedanne* = *vobis oportebat loqui verbum dei*;<sup>4</sup>—*Tatian* 100.30: *gilimphit mir zi gotspellone* = *oportet me evangelizare*;<sup>4</sup>—*Is.* 9.9: *so zi chilaubanne mihhil wootnissa ist* = *ita existimare magnae dementiae est*;<sup>5</sup>—*Tatian* 171.7: *nist quot zi nemenne . . . brot inti zi werfenna* = *non est bonum sumere panem . . . et mittere*.<sup>6</sup> And the chief cause of this fluctuation appears to be the same as in Anglo-Saxon, namely, the disturbing influence of the datival verbs and verbal phrases; though a slight factor may be that suggested by Denecke with reference to the uninflected infinitive with *quot ist* in *Tatian* 191.18, 26: "In beiden Stellen scheint theils das Pass. *gisentit werden*, theils der vom Uebersetzer dem Lat. nachgeahmte Acc. das Eintreten von *zi* verhindert zu haben."<sup>7</sup>

In his elaborate treatise, *Der Infinitiv in den Epen Hartmanns von Aue*, Dr. Monsterberg-Münckenau gives a unique classification of the uses of the infinitive, and on page 7 declares that "nie ist der blosse Infinitiv bei Hartmann Subject." Despite this statement, he gives examples from Hartmann of what others consider the subjective use of the infinitive; and all recent authorities<sup>8</sup> tell us that the infinitive is found as subject in Middle High German. But the usage, especially as to the presence or omission of the preposition with the subjective infinitive in both Middle High German and in New High German, has diverged so far from the earlier status represented in Old High German and in Anglo-Saxon that it seems useless for our purpose to cite examples. Suffice it to say that the confusion between uninflected infinitive and inflected infinitive grows in Middle High German, and becomes almost hopeless in New High German.

In Old Saxon we have clear examples of the inflected infinitive as subject,

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 66.

<sup>3</sup> Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 23.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 22.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 70.

<sup>6</sup> See Michels, *l. c.*, § 245.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 23.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 71.

with datival verbs and verbal phrases:— *Hel.* 975: *uuest thu, that us so girisid allaro rehto gihuuilig te gifulleanne*; <sup>1</sup> *ib.* 3138: *god is it her te uuesanne*.<sup>2</sup> In the following the uninflected infinitive may be considered as subject or as predicate nominative: *Hel.* 5825: *ik uuet that is iu ist niud sehan an theson stene innan*.<sup>3</sup>

It seems probable, therefore, that the use of the infinitive, whether uninflected or inflected, as the subject of active verbs, is of native origin in the Germanic languages; and that the differentiation between the two infinitives is much the same as in Anglo-Saxon: often the datival verbs or verbal phrases cause the inflected (or in Gothic the prepositional) infinitive to be used as subject instead of the uninflected.

The passive infinitive as subject, as, indeed, the passive infinitive in any use, is very rare in the earlier Germanic languages. Concerning the passive infinitive in general, we know that in Gothic the passive infinitive of the Greek is usually rendered by an active infinitive; that, while the passive infinitive is not infrequent in some Old High German translations, as in the *Benedictiner-Regel*, in the better translations it is often avoided, and that in the more original prose it is almost unknown, only two examples (with an auxiliary) occurring in Otfrid; that the passive infinitive is not frequent in Old Saxon or in Old Norse. The situation, therefore, in the Germanic languages as a whole as regards the passive infinitive is strikingly similar to that found in Anglo-Saxon. See Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 5; Pratje, *l. c.*, pp. 78, 80; Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, § 312; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 165; Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 194; Kahle, *l. c.*, § 432; Löffler, *l. c.*, pp. 10–11; Öberg, *l. c.*, pp. 24–25.

## II. THE OBJECTIVE INFINITIVE.

It is clearly out of the question at this place to do much more than call attention to a few of the most striking instances of the interchange of uninflected infinitive and of inflected infinitive as object in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon.

As in Anglo-Saxon, so in the other Germanic languages the object infinitive is very common with verbs (1) of commanding, (2) of causing and permitting, and (3) of sense perception, as may be seen by a brief inspection of the treatises named for the respective languages at the beginning of this chapter. It is far less common with other groups of verbs.

According to the statistics of Dr. A. Köhler, there is next to no interchange of simple infinitive and of prepositional infinitive as object in Gothic. True, a few verbs that he discusses under the objective use<sup>4</sup> (*giban, saihvan, meljan, anabiudan, sokjan*) are followed by both the simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive, but each time he holds that the prepositional infinitive is final, not objective, in which supposition he is usually correct. As, however, we saw the same sort of wavering between the two infinitives in the Anglo-Saxon cognates, *beodan* and *secan*, I cite an example each of *anabiudan* and of *sokjan* followed by the prepositional infinitive: *L.* 4.10: *patei aggilum seinaim*

<sup>1</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 493.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 496.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 344. Steig, however, considers that *sehan* modifies *niud*. See p. 264 below.

<sup>4</sup> Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *A.*, *l. c.*, pp. 435–450.

*anabiudip* bi puk *du fastan* puk = ὅτι τοῖς ἀγγέλοις αὐτοῦ ἐντελείται περὶ σοῦ τοῦ διαφυλάξαι σε; *Mk.* 14.55: *ip pai auhumistans gudjans jah alla so gafaurds sokidedun* ana Jesu *weitwodipa du afdaupjan* ina = οἱ δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ ὅλον τὸ συνέδριον ἐξήτουν κατὰ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ μαρτυρίαν εἰς τὸ θανατῶσαι αὐτόν. — Regardless of the question as to whether the infinitives in Gothic are final or objective in sense, it is instructive to note that the prepositional infinitive in Gothic corresponds in Greek in the one case to an articular infinitive in the genitive and in the other to a prepositional infinitive.

In the Scandinavian languages, on the other hand, there is considerable interchange of the two infinitives in the objective use, the basis of which interchange is thus stated by Professors Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 193: "Oprindelig havde altsaa den rene infinitiv sin plads som subjekt, objekt og efter de modale hjelpeverber, infinitiv med *at* derimod hvor der betegnes en hensigt ('lægge sig at sove'), en henseende ('let at finde'), eller en nødvendighed og mulighed ('hvad er nu at gjøre'). Allerede i ældste oldnorsk er imidlertid de to infinitiver paa mange maader sammenblandede, navnlig saaledes at formen med *at* har udbredt sig paa den rene infinitivs bekostning, f. eks. som subjekt og objekt. Heller ikke er dette underligt: betydningen af hensigt eller maal berører sig paa mange maader med objektet, som jo betegner den gjenstand som handlingen er rettet mod eller gaar ud over; saaledes ser vi ogsaa i gotisk objekts-infinitiven undertiden optræde med *du*, som herfra ogsaa kan overføres paa subjekts-infinitiv. Omvendt synes allerede i fællesgermansk bevægelsesverber at kunne bruges uden præposition (gotisk: *gam giban*, tysk: schlafen gehen)." See, further, Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, pp. 196 ff.; Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 358 ff.; Nygaard, *l. c.*, pp. 221 ff.

In Old High German, the situation is much like that in Anglo-Saxon. For instance, as object we find both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive after these verbs: *suohhen*, 'seek;' *geron*, 'desire;' *gibiotan*, 'command;' *beginnan*, 'begin:' *Tatian* 202.11: *suochit in offane wesan = quaerit in palam esse*; <sup>1</sup> — *ib.* 83.6: *thaz Herodis suochit then kneht zi forhiosenne = ut Herodis quærat puerum ad perdendum eum* (or final?); <sup>2</sup> — *ib.* 130.5: *suoktun inan in zi traganne inti zi sezenne furi then heilant = quærebant eum inferre et ponere ante Jesum*; <sup>3</sup> — *Tatian* 316.8: *her uuas iu geronti . . . inan gisehan = erat enim cupiens . . . videre eum*; <sup>4</sup> — *Ev. Matth.* 7.5: *gerotun za gasehanne enti za gahorrenne = cupierunt videre et audire*; <sup>5</sup> — *Aug. serm.* 35.20: *gabiut mir queman = jube me venire*; <sup>6</sup> — *Tatian* 226.11: *gibot uns zi steinonne = mandavit nobis lapidare*; <sup>7</sup> — *ib.* 196.34: *gibot inan ther herro zi vorkoufanne inti sina quenun inti . . . inti vorgeltan = jussit eum dominus venundari et uxorem eius et . . . et reddi*; <sup>8</sup> — *Otfrid I*, 2.7: *thaz ih biginne redion, wio er bigonda bredigon*; <sup>9</sup> *Otfrid V*, 13.25: *bigonda swimmanes*.<sup>9</sup> The interchange in infinitives is chiefly due, I believe, in Old High German, as in Anglo-Saxon, to the double regimen of the governing verbs: *suohhen* governs an accusative of the thing or of the person usually, but occasionally a genitive of the thing in Old High German and in Old Saxon;<sup>10</sup> *geron*, a genitive of the thing usually, but occasion-

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 64.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 65, who attributes the absence of inflection in the second infinitive to its separation from the first infinitive, but I should prefer to say because of its separation from the principal verb.

<sup>4</sup> From Erdmann, *l. c.*, p. 203.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 63.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 46.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 204.

<sup>8</sup> From Blatz, *l. c.*, p. 549.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 66.

<sup>10</sup> Delbrück, *l. c.*, p. 93.



ally an accusative in Old High German;<sup>1</sup> *forhten*, an accusative of the thing or person feared and a genitive of cause;<sup>2</sup> *gibiotan*, a dative of the person and an accusative of the thing;<sup>3</sup> and *beginnan*, an accusative or a genitive.<sup>4</sup> In the series of two infinitives after *gibot* in *Tatian* 196.34, quoted above, as already stated, I think that the absence of inflection is due to its remoteness from the chief verb. In *Tatian* 83.6, the inflected infinitive may be due in part to the presence of the gerund in the Latin original.

Purposely, again, I ignore the objective infinitive in Middle High German except to say that Dr. Monsterberg-Münckenau,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 11, denies this use to Hartmann, though what others consider such infinitives are abundant therein; and that in Middle High German the confusion between uninflected and inflected objective infinitives grows rapidly.

In New High German the differentiation between the two is as difficult as in Modern English.

In Old Saxon a similar interchange between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive is found after *giuualdan*: *Hel.* 5345, 5346: that ik *giuualdan* muot so thik *te spildianne* an speres orde, so *ti quellianne* an crucium, so quican *latan*.<sup>5</sup> In Old Saxon, *uualdan* governs the instrumental or the genitive,<sup>6</sup> but the exchange of uninflected for inflected infinitive in the preceding example is probably due, not only to the double regimen of *uualdan*, but also to the remoteness of the third infinitive from the chief verb. In all probability the original construction was with the inflected infinitive.

The following verbs have only the inflected infinitive as object in the Old High German texts discussed by Denecke: *luston* and *lusten*, 'desiderare'; *giftizzan*, 'studere'; *wizzan*, 'cognoscere'; *argezzan*, 'oblivisci'; *sich bichnaan* (?), 'agnoscere'; *leren*, 'docere'; *gizeihhanon*, 'demonstrare'; *farbiotan*, 'prohibere'; and the following in Old Saxon, according to Steig, *l. c.*, pp. 491-494: *bifelhan*, 'recommend'; *gemanagfeldian* (?), 'multiply'; *linon*, 'learn'; *menian* 'intend'; *thenkan*, 'think,' 'think of'; *ruokan*, 'hope,' 'care'; *biodan*, 'command.' Even a cursory examination of the examples in which these words occur, will show that in the main the inflected infinitive represents an 'indirect case' in the sense in which that term was defined above, in Chapter II, p. 61.

As in the case of the subjective infinitive, so with the objective infinitive the statistics accessible to me are too incomplete to warrant speaking with confidence concerning the origin of this use in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon. But so far as it goes, the evidence seems to me to tend to show that the idiom is native in the languages considered, both with the uninflected infinitive and with the inflected infinitive, and for the same kinds of reason that were given in the discussion of the idiom in Anglo-Saxon. Moreover, the grounds of differentiation between the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive, in the objective use, appear to be substantially the same in the Germanic languages in general as in Anglo-Saxon: in the main, the simple infinitive only is used with verbs governing an accusative; the inflected infinitive only, with verbs governing an indirect case; both infinitives, with verbs of double regimen.

The passive infinitive as object is very rare in the Germanic languages, and

<sup>1</sup> Delbrück,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 37.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 34.

<sup>5</sup> From Pratié, *l. c.*, p. 73.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 12.

<sup>6</sup> Delbrück,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 112.

usually, when it occurs, is due to foreign influence, as in the Old High German *Tatian* 145.1: *thanne thisu ellu biginnent gientot wesan* = cum haec omnia incipient consummari.<sup>1</sup> See the note on the passive infinitive as subject in section i of this chapter and the references there given.

"The retained object" with passive verbs is rare in the Germanic languages. Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 143, records no example from the Gothic and only one example from the Old Norse (*hann kvadhst vera brautingi einn ok utlendr*, form. sög. 2, 73); and only two from Old High German (N. Cap. 318<sup>a</sup>: *dannan wirt er sie gesaget zunden*; N. Arist. 386<sup>b</sup>: *ist er gesaget ouch wesen homo*). Dr. Rannow, *l. c.*, p. 99, tells us that, of the 14 examples of the infinitive as retained object in the Latin original of Isidor, only two are kept in the Old High German. Professors Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 196, declare that "En 'nominativ med infinitiv' i strengere forstand (som passiv of 'akkusativ med infinitiv,' hvorum se § 128) findes saaledes ikke i oldnorsk;" but they give several examples that in my judgment belong here: see my quotation from them in section iii of this chapter.

### III. OTHER SUBSTANTIVAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.

In my reading I have found only a few examples of other substantival uses of the infinitive in the kindred Germanic languages. They are as follows:—

#### A. AS A PREDICATE NOMINATIVE.

In Gothic: *Rom.* 10.6: *pat-ist Xristu dalap attiuhun* = τοῦτ' ἐστὶ Χριστὸν καταγαγεῖν; similarly *Rom.* 10.7; *Rom.* 7.10, in which latter the Gothic infinitive translates a Greek pronoun; with article: *Mk.* 9.10: *hva ist þata us dauþaim usstandan?* = τί ἐστὶ τὸ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστῆσαι;<sup>2</sup>

Of this use in the Scandinavian languages, Professors Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 196, speak as follows: "Som rent prædikatsord kan infinitiven kun sjelden forekomme: sligt er at friste Gud; dette maa kaldes at komme fra asken i ilden. Derimod staar det oftere som del af prædiketet. Saaledes i oldnorsk ved *þykkja*: *þeim þotti hann vera katr*. Videre ved de refleksive verber som betyder 'sige sig at være:' *hon lezk vera læknir*. Endelig undertiden, men yderst sjelden, ved passiv af de i § 126 nævnte verber: *rytningar eru fyrirboðnir at bera* (det er forbudt at bære dolke); samt ved passiv af verbet *sja* (§ 127): *varu senar storar eldingar fljuga or norðri*; *var þa seinn eldligr stöpull falla af himni*. Ellers anvendes ved passive verber en sætning med *at*: *Helgi ok Svafa, er sagt, at væri endrborin* = siges at være gjenfødt. En 'nominativ med infinitiv' i strengere forstand (som passiv af 'akkusativ med infinitiv,' hvorum se § 28) findes saaledes ikke i oldnorsk." See, too, Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 376–378.

In Old High German: *Tatian* 327.13: *wisa ist zi bigrabanne* = mos est sepelire.<sup>3</sup>

In Old Saxon: *Hel.* 5825: see p. 233 above.

Clearly my examples are too few to warrant any conclusion as to the origin of this idiom in the Germanic languages.

<sup>1</sup> From Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 165.

<sup>2</sup> From Köhler, *l. c.*, pp. 421–422. In *Mk.* 9.10, the infinitive may be subjective, as is claimed by Bernhardt, *l. c.*, p. 111.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 70.

## B. AS AN APPOSITIVE.

In Gothic: *II. Cor.* 7.11: *saihv auk silbo pata bi guþ saurgan izwis hvelauda gatawida izwis usdaudein* = ἰδοὺ γὰρ αὐτὸ τοῦτο, τὸ κατὰ θεὸν λυπηθῆναι ὑμᾶς πόσῃν κατεργάσατο ὑμῖν σπουδὴν;<sup>1</sup> *Mk.* 2.9: *Hvaþar ist azetizo, du giþan þamma usliþan*: ἀφελάντα þu frawaurhteis þeinós, þau *quiþan*: urreis etc. = τί ἐστὶν εὐκοπώτερον, εἰπεῖν τῷ παραλυτικῷ, Ἀφέωνται σοι αἱ ἁμαρτίαι, ἢ εἰπεῖν· Ἐγείρε, etc.

In the Scandinavian languages: *S. E.* 32.1: *helzt vill hann þat taka til at þreyta drykkju við einhvern mann*; *S. E.* 75.5: *hon hafði þess heit strengt at eiga þann einn mann*.<sup>2</sup>

In Old High German: *Otfrid* IV, 17.29: *sie sahun ungimacha, egeslicha sacha, druhtin iro bintan*;<sup>3</sup> — *B. R.* 39.7: *hweo unsenfta racha intfianc zekehriltanne . . . indi deonoon* = quam difficilem rem suscepit, regere . . . et servire;<sup>4</sup> — *Ev. Matth.* 1.14: *Hwedat ist gazelira za quedanne . . . odo za quhedanne?* = Quid est facilius dicere . . . aut dicere?<sup>5</sup>

Again, the collection of examples is too small to warrant any confident deductions as to the origin of the infinitive as an appositive in the Germanic languages.

## C. AS THE OBJECT OF A PREPOSITION.

It seems unnecessary to give illustrations here of the well known use of the infinitive as the object of various prepositions other than those representing the Anglo-Saxon *to* in the kindred Germanic languages, — a topic treated well in Grimm, in Erdmann, and in Denecke.

## IV. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH AUXILIARY VERBS.

The predicative use of the uninflected infinitive with auxiliary verbs is so common in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon as not to call for illustration here. Of the inflected infinitive in this use I cite a few illustrations:—

In Gothic: no instance of the prepositional infinitive is found with the auxiliaries, according to A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 425.

In Old Norse, according to Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 197, both the uninflected infinitive and the prepositional occur with *kunna*, 'can'; 'þora', 'dare'; 'þurfa', 'need'; 'eiga', 'own', 'ought'. See, too, Delbrück,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.* p. 355.

In Old High German:—*eigan*: *Denkm.* lvi. 97: *ci arstandanne eigun* = *resurgere habent*;<sup>6</sup> — *Otfrid* V. 19.2: *zi sorganne eigun wir bi thaz*;<sup>7</sup> — *scal*: *Otfrid* III, 20.124: *waz scal es avur thanne nu so zi fragenne*<sup>8</sup> (though Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 10, holds that the infinitive here does not depend on *scal*).

In Old Saxon:—*can*: *Hel.* 2531: *nio hie so uuido ni can te githenkeanne thegan an is muode*.<sup>9</sup>

That the predicative use of the uninflected infinitive active with auxiliary verbs is native to the Germanic languages, as to Anglo-Saxon, is indisputable;

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler, <sup>2</sup> A., *l. c.*, p. 422. — Commenting on the difference between *Mat.* 9.5, in which we have the simple infinitive (*hvaþar ist rathis azetizo giþan*) and *Mk.* 2.9, in which we have the prepositional infinitive, Gabelentz and Loebe, *l. c.*, p. 202, declare: "... scheint der Unterschied zu sein: ersteres heisst: was ist leichter, zu eagen . . . , letzteres: was ist leichter zu sagen. . . ."

<sup>2</sup> From Nygaard, *l. c.*, pp. 226 f.      <sup>3</sup> From Erdmann, <sup>4</sup> O., *l. c.*, p. 199.      <sup>4</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 59.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 71.      <sup>6</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 61.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 212. See, too, Delbrück, <sup>8</sup> *l. c.*, p. 355.

<sup>9</sup> From Prati, *l. c.*, p. 73. See, too, Delbrück, <sup>9</sup> *l. c.*, p. 355, who says that *thurban*, also, has the prepositional infinitive as its complement.

this use of the inflected infinitive is sporadic except with *eigan* (*agan*), concerning which see above, Chapter IV, pp. 80–82; and except with the several verbs named under Old Norse above.

On the other hand, the passive infinitive with auxiliaries is almost unknown in the more original prose (only two examples occur in Otfrid<sup>1</sup>), and in the prose translations usually renders a Latin passive infinitive. In a word, as in Anglo-Saxon, so in the Germanic languages the idiom is borrowed. See the references at the end of section i in this chapter.

## V. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF MOTION AND OF REST (EXCLUSIVE OF “(W)UTON”).

Of the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion, as in the Anglo-Saxon *com . . . fleogan*, I find no examples in Gothic or in Old Norse unless the following, quoted from Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 107–109, be such:—Gothic: *Mk.* 1.44: *gagg þuk atarugjan* = ἵπαγε, σεαυτὸν δεῖξον; *Mat.* 5.24: *gagg gasibjon* = ἵπαγε, διαλλάγηθι; *J.* 9.7: *gagg þwahan* = ἵπαγε νύψαι;—Old Norse: *Hym.* 14.7: *baþ sioða ganga* = jussit coctum iri; *Völ.* 56.3: *gengr vega*; *ib.* 54.3: *ferr vega*;—*ib.* 55.1: *kemr vega*.

Nor have I found any example in Old High German unless these quoted from Grimm, *l. c.*, IV., p. 109, be such: *O.* III, 24.25: *ilti loufan*; *N. Cap.* 361<sup>a</sup>: *iltton chomen*.

With a verb of rest we find the predicative infinitive in Notker's translation of Capella<sup>2</sup> (782.9: *stuont si sorgen*) and in Otfrid. Concerning the latter Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 203, speaks as follows: “*gistantan* hat noch die Bedeutung: *dastehen*, indem der Inf. die aus dem ruhenden Zustande sich entwickelnde Tätigkeit angibt, in den Stellen: I, 9.23: *gistuantun* sie tho *scouon*; IV, 18.24: *ih gistuant thin warten* (dagegen *stantan* und *irstantan* mit *zi* und Inf., §§ 350–352),” to which he adds: “dann bezeichnet es formelhaft den Anfang einer Handlung: I, 17.42: *gistuant er thingon*,” etc.

According to Monsterberg-Münckenau, *l. c.*, p. 31, this infinitive is not found after verbs of motion in Hartmann, but instead we have the predicative present participle, already illustrated in Chapter XV, section i. But this infinitive is found after verbs of rest in Hartmann, in the following, I think, though the infinitive is considered final by Monsterberg-Münckenau (p. 29): *E.* 9699: *als si frou Enite gesach dort sitzen weinen*; *G.* 2279: *da ich in da stende sach klagen*. It seems, however, that in Middle High German, while the present participle was occasionally used, the preterite participle was used habitually, as in the following: *Iw.* 785: *kom gegangen*; *Mar.* 170.28: *kom geflogen*; *Parz.* 16.23: *kom gesigelt*,<sup>3</sup> an idiom that, according to Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 9, is unknown in Old High German, but which, as is well known, is very common in New High German.

After verbs of rest in New High German, of course, the predicative infinitive is very common, as in *blieb sitzen*, *stehen*, etc.: see Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 10.

But in Old Saxon we have the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion quite as in Anglo-Saxon, only not so many verbs are so used. According to Steig,

<sup>1</sup> Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 165.

<sup>2</sup> From Manthey, *l. c.*, p. 39. Cf., too, Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 106.

<sup>3</sup> The examples are from Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 9, 146.

*l. c.*, p. 342, we find *kuman*, 'come,' followed by *gangan*, 'go,' *faran*, 'go,' *gifarān*, 'go,' *suogan*, 'blow,' and *uallan*, 'boil;' *giuuitan*, 'go,' followed by *gangan*, *sithon*, 'journey,' and *faran*, 'go;' and *sithon* followed by *gangan*. Typical examples are: *Hel.* 503: *tho quam en uuf gangan*; *ib.* 5796: *thuo thar suogan quam engil thes alouualdon fan radure faran*; — *ib.* 425: *giuuitun im te Bethlehem siðon*; — *ib.* 5783: *sithodun idisi te them grabe gangan*.<sup>1</sup>

I believe that the predicative use of the infinitive after verbs of motion in the Low Germanic languages was a native idiom, and sprang from an original final use, as explained above, Chapter XIV, pp. 194 ff.; and that the predicative use of the infinitive after verbs of rest was native to the High Germanic as well as to the Low<sup>2</sup> Germanic languages, and that it, too, sprang from the final use.

As in Anglo-Saxon, so in the other Germanic languages the predicative present participle was at times substituted for the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion and of rest: see Chapter XV, section i.

## VI. THE PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH "(W)UTON."

The predicative infinitive with *(w)uton* is found only in the Low Germanic languages, so far as I can discover. Three examples are found in the *Heliond*, according to Steig, *l. c.*, 344: — 223: *uuita kiasan im oðrana niudsamna naman*; 228: *uuita is thana fader fragon*; 3995: *uuita im uuonian mid, tholoian mit usson thiodne*. In Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 98, footnote, a number of examples are given of the Mnl. *weten*: *weten hem volghen! weten vechten! weten gaen! weten varen!* etc.

In the Low Germanic languages this predicative use possibly was native, and arose from an original final use. Compare what is said concerning the origin of this idiom in Anglo-Saxon, above, Chapter XIV, pp. 199 f.

## VII. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH "BEON" ("WESAN").

The predicative infinitive of necessity with the verb *to be* is not found in Gothic, according to Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 128. Nor, despite the statement of Dr. Karl Köhler, *l. c.*, p. 8, to this effect, does *du saihvan* seem analogous in *Matthew* 6.1: *Atsaihviþ armaion izwara ni taujan in andwairþja manne du saihvan im = Προσέχετε τὴν δικαιοσύνην ὑμῶν μὴ ποιεῖν ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων πρὸς τὸ θαυθῆναι αὐτοῖς*.

But the idiom is common in Old Norse. Of it Messrs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 206, speak as follows: "Infinitiv fôies paa friere vis till verber i folgende tre tilfælde: a. Til verberne 'være' og 'bli (vorde)'. Ved 'være' betegnes enten en pligt, nødvendighed eller en mulighed (§ 122, 3): *þer er at þegja; hvað er at gera; nu er at segja; gnyr var at heyra*; der var ikke Korn at bekomme (P. Cl.); der var ikke et menneske at se; han er ikke (til) at spøge med. Merk: *ok var þar mikilli gsku af at moka*, hvor vi anvender personligt udtryk. Ved 'vorde (bli)' betegnes en nødvendighed eller en sikker fremtidighed (= komme til at,

<sup>1</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, pp. 337-340.

<sup>2</sup> The views of Grimm, of Steig, and of Pratje concerning this idiom have been given in Chapter XIV, section v.

§ 96): *verð ek nu (at) flyja* (jeg blir nødt til at flygte); nw worder jeg ath fly (K. Magn.); thi worder ieg nw ath kallis en forredere (Chr. Ped.); sporsmaalet blir at anse for uløseligt."

In Old High German this infinitive, inflected, is quite common, and corresponds, in the closer translations, usually to a gerundial periphrastic: *Tatian* 133.24: *win zi sentenne ist* = *vinum mittendum est*; *ib.* 189.12: *sun ist zi sellenne* = *filius tradendus est*; — *Is.* 9.10: *hwemu ist dhiz nu zi quhedanne* = *cui ergo dicitur*.<sup>1</sup> So common is the idiom in Middle High German and in New High German that illustration is unnecessary here. But I quote Wilmanns's statement concerning the voice of the infinitive in this construction, *l. c.*, p. 167: "Noch entschiedener gilt passive Auffassung für die Infinitive mit *zu*, durch die wir neben manchen Verben bezeichnen, dass etwas geschehen kann oder muss (§ 70, 6). In der jetzigen Sprache schliessen sie sich namentlich an *es ist* (*steht, bleibt*): *Es ist* oder *steht zu erwarten, ist nicht zu sagen, nicht auszuhalten*, oder mit bestimmtem Subjekt, das zugleich Objekt des Infinitivs ist: *Er ist hart zu tadeln; sein Übermut ist nicht zu ertragen; eine schwere Pflicht ist oder bleibt dir noch zu erfüllen*. Überall behauptet sich die reine aktive Form."

Once in Otfrid we have after *sin* an uninflected infinitive denoting purpose: II, 14.100: *sie warun in theru burg, koufen iro notdurft*.<sup>2</sup> Similarly in Old Saxon, according to Pratje, *l. c.*, p. 70, we have an uninflected infinitive of purpose in *Heliant* 389: *thia thar . . . ute uuarun ueros an uuahtu uuiggeo gomean*.<sup>3</sup>

In the *Benedictinerregel* 114.5 (*sciat se servaturum* = *ze haltane*) we have an inflected infinitive after *sin* denoting futurity. In the Old Saxon *Psalms*, 70.18 (*thie te cumene ist* = *quae ventura est* <sup>4</sup>), we have the inflected infinitive after *ist* denoting futurity and translating, as in Anglo-Saxon, a Latin future active participle.

But the predicative infinitive of necessity is not found in Old Saxon.

According to Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 128, the infinitive of necessity in the Germanic languages arose from an original final use: "Eine eigentümliche Bedeutung gewinnt der Inf. mit *zu* in Verbindung mit *sein*; mit der Vorstellung des Zieles, auf das die Präposition hinweist, verbindet sich die Vorstellung der Notwendigkeit." This does not, however, preclude the possibility that this infinitive was first suggested to the Germanic peoples by the Latin gerundial periphrastic, and at the outset was only an imitation thereof, — a theory we found applicable to Anglo-Saxon and that seems also applicable to the Germanic languages as a whole, especially in view of the frequency with which this infinitive is found as a translation of the Latin gerundial periphrastic in Old High German.<sup>5</sup>

The only examples of the inflected infinitive of futurity are in translation of the Latin future participle, as shown above.

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, p. 60. See, too, Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 128.

<sup>2</sup> From Erdmann, <sup>1</sup>O., *l. c.*, p. 204. Cf. section x, 2, below.

<sup>3</sup> Cf., too, Steig, *l. c.*, p. 316; and see section x, 2, below.

<sup>4</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 439.

<sup>5</sup> After writing the above, I came upon the following in Wunderlich, <sup>2</sup>*l. c.*, I, p. 384: "Besonders begünstigt wurde die Ausbreitung dieses Infinitivs mit *zu* in der althochdeutschen Uebersetzerliteratur durch die Notwendigkeit, das lat. Gerundium und Gerundivum wiederzugeben: *Pediū ist nu zesagene . . . An dero sago ih tes ahton zeerst ze fragenne, demonstrandum . . . inquirendum*, Notker, Boethius, 131<sup>a</sup> u. a."

## VIII. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH ACCUSATIVE SUBJECT.

## I. THE INFINITIVE UNINFLECTED.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

## AS OBJECT.

The predicative infinitive with accusative subject, in object clauses, is common in the Germanic languages after (1) verbs of commanding, (2) verbs of causing and permitting, and (3) verbs of sense perception, although, as stated above, p. 107, some scholars, including Grimm, prefer to consider the infinitive after these verbs as objective rather than predicative. And after these verbs the idiom is common in the more original literature (as in Otfrid in Old High German) as well as in the translations (as in Gothic; in Tatian and Notker in Old High German).<sup>1</sup>

A few examples will suffice for illustration:—

## (1) Verbs of Commanding:

Gothic:—*Mat. 8.18: haihait galeipan siponjans hindar marein = ἐκέλευσεν ἀπελθεῖν εἰς τὸ πέραν* (with an accusative implied in the preceding clause).

Old Norse:—*bað hann segja ser.*<sup>2</sup>

Old High German:—*Tatian 161.38: heiz mih queman = jube me venire;*<sup>3</sup>—*ib. 161.1: gibot her thie jungiron stigan . . . inti furifaran = jussit discipulos ascendere . . . et precedere.*<sup>4</sup>

Old Saxon: *Hel. 5831: hiet sia eft thanan gangan endi faran te them jungron, seggian*<sup>5</sup> etc.

## (2) Verbs of Causing and Permitting:

Gothic: *Mat. 8.22: jah let þans dauþans filhan seinans dauþans = καὶ ἄφες τοὺς νεκροὺς θάψαι τοὺς ἐαυτῶν νεκρούς; Mat. 5.32: taujip þo horinon = ποιῶ αὐτῇν μοιχευθῆναι.*

Old Norse: *leto hann fara nauðgan með ser.*<sup>6</sup>

Old High German: *Tatian 127.7: laz mih fursagen = permitte mihi renuntiare;*<sup>7</sup>

Old Saxon: *Hel. 1986: tho let hie that uuerod siðon.*<sup>8</sup>

## (3) Verbs of Sense Perception:

Gothic: *J. 6.62: jabai nu gasaihvip sunu mans ussteigan = ἔὰν οὖν θεωρῇτε τὸν υἱὸν . . . ἀναβαίνοντα.* [But more usually this and the other verbs of this group are followed by the accusative and the predicative participle in Gothic, in strict conformity with the Greek original.<sup>9</sup>]

Old Norse: *sal ser hon standa.*<sup>10</sup>

Old High German: *Otfrid I, 25.23: gisah er queman gotes geist; — ib. I, 25.15: then fater hort er sprechan.*<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See for Gothic: Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 280–297; Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 211–212; Van der Meer, *l. c.*, pp. 55–59;—for Old Norse: Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, pp. 201–203; Kahle, *l. c.*, p. 139; Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 381–384; Nygaard, *l. c.*, pp. 231–232; for Old High German: Apelt,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 1–7; Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 25–53; Erdmann,<sup>4</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 205–210; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, pp. 118–119;—for Middle High German and New High German: Apelt,<sup>5</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 8–21; Blatz, *l. c.*, 11, pp. 557–569; Herford, *l. c.*, pp. 8–13; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, pp. 120–121;—for Old Saxon: Pratje, *l. c.*, pp. 70–72; Steig, *l. c.*, pp. 470–484; Behaghel,<sup>6</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 211–212.

<sup>2</sup> From Kahle, *l. c.*, p. 139.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 35.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 41.

<sup>5</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 476.

<sup>6</sup> From Kahle, *l. c.*, p. 139.

<sup>7</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 35.

<sup>8</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 477.

<sup>9</sup> See Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 211, 216.

<sup>10</sup> From Kahle, *l. c.*, p. 139.

<sup>11</sup> From Erdmann,<sup>4</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 207–208.

Old Saxon: *Hel.* 474: he *gisah* that *barn cuman*; — *ib.* 2777: so sie that *gihordun* thea *magad sprekan*.<sup>1</sup>

But with (4) verbs of mental perception the construction is less common, and with (5) verbs of declaring it is almost unknown, except in the translations. After (4) and (5) we have what Grimm called the "genuine" accusative and infinitive construction.

This idiom is frequent in Gothic, but I quote only a few examples: — (4) Verbs of Mental Perception: *Mk.* 14.64: *eis allai gadomidedun ina skula wisan* *daupau* = *οἱ δὲ πάντες κατέκρινον αὐτὸν ἔνοχον εἶναι θανάτου*; *L.* 4.41: *unte wissedun silban Xristu ina wisan* = *ὅτι ᾔδεισαν τὸν χριστὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι*;<sup>2</sup> — (5) Verbs of Declaring: *Mk.* 8.27: *hvana mik qiband mans wisan* = *τίνα με λέγουσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι*;<sup>3</sup> *J.* 12.29: *qepun þei hwon wairþan* = *ἔλεγον βροντὴν γεγενέαι*.<sup>3</sup> In most instances given by Apelt<sup>1</sup> the accusative with infinitive is in translation of the same idiom in the Greek original, — a fact that makes me doubt whether the idiom is native to Gothic after these verbs (groups (4) and (5)). Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 297, does not go so far: "Da bei der Mehrzahl der oben angeführten Verba ein Nachweis darüber nicht möglich war, dass der mit ihnen verbundene Acc. c. Inf. als dem Gothischen fremdartig anzusehen wäre, so sind wir nicht berechtigt, der Constr. für diese Fälle das Bürgerrecht in der Sprache abzusprechen. Im allgemeinen jedoch scheint mir so viel fest zu stehen, dass der Gothe aus übergrosser Treue gegen das griechische Original nicht selten über das seiner Sprache Geläufige hinausgieng."<sup>4</sup> Dr. Zeitlin is more pronounced against foreign influence: "Gothic, and, even more, Icelandic, show the locution likewise after verbs of declaration, where the relation of the accusative to the main verb is no longer obvious. In the former, this phase of the construction has sometimes been unnecessarily attributed to the influence of Greek."<sup>5</sup> Professor Streitberg admits the close correspondence between the Gothic and the Greek, but would not deny the construction to Gothic: "Wenn diese Konstruktion auch zweifellos unter dem Einfluss des griech. Originals weit häufiger erscheint, als es sonst wohl der Fall gewesen wäre, so haben wir doch schwerlich das Recht, sie ganz dem Gotischen abzusprechen, da im Nordischen eine analoge Fügung nicht ungebrauchlich ist."<sup>6</sup> With all due respect, this judgment, it seems to me, lays too much weight on the apparent state of affairs in the Scandinavian languages and too little weight on that in the High Germanic and the Low Germanic languages.

In Old Norse, also, the idiom is not infrequent after these two groups of verbs. Examples<sup>7</sup> are: — (4) Verbs of Mental Perception: *Egilss.* 169: *ek hygg hann vera engan vin pinn*; — *Sn. Edd.* 148: *þeir truðu hann guð vera*; — *Völusp.* 62.19: *ask veit ek standa*; — (5) Verbs of Declaring: *Hrafnk.* 13: *hann kvað þat eigi vera*; — *Kristn.* 22: *þeir sögðu okkr eiga börn saman*.

The idiom is frequent, also, in the closer Old High German translations (Notker<sup>8</sup> and Tatian<sup>9</sup>), in both authors, especially the latter, corresponding

<sup>1</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, pp. 480-481.

<sup>2</sup> From Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 294.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 292.

<sup>4</sup> Apelt<sup>1</sup> then adds that the accusative and infinitive after impersonals is certainly of foreign origin, concerning which see below, p. 245.

<sup>5</sup> Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 40. — Bernhardt,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 113, says: "Man hat im zusatze des subjects den einfluss der lateinischen version erkennen wollen; allein das Altnordische und Angelsächsische bieten ganz ähnliches, wie denn überhaupt die construction des accusativs mit infinitiv in der Edda und im Beowulf hinreichend belegt ist, um zu erkennen, dass dieselbe den germanischen sprachen keineswegs fremd war, auch nach verhen wie *wiljan* und *bidjan*."<sup>6</sup> Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 212.

<sup>7</sup> From Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 381-383. See, too, Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 201.

<sup>8</sup> See Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *O.*, *l. c.*, pp. 209-210; Manthey, *l. c.*, pp. 44-46; Wunderlich,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 122-123.

<sup>9</sup> See Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 34-44.



very closely to the original Latin: (4) Verbs of Mental Perception: *Tatian* 335.41: *wantun sih geist gisehan* = *existimabant se spiritum videre*; <sup>1</sup> — *ib.* 136.32: *ih weiz megin uzgangen* = *ego novi virtutem exisse*; — (5) Verbs of Declaring: *Tatian* 182.37: *wenan quedent mih man wesen mannes sun?* = *quem me dicunt homines esse filium hominis?* *ib.* 334.18: *quaedent inan leben* = *dicunt eum vivere*.<sup>2</sup> But it is found only twice in Isidor<sup>3</sup> (each time in translation of the Latin), though occurring thirty-six times in the Latin original; and it is unknown in Otfrid.<sup>4</sup>

These facts lead me to believe that the so-called "genuine" accusative-with-infinitive construction was not a native idiom in Old High German, — a conclusion substantially identical with that of most investigators of the idiom in Old High German. In his *Syntax der Sprache Otfrids* (1874), I, p. 208, after stating that the accusative with the infinitive in Otfrid is about as restricted as in present German, Erdmann continues: "Dasselbe gilt nicht von den ahd. Prosaikern. Bei ihnen, die meist direct und wörtlich aus dem Lateinischen übersetzen, finden wir eine viel ausgedehntere Anwendung des Acc. mit dem Inf., die entschieden dem Lateinischen nachgebildet, in originaler deutscher Rede aber, wie ich glaube, im neunten und zehnten Jahrhundert ebensowenig heimisch gewesen ist als im neunzehnten." In the following year (1875), Dr. Otto Apelt concluded his special investigation, "Bemerkungen über den Accusativus cum Infinitivo im Althochdeutschen und Mittelhochdeutschen," with these words: "Das Ergebniss der Untersuchung für das Ahd. ist demnach dahin zusammenzufassen, dass sich in den literarischen Denkmälern dieser Periode keine genügenden Anhaltspunkte für die Ansicht bieten, dass der Gebrauch der Construction in der lebenden Sprache wesentlich über diejenigen Grenzen hinausgegangen wäre, innerhalb deren er sich noch bei uns bewegt, d. h. über die Anwendung derselben bei den Verbis der sinnlichen Wahrnehmung. Deutlich zeigte es sich, dass der Umfang, in welchem die Fügung erscheint, in umgekehrtem Verhältniss steht zu der Selbstständigkeit der literarischen Production; je unabhängiger die Entstehung eines Werkes, um so geringer die Zahl der Fälle, in denen die Construction auftritt." This statement of Apelt is confirmed by the subsequent investigations of Denecke, *Der Gebrauch des Infinitivs bei den Ahd. Übersetzern des 8. und 9. Jahrhunderts* (1880), p. 53; of Wunderlich, *Beiträge zur Syntax des Notkers'chen Boethius* (1883?), p. 122; of Behaghel, *Die Deutsche Sprache* (1887), p. 127; of Rannow, *Der Satzbau des Ahd. Isidor im Verhältniss zur Latein. Vorlage* (1888), p. 92; and of Manthey, *Syntaktische Beobachtungen an Notkers Uebersetzung des Martianus Capella* (1903), pp. 44 ff.

But, on the other hand, not a few distinguished scholars have held that this so-called "genuine" accusative with infinitive was a native idiom in Old High German. So held Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 129 ff. So held Herzog, "Die Syntax des Infinitivs" (1873). So holds Professor Jolly, who, in his *Geschichte des Infinitivs* (1873), p. 260, declares: "Wenn aber im Got. sich hier wie überall schwer entscheiden lässt, ob idiomatische Constructionen vorliegen oder der Acc. cum Inf. dem griech. nachgebildet ist, so zeigt dagegen das Ahd. und Mhd. unwiderleglich, dass der Accus. c. Inf. unserer älteren Sprache in ziemlich weitem Umfange eigenthümlich war, worüber J. Grimm, *Gramm.*, IV, 105 ff., ausführlich gehandelt hat." So holds Löhner, as cited by Rannow, *l. c.*, p. 92. So apparently holds Dr. Zeitlin, who, after quoting some examples of the accu-

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 37-38.

<sup>3</sup> See Rannow, *l. c.*, p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, pp. 38-39.

<sup>4</sup> See Erdmann, *l. c.*, I, p. 208.

sative with the infinitive after verbs of mental perception in Old High German (chiefly from Tatian and Notker) and of the accusative with predicate participle in Old High German, declares, *l. c.*, p. 32: "The persistence of the construction after these verbs of perception in Middle High German is an indication of its genuine Germanic character." On the same page he adds: "The accusative with infinitive after verbs of *speaking* is hardly found outside of Tatian and Notker, but we are not therefore justified in attributing it to Latin influence, since plentiful analogies exist in other Germanic dialects;" by which, I presume, he intends to refer to the Gothic and to the Old Norse. Indeed, Dr. Zeitlin goes so far as to declare that the accusative and infinitive in subjective clauses is also a native development in Old High German: see p. 246 below. So holds Professor Wilmanns, who, in his *Deutsche Grammatik* (1906), declares it difficult to determine how far the construction was native in High German ("wie weit er im Hochdeutschen heimisch war") because of the diversity of usage by Otfrid and by Notker; who allows that Notker "unter dem Einfluss des Lateinischen den Gebrauch der Konstruktion über seine ursprüngliche Grenzen hinausgetrieben hatte;" who allows that Latin influence is evident in the Middle High German writers and in some New High German authors; but who adds, on p. 121: "Aber wie stark auch die Einwirkung der lateinischen Schulsprache gewesen sein mag, so hat man doch anderseits zu bedenken, dass auch dem Germanischen von Anfang an der Akk. c. Inf. nicht fremd war, und dass man keinen Grund hat, für den ahd. Gebrauch so enge Grenzen vorzusetzen, wie wir im Heliand und im Ags. finden."

But despite the eminence of some of these advocates of the theory that this construction was native to Old High German and despite the cleverness of some of their arguments, they do not seem to me to upset the interpretation given above, based as it is on abundance of material, gathered from various texts by various scholars of acknowledged accuracy and acumen.

In his monograph (1875) above quoted from, Dr. Apelt has shown that the so-called genuine accusative and infinitive is very rare in Middle High German, and, when found, is probably due to Latin influence. In New High German<sup>1</sup> the idiom is very rare, though, as Dr. Herford has shown in his "Ueber den Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv im Deutschen" (1881), not so rare as has occasionally been stated.

In Old Saxon<sup>2</sup> a few examples are found after verbs of mental perception, but none after verbs of declaring: *Hel.* 807: *fundun ina sittean* an them uuiha; — *ib.* 4771: *fand sie that barn godes slapen*; *ib.* 1590: *that thu us bedon leres*.

In a word, the situation in the Germanic languages as a whole is quite similar to that in Anglo-Saxon: the accusative and infinitive is quite common after verbs (1) of commanding, (2) of causing and permitting, and (3) of sense perception;<sup>3</sup> but is relatively rare after verbs (4) of mental perception, and is practically unknown after (5) verbs of declaring, except in the closer translations.

It is probable, therefore, that the idiom is native to the Germanic languages when occurring after verbs of groups (1), (2), and (3), and after a few verbs of group (4); but that it is due to foreign influence after some verbs in group (4) and after all verbs in group (5). Under the separate languages above I have

<sup>1</sup> See, too, Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 121, for an excellent brief statement as to the idiom in New High German; also Blatz, *l. c.*, II, pp. 557-569.

<sup>2</sup> See Pratje, *l. c.*, pp. 71-72; Steig, *l. c.*, pp. 480, 482-483.

<sup>3</sup> Except in Gothic: see above, p. 241.

stated with some fullness the grounds for this belief with respect to each, and in connection therewith have given a good deal of the history of the opinions concerning the construction. Here I need only add that the cumulative weight of the evidence should not be lost sight of.

Perhaps I should add here that some scholars, among them Drs. Becker, Grimberg, Primei, and Zeitlin, hold that the accusative with infinitive in the Germanic languages is in part a native development from the accusative with predicative participle, and that in the Germanic languages the latter idiom was prior to the former. In Chapters XIV and XV, however, I have tried to show that, while, in conformity with the Greek original, the accusative with predicative present participle is commoner in Gothic than is the accusative with predicative infinitive after verbs of sense perception, the reverse is the case in the Germanic languages as a whole, especially in Anglo-Saxon and in High German, and that in these languages the predicative infinitive was prior to the predicative present participle.

### AS SUBJECT.

Despite Dr. Stoffel's contention that "we are almost forced to the conclusion that the *Acc. cum Inf.* as the logical subject of a quasi-impersonal verb, must once have been as common in the Germanic tongues as we find it to have been in the classical languages,"<sup>1</sup> I must hold that, in the Germanic languages, as in Anglo-Saxon, the idiom is relatively rare, and occurs for the most part only in translations.

In Gothic we occasionally have the infinitive phrase as subject to the verb *to be* plus an adjective (*gub ist, azetizo ist, gadob ist*, etc.), but, as Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 290–291, shows, only because of the influence of the Greek original, the Goth usually translating otherwise the Greek accusative and infinitive in such expressions. Examples are: (1) of accusative and infinitive: *L. 16.17: iþ azetizo ist himin jah airþa hindarleiþan þau witodis ainana writ gadriusan = εὐκοπώτερον δέ ἐστι τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τὴν γῆν παρελθεῖν* etc.; — (2) of other translations: *Mk. 10.25: azetizo ist ulbandau pairh pairko neplos galeiþan*, etc. = *εὐκοπώτερόν ἐστιν κάμνηλον . . . διελθεῖν*, etc. This view as to the foreign origin of the accusative and infinitive as the subject of impersonals, in Gothic, though once opposed by Albrecht<sup>2</sup> and by Miklosich,<sup>3</sup> is now generally accepted: see Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 290; Bernhardt,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 113; Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 212; Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 28; and Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 119. Quite recently, however, Professor G. O. Curme,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 359–367, has attempted to overthrow this theory, but without success in my judgment.

That the construction is rare, also, in Old Norse, I judge from the fact that I find no examples cited by Lund or by Falk and Torp.

In Old High German, too, the construction is rare<sup>4</sup> with impersonals, and as a rule is found only in translation of the same idiom in Latin. Usually, however, the translator uses another idiom, generally a dative dependent on the chief verb, with a subjective infinitive, either uninflected or inflected. Examples are: (1) of accusative and infinitive: *Tatian 187.9: gilimphit miþ gangen = oportet me ambulare*;<sup>5</sup> — (2) of dative and infinitive: *Tatian 85.22: gilimphit*

<sup>1</sup> Stoffel,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 54.

<sup>2</sup> *L. c.*, p. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Miklosich,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 483.

<sup>4</sup> No one of the five Latin examples of his original is retained by Isidor: see Rannow, *l. c.*, pp. 87–88.

<sup>5</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 42.

*mir wesan* = *oportet me esse*; <sup>1</sup> *ib.* 100.30: *gilimphit mir zi gotspellone* = *oportet me evangelizare*.<sup>2</sup> I, therefore, consider this idiom borrowed from the Latin originals in Old High German. But not so Dr. Zeitlin,<sup>1</sup> who, *l. c.*, p. 33, thus expresses his view: "In considering the usage with impersonal and neuter verbs we must remember that many Old High German expressions of this class govern an accusative case as direct object, *e. g.*, Otfrid V, 1.1: *ist filu manno wuntar*, 'great wonder is on the men'; *ib.* I, 9.27: *wuntar was thia menigi*, 'wonder was on the multitude'; *ib.* V, 6.14: *thes thih mag wesana wola niot*, 'of this *you* it may well be pleasing (you may well rejoice at this)'; *ib.* V, 22.7: *thes ist sie iamer filu niot*, 'they are ever pleased at this'; *ib.* V, 9.11: *ward wola thiu selbun mennisgon*. When an object infinitive is added to sentences like the preceding, we have a combination which is hardly distinguishable from the free Latin accusative with infinitive. But it is quite apparent from these illustrations that the assumption of Latin influence is not necessary, that the accusative, indeed, is almost always felt as directly connected with the main verb, and that these cases, therefore, do not differ from the other categories of the accusative with infinitive which are found in Old High German." He then gives examples of the idiom after *gilustan* (?), *gilimphan*, and *bifahan*, all from Tatian except the first example, after *gilustan*, which seems doubtful to me. He concludes: "In Notker, impersonal verbs with this construction seem to follow Latin models in most cases, since often the accusative has no connection whatever with the main verb, which is followed by another substantive in the dative case as indirect object." Of his examples from Notker I cite only one: III, 124<sup>b</sup>.29: *fone diu ist not, chad si, misseliche namen haben diu finruu und siu doh ein uuesen*, 'hence it is necessary . . . that the five should have different names and yet be a single thing.' This is a clever, but to me not convincing plea: it allows more weight to a bare possibility than to the demonstrable and, as I believe, demonstrated origin of the construction in Gothic and in Anglo-Saxon; and it underrates the fact, stated by Dr. Zeitlin<sup>1</sup> (*l. c.*, p. 35), that the idiom is not found in Old Saxon.

In Old Saxon I find no example of the accusative and infinitive as subject, but frequent examples of the dative and subjective infinitive, as in *Hel.* 3298: that *uuari an godes riki unoði odagumu manne up te cumanne*.<sup>3</sup>

In the Germanic languages, then, as in Anglo-Saxon, the accusative and infinitive as subject of a finite verb is an imported idiom.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

The passive infinitive with accusative subject, whether in objective or in subjective clauses, is rare in the Germanic languages, as in Anglo-Saxon.

Dr. Apelt does not gather together in one place the passive infinitives in Gothic with accusative subject. But we find examples here and there of this idiom in subjective clauses, as in *Skeir.* I c: *gadob nu was mais pans . . . ufhausjandans . . . gaqissans uairþan*, and in objective clauses, as in *I Cor.* 10.20: *ni wiljau auk izwis skohslam gadailans wairþan* = οὐ θέλω δὲ ὑμᾶς κοινωνοὺς τῶν δαυμονίων γίνεσθαι, in the latter in imitation of the Greek. Often, however, the Greek passive infinitive with accusative subject is rendered in Gothic by an

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 66.

<sup>3</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 496.

active infinitive with a noun object, as in *Mat.* 27.64: *hait nu witan þamma hlaiwa* = *κέλευσον οὖν ἀσφαλισθῆναι τὸν τάφον*.<sup>1</sup>

In Old Norse, also, the construction is quite rare.

In Old High German, likewise, the idiom is rare, and is due to the Latin: *Tatian* 183.32: *gīlimphit inan* varan inti thruoen inti *arslagan wesan* inti arstan-tan = oportet *eum* ire et pati et occidi et resurgere;<sup>2</sup> *ib.* 171.6: *laz eer thiu kind gisatotiu werdan* = sine prius saturari filios.<sup>3</sup> The passive infinitive is oftener translated by the active, as in *Tatian* 199.7: *wenan wollet* ir iu fon thesen zwein *forlazzan?* = *quem vultus* vobis de duobus *dimitti?*<sup>4</sup> See, too, under "the inflected infinitive with accusative subject," p. 248 below.

In Old Saxon we habitually have, not the passive infinitive with accusative object, but the active infinitive with objective accusative, as in *Hel.* 527: *gihordun wuilspel* mikil fon gode *seggean*. Steig, *l. c.*, p. 309 ff., holds that in such expressions the infinitive, though active in form, is passive in sense, and that the accusative is the subject, not the object, of the infinitive; but, for reasons given above, in Chapter II, pp. 29 f., this seems untenable to me. I have not found an example of the compound passive infinitive with accusative subject in Old Saxon.

It seems probable, therefore, that this idiom was imported into the Germanic languages from the Greek and the Latin.

## II. THE INFINITIVE INFLECTED.

Although Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 130, declares, "Sicheres kennzeichen der construction des acc. cum inf. ist, dass sie nie die präp. *zu* verträgt," it seems to me that in the Germanic languages we occasionally come upon an accusative with a prepositional infinitive that is almost, if not quite, identical with an accusative with an uninflected predicative infinitive. Concerning possible examples of the idiom in Anglo-Saxon, I have spoken in Chapter VIII. I here add a few words concerning the construction in the other Germanic languages.

One apparent, if not real, example of the prepositional infinitive with an accusative subject occurs in Gothic in correspondence with the same construction in Greek: *I Thes.* 2.12: *weitwodjandans du gaggan izwis wairpaba gups!* = *μαρτυρούμενοι εἰς τὸ περιπατεῖν ὑμᾶς ἀξίως τοῦ θεοῦ*.<sup>5</sup> But usually the Greek idiom is avoided, as in *II Thes.* 1.5: *taikn garaihtaizos stauos gups du wairþans þriggan izwis þiudangardjos gups* = *εἰς ἔνδειγμα τῆς δικαίας κρίσεως τοῦ θεοῦ, εἰς τὸ καταξιωθῆναι ὑμᾶς τῆς Βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ*.<sup>6</sup>

In Old Norse, apparently, the prepositional infinitive was not used with accusative subject, though in earlier Danish it was occasionally so used: see Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 235; Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 201, where Danish examples are given; Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 381 ff.; Delbrück,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, p. 355.

In Old High German, in sentences like the following, *Tatian* 196.34: *gibot inan ther herro zi vorkoufanne* inti *sina quenun* inti . . . inti *vorgeltan* = *jussit eum dominus venundari et uxorem ejus et . . . et reddi*,<sup>7</sup> apparently we have an inflected infinitive with an accusative subject, and the phrase is the object

<sup>1</sup> From Streitberg,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 208.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 35.

<sup>3</sup> Bernhardt,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 114, seems to consider that the infinitive phrase here is subjective, but surely it is objective.

<sup>6</sup> See Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 292.

<sup>2</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 42.

<sup>4</sup> From Apelt,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 5.

<sup>7</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 65.

of *gibot*, but in reality the inflected infinitive (like the uninflected in this sentence) is the object of *gibot*, not the predicate of the accusative noun or pronoun, the accusative being objective in the Old High German, though subjective in the Latin; for, as we saw above, p. 247, in Old High German, as in Anglo-Saxon, the predicative passive infinitive is normally turned by an active objective infinitive. In *Aug. serm.* 33.8: *manot unsih za forstantanne* = *admonet nos intelligere*,<sup>1</sup> we may have an inflected infinitive used predicatively, but more probably we have an inflected infinitive denoting result. But at least two clear examples of the inflected infinitive with an accusative subject occur in Old High German, in a subjective phrase: *Tatian* 331.2: *inan gilimphit zi arstantanne* = *oportet eum resurgere*; <sup>2</sup> and *ib.* 206.26: *odira ist olbentun zi faranne, thanne otagan zi ganganne* = *facilius est camelum transire, quam divitem intrare*.<sup>3</sup> The inflection of the predicative infinitive here, as indeed in the instances of the subjective infinitive, is due to the dative sense of *gilimphit* and of *ist* plus an adjective, I believe; while in the instances with the uninflected infinitive, especially when predicative, this dative sense is resisted owing to the influence of the Latin original. In *Tatian* 342.13: *leret sie zi bihaltanne alliu* = *docentes eos servare omnia*,<sup>4</sup> we possibly have a predicative infinitive, but the infinitive is inflected because the chief verb, *leret*, hovers between a transitive and a consecutive-final sense: cf. the inflected predicative infinitive with Anglo-Saxon *læran* in Chapter VIII, p. 119.

In Old Saxon I have found no example of the inflected infinitive with accusative subject unless the following be such: *Hel.* 2752: *huo thu gilīnot habis lūdeo menigi te blizzenna*; <sup>5</sup> *ib.* 976: *that us so girisit . . . allaro rehto gihuilik ti gifullanne*; but more probably the infinitive here is subjective: see above, p. 232.

As is evident, most of the examples cited of a supposed predicative use of the prepositional infinitive in the Germanic languages, are doubtful. In a few instances, however, it seems to me that the inflected infinitive is really predicative, and has an accusative subject. In such cases the infinitive becomes inflected because of its proximity to a dative-governing finite verb, or because it follows a verb denoting tendency, or, occasionally, in Gothic because the Greek original has a prepositional infinitive.

## IX. PREDICATIVE INFINITIVE WITH DATIVE SUBJECT.

As stated above, Chapter IX, p. 136, I doubt whether we have a genuine predicative infinitive with dative subject in Anglo-Saxon, but, as this interpretation of the dative and infinitive after impersonal verbs in Gothic is given by such eminent scholars as Grimm, Miklosich, Jolly, Winkler, and Streitberg, it is incumbent upon me to give a brief survey of the construction in the Germanic languages other than Anglo-Saxon.

For the Gothic I cannot do better than to quote entire Professor Streitberg's paragraph on this idiom, in his *Gotisches Elementarbuch*, 4th ed., § 318: "Der von Jakob Grimm entdeckte, von Miklosich und Jolly verteidigte Dativ

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 66.

<sup>2</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 71, who adds: "Der Acc. ist sicher nur dem Lat. aus Nachlässigkeit nachgeahmt."

<sup>4</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 65.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 67.

<sup>6</sup> From Pratje, *l. c.*, p. 73.

m. Inf. darf heute trotz aller Einwendungen als gesichert gelten. Got. *warþ* in Verbindung mit einem Infinitiv und einem Dativ dient zur Uebertragung von *ἐγένετο* mit dem Akk. m. Inf. Der Dativ hat natürlich ursprünglich zum Verbum finitum gehört, es ist jedoch, wie schon Grimm erkannt hat, eine Verschiebung des Abhängigkeitsverhältnisses erfolgt: der Dativ steht fast ausnahmslos *hinter dem Infinitiv*, wie im Griech. das Subjekt des Akk. m. Inf., ist also wahrscheinlich zum Infinitiv in engere Beziehung gesetzt. Am besten dürfte man wohl mit Winkler, S. 17, das Verhältnis so charakterisieren, dass der Dativ von der Verbindung *warþ* m. Inf. abhängt, *warþ gaswiltan þamma unledin* = *ἐγένετο ἀποθανεῖν τὸν πτωχόν*, Luk. 16.22, demnach heisse: 'es kam zum Sterben für den Armen.' Die Ausdehnung, die der Dat. m. Inf. in der got. Bibel erlangt hat, ist sicherlich dem Bestreben zuzuschreiben, den Anschluss ans Original so eng als möglich zu gestalten, ohne in direkten Widerspruch mit den got. Sprachgesetzen zu geraten. Vgl. z. B. *jah warþ in sabbato anþaramma frumīn gaggan imma þairh atisk* = *ἐγένετο, ἐν σαββάτῳ δευτεροπρώτῳ διαπορεύεσθαι αὐτὸν διὰ τῶν σπορίμων*, Luk. 6.1; *warþ . . . galeiþan imma in sunagogein* = *ἐγένετο εἰσελθεῖν αὐτὸν εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν*, Luk. 6.6; *swaei mis mais faginon warþ* = *ὥστε με μᾶλλον χαρῆναι*, Kor. 7.7, u. ä." This view of Professor Streitberg is substantially that of Professor Jolly and Professor Winkler. In my discussion of the Dative with Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, Chapter IX, pp. 127 ff. above, I have tried to show that the situation in Anglo-Saxon, in Old High German, and in Latin considerably reduces the force of Professor Streitberg's contention that we have a genuine dative-with-infinitive construction in Gothic; and that, in the Gothic itself, the post-position of the infinitive and its separation from the finite verb — two points stressed by Grimm and by Professor Streitberg — resulted merely from the Goth's close following of the Greek original. Dr. Apelt, who gives the above examples and some others, holds, with Gabelentz and Loebe, with A. Köhler, and with Bernhardt, that the dative is the object of the principal verb and not the subject of the infinitive;<sup>1</sup> he stresses the fact that a personal accusative of the Greek is translated by a dative in the Gothic, and an impersonal accusative by an accusative; and he, too, holds that the post-position of the dative in the Gothic is the result merely of the slavish following of the Greek order of words. Professor Joseph Wright, also, holds that the infinitive in the above sentences is subjective, not predicative, as we may gather from the fact that in his *Grammar of the Gothic Language*, § 435, he quotes Mark 2.23 (*jah warþ þairh gaggan imma þairh atisk* = *καὶ ἐγένετο παραπορεύεσθαι αὐτὸν . . . διὰ τῶν σπορίμων*) as illustrating the use of the infinitive as subject. Finally, it should be stated that, while Professor Jolly does defend the setting up of a predicative infinitive with dative subject in Gothic, he distinctly states that such an interpretation is not obligatory: "Auch bei den gotischen Dativen mit *warþan* ist die Beziehung des Dativs auf das Hauptverbum wenigstens nicht ungereimt, und nur im Slavischen liegt, abgesehen von den arischen Beispielen, eine grössere Reihe von Constructionen vor, in denen nur die Beziehung auf den Inf. zulässig ist."<sup>2</sup>

Concerning a dative with an infinitive in the Scandinavian languages, Lund, *l. c.*, p. 378, speaks as follows: "Hensynsform föjes til en navnemåde, när der

<sup>1</sup> Apelt, *l. c.*, p. 289. See, too, Gabelentz and Loebe, *l. c.*, p. 249; Köhler, *l. c.*, pp. 290-292; and Bernhardt, *l. c.*, p. 111.

<sup>2</sup> Jolly, *l. c.*, p. 268.

er en foregående hensynsform at henføre omsagnsordet til, men også, uden at der er nogen anden hensynsform at henføre den til eller som bevirker dens fremkomst, i visse udtryk med tillægsord (er gott, illt), hvor den må betragtes som udtryk for et hensyn (efter 30), men i hvilket tilfælde også nævneform bruges. Jfr. 30, anmk. 4. Således siges både *hann bauð þeim at fara fyrstum* og *bauð þa at fara fyrsta; illt er illum at vera* og *illt er illr at vera*, s. ovenfor 1," etc., etc. But the infinitive with *er gott* seems to me subjective, and that with *bauð þeim* objective. Moreover, I do not understand Lund to claim that the infinitive is really predicative in either of these two categories.

Although, as already stated, Grimm declares, *l. c.*, IV, p. 131, that in no Germanic dialect other than Gothic have we any trace of the dative-with-infinitive construction, it seems to me that, if we consider that we have this construction in the above examples from the Gothic, we must allow that we have it in the following passages from Old High German: — uninflected: *B. R.* 41.5: *discoom kerisit hoorreen* = *discipulos convenit obedire*;<sup>1</sup> *Tatian* 195.14: *goumon inti gifehan thir gilimphit* = *aeputari et gaudere te oportet*;<sup>2</sup> — inflected: *Hom. de voc.* 29.14: *iu garisit gotes wort za quedanne* = *vobis oportebat loqui verbum dei*;<sup>3</sup> *Tatian* 100.30: *gilimphit mir zi gotspellonne* = *oportet me evangelizare*.<sup>3</sup> Whether Dr. Denecke, from whom I have quoted these examples, considers the infinitive therein as predicative or not, I do not feel sure, but he puts the uninflected infinitive under the heading "Dat. c. Inf." *Gilimphit* is likewise followed, as we saw above, p. 245, by the accusative and infinitive; and Denecke, pp. 42, 43, seems to think that a significant factor is the person of the pronoun, the dative occurring usually with the pronouns of the first and second persons, and the accusative with pronouns of the third person and with nouns in Old High German, he declares. But surely this fact is accidental, not determining; the interchange between dative and accusative with these infinitives most probably depends, as in Anglo-Saxon, on the datival sense of the accompanying finite verb, which datival sense occasionally was not strong enough to resist the accusative of the Latin original. This explanation tallies with that given by Miklosich of the dative-with-infinitive in the Slavic languages, and extends still further the application of Jolly's happy comment thereon: "Als die Ursache dieser eigenthümlichen Constructionen gibt Miklosich, dem wir die nähere Kenntniss derselben verdanken, die grössere Verbreitung verbal- und besonders mit dem Dativ construirter Verbalsubstantive in den slavischen Sprachen an; <sup>4</sup> auch für die Sprachstufe des Zend und vedischen Sanskrit liess sich dieselbe sprachliche Erscheinung oben S. 93 nachweisen, und die gewiss richtige Erklärung M.'s ist demnach auch für ein Sprachgebiet für das sie ursprünglich nicht gemacht war, doch nicht weniger zutreffend." <sup>5</sup> Once more: it is important to note that in these Old High German examples the dative sometimes precedes and sometimes follows the infinitive, usually according to the position of the noun or pronoun in the Latin original. Finally, whether Dr. Denecke or any one else considers the inflected infinitive in these Old High German examples to be the predicate of a dative subject or not, I do not know. But Denecke does note the interchange between uninflected and inflected infinitives after *gilimphit*; calls attention to two facts: (1) "dass *zi* stets ge-

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 31. . . <sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 42.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 66.

<sup>4</sup> "Beispiele ebenda S. 494."

<sup>5</sup> Jolly, *l. c.*, p. 269. — My inability to read Slavic makes it improper for me to express an opinion as to whether or not the infinitive in this locution is really predicative.



braucht wird, wenn zu *gîlimphit* kein Object tritt und alleinstehender oder mit Object verbundener Inf. davon abhängt" (with two exceptions, duly noted), and (2) "dass, wenn ein Dat. zu *gîlimphit* (s. auch *garisit*) tritt, meist Inf. mit *zi*, wenn Acc. meist der reine Inf. folgt" (likewise with exceptions, duly indicated); and concludes: "Man sieht hieraus, dass sich vollständig sichere Grenzen für den Gebrauch des reinen und des mit *zi* verbundenen Inf. nicht ziehen lassen. Augenscheinlich war aber der Gebrauch des letzteren im siegreichen Vordringen begriffen."<sup>1</sup> But the matter is not so hopeless as Denecke would have it seem: the inflected infinitive is due to the strong dative sense of the chief verb, but occasionally this strong force yielded to that of the accusative and infinitive in the Latin original. It remains only to add that I have not quoted all of the examples of a dative with an infinitive that occur in Denecke; that, as implied above, to me the infinitive in these Old High German examples is subjective, not predicative; and that the dative is governed by the principal verb.

We have, too, in Old High German a dative with infinitive after certain personal verbs, as in the following: *Aug. serm.* 35.20: *gabiut mir za dir queman* = *jube me venire ad te*;<sup>2</sup> — *Tatian* 198.30: *vorliez iu forlazzan iwara quenun* = *permisit vobis dimittere uxores vestras*.<sup>3</sup> But, as in Anglo-Saxon, I take the infinitive to be objective, not predicative. *Gabiotan* is once followed by the accusative with infinitive: the native construction of dative with infinitive then yields to the influence of the Latin accusative and infinitive.

Of the dative with infinitive in Middle High German, Dr. Otto Apelt,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 289, after denying that we have a predicative infinitive with dative subject in Gothic, speaks as follows: "Die beste Analogie hierzu bietet sich in mhd. *geschehen* mit Infinitiv und Dativ, und Grimm selbst macht IV, 109, auf die nahe Verwandtschaft dieser Fügungen mit den eben besprochenen aufmerksam. Allerdings erscheint im Mittelhochdeutschen in Wendungen wie *nach der ze riten im geschach*, *ir ze sterben niht geschach*, *daz ime ze lidenne geschiht*, *sit uns ze sitzen geschah*, der Infinitiv meist in Begleitung von *ze*, doch findet sich auch der blossе Infinitiv Nib. 1145, 4, *so ist in alreste von schulden sorgen geschehen*. Wenn aber Grimm in der Stellung der Worte im Gothischen eine Nothigung finden will, die Zugehörigkeit des Dativs zu *warþ* zu verwerfen, so ist dem entgegenzuhalten, dass der Gothe sich hier, wie sonst, in der Wortstellung möglichst eng an sein Original anschloss."

I find no example of the dative with infinitive after impersonals in Old Saxon unless the following be one: *Hel.* 976: that us so *girisit* . . . *allaro rehto gihuilik ti gifullanne*;<sup>4</sup> but, as stated above, p. 232, I consider the infinitive here subjective. Nor do I find an example after personal verbs unless these be such: *Hel.* 5152: *endi im that silubar bod gerno te agebanne*;<sup>5</sup> *ib.* 1023; *loboda them liudeon lera Cristes herren sines endi hebanriki te giuwinnanne*;<sup>6</sup> *ib.* 1838: *hie im thuo bethiu bifalah gi te seggeanne*.<sup>6</sup>

In the Germanic languages as a whole, therefore, we have an apparent, not a genuine, dative with infinitive after (1) certain impersonals and (2) certain personal verbs. The idiom interchanges with the genuine accusative with

<sup>1</sup> Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 67–68.

<sup>2</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 20. On p. 41 Denecke states that, with only one exception, in *Tatian*, *gabiotan* is followed by the dative and infinitive instead of the accusative and infinitive.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 35.

<sup>4</sup> From Prati, *l. c.*, p. 73.

<sup>5</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 494.

<sup>6</sup> From Prati, *l. c.*, p. 73.

infinitive. But, after impersonals, the native idiom is the dative with the infinitive, the dative being demanded by the strong datival sense of these impersonals; when these impersonals are followed by the accusative with the infinitive, it is due to the influence of the original Greek or Latin. After the personal verbs the dative with infinitive is likewise native, as with many of them is also the accusative with infinitive. The interchange between dative and accusative rests partly on the double regimen of the verbs, partly on the influence of the originals. Many scholars restrict the phrase "dative with infinitive," however, to the idiom after impersonals.

After both impersonals and personals, at times the inflected infinitive is substituted for the uninflected infinitive by the strong datival force of the principal verb.

## X. THE FINAL INFINITIVE.

### 1. With Verbs of Motion.

The infinitive of purpose is commonly found after verbs of motion in the Germanic languages.

The Gothic simple infinitive usually corresponds to a Greek simple infinitive, but also to other idioms: *L. 14.19: gagg kausjan pans = πορεύομαι δοκιμάσαι αὐτά; Mat. 5.24: jah gagg faurpis gasibjon bropr þeinamma = καὶ ὑπάγε, πρότον διαλλάγηθι.*<sup>1</sup> *Gaggan* and *quitman* are followed only by the simple infinitive in Gothic. But a number of the verbs of motion are followed by both the simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive, the latter usually in translation of a Greek preposition + an infinitive, as in *I. Thes. 3.5: insandida du ufkunnan galaubein izwara = ἐπεμψα εἰς τὸ γνῶναι τὴν πίστιν ὑμῶν;*<sup>2</sup> or of a Greek articular infinitive in the genitive, as in *Mk. 4.3: urrann sa saians du saian fraiwa seinamma = ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων τοῦ σπείραι.*<sup>3</sup>

We find both infinitives after verbs of motion in the Scandinavian languages. Professors Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, pp. 206–207, give examples of each and attempt to differentiate the two: "Infinitiv føies paa friere vis til verber i folgende tre tilfælde: . . . b. Ved bevægelsesverber til betegnelse af en hensigt: *gengu menn at heyra tiðir; settast at hvilast; leggjast niðr at sofna (= til svefns)*. Ofte uden *at*: *gekk bera; koma ræna hana riki; Oðinn ferr við ulf vega*. Saaledes navnlig hvor infinitiven staar foran verbet: *ganga at sofa — þeir munu þa sofa ganga; gekk at eiga konu — konu skal ek eiga ganga*. Denne dobbelthet er urgermansk: gotisk *qemun saihwan* — angelsaksisk *hie comon ðæt lond to sceawienne (gerundium)*." With the foregoing compare the following statement by Lund, *l. c.*, p. 367: "Navnemåden med *at* (sjældnere og digterisk uden *at*) føjes til udsagnsord for at betegne hensigten af handlingen; ligeledes til talemåder af lignende betydning. Det er fornemmelig bevægelses-begreber, som dette gælder om, dog bruges også andre på samme måde, ligesom udtryksmåden grænser til de ovenfor omtalte (136, anm. 2) udsagnsord *eiga, hafa, vera* med navnemåde." The fact stated by Lund, that the simple infinitive occurs chiefly in the poetry, leads me to believe that, in Old Norse as in Anglo-Saxon, the occurrence of the simple infinitive does not depend upon the pre-position of

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 453, who gives numerous examples. See, too, Streitberg,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, p. 213.

<sup>2</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 456. See, too, Gabelentz and Loebe, *l. c.*, p. 251.

<sup>3</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 455.

the infinitive, but upon the fact that the infinitive is being used in poetry, which habitually keeps the original idiom, the infinitive without a preposition.

In Old High German, the uninflected infinitive is far more common than is the inflected infinitive after verbs of motion (chiefly *queman*, *gangan*, *faran*) in Tatian<sup>1</sup> and still more common in Otfrid;<sup>2</sup> while the inflected infinitive is found only a few times in Otfrid (after *queman*, *gangan*, *slihan*, *stantan*). Unfortunately Rannow does not treat the final use of the infinitive in his *Der Satzbau des Ahd. Isidor*; nor does Wunderlich in his *Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius*; nor Manthey, in his *Syntaktische Beobachtungen an Notkers Uebersetzung des Martianus Capella*. We have, therefore, for our purposes a far from adequate survey of the final infinitive in Old High German. However, the examples of Tatian's use, as given by Denecke, are illuminating. We learn that, as in the Anglo-Saxon *Gospels*, the final infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, often translates (a) a Latin infinitive of purpose, though the uninflected occasionally translates (b) a Latin participle or (c) finite verb; and the inflected infinitive, often (d) *ad* + a gerund or gerundive: — (a) *Tatian* 278.28: *Tho sio fuorun coufen* = *Dum autem irent emere*;<sup>3</sup> *Denkm.* lvi. 48: *quemendi ci ardeilenne* = *venturus judicare*;<sup>4</sup> — (b) *Tatian* 200.25: *quam suochen* = *venit quaerens*,<sup>5</sup> — (c) *Ev. Mat.* 18.15: *daz er in sceffilin genc sizzen* = *ut in naviculum adscendens sederet*;<sup>6</sup> — (d) *Tatian* 74.10: *foraferis zi garwenne . . . zi gebanne wistuom* = *praeibis parare . . . ad dandam scientiam*.<sup>7</sup> Occasionally, it should be added, Tatian turns the Latin final infinitive by a dependent clause, as in 120.39: *ni quam zi thiuh thaz ih sibba santi, ouh suuert* = *non veni pacem mittere sed gladium*.<sup>8</sup>

Slight as our statistics are, they seem to make clear that in Old High German the uninflected infinitive of purpose after verbs of motion is a native idiom; and that the inflected infinitive was at times suggested by the Latin original (the constructions with gerund or gerundive), habitually in the closer translations like the *Benedictine Rule*. The case, therefore, is not so bad for Old High German in general as it seemed to Denecke for the verb *queman*, concerning which, after giving an example of the inflected infinitive following it, he adds, p. 63: "Noch häufiger ist es mit reinem Inf. (s. I, 4), ohne dass sich ein Grund für die jeweilige Wahl des einen oder des andern Ausdrucks finden liesse, während es im Got. (Köhler, S. 454) nur mit reinen Inf. vorkommt, Otfr. mit *zi* (Erd., S. 212) und mit einfachem Inf. (S. 204)."

Quite common, too, is the final infinitive, both uninflected and inflected, after verbs of motion in Old Saxon. Pratje, *l. c.*, pp. 69–70, 73, gives numerous examples, of which I cite only a few: *Hel.* 3492: *thia . . . uuirkean quamun*; *ib.* 4526: *geng im thuoh eft gisittian* (though Pratje considers the infinitive 'phraseological'); *ib.* 807: *giuuitun im . . . iro suno suocean*; *ib.* 523: *nu ist thie helago Crist cuman to alosannea thia liude*; *ib.* 4541: *that ik iu sanda tharod te gigeriuuianne mina goma*.

From the foregoing survey, incomplete as it is, it seems probable that the uninflected infinitive of purpose after verbs of motion is an idiom native to the Germanic languages as a whole; and that the inflected infinitive in Gothic was

<sup>1</sup> For Tatian see Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 16–17 and 62–63.

<sup>2</sup> For Otfrid see Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *O.*, *l. c.*, pp. 204, 212.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 16.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 16.

<sup>5</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 63. See, too, pp. 57, 59.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 62.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 17.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 16.

first suggested by the Greek infinitive after a preposition or by the Greek articular infinitive in the genitive; in Old High German, by the Latin gerund and gerundive constructions.

## 2. With Verbs of Rest.

In Gothic we have, once, the prepositional infinitive of purpose after *sitan*, in *Mk.* 10.46: *sat faur wig du aihtron* = ἐκάθηντο παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν προσαιτῶν;<sup>1</sup> while in *L.* 18.35 both languages have a participle.

Concerning the idiom in Old Norse we read in Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 207: "Sporadisk findes i oldnorsk en hensigtens infinitiv ved hvileverber: *Heimdallr sitr þar at gæta bruarinnar*; sml. gotisk *sat faur wig du aihtron*, tysk: was steht ihr horchen (saa stadig i hollandsk). Almindelig bruges dog her sideordning: *eitt kveld er þeir satu ok drukkuk*," etc.

Clear cases of the final infinitive after verbs of rest are not numerous in Old High German. However, one example after *sin* was given above, p. 240; and the following is possibly an example: *Tatian* 228.4: *Inti thanne ir stantet zi betonne* = *Et cum stabitis ad orandum*.<sup>2</sup> But *Tatian* 95.9 (*inti arstuont uf zi lesanne* = *surrexit legere*?) and *Otfrid V.* 20.26 (*irstantent, iro werk zi irgebanne*?) belong under verbs of motion. The infinitive after verbs of rest in Old High German and in Middle High German is usually predicative, not final: see pp. 238 f. above.

I have not found a clear example of the final infinitive after verbs of rest in Old Saxon except once after *uuesan*, concerning which see above, p. 240.

## 3. With Verbs of Offering and of Giving.

Although Dr. A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 435-436, considers the simple infinitive for *eat* and *drink* after *give* as objective in Gothic, but the infinitive with *du* as final, I consider both the infinitives as final. A few examples will suffice: *Mat.* 25.42: *unte gredags was jan-ni gebuþ mis matjan* = ἐπένασα γὰρ, καὶ οὐκ ἐδώκατέ μοι φαγεῖν; *Mk.* 15.23: *jah gebun imma drigkan wein miþ smyrna* = καὶ ἐδίδουν αὐτῷ πιεῖν ἐσυρμησμένον οἶνον; — *L.* 9.16: *insaihvands du himina gapiupida ins jah gabrak jah gaf siponjam du fauralaggjan þizai managein* = καὶ ἐδίδου τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ παραθεῖναι τῷ ὄχλῳ; *J.* 6.31: *hlaif us himina gaf im du matjan* = ἄρτον ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς φαγεῖν; — *J.* 6.52: *hvaiwa mag unsis leik giban du matjan?* = 6.53: *þw̃s dúnatai oðtos h̃m̃w̃n t̃h̃n sárka é̃awtoʊ d̃uʊnai fageiʊn?* *Col.* 1.25: *bi ragina guþs, patei giban ist mis in izwis du usfulljan waurd guþs* = κατὰ τὴν οἰκονομίαν τοῦ θεοῦ τὴν δοθεῖσαν μοι εἰς ὑμᾶς πληρῶσαι τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ. As is apparent, in the preceding examples, the Gothic simple infinitive and the prepositional infinitive both correspond to a Greek final infinitive. But compare *I Cor.* 11.22: *ibai auk gardins ni habaiþ du matjan jah drigkan?* = μή γὰρ οἰκίας οὐκ ἔχετε εἰς τὸ ἐσθίειν καὶ πίνειν, which seems to me to belong here, though Dr. A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 460, thinks not. Compare, too, *II Thes.* 3.9: *ak ei uns silbans du frisahtai gebeima du galeikon unsis* = ἀλλ' ἵνα ἑαυτοὺς τύπον δῶμεν ὑμῖν εἰς τὸ μιμεῖσθαι ἡμᾶς (A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, p. 462).

For the Old Norse compare the following example, given by Falk and Torp,

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> A., *l. c.*, p. 457.

<sup>2</sup> From Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> O., *l. c.*, p. 212.

<sup>2</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 63.

*l. c.*, p. 208: *gaf hrofnum bloð at drekka*. I find no example of the infinitive without *at* after verbs of giving in Falk and Torp; in Lund, *l. c.*, p. 368; or in Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 228.

In Old High German, we have after *geban* both uninflected and inflected infinitives of purpose, in *Tatian*,<sup>1</sup> with whom, however, the uninflected infinitive is much the more common. In Isidor,<sup>2</sup> in Otfrid,<sup>3</sup> in the *Murbacher Hymns*,<sup>2</sup> and in the *Benedictine Rule*<sup>2</sup> we have only the inflected infinitive, in the last two invariably translating a Latin gerund or gerundive. In *Tatian* the infinitive corresponds usually to a Latin infinitive, but occasionally to a Latin noun or to *ad* + a gerund, especially when the infinitive is inflected. Examples are: uninflected: *Tatian* 321.25: *gabun imo gimorrotan uuin trinkan = dederunt ei vinum murratum bibere*; *ib.* 283.22: *uuanne . . . uuir . . . gabunmes thir trinkan?* = *quando . . . dedimus tibi potum?*<sup>4</sup>—inflected: *Tatian* 165.37: *sin fleisc geban zi ezzanne = carnem suam dare ad manducandum*; *ib.* 121.31: *zi trincanne gibit kelih = potum dederit calicem*; *ib.* 169.4: *thiu gigebanu sint in zi haltanne = quae tradita sunt illis servare*.<sup>5</sup>

*Sellan* is found only with the inflected infinitive according to Denecke, p. 62: *Ev. Matth.* 11.11: *selent inan deotom za bismeronne enti za bifillanne enti arhahanne = tradent eum gentibus ad illudendum et flagellandum et crucifigendum*; *ib.* 19.17: *wirdit gaselit in cruci za slahanne = tradetur ut crucifigatur*.<sup>6</sup>

It seems probable, therefore, that the uninflected infinitives, *trinkan* and *ezzan*, after *geban* are largely due to the Latin original; and that the inflected infinitive after verbs of giving is often due to a Latin gerundial construction.

In Old Saxon, *geban* is followed by both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected, but *drincan* and *etan* are found uninflected only: *Hel.* 1965: *thoh hie . . . manno huilicon uuillandi forgebe uuatares drincan*; *ib.* 4640: *gibu ik iu hier bethiu samad etan endi drincan*;<sup>7</sup>—*ib.* 4763: *that ik minan gebe lioban lichamon for liudio barn te uuegianne te uuundron*; *ib.* 5225: *so man mi gabi Judeo liudiun te uuegeanne*.<sup>8</sup>

Despite the evident incompleteness of our data, the facts detailed above tend to show that the uninflected infinitives, *drink* and *eat*, after *give* are due largely to Greek and Latin influence in the Germanic languages as a whole; and that the inflected infinitive after verbs of giving is largely due to the influence of the Latin gerund and gerundive construction in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon.

#### 4. With Other Verbs.

Dr. A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 458 ff., gives a large number of other verbs that in Gothic are followed by a final infinitive, simple or prepositional. With very few exceptions, the Gothic simple infinitive corresponds to the same in Greek; while the Gothic prepositional infinitive usually corresponds to a Greek prepositional infinitive or to the articular infinitive in the genitive, though it occasionally corresponds to an articular infinitive without a preposition, as in *Philip.* 4.10; or to a preposition plus a noun, as in *I Tim.* 4.3; or to a dependent clause introduced by *iva*, as in *J.* 17.4.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the final prepositional infinitive in Gothic, after whatever group of verbs, is due largely to the fact that in the

<sup>1</sup> See Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 15.

<sup>4</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 15-16.

<sup>7</sup> From Pratie, *l. c.*, p. 70.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 16.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 62.

<sup>8</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 494.

<sup>3</sup> Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *O.*, *l. c.*, p. 213.

<sup>6</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.* p. 62.

Greek we have one of the analytic equivalents above mentioned instead of a simple infinitive.

The lists of final infinitives given by Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 367-368, by Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 228, and by Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 208, contain so few except after verbs of motion, of rest, and of giving, as to make it impossible for me to form therefrom any definite opinion as to the final use of the infinitive in the Scandinavian languages after verbs other than those already treated.

As to Old High German, Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 23, merely gives two or three examples of an uninflected infinitive of purpose with verbs other than those signifying motion or giving, and suggests that the uninflected infinitive is due to a slavish following of the Latin original; as in *B. R.* 87.4: *kechriffe puah lesan* = *arripuerit codicem legere*; while Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 212, cites a few verbs (*ziahān, duan, geron, ratan, birinan, dragan, irougen*) that in Otfried are followed by the inflected infinitive of purpose. Of these I cite only one, that after *duan*, for the light it throws on a somewhat similar expression in Anglo-Saxon: Otfried, I, 17.48: *duet iz mir zi wizzanne*. For the corresponding Anglo-Saxon expressions, see Chapter VIII, p. 118.

In Old Saxon I find no clear case of a final infinitive with verbs other than *wesan* and verbs of motion and of giving.

To sum up the final infinitive in the Germanic languages, we may say that, despite the confessed meagerness of our statistics, the evidence, as far as it goes, reveals a situation surprisingly similar to that in Anglo-Saxon. As in the latter, so in the former it seems probable that (1) after verbs of motion the uninflected infinitive was a native idiom, but that the inflected infinitive was first suggested in Gothic by the Greek prepositional infinitive or by the Greek articular infinitive in the genitive, and was first suggested in Old High German by the Latin gerund and gerundive constructions; (2) after verbs of giving, the uninflected infinitives, *drink* and *eat*, are largely due to Greek and Latin influence, but that the inflected infinitive after verbs of giving is largely due to the influence of the Latin gerund and gerundive constructions, especially in High German. Concerning other groups of verbs than these two our statistics are too meager to warrant the drawing of conclusions.

## XI. THE INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES.

The infinitive with adjectives is common in the other Germanic languages.

Professor Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 167, has an interesting comment on the voice of the infinitive with adjectives in High German, and holds that in the main the prepositional infinitive is active in sense, but that occasionally it is passive.

In Gothic, only a few adjectives are followed by the infinitive. Usually we have (a) the simple infinitive, corresponding generally to the same in Greek, at times to an articular infinitive or to a finite verb; occasionally we have (b) the prepositional infinitive, corresponding to the articular infinitive in Greek: (a) *L.* 14.31: *siaiu mahteigs miþ taihun þusundjom gamotjan þamma* = *ἐν δέκα χιλιάσιν ὑπαντῆσαι*; <sup>1</sup> *Rom.* 8.39: *nih hauhiþa nih diupiþa nih gaskafts anþara mahteigs ist uns afskaidan af friaþwai guþs* = *οὐτε . . . δυνήσεται ἡμᾶς χάρισαι*; <sup>1</sup> *I Cor.* 16.4: *jah þan jabai ist mis wairþ galeiþan* = *ἐὰν δ' ἡ ἀξίον τοῦ*

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *A.*, *l. c.*, p. 425.

καμὲ πορεύεσθαι;<sup>1</sup> — (b) *Philip.* 1.24: appan *du wisan* in leika, þaurftizo in izwara = τὸ δὲ ἐπιμένειν ἐν σαρκὶ ἀναγκαϊότερον δι' ὑμᾶς <sup>2</sup> (or subjective?).

As the Gothic infinitive (simple) after adjectives has several different correspondents in Greek, the construction is probably native.

In Old Norse, on the other hand, the infinitive, usually with *at*, is frequently used with adjectives. Concerning this idiom we read in Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 204: "Til adjektiver føies infinitiv paa en tredobbelt maade: a. Som til et ved substantiv dannet udsagn kan i oldnorsk infinitiv ogsaa føies til et adjektivisk, ikke til adjektivet alene. Saadanne adjektiver er de som betegner vane, beredthed, skikkethed, begjærlighed, berettigelse, osv.: *vapn er hann var vanr at hafa; vera buinn at riða; vera lystr at lifa; ufuss em ek at lata þetta band a mik leggja.* Kun i det poetiske sprog kan undertiden *at* mangle. . . . b. Medens ved den foregaaende gruppe infinitiven er styret af hele det verbalt fœlte udtryk, kan ved andre adjektiver infinitiv staa paa en friere maade, som betegnelse for den handling med hensyn til hvilken egenskaben fremtræder. Denne infinitiv nedstammer direkte fra det gamle gerundium, hvorfor *at* her aldrig (udenfor poesien) kan mangle: *drjúgr at ljuga* (droi til at lyve); *firðir illir yfir at fara; hræðiligr at sja* (frygtelig at skue). Saaledes fremdeles: den er let at lokke, som efter vil hoppe; han er ikke god at komme til rette med. c. Hvor adjektivet har adverbiet 'saa' foran sig, betegnes ved infinitiven en følge: vær saa snil at sige mig. Ved imperativ bruges ogsaa sideordning: vær saa snil og sig mig, ligesom i svensk dagligtale samt tysk (seien Sie so gut und tun Sie das) og engelsk (be so kind and tell me). Hvor 'saa' mangler, gaar betydningen over i kausal: er du gal at bære dig saadan ad." See, too, Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 371 ff.; Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 225.

In Old High German, the uninflected infinitive (a) is much less frequent than the inflected (b). The uninflected infinitive habitually answers to a Latin infinitive; the inflected often does, but it corresponds also to a Latin future participle and to *ad* + a gerund. Some adjectives are followed by each infinitive. Examples are: — (a): *Tatian* 88.21: *mahtig ist arwekkan* = *potest suscitare*; *Is.* 37.21: *chiwon* was *ardhinsan* = *solebat rapere*; <sup>3</sup> *Otfrid* I, 17.43: *giwon* was *quemam zi in*; <sup>4</sup> *B. R.* 36.1: *fora wesam wirdiger ist* = *preesse dignus est*; <sup>5</sup> — (b) *Tatian* 318.27: was *giwon* ther grauoz *zi forlazzanne einan* = *consuerat preses dimittere unum*; *ib.* 90.4: *ni bim wirdig zi traganne* = *non sum dignus portare*; *ib.* 291.19: *garo bin zi faranne* = *paratus sum ire*; *ib.* 334.25: *lazze in herzen zi giloubanne* = *tardi corde ad credendum*.<sup>6</sup>

So divergent are the Latin correspondents to the infinitive with adjectives in Old High German that it seems probable that the idiom was native thereto, whether the infinitive was uninflected or inflected. In *Otfrid* and in *Tatian* the inflected infinitive is the rule.

In Old Saxon, (a) the uninflected infinitive is rare; (b) the inflected, common: (a) *Hel.* 4720: *thar uuas hie upp giuono gangan*; *ib.* 3821: *thia scattos thia gi sculdiga sind an that geld (te C) geban*; <sup>7</sup> — (b) *Hel.* 1794: *hie ist garo . . . ti gebanne*; *ib.* 650: *uuarun . . . fusa ti faranne*; *ib.* 3988: *te hui bist thu so gern . . . tharod te faranne*? <sup>8</sup>

Most probably, therefore, the infinitive, uninflected and inflected, with adjectives is an idiom native to the Germanic languages.

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler, *A.*, *l. c.*, p. 452.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 430.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 22.

<sup>4</sup> From Erdmann, *O.*, *l. c.*, p. 204, who tells us that *giwon* is the only adjective that is followed by an uninflected infinitive in *Otfrid*, and that only twice.

<sup>5</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 22.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 71.

<sup>7</sup> From Pratje, *l. c.*, p. 70.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 74.

## XII. OTHER ADVERBIAL USES OF THE INFINITIVE.

## A. THE CAUSAL INFINITIVE.

I have not found a clear example of the causal infinitive with verbs in Gothic. The infinitive after *ogan*, 'fear,' may be considered causal, but to me, as to Dr. A. Köhler<sup>2</sup> (*l. c.*, p. 438), it seems objective; and *faurhtjan*, 'fear,' according to Dr. Köhler, is not found with an infinitive.

Concerning the causal use of the infinitive with adjectives in some of the Scandinavian languages, see the passage quoted from Falk and Torp in the preceding section of this chapter, p. 257.

Nor have I found more than a few clear examples of the causal infinitive with verbs in Old High German. Wavering between the objective and the causal use are the infinitives after *forhten*, found once uninflected and once inflected: *Tatian* 84.13: *forhta imo thara faren = timuit illo ire*,<sup>1</sup> — *ib.* 76.35: *ni curi thu forhtan zi nemanne = noli timere accipere*.<sup>2</sup> *Betolon*, in *Tatian* 208.21 (*betolon scamen mih = mendicare erubesco*<sup>3</sup>), may denote cause. In *Isidor* 39.8 (*lustida sic chihoran = delectantur audire*<sup>4</sup>), *chihoran* is doubtless subjective. But in the following passages from *Otfrid*, given by Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 210, we seem to have genuine causal infinitives in the genitive: *V.* 7.21: *mag unsih gilusten weinonnes*; *V.* 23.138: *er sih lade forahthenes = 'sich beschwere durch Furchten.'* In *Murb. H.* 20.8 (*tod farloranan sih einun chuere = mors perisse se solam gemat*<sup>5</sup>) we have a preterite participle instead of a predicative infinitive after a verb of emotion.

In *Tatian* 339.20 (*mit ferennu quamun = navigio venerunt*<sup>6</sup>) we have an instrumental infinitive, but this belongs more properly under the Infinitive with Prepositions.

Possibly we have a causal infinitive in *-nes (-ndes)* in these Middle High German passages given by Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 125: *Der tiuwel irret dich betendes (= betenines)*; *er irret dich bihtendes*; *Der Künec sich vragens sumte niht*; — and with an adjective in: *Du wirst niemer vehtens sat*.

Nor do I find a causal infinitive in Old Saxon. The infinitive after *ruokan* in the following is probably objective: *Hel.* 61.11: *ne ruokit gi te truone . . . ne ruokit te gerone . . . ne ruokit herta te settane = nolite sperare . . . concupiscere . . . apponere*.<sup>7</sup>

Our statistics are too meager to warrant a confident opinion as to the origin of the causal infinitive in the Germanic languages. The two examples of the uninflected infinitive in Old High German correspond to the Latin infinitive; the two examples of the genitive infinitive in *-nes*, in *Otfrid*, may be of native origin, occurring as they do after verbs governing a genitive with nouns. The double construction with *forhten*, as already stated, probably arises from the double regimen of that verb.

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 19.

<sup>2</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 64, who adds: "Vielleicht ist die Anwendung von *zi* hier begünstigt worden durch die Abneigung vor zwei nebeneinander stehenden reinen Infinitiven," — a hypothesis which seems very doubtful to me. More probably the double construction with *forhten* results from the double regimen of that verb, which is followed by an accusative and a genitive (Delbrück,<sup>3</sup> *l. c.*, p. 34).

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 46.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 34.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, *l. c.*, p. 56.

<sup>7</sup> From Steig, *l. c.*, p. 492.



## B. THE INFINITIVE OF SPECIFICATION WITH VERBS.

Of the infinitive of specification with verbs I find no clear example in Gothic, in Old Norse, or in Old Saxon.

But in Old High German the following is probably an example: *B. R.* 45.9: *saar so eoweht kipotan fona meririn ist, samaso cotchundlihho si kepotan tuuala kedoleet wesam ni-uizzin zetuenne* = *Mox ut aliquid imperatum a maiore fuerit, hacti diuinitus imperetur moram pati nesciant in faciendo*. With the foregoing compare the following phrases, in which the infinitive is governed by a preposition other than *zi*: *B. R.* 41 (title): *fona tuenne ze keratte pruadero* = *de adhibendis ad consilium fratribus*; *ib.* 121.5: *in kankanne* = *in ambulando*; *Tatian* 335.26: *in brehchanne thes brotes* = *in fractione panis*.<sup>1</sup> Specification is denoted, too, by the participial (adverbial) form in *-do (-to)* translating the Latin gerund in the ablative, as in *Hatt.* II, 116 b. 28: *fure mit fahindo pist du Satanas, mir nah kando wirdistu min scuolare* = *precedendo Satanas es, sequendo discipulus*.<sup>2</sup>

In all probability the infinitive of specification with verbs is due to Latin influence in the Germanic languages (Old High German and Anglo-Saxon).

## C. THE CONSECUTIVE INFINITIVE.

## (a) With Adjectives.

In his section on "Der Infinitivus Effectus s. Consequentiae," *l. c.*, pp. 450-453, Dr. A. Köhler<sup>2</sup> mentions, among adjectives, only *wairps*, 'worthy,' as being followed by a consecutive infinitive. The infinitive after this adjective has been illustrated above, p. 256; it does not seem necessary to repeat the illustrations here, the more so that the use does not to me seem consecutive.

For the consecutive infinitive with an adjective preceded by *saa* in the Scandinavian languages, see section xi of this chapter, p. 257.

In Old High German, clear examples of a consecutive infinitive after an adjective are difficult to find. Perhaps this is an example: *Is.* 7.25: *endi joh dhazs ist nu unzwiſlo so lechtsamo zi firstandanne dhanne dhazs dhiz ist chiquedan*.<sup>3</sup> *Wirdig* occurs with both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected, as we saw above, p. 257, but, despite Dr. A. Köhler's statement as to *wairps*, the infinitive after *wirdig* does not seem to me consecutive in sense.

Possibly we have a consecutive infinitive after an adjective preceded by *ze* in Middle High German, as in *E.* 7483: *so waerz iu ze sagenne al ze lanc*; *ib.* 7572: *daz waer ze sagenne ze lanc*, both from *Monsterberg-Münckenau*,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 104.

In Old Saxon I find a few examples of the inflected infinitive following an adjective preceded by an adverb (*te*): *Hel.* 5846: *uwas im thi uuanami te strang, te swithi te sehanne*; *ib.* 143: *it is unc all ti lat so te giuwinanne*.<sup>4</sup>

In the Germanic languages, as in Anglo-Saxon, the consecutive infinitive with adjectives seems merely an extension of the native infinitive of specification with adjectives.

## (b) With Verbs.

Under the verbs followed by a consecutive infinitive in Gothic, Dr. A. Köhler,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 450-453, names: *taujan*, 'make,' 'cause,' *gataujan*, 'make,'

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 56, 57.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 71.

<sup>2</sup> From Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *O.*, *l. c.*, p. 231.

<sup>4</sup> From Prati, *l. c.*, p. 74.

'cause;,' *waurkjan*, 'make,' 'cause;,' *naupjan*, 'compel;,' *baidjan*, 'compel;,' *afhugjan*, 'bewitch;,' 'entice;,' *gahvotjan*, 'threaten;,' and *ga-arman*, passive, in the sense of 'be worthy.' However, for reasons given above, concerning *wairþs*, I should exclude the verb last named; and the factitives (*taujan*, *gataujan*, and *waurkjan*) I should likewise exclude, as they occur almost exclusively in the accusative-with-infinitive construction, already treated. I quote a few illustrations of the infinitive with the remaining verbs: *L.* 14.23: jah *naupþei innatgaggan* = καὶ ἀνάγκασον εἰσελθεῖν; *Gal.* 6.12: þai *naupþand izwis bimaitan* = οὗτοι ἀναγκάζουσιν ὑμᾶς περιτέμνεσθαι; — *Gal.* 2.14: hvaiwa piudos baideis juda-wiskon? = τί τὰ ἔθνη ἀναγκάζεις ἰουδαῖον? *Gal.* 3.1: hvas izwis *afhugida* sunjai ni *ufhausjan*? = τίς ὑμᾶς ἐβάσκαυε τῇ ἀληθείᾳ μὴ πειθεσθαι? — *Skeir.* I, c: diabolau þairh liugn *gahvotjandin ufargaggan* anabusn. In all the foregoing examples, it will be observed, the Gothic uses the simple infinitive, which corresponds to the same construction in Greek.

Very rarely does Ulfilas translate the Greek consecutive infinitive preceded by ὥστε by a consecutive infinitive in Gothic; he usually renders it by a finite verb. Examples of the infinitive are: *II Cor.* 2.7: swaei þata andaneipō izwis mais *fragiban* jah *gablaihan* = ὥστε τοῦναντίον μᾶλλον ὑμᾶς χαρίσασθαι καὶ παρακαλεῖσθαι; *Mat.* 8.24: swaswe þata skip *gahuliþ wairþan* = ὥστε τὸ πλοῖον καλύπτεσθαι.<sup>1</sup> It is agreed on all hands<sup>2</sup> that the infinitive in Gothic here is due to Greek influence.

Of the consecutive infinitive with verbs in the Scandinavian languages, Professor Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 229, speaks as follows: "Infinitiv bruges efter *sva at* for at betegne følgen af det udsagtes maade eller grad, naar subjektet for infinitivens handling er det samme som for hovedudsagnet, og handlingen udsiges som en forestilling, ikke som noget virkelig stedfindende." I quote only one or two of the examples given by Nygaard: *S. E.* 30.8: ef hann kvæmi *sva i foeri at sla* hann it þriðja hogg; — *S. E.* 26.21: spurði hverr annan, hverr þvi hefði raðit at spilla loptinu ok himninum *sva at taka* þaðan sol ok tungl.

In Old High German the following verbs are followed by an infinitive that may be considered consecutive: *spanan*, 'persuade;,' *ganuhtsamon*, 'suffice;,' *noten*, 'compel;,' *ginoten*, 'compel;,' *beiten*, 'compel;,' *cruazzit*, 'provokes;,' *manon*, 'admonish;,' *irfaran*, 'reach.' Typical examples are: (1) uninflected: *B. R.* 102: *spanames kihaltan* = *suademus custodire*; <sup>3</sup> *ib.* 34.4: *die kenuhtsamont fehtan* = *qui sufficiunt pugnare*; <sup>4</sup> *Denkm.* liv. 21: *daz er za sonatage ni uuerde canaotit vadja urgepan* = *ne ante tribunal Christi cogatur rationem exsolvere*; <sup>5</sup> *Tatian* 233.22: *beiti ingangen* = *compelle intrare*; <sup>6</sup> — *Otfrid* IV, 13.53: *ther thir so irfare, gisuntun uns thir derien* = 'der dich so erreicht, dass er dir schaden könnte, so lange wir wohlbehalten sind.' On this passage from Otfrid, O. Erdmann, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 204, comments: "Freier schliesst sich der Inf. einmal in consecutivem Sinne an ein mit demonstrativem *so* verbundenes Verbum an; er gibt die Tätigkeit an, zu welcher in dem mit *so* angezeigten Zustande die Bereitschaft und Fähigkeit vorhanden ist." He adds: "Auf ähnliche Weise denke ich mir an das stark betonte *thu* angeschlossen den scheinbar absoluten Infinitiv, III,

<sup>1</sup> From Apelt, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 290.

<sup>2</sup> See Gabelentz and Loebe, *l. c.*, p. 273; Apelt, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 290; Streitberg, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 205; Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 119. — Since the above sentence was written, Professor G. O. Curme, <sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 359 ff., has published what seems to me an unsuccessful attempt to overthrow this theory of Greek influence.

<sup>3</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 20.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 21.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 34.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 35.

20.163: *thu bist al honer, in sunton giboraner, thu unsih thanne bredigon* = 'du (bist) einer, welcher uns zurechtweisen könnte (um uns zurechtzuweisen).'"

(2) Examples of the inflected infinitive are: *Murb. H.* 12.1: *unsih za petonne cruazzit* = *nos ad orandum provocat*;<sup>1</sup> — *Aug. serm.* 33.8: *manot unsih za forstantanne* = *admonet nos intelligere*;<sup>2</sup> — *Denkm.* lvi. 70: *ci gigehtanne ginotames* = *confiteri compellimur*.<sup>2</sup>

Says O. Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, p. 213: "Ohne dass die Bedeutung des Verbums wesentlich ist, schliesst sich nicht selten *zi* mit Inf. als freiere consecutive oder finale Ausführung an den Inhalt des ganzen Satzes an." Of the several examples given by him, the following seem to me consecutive: IV, 13.24: *mit thir bin ih . . . in karkari zi faranne joh dothes ouh zi koronne* = 'bis zu Kerker und Tod;' V, 16.35: *zeichono eigit ir gewalt zi wirkenne ubar woroltlant* = 'so dass ihr sie wirken könnet.'

Professor Wilmanns, *l. c.*, p. 127, gives a few examples of the consecutive inflected infinitive in Middle High German, and states that the idiom does not survive in New High German: "Fremder ist uns der Inf. mit *zu* geworden, wo er die Wirkung bezeichnet; z. B. *Er.* 5586: *im ze sehenne er in sluoc*, so dass er es sah; *Gudr.* 499.3: *daz man des fiuwers wint sluoc uz herten helmen ze sehenne schænen frouwen*, so dass sie es sehen konnten; *Nib.* 382.3: *sin solden da niht sten den fremden an ze sehenne*." Dr. Monsterberg-Münckenauf,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 77-104, gives an extended treatment of the consecutive use of the infinitive in the epics of Hartmann von Aue, but includes under his general heading, "Der Infinitiv der Richtung," a number of uses that are otherwise classified by the standard grammars, for example, the infinitive with auxiliaries and the infinitive with impersonal verbs.

Dr. Pratje, *l. c.*, p. 73, cites what he considers an example of the consecutive inflected infinitive in Old Saxon: "Auch schliesst sich, wie bei Otfrid (vgl. Erdmann, I, § 351), ein Infinitiv als freiere konsekutive Ausführung an den Inhalt des ganzen Satzes an: *uuarth im giuwendid thuo hugi an herten after theru heri Judeonno te uuerkeanne iro uuillion, 5471*."

It seems to me that in most of the foregoing examples the consecutive infinitive is a native development of the infinitive after verbs calling for an accusative infinitive (when uninflected) or for a dative infinitive or a prepositional phrase (when inflected), in the latter case, however, somewhat influenced, in Old High German at least, by the presence in the original of *gerund* and *gerundive* constructions. The infinitive of result preceded by *swaswe* and by *swaei* in Gothic, however, is in direct imitation<sup>3</sup> of the Greek consecutive infinitive preceded by *ὥστε*.

#### D. THE ABSOLUTE INFINITIVE.

Of the absolute use of the infinitive in Gothic, I have not found a clear example.

Messrs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, pp. 208-209, give several examples of the absolute infinitive in the Scandinavian languages: "Den absolute infinitiv, hvis subjekt er den talende eller et ubestemt 'man,' føies til det hele udsagn: *fyrst at segja fra Oðni* (for nu først at tale om Odin); *nw at tale om thenne artikel* (P. Elies.); *med faa ord at sige* (Abs. Ped.); *kort at sige* (Holb.); *sandt at sige*; *at sige*, hvis du ønsker det; *efter udseendet at dømme*; *vel at merke*; (for) *ikke at tale om*." They then give a short paragraph on the elliptical use of the in-

<sup>1</sup> From Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 66.

See the references given in the second footnote on p. 260 above.

finitive: "En elliptisk infinitiv bruges i spørgsmaal og indignerede udraab: hvorfor ei Skaftet tage og dermed Hunden fra dig jage (Wess.); hvi dig omsonst umage (ib.); komme her og fortælle mig sligt. Ved tysk indflydelse ogsaa i bisætninger efter verbet 'vide:' jeg neppe veed for Fryd paa hvilken Fod at staae (Wess.); ligedan i engelsk, fransk, italiensk og spansk."

Concerning an apparent, not real, example of the absolute infinitive in Old High German, see above, p. 260, the quotation from Erdmann. Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 98, differs with Erdmann, and holds that the infinitive in both of the examples from Otfrid are absolute: "Man kann sich einen ganz unabhängig gesetzten inf. denken. Jener imperativische (s. 87) ist ein solcher, wenn die schleppe Erklärung durch ellipse nichts gilt. Es scheint, dass der inf. auch als ausruf hingestellt wurde." He then quotes Otfrid III, 20.163, and continues: "Es könnte auch fragweise gesagt sein," but he gives no example of this type from Old High German. Of the imperative infinitive in asseverations he thinks we have an example in *piladi quedan = verbi gratia*.

But examples are given from Middle High German and from New High German, not only of the interrogative type but also of the exclamative type: *Ludw. Kreuzf.* 7144: *waz biten langer unt niht striten?* Lessing 2.104: *ich schwören?* — *Keisersb. Omeiss.* 19<sup>d</sup>: *ja wol jetzt bistumb aufgeben!* Goethe 7.13: *ich verreisen! ich dich nicht lieben!* Grimm concludes: "infinitivische betreuung: mhd. *fruntel machen*, *nimmer tuon* (im munde eines thoren), *Frib. Trist.* 5239, 5241; nhd. *diesmal tanzen* und nicht wieder! ahd. *piladi quedan* (*verbi gratia*), Graff 3.97, d. h. um ein beispiel zu sagen." — See, further, concerning the idiom in Middle High German, *Monsterberg-Münckenau*,<sup>1</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 98, 134.

In Old Saxon I find no example.

The absolute infinitive, in most of its uses, in the Germanic languages is probably, as in Anglo-Saxon, derived by ellipsis from the predicative infinitive after the verb *to be*, though occasionally it arises from the abridgment of a final clause into an infinitive phrase: see the list of examples illustrative of this evolution in Anglo-Saxon, given in Chapter XIV, section xii.

Of the four adverbial uses of the infinitive treated in this chapter, then, one, that of specification with verbs, seems wholly due to foreign (Latin) influence; one, that of cause, seems partly of native and partly of foreign origin; one, that of result, with adjectives, is wholly native, but with verbs is largely native but partly foreign; while the remaining use, the absolute, is wholly native.

### XIII. THE INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS.

Both the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive are found with nouns in the Germanic languages, but the latter the oftener.

In Gothic we have both<sup>1</sup> infinitives, but oftener the prepositional. More frequently (a) the simple infinitive corresponds to the same in Greek, but occasionally to an articular or a prepositional infinitive; while (b) the prepositional infinitive more commonly corresponds to a Greek articular infinitive in the genitive or to a prepositional, though occasionally to a simple infinitive or to a preposition + a noun: — (a) *Mat.* 9.6: *patei waldufni habaiþ sa sunus mans ana*

<sup>1</sup> On p. 459 Dr. A. Köhler<sup>2</sup> seems to say that only the prepositional infinitive is found with nouns in Gothic, and Denecke, pp. 22, 70, was misled thereby; but what Köhler really says is that he is about to give a group of finite verbs + a substantive that are followed only by a prepositional infinitive. At other places he gives clear examples of a noun followed by the simple infinitive, as is evident from my citations.

airpai *afleitan* frawaurhtins = ὅτι ἐξουσίαν ἔχει ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἀφιέναι ἁμαρτίας; <sup>1</sup> L. 10.19: atgaf izwis *waldufni trudan* ufar waurme jah skaurpjonon = δίδωμι ὑμῖν τὴν ἐξουσίαν τοῦ πατεῖν ἐπάνω ὀφείων καὶ σκορπῶν; <sup>2</sup> Philip. 1.23: panuh *lustu* habans *andletnan* jah mip *Xristau wisan* = τὴν ἐπισθυμίαν ἔχων εἰς τὸ ἀναλῦσαι καὶ οὖν Χριστῷ εἶναι; <sup>3</sup> — (b) L. 1.57: Aileisabaip *usfullnoda mel du bairan* = ὁ χρόνος τοῦ τεκεῖν; <sup>4</sup> L. 2.6: *dagos du bairan* = ἡμέραι τοῦ τεκεῖν; <sup>4</sup> L. 5.17: jah *mahts frauins* was *du hailjan ins* = καὶ δύναμις κυρίου ἦν εἰς τὸ ἰᾶσθαι αὐτοὺς; <sup>5</sup> Mk. 3.15: *waldufni du hailjan* sauhtins jah *uswairpan* unhulpons = ἐξουσίαν θεραπεύειν τὰς νόσους καὶ ἐκβάλλειν τὰ δαιμόνια; <sup>5</sup> L. 14.28: niu frumist *gasitands rahneip* manwipo, *habaiu du ustiuhon*? = εἰ ἔχει τὰ πρὸς ἀπαρτισμόν (in which the noun is to be supplied).<sup>6</sup> It is worth noting that usually, when the infinitive stands in a genitival relation to the noun, it translates an articular infinitive in the genitive, as in Anglo-Saxon it translates a Latin gerund or gerundive in the genitive: see Chapter XIV, p. 220 above.

Concerning the infinitive with nouns in the Scandinavian languages, Messrs. Falk and Torp, *l. c.*, p. 203, make this interesting statement: "Skjønt infinitiven egentlig er et substantiv, kan den dog oprindelig ikke, saaledes som andre substantiver, direkte forbindes med et substantiv som styret af dette. I oldnorsk heder 'lyst til at reise' ikke *hugr (at) fara*, men *farar hugr*. Heller ikke som forklarende tillæg (i lighed med den definitive genitiv) kunde infinitiv oprindelig forbindes med et substantiv (som i vort 'kunsten at skrive'). Først naar substantivet i forbindelse med *hafa* og *vera* kommer til at danne et verbalt udtryk, kan infinitiv tilføies, som til de i § 125 nævnte verber, med hvilke saadanne substantiviske udsagn blir synonyme. Som ved disse verber kunde at mangle eller staa, alt efter den oprindelige opfatning af infinitiven som objekt eller som maalet for handlingen; dog udelades at i oldnorsk kun i det poetiske sprog: *hafa hug hjorrum at bregða*; *sina talði litla fysi (scil. vera) at roa lengra* (= *sagði sik litt fysa*); *mal er at riða* (= *nu skal riða*). To these examples I add two others, from Nygaard, *l. c.*, p. 224: *Am. 63: tom lezt at eiga teðja vel garða*; — *Laxd. 161.5: gefr rum at sitja hja ser*. See, too, Lund, *l. c.*, pp. 375 ff.

Dr. Denecke, *l. c.*, pp. 21–22, cites only three examples of a noun modified by an uninflected infinitive in Old High German: *Tatian* 179.1: *inti giwalt* gab imo tuom tuon = et *potestatem* dedit ei et *judicium facere*; <sup>7</sup> *ib.* 210.35: *ih haben toufi gitoufit werden* = *baptismum* habeo *baptizari*; <sup>8</sup> *B. R.* 125.2: *kecaugrot wesan* (trotz lat. Gerd.) = *sit necessitas vacandi*.<sup>8</sup> On the other hand, he gives, on pp. 69–70, numerous examples of the inflected infinitive, of which I quote only a few: *Denkm.* lxvi. 1: *gewalt* have sachun sinu *ce gevene* = *potestatem* habet res suas *dare*; *Ev. Matth.* 1.18: habet *gawalt za forlazzanne suntea* = habet *potestatem dimittendi* peccata; *Tatian* 232.17: *thoroph coufta ih inti notthurft* haben ih *uzziganganne inti gisehen iz* = *villam* emi, et *necesse* habeo *exire et videre* illam; *ib.* 72.31: *zit zi beranne* = *tempus parturiendi*; *ib.* 143.3: *habe orun zi horenne* = habet *aurem audiendi*. Erdmann,<sup>1</sup> *O.*, *l. c.*, p. 213, gives some examples of the inflected infinitive in Otfrid.

<sup>1</sup> From Köhler, <sup>2</sup> *A.*, *l. c.*, p. 426.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 426.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 437.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 460.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 426.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibidem*, p. 427.

<sup>7</sup> Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 69, comments: "1 mal reiner Inf., . . . wo wahrscheinlich das lat. doppelte et die Veranlassung war, dass die Abhängigkeit des Inf. von dem Subst. dem Uebers. nicht klar wurde."

<sup>8</sup> Denecke, *l. c.*, p. 22, thinks that the uninflected infinitive here is due to the fact that a Latin passive infinitive is translated.

It seems probable that the inflected infinitive after nouns was native to Old High German, corresponding as it does to various Latin idioms. But it is noteworthy that the inflected infinitive with genitival force corresponds often, as in Anglo-Saxon, to a Latin gerund in the genitive. As to the uninflected infinitive, as stated above, Denecke holds that sometimes, as in *Tatian* 179.1, the lack of inflection is due to a misunderstanding of the Latin *et . . . et*; sometimes, as in *Tatian* 210.35, to the fact that a passive infinitive is being translated. On p. 69 he thus comments on the interchange of inflected and uninflected infinitive seen in *Tatian* 232.17 above quoted: "Wechsel der Construction wohl nur aus nachlässiger Anlehnung an den lat. Text." He then cites other examples of this interchange of the two infinitives after nouns, and adds: "Ueberhaupt dürfte Nachlässigkeit wohl in allen den Fällen anzunehmen sein, wo aus der Construction mit *zi*, ohne dass ein Wechsel in der lat. Construction vorliegt, zum einfachen Inf. übergegangen wird." It is more probable, I think, that the lack of inflection in the first and in the third examples is due to the separation of the infinitive in the Old High German from its noun, — a principle that we found applicable in Anglo-Saxon. Concerning the passive infinitive Denecke is doubtless correct, for we found that in Anglo-Saxon the infinitive part of the compound passive infinitive is never inflected.

Rare, too, is the uninflected infinitive in Old Saxon. Prati, *l. c.*, p. 70, cites two examples: *Hel.* 4289: *huan ist thin eft uuan cuman*; *ib.* 5825: *ik uuet that is iu ist niud sehan an theson stene innan*; but, in the second, the infinitive may be subjective<sup>1</sup> or a predicate nominative instead of a modifier of the noun, *niud*. On pages 73–74 he cites several examples of the inflected infinitive, of which I quote only two: *Hel.* 2228: *that ik giuuald hebbiu sundea te fargibanne endi oc seokan man te gihelianne*; *ib.* 2377: *uwas im tharf mikil te gihoreanne hebancuninges uuarfastun uuord*.

In all probability, then, the inflected infinitive with nouns was an idiom native to the Germanic languages in general. But when the *to* (*zu*) infinitive is distinctly genitival in function, it seems to have been due in part to foreign influence: to the articular (genitive) or the prepositional infinitive in Greek and to the genitive of the gerund or gerundive in Latin. Outside of Gothic and Old Norse, the uninflected infinitive is found only sporadically with nouns, and is usually appreciably separated from the noun it modifies.

#### NOTES.

1. *The Historical Infinitive in the Other Germanic Languages*. — Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, p. 99, gives no example of the historical infinitive in the Germanic languages, but his editors, Messrs. Roethe and Schroeder, give what they conceive to be examples from Swedish and from Anglo-Saxon. The alleged examples from Anglo-Saxon have been quoted and commented upon in the "Introduction," p. 6. Dr. Monsterberg-Münckenaui, *l. c.*, p. 134, declares that the idiom does not occur in Hartmann von Aue.

2. *The Imperative Infinitive in the Other Germanic Languages*. — Grimm, *l. c.*, IV, pp. 92–93, gives examples of the imperative infinitive in Gothic and in High German, the former in imitation of the Greek: *L.* 9.3: *ni þan tveihnos paidos haban* = μήτε ἀπὸ δύο χιτῶνας ἔχειν; — *HMS.* 3.321<sup>a</sup>: *damite niht gahen*; *Dioclet.* 3586: *mich baz verstan*; — Lessing 1.279: *nicht gehen!* Dr. Monsterberg-Münckenaui, *l. c.*, p. 134, says the construction does not occur in Hartmann von Aue, but does occur in Berthold von Regensburg; and he refers to H. Roeteken, *l. c.*, § 211.

<sup>1</sup> See p. 232 above.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### RESULTS.

I briefly sum up what seem to me to be the results of this investigation, first, concerning the active infinitive and, secondly, concerning the passive infinitive:—

#### I. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

1. In respect of the Form, the Anglo-Saxon has two active infinitives: (1) the uninflected, ending in *-an*, with phonetic variants, which in origin is the petrified nominative-accusative case of a neuter noun of action; and (2) the inflected, made up of the preposition *to* plus the dative case of the uninflected infinitive, ending in *-enne* (*-anne*), with phonetic variants. Occasionally, however, we have a compromise between these two, as in *to singan* or in *singenne* without *to*, both of which forms are counted as inflected in this investigation. And very rarely, in Late West Saxon, we have the infinitive in *-enne* preceded by *for to*, as in *for to hauene*.

2. As to the Voice of these two infinitives, it seems to me that the uninflected infinitive is habitually active in sense as in form in each of its various uses, after verbs of commanding, of causing, and of sense perception as well as in other uses. The inflected infinitive, also, is usually active in sense except when used predicatively with *beon* (*wesan*) to denote necessity or obligation, in which use it is normally passive, though occasionally active. Probably, too, the adjectivized inflected infinitive with nouns, a construction that may be considered an abridgment of the infinitive of necessity with *beon* (*wesan*), is also passive in sense. Possibly, but not probably, the inflected infinitive is occasionally passive in sense when used to denote purpose, and when used with adjectives. But the Anglo-Saxons at the outset had little feeling for a true passive infinitive, and very slowly acquired it through the Latin: see the section below on the passive infinitive.

3. In keeping with its origin, the infinitive is of dual Nature, partaking, at one and the same time, of the nature both of the noun and of the verb. But, despite this fact, one of these two tendencies, the substantival and the verbal, usually predominates; and from this standpoint we may roughly divide all infinitives into two big classes, (1) substantival and (2) verbal (or predicative). More generally useful, however, is the classification according to the dominant Function of the infinitive; according to which an infinitive is substantival, predicative, adverbial, or adjectival.

4. The Uses of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon are fourfold:—

(1) Substantival, subdivided into:

(a) Subjective, oftenest with the infinitive inflected, but often uninflected.

(b) Objective, oftenest with the infinitive uninflected, but often inflected.

(c) Other substantival uses:

(aa) As a predicate nominative, infrequent, oftener with the infinitive inflected.

(bb) As an appositive, infrequent, oftener with the infinitive uninflected.

(cc) As the object of a preposition: the examples cited are all very doubtful.

(2) Predicative (or more verbal), in which we have the infinitive:

(a) As the predicative complement after:

(aa) Auxiliary verbs, with the infinitive normally uninflected, but sporadically inflected.

(bb) Verbs of motion and of rest, with the infinitive invariably uninflected.

(cc) The adhortative (*w)uton*, with the infinitive invariably uninflected.

(dd) *Beon* (*Wesan*) to denote habitually necessity, but occasionally futurity and purpose. In each of these three uses the infinitive is habitually inflected except occasionally in the first.

(b) As the quasi-predicate of:

(aa) An accusative subject after certain groups of verbs ((1) commanding, (2) causing and permitting, (3) sense perception; less frequently: (4) mental perception; very rarely: (5) declaring and (6) other verbs), with the infinitive habitually uninflected, but occasionally inflected. The accusative-with-infinitive construction is much more frequent in objective than in subjective clauses.

(bb) A dative subject apparently but not really, with the infinitive sometimes uninflected and sometimes inflected.

(3) Adverbial, subdivided into:

(a) Final, frequent, with the infinitive both uninflected and inflected.

(b) Causal, rare, oftener with the infinitive inflected.

(c) Specificatory: with verbs, rare, always with the infinitive inflected; with adjectives, frequent, with the infinitive habitually inflected, but sporadically uninflected.

(d) Consecutive, with adjectives and with verbs, with the infinitive habitually, if not exclusively, inflected.

(e) Absolute, with the infinitive habitually inflected, but sporadically uninflected.

(4) Adjectival, to limit a noun or a pronoun, in which use we have habitually the inflected infinitive, but sporadically the uninflected infinitive. In a few of these examples the inflected infinitive is almost a pure adjective; and in a few others it closely approximates a Latin gerundive.

5. The Differentiation between the Uninflected Infinitive and the Inflected Infinitive seems to rest upon this general principle, though not without a few apparent, if not real, exceptions: the uninflected infinitive is used normally, in substantival uses, as a nominative or an accusative of a verbal noun; in predicative and in adverbial uses, as an accusative; the inflected infinitive is used normally, in substantival (objective), in predicative, in adverbial, and in adjectival uses, to represent a case other than the nominative or the accusative, what for lack of a better term I have designated an "indirect case," which corresponds oftenest, as would be expected from its composition, to the dative case, but also to the genitive case and to the instrumental case. And, owing to the influence



of neighboring datival verbs and verbal phrases, we have, from the outset, the inflected infinitive as subject oftener than the uninflected. In accordance with this general principle we find that:—

(1) Normally the Uninflected Infinitive is used to denote:

(a) The subject of a few finite verbs.

(b) The direct object of most verbs governing an accusative of the direct object.

(c) The appositive to a noun or a pronoun.

(d) Purpose after a few verbs of motion, of rest, of commanding and requesting.

(e) The predicative complement of (*aa*) the auxiliary verbs (except *agan*, which not infrequently has the inflected infinitive) and of (*bb*) verbs of motion and of rest, as in *com fleogan* and *uton gangan*.

(f) The quasi-predicate of (*aa*) an accusative subject.

(2) Normally the Inflected Infinitive is used to denote:

(a) The subject of datival verbs and verbal phrases, especially when in proximity thereto.

(b) The "indirect case" object of verbs governing a noun object in the genitive, or the dative, or the instrumental.

(c) The predicate nominative after certain datival verb phrases.

(d) The predicative complement of *beon* (*wesan*) to denote necessity or obligation.

(e) The "indirect case" adverbial modifier of (*aa*) verbs, to express (*a*) purpose, (*β*) result, (*γ*) absolute relationship; and of (*bb*) adjectives, to express (*a*) specification, (*β*) result.

(f) The "indirect case" phrasal, adjectival modifier of nouns or pronouns, in which construction the infinitive usually represents a genitive or a dative case, but occasionally an instrumental case.

(3) The Uninflected Infinitive and the Inflected Infinitive are each used to denote:

(a) The object with a number of verbs of double regimen.

(b) The adverbial (final) modifier of certain verbs (*1*) of motion and rest and (*2*) of giving, the uninflected infinitive in (*1*) representing the earlier (poetical) usage.

(4) Datival verbs or verbal phrases at times attract what would normally be an uninflected infinitive into an inflected infinitive, especially if in proximity to the infinitive.

(5) The presence of gerund or of gerundive in the Latin original (whether with or without a preposition) tends to the use of the inflected infinitive in Anglo-Saxon; as does, also, the presence of the Latin future participle.

(6) Analogy at times upsets original conditions.

(7) Naturally, in Late West Saxon the distinction between the two infinitives is less strictly observed than in Early West Saxon; and, in keeping with the analytic trend of the English language, the inflected infinitive gains upon the uninflected infinitive.

(8) Sporadically the Uninflected Infinitive is used to denote:

(a) The subject of verbs that normally have the inflected infinitive.

(b) The object of verbs that normally have the inflected infinitive.

(c) The predicate nominative where we should expect the inflected infinitive, as in the later members of a series of co-ordinated (inflected) infinitives.

(d) The predicative complement to *beon* (*wesan*) to denote necessity or obligation.

(e) The quasi-predicate to a dative subject, apparently but not really.

(f) Purpose where we should expect the inflected infinitive, especially in the later members of a series of co-ordinated (inflected) infinitives.

(g) Specification with adjectives.

(h) Cause with verbs.

(i) The absolute relationship with verbs.

(j) The adjectival complement of a noun or a pronoun.

(9) Sporadically the Inflected Infinitive is used to denote:

(a) The subject of verbs that normally have the uninflected infinitive.

(b) The object of verbs that normally have the uninflected infinitive.

(c) An appositive to a noun or a pronoun, when in proximity to some word usually followed by the inflected infinitive.

(d) Possibly, though not probably, the object of a preposition.

(e) The predicative complement of (aa) auxiliary verbs (except *agan*, which not infrequently has the inflected infinitive) and of (bb) *beon* (*wesan*) to express futurity or purpose.

(f) The quasi-predicate of (aa) an accusative subject; and of (bb) a dative subject, apparently but not really.

(g) Purpose where we should expect an uninflected infinitive, as in a series of co-ordinated (uninflected) infinitives.

(h) Cause with verbs.

(i) Specification with verbs.

6. As to the Position of the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, pre-position is the commoner (1) with *beon* (*wesan*) when denoting necessity and active in sense; (2) in the absolute use; and (3) in dependent clauses. In other uses, post-position is the commoner. At times, the position of the infinitive in the Latin original is a determining factor; oftener, as already indicated, the subordinate nature of the Anglo-Saxon clause is a determining factor; but not infrequently each of these factors is ignored. At times, the position of the infinitive seems to be determined by the exigencies of the meter; at any rate, pre-position is relatively more frequent in the poetry than in the prose. As stated in 4, proximity to datival verbs and verbal phrases is favorable to attraction, and tends to cause the infinitive to be inflected.

7. As to Origin, the active infinitive in Anglo-Saxon is in some uses (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

#### A. NATIVE.

(1) In the following uses the infinitive appears to be a native English idiom:—

##### I. SUBSTANTIVAL:

(a) Subjective, uninflected and inflected, with active verbs.

(b) Objective with active verbs, as indicated below:

Group of Verbs:	Followed by Uninfl. Inf. Only:	Followed by Infl. Inf. Only:	Followed by Uninfl. and Infl. Inf.:
(aa) Commanding:	{ <i>hatan</i> . <sup>1</sup>	{ <i>gedihtan</i> .	{ <i>bebeodan</i> , <i>beodan</i> , <i>be-</i> <i>werian</i> , <i>biddan</i> , <i>for-</i> <i>beodan</i> , <i>gehatan</i> .
(bb) Causing and Permitting:	{ <i>lætan</i> . <sup>2</sup>	{ <i>liefan</i> , <i>lofan</i> .	{ <i>aliefan</i> , <i>geðafian</i> , <i>sellan</i> .
(cc) Sense Percep- tion:	{ <i>gehieran</i> , <i>geseon</i> , <i>hie-</i> <i>ran</i> , <i>ofseon</i> , <i>seon</i> .	{ See the long list on p. 187.	{ In the main: see the list on pp. 44 and 189.
(dd) Mental Per- ception:	{ In the main: <i>gefrig-</i> <i>nan</i> , <i>gehogian</i> , <i>hogian</i> , <i>tweogan</i> [ <i>hweon</i> ] (?).		
(ee) Beginning, Delaying, Ceasing:	{	{	{ <i>fon</i> , <sup>3</sup> <i>forlætan</i> , and the compounds of <i>ginnan</i> , in the main.
(ff) Inclination and Will:	{ In part: <i>behealdan</i> , <sup>4</sup> <i>onmedan</i> .	{ In the main: see the list on pp. 37 and 188.	{ In the main: see the list on pp. 190- 192.
(gg) Other Verbs:		<i>habban</i> in part.	

(c) Predicate nominative, in part, normally inflected.  
(d) Appositive, in part, normally uninflected.

## II. PREDICATIVE (OR MORE VERBAL):

- (a) With auxiliary verbs, uninflected save in a few sporadic cases.  
(b) With verbs of motion and of rest, uninflected.  
(c) With (*w*)*uton*, in the main, uninflected.  
(d) With accusative subject, as object, uninflected save in a few sporadic instances, after (aa) verbs of commanding: *bebeodan*, *biddan*, *hatan*; (bb) verbs of causing and permitting: *lætan* and its compounds, *alætan* and *forlætan*; (cc) verbs of sense perception: *gehieran*, *geseon*, *hieran*, *ofseon*, *seon*; and (dd) verbs of mental perception: *afindan*, *findan*, *gefrignan*, *gehyhtan*, *gemetan*, *gemittan*, *gewitan*, *onfindan*, *witan*.  
(e) With accusative subject, as object, inflected, after this verb of mental perception, *tæcan*. [The inflected infinitive with accusative subject is found once each after *findan* and *gereccan*, in *Ælfric*.]  
(f) With apparent but not real dative subject, uninflected and inflected.

## III. ADVERBIAL:

- (a) With Verbs:  
(aa) Final, uninflected, after verbs of motion and of rest.  
(bb) Absolute, inflected; possibly, also, the sporadic uninflected infinitive.  
(cc) Causal, uninflected and inflected, in part.  
(dd) Consecutive, inflected, in the main, with both active and passive verbs.  
(b) With Adjectives:  
(aa) Specificatory, normally inflected, except when the infinitive is clearly genitival in function:  
(bb) Consecutive, habitually inflected.

<sup>1</sup> Indeterminable: *abiddan*.<sup>2</sup> Indeterminable: *ablinnan*, *geswiccan*.<sup>3</sup> Indeterminable: *don*, *forgiefan*.<sup>4</sup> Indeterminable: *cunnian*, *gegiernian*.

## IV. ADJECTIVAL:

(a) With noun or pronoun, habitually inflected, except, possibly, when the inflected infinitive is equivalent to a genitive phrase or when the infinitive is used strictly as a Latin gerundive (see Chapter XIII, Note 2, p. 182).

(2) The grounds of the foregoing statement as to which uses of the infinitive are native to Anglo-Saxon are briefly these: (1) that these uses are, in general, found in the poems and in the more original prose; (2) that, in the Anglo-Saxon translation from the Latin, no dominant influence of the original can be demonstrated; and (3) that what we know of these uses in the kindred Germanic languages tends to support the theory that these uses are native in Anglo-Saxon.

## B. FOREIGN (LATIN).

(3) In the following uses, on the other hand, the infinitive appears to be borrowed from the Latin:—

## I. SUBSTANTIVAL:

(a) Subjective, uninflected and inflected, with passive verbs.

(b) Objective, with active verbs, as indicated below:

Group of Verbs:	Followed by Uninfl. Inf. Only:	Followed by Infl. Only:	Inf.	Followed by Uninfl. and Infl. Inf.:
(aa) Commanding:				
(bb) Causing and Permitting:	{	{		{
(cc) Sense Perception:	{	{		{
(dd) Mental Perception:	{ In part: <i>geteon</i> .	{		{ Only in part: <i>geleornian</i> ; see p. 189.
(ee) Beginning, Delaying, Ceasing:	{ <i>blinnan</i> , <i>forieldan</i> , <i>ginnan</i> .	{ In the main: see the list on pp. 37 and 187.	{	{ <i>fon</i> , <i>forlætan</i> , and the compounds of <i>ginnan</i> , only in part.
(ff) Inclination and Will:	{ In part: <i>forefon</i> , <i>ge-æðmodigan</i> , <i>geðyrs-tigan</i> , <i>lystan</i> , <i>wunian</i> .	{	{	{ In part only: <i>geearnian</i> , <i>gemedemian</i> , <i>gewunian</i> ; see pp. 190-192.
(gg) Other Verbs:		<i>habban</i> in part.		

(c) Objective, uninflected and inflected, with passive verbs.

(d) Predicate nominative, in part, normally inflected.

(e) Appositive, in part, normally uninflected.

## II. PREDICATIVE (OR MORE VERBAL):

(a) With (*w*)*uton*, in part, uninflected.

(b) With accusative subject, as object, uninflected except sporadically, after (aa) verbs of commanding: *forbeodan*; (bb) verbs of causing and permitting: *biegan* [began], *don*, *gedon*, *geðāfian*, *geðolian*, *geunnan*, *niedan*; (cc) verbs of sense perception: <sup>1</sup> *gefelan*, *gehawian*, *sceawian*; (dd) verbs of mental perception: <sup>2</sup> *æteawan*, *eowan*, *gecyðan*, *gehatan*, *geliefan*, *gemunan*, *getriewan*, *læran*,

<sup>1</sup> The origin is indeterminable after *behealdan*.

<sup>2</sup> The origin is indeterminable after *geacsian* and *taligan*; and after *habban* and *lodelan*, of "other verbs."

*ongietan, tellan, wenan*; and (*ee*) verbs of declaring: *cweðan, foresecgan, ondettan, secgan*.

(*c*) With accusative subject, as object, inflected, after (*aa*) verbs of causing and permitting: *don*(?); (*bb*) verbs of mental perception: *læran*; (*cc*) verbs of declaring: *foresecgan*(?); and (*dd*) in *L. 1.73*: *hyne us to syllane ðone að*.

(*d*) With accusative subject, as subject, uninflected except sporadically, with both active and passive verbs.

(*e*) With *beon* (*wesan*), inflected except sporadically, to denote necessity or obligation (in both passive and active senses); to denote futurity; and, probably, to denote purpose.

### III. ADVERBIAL:

(*a*) With Verbs:

(*aa*) Final, inflected, after verbs of whatever kind, both active and passive.

(*bb*) Final, uninflected, after verbs (*1*) of commanding and requesting and (*2*) of giving.

(*cc*) Causal, uninflected and inflected, in part.

(*dd*) Specificatory, always inflected.

(*ee*) Consecutive, inflected, in part, with both active and passive verbs.

(*b*) With Adjectives:

(*aa*) Specificatory, inflected, when the infinitive is clearly genitival in function.

### IV. ADJECTIVAL:

(*a*) With noun or pronoun, habitually inflected, when the infinitive is equivalent to a genitive phrase, and when the infinitive is strictly equivalent to a Latin gerundive (see Chapter XIII, Note 2, p. 182).

(4) The grounds of the foregoing statement as to which uses of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon are of foreign (Latin) origin are briefly these: (1) that these uses are, in general, not found in the poetry except in poems known to be based on Latin originals, and in these only sparingly; (2) that they are found very rarely in the more original prose; (3) that, in the Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin, the dominant influence of the original is demonstrated; and (4) that what we know of these uses in the kindred Germanic languages tends to support the theory that these uses in Anglo-Saxon are borrowed from the Latin.

(5) Ultimately, in Anglo-Saxon as in the Germanic languages in general, the predicative use of the infinitive with auxiliaries was objective; and the predicative use with (*w*)*uton*, with other verbs of motion, and with *beon* (*wesan*) was final.

## II. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

8. Anglo-Saxon has a compound passive infinitive, made up usually of the present active infinitive, *beon* (occasionally *wesan* or *weorðan*), plus the past participle. The strictly infinitive part of the compound is uninflected; the participle part is sometimes inflected, sometimes not.

9. This infinitive is passive in sense as well as in form.

10. Though far less frequently used than is the active infinitive, the passive infinitive is found, in Anglo-Saxon, in the following uses: —

- (1) Substantival:
  - (a) Subjective occasionally.
  - (b) Objective occasionally.
- (2) Predicative (or More Verbal):
  - (a) With auxiliary verbs frequently.
  - (b) With (*w*)*uton* occasionally.
  - (c) With accusative subject, the phrase being the object of an active transitive verb, not infrequently.
  - (d) With accusative subject, the phrase being the subject of an active verb occasionally and of a passive verb once.
- (3) Adverbial:
  - (a) With an adjective once.

11. In each of its uses, the Anglo-Saxon passive infinitive is of Latin origin. The grounds of this statement are these: (1) that these uses are, in general, unknown in the poetry except in the poems known to be based on Latin originals, and are rare even in these; (2) that they are rare in the more original prose; (3) that, in the Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin, the dominant influence of the original is demonstrated; and (4) that what we know of these constructions in the kindred Germanic languages tends to support the theory that these uses in Anglo-Saxon are borrowed from the Latin.

### III. SUBSTITUTES FOR THE INFINITIVE.

12. In course of time there were developed some Substitutes for the Infinitive in Anglo-Saxon.

(1) Gradually the nominative of the present participle came to be substituted for the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion (and occasionally of rest), *com fleogan* becoming *com fleogende*. Despite the encroachment of the present participle, the predicative infinitive, contrary to the usual statement, survived into Late West Saxon times, and is occasionally found in Ælfric.

(2) Gradually the predicate accusative of the present participle came to be used side by side with the predicate infinitive with accusative subject after verbs of sense perception, etc.

(3) The substitution of the predicate nominative of the present participle for the predicative infinitive after verbs of motion and of rest seems to have been due to these causes: the appositive use of the participle, especially of words denoting motion, with verbs of motion; the predicative use of the participle in the present and past periphrastic tenses; and the superior clarity, in such locutions, of the participle over the infinitive.

(4) The substitution of the predicate accusative of the present participle for the predicative infinitive with accusative subject was due to Latin influence.

### IV. THE INFINITIVE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

13. Despite the incompleteness of my statistics concerning the Infinitive in the Other Germanic Languages, they seem to make probable the following conclusions:—

(1) The Uses of the Infinitive, active and passive, are substantially the same in the other Germanic languages as in Anglo-Saxon, though, naturally, with some variations in the several languages, as indicated in the discussion thereof.

(2) The Differentiation between the Uninflected Infinitive and the Inflected Infinitive rests upon the same general principles as in Anglo-Saxon.

(3) The Voice of the two infinitives active in form, in the High Germanic languages, tallies substantially with that of these two forms in Anglo-Saxon.

(4) In the main, the Origin of the Constructions of the Infinitive is in substantial agreement with that of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon.

(5) The same Substitutes for the Infinitive are found as in Anglo-Saxon.

(6) The substitution of the predicate nominative of the present participle for the predicative infinitive was probably due to the same general causes as in Anglo-Saxon, but the statistics available on this point are too meager for a confident conclusion.

(7) The substitution of the predicate accusative of the present participle for the predicative infinitive in the High Germanic languages was due to Latin influence. In Gothic, owing to the closeness of the translation, the predicative participle was from the outset more common than the predicative infinitive after verbs of sense perception.





## APPENDIX A.

### STATISTICS OF THE INFINITIVE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Except in Sections VI and VII, the initial verb in the sections below is, not the infinitive, but the finite verb of the passage in question cited in the infinitive form and given in alphabetic sequence. Under each word are given all the occurrences, first, of the uninflected infinitive (= U.) and, secondly, of the inflected infinitive (= I.), first in the prose works and then in the poems, cited in each case in the approximate chronological order, except that the Minor Prose Works and the Minor Poems are given, each, in alphabetic sequence. In *Ælf. Hom.*, in *Chron.*, and in *Napier's Ad. to Th.*, the superior letters (*t*, *m*, and *b*) refer respectively to the top, the middle, and the bottom of the page; while the superior figures distinguish the several examples. In other texts, the superior letters distinguish the several examples within the same lines or verse, or larger whole (as in the Latin of *Wærf.*). The totals for each use are given at the beginning of the chapter in which the particular use is discussed and in the Synoptic Tables of Appendix C. The abbreviations for the texts are explained in the "Bibliography." For convenience, I have not distinguished *ð* and *þ*, but have uniformly used *ð*. As a rule, contractions in the texts have been expanded.

### I. The Subjective Infinitive.

#### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

The infinitive is found both uninflected and inflected.

##### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

**alefan**: see *aliefan*.

**aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *be allowable*: U. (10): *Bede* (4): 74.15 = 53.29; 74.18<sup>a, b</sup> = 53.32<sup>a, b</sup>; 78.17 = 55.28. — *Gosp.* (6): *Mk.* (3): 3.4<sup>b, c</sup>; 10.2; — *L.* (3): 6.9<sup>a, b, c</sup>. — I. (3): *Pr. Gu.* (1): xx.85. — *Mk.* (2): 3.4<sup>a</sup>; 12.14.

**alyfan**: see *aliefan*.

**anhagian**: see *onhagian*.

**aðreotan**, *weary*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Oros.* (1): 42.13 = 43.12.

**becuman**, *happen*: U. (1): Minor Prose (1): *Chad*, *Anhang* (1): 11. — I. (0).

**behofian**, *behoove*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Solil.* (1): 27.12.

**beon**, *be*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Mat.* (1): 20.23.

**beon** + an adjective (occasionally an adverb or a noun): —

— **æðryt**, *troublesome*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 2<sup>m</sup>.

— **arwiorðlicost** [-y-], *honorable*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 401.16 = 320.6 (or with adjective?).

— **betere**, *better*: U. (1): *Mk.* (1): 9.47 = 9.46. — I. (6): *Greg.* (1): 457.21 = 390.13. — *Solil.* (1): 36.8 = 0. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 3.406. — *Mat.* (1): 18.9. — *Gen.* (1): 660. — *Ps.* (1): 83.10.

— **betst**, *best*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Solil.* (2): 3.6, 7.

— **deoplic**, *difficult*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 386<sup>t</sup> (or with adjective?).

— **deorwierðe** [-u-], *precious*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 582<sup>b, 2</sup>.

— **ðyslic**, *foolish*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXVI. 325.

— **earfeð(e)**: see *earfoð(e)*.

— **earfoð(e)** [-feð(e)], *difficult*: U. (0). — I. (9): *Boeth.* (1): 127.22<sup>b</sup> = 108.13 (or with adjective?). — *Greg.* (1): 51.5 = 28.3. — *Oros.* (1): 212.30 = 0. — *Chron.* (1): 170<sup>b</sup>, 1050 D. — *Laws* (1): 455, *Gerefa*, c. 18. — *Bened.* (1): 67.1 = 126.10. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 466<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 8.15. — *Gu.* (1): 1039.

— **earfoðlic**, *difficult*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 118.7 = 101.30 (or with adjective?).

— **earfoðre**, *more difficult*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Greg.* (2): 453.12 = 384.5; 455.6 = 386.11.

\* Except of the Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs, the full tabulation of which seemed unnecessary.

- beon *earmlic, distressing*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 151.22<sup>b</sup>.  
 — eaðe [eðe, ieðe], *easy*: U. (0). — I. (5): *Boeth.* (1): 145.5 = 0. — *Chron.* (1): 239<sup>m</sup>, 1104 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 124.12 = 190.2. — *Beow.* (1): 1003 (or with adjective?). — *Ps.* (1): 76.16.  
 — eaðelicor, *easier, more easily*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 236<sup>t 2, 3</sup> (or predicative with *beon*?).  
 — eaðelicre, *easier*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Mat.* (1): 19.24.  
 — eaðere [eðre, ieðre], *easier*: U. (0). — I. (5): *Boeth.* (1): 81.13 = 0. — *Greg.* (2): 203.17, 18 = 152.14. — *Mk.* (1): 10.25. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 280.  
 — eðneðe, *equally easy*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Met.* (1): 20.168.  
 — egeslicost, *most terrible*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 297.12 (or with adjective?).  
 — eðe: see eaðe.  
 — eðre: see eað(e)re.  
 — feor, *far*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Beow.* (1): 1922(?). (Cf. *And.* 424.)  
 — fulfremedlic, *perfect*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 394<sup>t 2</sup>.  
 — gecopust, *most fit*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 275.18 = 208.11.  
 — gecynde, *natural*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Boeth.* (2): 57.21 = 0; 133.9 = 112.136.  
 — gedwolsum, *misleading*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Pref. to Gen.* 24.15.  
 — gelimplicor, *more suitably*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 216<sup>b</sup>.  
 — genoh, *enough*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Bede* (2): 350.33 = 263.30; 366.2 = 271.10 (or with adjective?). — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 444<sup>1, 2</sup>.  
 — geomorlic, *sad*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Beow.* (1): 2445.  
 — gewunelic, *customary*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 274.186; XXXVI. 100.  
 — god, *good*: U. (0). — I. (13): *Bede* (2): 2.10<sup>a, b</sup> = 0. — *Greg.* (3): 151.8<sup>b</sup> = 108.18<sup>a</sup>; 151.9<sup>a</sup> = 108.18<sup>b</sup>; 151.9<sup>b</sup> = 108.18<sup>c</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 564<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 2.18<sup>a</sup>. — *Mat.* (1): 17.4<sup>a</sup>. — *Læce.* (1): 28.41. — *Ps.* (4): 117.8<sup>a, b</sup>, 9<sup>a, b</sup>.  
 — hefig, *heavy, unpleasant*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Boeth.* (1): 127.22<sup>a</sup> = 108.13. — *Wærf.* 289.6 = 349 C<sup>1</sup>. — *Mart.* (1): 172.4 (or with adjective?).  
 — hefi(g)tyme, *troublesome*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 324<sup>b</sup> (or with adjective?). — *Wulf.* (1): 304.15<sup>b</sup>.  
 — ieðe [yðe]: see eaðe.  
 — ieðre: see eað(e)re.  
 — lang [-o-], *long*: U. (0). — I. (14): *Solil.* (1): 10.7. — *Wærf.* (3): 266.18 = 325 A; 303.1 = 365 B<sup>1</sup>; 339.11 = 409 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Wulf.* (8): 7.12; 206.29<sup>a</sup>; 211.24<sup>a, b</sup>; 217.11<sup>a</sup>; 220.6; 283.15; 306.17. — *Beow.* (1): 2093. — *Rid.* (1): 40.22.  
 — langsum [-o-], *long, tedious*: U. (0). — I. (9): *Oros.* (1): 208.21 = 209.21. — *Chron.* (1): 189<sup>m</sup>, 1058 D. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 526<sup>t</sup>; II. 328<sup>b 2</sup>, 476<sup>t</sup>, 578<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXV. 82; XXXV. 219; XXXVI. 85.  
 — langsumlic [-o-], *long, tedious*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 362<sup>b 1, 2</sup>.  
 — lað, *loathsome*: U. (0). — I. (6): *Oros.* (1): 122.16 = 0. — *Chron.* (2): 173<sup>m</sup>, 1048 E<sup>b</sup>; 181<sup>m</sup>, 1052 D<sup>d</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 2.8. — *Wulf.* (2): 257.13; 304.15<sup>a</sup>.  
 — leng, *longer*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Oros.* (1): 82.33 = 0.  
 — leofost [-ast], *dearest*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 78, *Ælfred*, c. 43.  
 — leofre, *dearer*: U. (0). — I. (6): *Greg.* (2): 217.12<sup>a, b</sup> = 164.7, 9. — *Oros.* (2): 44.14<sup>a, b</sup> = 0. — *Chr.* (1): 597. — *El.* (1): 607.  
 — long  
 — longsum  
 — longsumlic } : see lang, etc.  
 — lustbærre, *more pleasant*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 303.6 = 230.9.  
 — manfullic, *sinful*: U. (0). — I. (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 2.73 (or with adjective?).  
 — min, *mine*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Wærf.* (1): 231.17 = 281 D<sup>1</sup>. — *Mk.* (1): 10.40.  
 — nyttre, *more useful*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Boeth.* (2): 139.29, 30 = 121.9. — *Greg.* (1): 275.12 = 208.7.  
 — nyttwierðe [-y-], *useful*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 89.6 = 58.28.  
 — nyttwyrd: see nyttwierðe.  
 — pleolic, *dangerous*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Pref. to Gen.* 22.9 (or with adjective?).  
 — riht [-y-], *right, proper*: U. (0). — I. (7): *Bede* (2): 268.4 = 210.6; 398.18 = 289.11. — *Boeth.* (1): 30.10 = 0. — *Greg.* (1): 283.7 = 214.5. — *Laws* (1): 48, *Ælfred*, c. 1, § 2<sup>a</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Alex.* (1): 695; — *Chad* (1): 157.  
 — rihtlic, *right, proper*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 283.28.

- beon rihtre, *better*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Solil.* (1): 39.9.  
 — ryht: see *riht*.  
 — sar, *grievous*: U. (0). — I. (1): *And.* (1): 1689 (or with adjective?).  
 — scandlic [-o-], *disgraceful*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Oros.* (1): 48.4 = 49.4.  
 — sceamu, *shame*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Chron.* (1): 216<sup>b</sup>, 1085 E<sup>g</sup>.  
 — scondlic: see *scandlic*.  
 — sel, *better*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Bened.* (2): 10.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 16.13<sup>a, b</sup>.  
 — selest [-ost], *best*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Bened.* (1): 15.19 = 26.20. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 205.27. — *Beow.* (1): 174 (or with adjective?). — *Prayers* (1): IV. 11.  
 — selre, *better*: U. (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 144<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 101.322<sup>t 1</sup>. — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 486<sup>b 2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 144<sup>a</sup>.  
 — softe, *soft*: U. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 164<sup>t</sup>. — I. (0).  
 — sorhlic, *grievous*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Wulf.* (3): 151.22<sup>a</sup>; 241.21<sup>a, b</sup>.  
 — strang [-o-], *distressing*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* 225.13.  
 — strong: see *strang*.  
 — sweotol, *clear*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 36.16 = 41.25 (or with adjective?).  
 — treowlicre, *safer*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Minor Prose* (2): *Cato* (2): 63<sup>a, b</sup>.  
 — unacumendlic, *intolerable*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 956.  
 — unalefedlic: see *unalefedlic*.  
 — unalefedlic [-e-, -y-], *unlawful*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 16.14<sup>a</sup>. — *Wærf.* (2): 334.22, 23 = 401 D (or with adjective?).  
 — unalyfedlic: see *unalefedlic*.  
 — unaræfnedlic, *intolerable*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 133.  
 — uneaðe: see *unieðe*.  
 — ungeliefedlic, *incredible*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Oros.* (4): 74.7 = 75.8; 134.15 = 135.13; 238.2 = 0; 240.16 = 0.  
 — unieðe [uneaðe], *difficult, grievous*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Greg.* (1) 355.21 = 276.1. — *Oros.* (1): 52.8 = 53.4. — *Wærf.* (1): 112.17 = B. 142 D. — *And.* (1): 206.  
 — unríht, *wrong*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 308.18 = 372 C<sup>1</sup> (or with adjective?).  
 — waclic, *mean*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 400<sup>m</sup>.  
 — weorc, *hardship*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ju.* (1): 569 (or with noun?).  
 — weorce, *grievous*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Beow.* (1): 1419. — *And.* (1): 1659 (or with adjective?).  
 — wundorlic, *wonderful*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Wulf.* (2): 206.29<sup>b</sup>; 217.11<sup>b</sup> (or each with adjective?).  
 — wynsumere, *winsomer*: U. (0). — I. (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 1.275.  
 dafenian, *be fitting*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Solil.* (1): 32.17 = 0.  
 derian, *annoy*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 237.11 = 178.25.  
 fremian: see *fremman*.  
 fremman [fremian], *advance, help*: U. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 394<sup>m</sup>. — I. (1): *Mat.* (1): 19.10.  
 gebyrian, *be fitting, proper*: U. (7): *Gosp.* (7): *Mat.* (1): 18.33; — *L.* (6): 11.42<sup>b</sup>; 12.12; 15.32<sup>a, b</sup>; 24.26<sup>a, b</sup>; — I. (11): *Laws* (2): 446. c. 3 (with *gebyriað* for *gebyrað* by scribal error?); 477. c. 2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 492<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De N. T.* 20.30. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 245.9. — *Gosp.* (5): *Mat.* (1): 26.54<sup>b</sup>; — *Mk.* (1): 14.31; — *L.* (2): 2.49; 11.42<sup>a</sup>; — *J.* (1): 9.4. — *Wulf.* (1): 279.4.  
 gedaf(e)ni(g)an, *be fitting, proper*: U. (11): *Bede* (2): 74.22 = 54.2; 342.18 = 259.12 (or predicative with accusative subject?). — *Pr. Gu.* (3): V. 67, 68, 69. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 318<sup>m 2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 240.31; XXIII B. 261. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (2): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (2): 102.34<sup>2 2 3</sup>; — *L.* (1): 4.43. — I. (18): *Bede* (2): 2.13 = 0; 196.17 = 156.18. — *Solil.* (2): 32.16<sup>a, b</sup> = 0. — *Laws* (1): 248, VI. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 124<sup>b</sup>; 386<sup>t 2</sup>; II. 318<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (6): 228.131; 240.30; 314.127; XXIII B. 228<sup>a, b</sup>; XXX. 124. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (1): 3.444. — *Wulf.* (2): 227.22; 269.24. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 59.  
 gelician, *please*: U. (1): *L.* (1): 12.32. — I. (3): *Oros.* (2): 106.23 = 107.24; 250.19 = 0. — *Chron.* (1): 182<sup>b</sup>, 1052 C<sup>b</sup> (or appositive?).  
 gelustfullian, *delight*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 360<sup>b 2</sup>.  
 gelystan, *please*: U. (3): *Læce.* (3): 69.31<sup>a, b</sup>, 32. — I. (0).  
 genihtsumi(g)an, *suffice*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bened.* (1): 90.15 = 158.13.  
 gerisan, *befit*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Oros.* (1): 54.30 = 0. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 2.  
 geðyncan, *seem good*: U. (1): *L.* (1): 1.3. — I. (0).

geweorðan [-u-], *happen*: **U.** (1): *Gen.* (1): 1692. — **I.** (0).

gewurðan: see *geweorðan*.

helpan, *help*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXVI. 183. — *Læce.* (1): 41.12.

lician, *please*: **U.** (2): *Bede* (1): 276.12 = 214.31. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 308.32. — **I.** (4): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 43.5 = 43.4. — *Laws* (1): 46, *Ælfred*, *Intr.*, c. 49, § 10. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 308.30. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* (1): 18.293.

lystan, *please*: **U.** (61): *Bede* (2): 398.7<sup>a, b</sup> = 288.26, 27<sup>a</sup>. — *Boeth.* (8): 1.11 = 0; 39.21 = 0; 59.9 = 26.23; 78.32 = 70.93; 88.19 = 76.125; 91.8 = 78.46; 121.12, 20 = 0. — *Greg.* (1): 279.6 = 210.15. — *Oros.* (1): 50.17 = 0. — *Solil.* (11): 1.6; 14.22; 34.9; 39.1; 42.4<sup>a, b</sup>, 7<sup>a, b</sup>; 52.4; 64.12; 67.22. — *Wærf.* (12): 2.21 = 0; 18.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 160 C; 34.28 = 172 B<sup>2</sup>; 60.7 = 192 B<sup>1</sup>; 83.20 = 208 C; 86.14 = 212 A; 177.23 = B.204 B<sup>1</sup>; 182.16<sup>a, b</sup> = 221 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 209.23<sup>b</sup> = 256 B<sup>2</sup>; 246.19<sup>a</sup> = 301 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bened.* (2) 126.17, 18 = 194.2. — *Bl. Hom.* (2); 51.16; 101.20<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 220<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 356.297. — *Ælfie's Minor Prose* (8): *Ælf. Gr.* (8): 211.5, 9, 10<sup>a, b</sup>, 11, 12<sup>a, b</sup>; 214.9. — *Wulf.* (3): 141.8<sup>a, b, c</sup>. — *Læce.* (1): 49.35. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 629. — *Beow.* (1): 1793. — *Met.* (6): 9.19; 10.20; 19.16, 33, 34, 39. — **I.** (4): *Oros.* (1): 102.25 = 0. — *Solil.* (3): 14.23; 59.33<sup>a, b</sup>.

onhagian [an-], *please*: **U.** (1): *Greg.* (1): 289.16 = 218.19. — **I.** (7): *Greg.* (2): 341.13 = 264.6; 417.17 = 338.21. — *Solil.* (2): 26.7; 65.10. — *Chron.* (1): 175<sup>b</sup>, 1052 D<sup>c</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 448<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 4.37.

sc(e)amian, *shame*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (5): *Chron.* (1): 170<sup>m</sup>, 1050 D. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 200.76; 202.125; 370.100; XXIII B. 327.

ðyncan, *seem*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Greg.* (1): 177.19 = 132.17.

ðyncan + an adjective (or occasionally a noun): —

— æðryt, *troublesome*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 374<sup>b</sup>.

— dyselig, *foolish*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 94<sup>b</sup>.

— eaðre, *easier*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Solil.* (2): 21.24; 22.1.

— hefigtime, *troublesome*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Pref. to Gen.* 22.5.

— lang [-o-], *long, tiresome*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Solil.* (1): 52.17.

— langsum [-o-], *long, tiresome*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Wulf.* (1): 100.23.

— leofra, *dearer*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Wulf.* (1): 196.7.

— sceamu, *shame*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Chron.* (1): 216<sup>b</sup>, 1085 E<sup>b</sup>.

— selest [-ost], *best*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *El.* (2): 533; 1165 (or each with adjective?).

— selle, *better*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ju.* (1): 408.

— sellic [-y-], *strange*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 564 (or with adjective?). — *Wulf.* (1): 269.26.

— syllic: see *sellic*.

— wierce [-y-], *worse*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Solil.* (1): 36.7.

— wyrse: see *wierce*.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

alefan: see *aliefan*.

aliefan [-e-, -y-], *allow*: **U.** (5): *Bede* (5): 84.20 = 59.20; 278.10, 11 = 216.7, 8; 278.22 = 216.22; 280.1 = 217.1. — **I.** (29): *Boeth.* (1) 121.19<sup>a</sup> = 103.93<sup>a</sup>. — *Wærf.* (3): 39.21 = 176 A; 156.3 = B. 182 B<sup>1</sup>; 214.8 = 261 A. — *Bened.* (1): 86.6 = 154.7. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 137.15. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): II. 40<sup>m</sup>, 348<sup>b</sup>, 484<sup>b</sup>, 520<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 684. — *Gosp.* (6): *Mat.* (5): 12.2, 10, 12; 14.4; 19.3; — *Mk.* (1): 6.18. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 18.258. — *Wulf.* (8): 136.24; 210.17; 227.9, 12<sup>a, b</sup>, 13; 285.12, 13. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Nic.* (2): 476.16, 478.1. — *Gu.* (1): 1223.

alyfan: see *aliefan*.

bebeodan, *command*: **U.** (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 398<sup>b</sup> 1<sup>a, 2</sup>. — **I.** (3): *Bede* (1): 206.16 = 161.27. — *Boeth.* (2): 40.10 = 0; 40.24 = 0.

bewerian, *prohibit*: **U.** (2): *Bede* (2): 76.19 = 54.31; 78.31 = 56.9. — **I.** (0).

forgi(e)fan, *give, grant*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXIX. 134<sup>a, b</sup>.

(ge)sellan, *give, allow*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Gosp.* (2): *Mat.* (1): 13.11; — *Mk.* (1): 4.11.

læfan, *leave*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Boeth.* (1): 42.9 = 44.18.

ðencan, *consider*, + an adjective: —

— halwende, *salutary*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 479.

ðyncan, *seem, consider* (?), + an adverb: —

— wierðlicor [-u-], *worthily*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 48<sup>t</sup>.

— wurðlicor: see *wierðlicor*.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

Given in full in Chapter I, pp. 26-27.

## II. The Objective Infinitive.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

The infinitive is found both uninflected and inflected.

## 1. With Active Finite Verb.

- abiddan**, *bid, command*: U. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 422<sup>b</sup> <sup>3</sup>. — I. (0).  
**ablinnan**, *cease, desist from*: U. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 39. — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 74<sup>t</sup>.  
**adrædan**, *fear*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Mk.* (1): 9.32.  
**æteowan**, *show*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 169.9.  
**aginnan** [-y-], *begin*: U. (28): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 9.30. — *Chron.* (2): 7<sup>b</sup>, 47 F; 206<sup>m</sup>, 1070 A<sup>c</sup>. — *Laws* (2): 310, II Cnut, c. 4; 472, Grið, c. 21. — *Gosp.* (14): *Mat.* (1): 24.49; — *Mk.* (3): 6.7; 14.65<sup>a, b</sup>; — *L.* (10): 5.21; 12.45<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 14.29, 30<sup>a, b</sup>; 22.23<sup>a</sup>; 23.2<sup>a</sup>, 30. — *Wulf.* (7): 14.14<sup>a, b</sup>; 85.1; 88.17, 21; 105.18; 216.33. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Apol.* (2): 19.28, 25.9. — I. (5): *Chron.* (5): 6<sup>b</sup>, 40 F; 8<sup>b</sup>, 49 F, 116 F, 137 F; 137<sup>m</sup>, 1006 E<sup>b</sup>.  
**agynnan**: see *aginnan*.  
**alefan**: see *aliefan*.  
**ali(e)fan** [-e-, -y-], *allow*: U. (2): *Gosp.* (2): *Mat.* (1): 8.21<sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (1): 9.59. — I. (5): *Laws* (1): 30, Ælfred, Intr., c. 12<sup>b</sup> (or final?). — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Deut.* 3.25<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 102.227. — *Mat.* (1): 8.21<sup>a</sup>.  
**alifan** } see *ali(e)fan*.  
**alyfan** }  
**anbidan**, *expect*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 438, Excommunicatio VII, c. 2, § 3.  
**anforlætan**, *abandon*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 337.2 (*syngiende = syngienne?*) = 405 B.  
**anginnan** [-y-]: see *onginnan*.  
**anðracian**, *fear*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 554<sup>t</sup>.  
**aðencan**, *intend*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Beow.* (1): 2644.  
**bebeodan** [bi-], *command, order*: U. (11): *Bede* (3): 36.31<sup>a, b</sup> = 19.31; 388.20 = 283.27. — *Laws* (1): 46, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49, § 7. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 380<sup>b</sup> <sup>1, 2</sup>. — Ælfred's *Minor Prose* (2): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (2): 101.314<sup>t</sup> <sup>1, 2</sup>. — *El.* (1): 1018. — *Ju.* (2): 232; 295. — I. (16): *Bede* (2): 350.28 = 263.25 (?); 412.1 = 297.30. — *Oros.* (1): 292.27 = 293.28. — *Solil.* (1): 4.2. — *Chron.* (1): 206<sup>t</sup>, 1070 A<sup>b</sup>. — *Laws* (2): 42, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49<sup>a</sup>; 46, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49, § 9<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (2): 9.31 = 0; 23.5 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 240<sup>t</sup>; II. 316<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 25.7. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 22.203; 456.243. — *Wulf.* (2): 294.28; 296.5.  
**beginnan**, *begin*: U. (28): *Chron.* (1): 201<sup>m</sup>, 1067 D. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): II. 142<sup>m</sup>, 142<sup>b</sup>, 196<sup>b, 2</sup>, 302<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (14): 216.96; 230.186; 242.56; 248.153; 296.200; 298.203; 414.24<sup>a, b</sup>, 25, 26; 502.263; 504.296; 538.811; XXXI. 893. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De N. T.* 18.1. — *L.* (1): 7.49. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (5): 18.21, 25, 40, 74, 97. — *Wulf.* (1): 214.24. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Benediktiner-Offizium* (1): 64.29. — *Creed* (1): 37. — I. (57): *Chron.* (1): 243<sup>t</sup>, 1110 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Bened.* (2): 32.1 = 60.1; 63.2 = 118.10. — *Ælf. Hom.* (16): I. 10<sup>b</sup>, 22<sup>b</sup>, 46<sup>t</sup> <sup>2</sup>, 66<sup>b</sup> <sup>2</sup>, 152<sup>m</sup>, 170<sup>t</sup>, 258<sup>t</sup>; II. 146<sup>t</sup> <sup>2</sup>, 148<sup>m</sup>, 154<sup>m</sup>, 158<sup>m</sup>, 196<sup>b</sup>, 392<sup>t</sup>, 412<sup>b</sup>, 418<sup>t</sup>, 502<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (17): 36.184; 264.61; 530.704; XXV. 419, 609, 664; XXVI. 215; XXXI. 96, 165, 406, 535, 992; XXXV. 24, 30, 172<sup>b</sup>; XXXVII. 34, 114. — *Ælf. Hept.* (17): *De V. T.* 4.8; *De N. T.* 16.42; 17.13, 16; 17.18; 18.21; *Pref. to Gen.* 22.33; *Gen.* 8.3; 9.20; 11.6; 13.27, 31; *Num.* 3.10; *Judges* 7.19, 22; 10.6; 15.8. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (2): 7.81; 8.148. — Ælfred's *Minor Prose* (2): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (2): 102.34<sup>t</sup> <sup>4</sup>, 102.42<sup>m</sup>.  
**behatan**, *promise*: U. (0). — I. (7): *Chron.* (3): 226<sup>t</sup>, 1091 E; 236<sup>t</sup>, 1100 E<sup>b, c</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 10.11. — *Gosp.* (2): *Mat.* (1): 14.7; — *Mk.* (1): 14.11. — *Wulf.* (1): 172.14.  
**behealdan**, *take care*: U. (1): *Ex.* (1): 110 (?). — I. (0).  
**beodan**, *command*: U. (10): *Chron.* (1): 173<sup>m</sup>, 1048 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 262<sup>t</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 15.280<sup>b</sup>, 281. — *And.* (6): 780, 781<sup>a, b</sup>, 782, 783, 784. — I. (6): *Greg.* (1): 47.13 = 24.24. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 39.7. — *Laws* (1): 42, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49, § 3<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Deut.* 32.46<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 231.1.

- beoti(g)an, threaten:** U. (0). — I. (1): Minor Prose (1): *Chad* (1): 193.
- bewerian [bi-], prohibit, forbid:** U. (1): *Bede* (1): 82.24 = 58.27<sup>b</sup>. — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 80.7 = 56.32.
- bibeodan:** see *bebeodan*.
- biddan, request, demand:** U. (6): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 182<sup>m</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (3): 15.152<sup>e</sup> = 0; 15.288<sup>a, b</sup> = 217.320<sup>a, b</sup>. — Minor Prose (1): *Apol.* (1): 23.34<sup>a</sup> = 42<sup>t</sup>. — *Versuchung* (1): 9. — I. (1): *Læce.* (1): 58.27.
- biweri(g)an:** see *bewerian*.
- blinnan, cease:** U. (7): *Bede* (7): 44.2 = 25.7; 202.21 = 159.21; 338.16, 17<sup>a, b</sup> = 256.19, 20; 474.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 347.32. — I. (0).
- bodian, preach:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 344<sup>b</sup>.
- cunnian, try, attempt:** U. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 450<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).
- cyðan [+ beodan], make known:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 483, Wilhelm I, Prol.
- don, do, cause:** U. (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 214.90. — *Ps.* (1): 118.25. — I. (0).
- elcian, delay:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 282<sup>t</sup>.
- eldan:** see *ieldan*.
- findan, find, strive(?):** U. (1): *El.* 1255(?). — I. (1): *Dan.* (1): 544.
- fleon, shun:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 33.12 = 14.4.
- fon, undertake, begin:** U. (2): *Wulf.* (2): 133.14<sup>a, b</sup>. — I. (6): *Wærf.* (1): 197.6 = 240 D. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 70.345; XXXIV. 64. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Judges* 3.6 = 0; 13.1. — *Wulf.* (1): 105.33.
- forældan:** see *forieldan*.
- forbeodan, forbid, prohibit:** U. (1): *Bede* (1): 70.8 = 50.34. — I. (18): *Greg.* (1): 369.3 = 286.5. — *Laws* (1): 214 Krönungseid, Prol. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 122<sup>t</sup>, 218<sup>b</sup>; II. 308<sup>m</sup>, 534<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De V. T.* 4.43. — *Ælf. L. S.* (5): XXV. 36, 42(?), 89; XXXII., 105, 221. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (3): 1.213; 3.9; 7.115. — *Ælf. Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 242.7. — *Wulf.* (2): 200.3<sup>a, b</sup>.
- forefan, presume, undertake:** U. (1): *Laws* (1): 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 4, § 4. — I. (0).
- forgi(e)fan, grant, allow:** U. (1): *Bede* (1): 486.4 = 360.4 (or final?). — I. (0).
- forgieman [-y-], neglect:** U. (0). — I. (2): *Laws* (2): 453, *Gerefa*, Inscr., c. 3, § 1<sup>a, d</sup>.
- forgiemeleasian [-y-], neglect:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 102<sup>b</sup>.
- forgyfan:** see *forgi(e)fan*.
- forgyman:** see *forgieman*.
- forgiemeleasian:** see *forgiemeleasian*.
- forhogian, despise, neglect:** U. (2): *Bede* (1): 464.10 = 329.29. — *Wærf.* (1): 34.6 = 172 A. — I. (3): *Wærf.* (1): 180.18 = 217 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 376<sup>b, 3</sup>. — *Chr.* (1): 1288.
- forhyccgan, despise, neglect:** U. (2): *Bede* (2): 76.30<sup>a</sup>, 33 = 55.9, 12. — I. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 41.36.
- forieldan [-æ-], delay, defer:** U. (1): *Bede* (1): 440.19 = 313.2. — I. (0).
- forlætan, abandon, omit:** U. (1): *And.* (1): 802<sup>b</sup>. — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 393.28 = 310.26.
- forsacan, refuse:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 1345.
- forseon, despise, neglect:** U. (0). — I. (4): *Wærf.* (1): 180.17 = 217 B<sup>1</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 374<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 290.96. — *Wulf.* (1): 296.28.
- forwiernan, prevent, prohibit:** U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 604<sup>m, 1</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 380.249.
- gælan, hinder from:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 445.30 = 374.14.
- geceosan, choose:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 200.73.
- gedihtan, direct, order:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 10.10.
- gedyrstlæcan, presume, dare:** U. (0). — I. (8): *Bened.* (7): 15.13 = 28.3; 55.10 = 104.2; 56.18<sup>a, b</sup> = 106.9<sup>a, b</sup>; 69.19 = 132.5; 86.14 = 154.15; 106.4 = 172.12. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 392<sup>t, 2</sup>.
- geearnian, deserve, earn:** U. (5): *Bede* (2): 350.23 = 263.20; 470.9 = 345.29. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 446<sup>b, 2</sup>; II. 598<sup>m</sup>, 600<sup>b</sup>. — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 431.
- geaþmodi(g)an, deign, vouchsafe:** U. (1): *Bede* (1): 98.28 = 81.30(?). — I. (0).
- gefon, attempt, undertake, begin:** U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 148.
- gefrignan, learn by inquiry:** U. (2): *Beow.* (1): 74. — *And.* (1): 1094. — I. (0).
- gegiernian [-y-], desire:** U. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 497. — I. (0).
- gegyrnian:** see *gegiernian*.
- gehatan, order, promise:** U. (2): *Bede* (2): 144.27, 28 = 118.11. — I. (2): *Bede* (1): 316.22. = 243.6. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 181.26.
- geheran:** see *gehieran*.

- gehi(e)ran** [-e-, -y-], *hear*: **U.** (65): *Bede* (1): 330.17 = 252.4. — *Boeth.* (3): 34.3 = 0; 98.26 = 84.64; 142.26 = 0. — *Greg.* (1): 427.17 = 350.22. — *Solil.* (1): 50.6. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 41.3 = 41.4. — *Chron.* (4): 67<sup>b</sup>, 855 F; 152<sup>m</sup>, 1016 E<sup>b</sup>; 199<sup>g</sup>, 1066 E; 247<sup>c</sup>, 1116 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (6): 11.17 = 153 D; 163.15 = B. 190 B<sup>2</sup>; 186.1 = 225 C; 190.18 = 232 B; 248.6 = 304 A; 338.1<sup>b</sup> = 408 A<sup>3</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (16): 15.28; 55.26<sup>a, b</sup>; 83.7<sup>a, b</sup>; 103.19; 105.5; 107.30; 111.17<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 18<sup>a</sup>; 113.4; 117.2; 137.8; 213.26. — *Pr. Gu.* (2): II. 106 IV. 2. — *Mart.* (1): 128.23. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 284<sup>t</sup>; II. 350<sup>t</sup>, 460<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (5): 18.131; 286.62; 500.225; XXIII B. 215; XXXI. 694. — *Ælf. Hept.* (6): *Pref. to Gen.* 22.10; *Gen.* 41.15; 42.1, 2; *Ex.* 19.13; *Judges*, Epilogue, p. 265, l. 6. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 5.1. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 14.60. — *L.* (1): 19.48. — *Wulf.* (7): 237.22; 250.15; 255.5, 6<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 306.16. — *Læce.* (1): 153.9. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Apol.* (1): 22.31; *Nic.* (1): 486.1. — *El.* (1): 661. — *Gu.* (1): 1095. — *Ps.* (1): 131.6. — **I.** (0).
- gehogian**, *think, intend*: **U.** (1): *Beov.* (1): 1989. — **I.** (0).
- gehyhtan**, *hope*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Bede* (1): 164.21 = 138.1.
- gehyran**: see **gehi(e)ran**.
- gelefan**: see **geliefan**.
- geleornian**, *learn*: **U.** (1): *Bede* (1): 404.22 = 292.17. — **I.** (1): *Bede* 210.31 = 164.22.
- geliefan** [-e-, -y-], *believe, hope*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Bede* (2): 330.25<sup>a, b</sup> = 252.13.
- gelyfan**: see **geliefan**.
- gemed(e)mian** [gi-], *deign, vouchsafe*: **U.** (5): *Laws* (2): 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 3, § 2<sup>a</sup>, § 4. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 50<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXIII B. 713, 738. — **I.** (1): *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 51. [See pp. 54–55 above.]
- geman**: see **gieman**.
- gemyntan**, *intend, determine*: **U.** (5): *Chron.* (2): 22<sup>b</sup>, 616 F<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 154.127<sup>b</sup>; 502.255. — *Ex.* (1): 199. — **I.** (7): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 414<sup>t</sup>; II. 578<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 154.127<sup>a</sup>; 212.51; XXV. 769. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 24.11. — *Wulf.* (1): 277.26.
- geseon**, see: **U.** (20): *Greg.* (1): 49.25 = 26.28. — *Oros.* (1): 138.26 = 0. — *Wærf.* (2): 99.9 = B. 130 A<sup>2</sup>; 273.20 = 33 A<sup>3</sup>. — *Mart.* (1): 148.3. — *Ælf. Hom.* (6): I. 146<sup>t</sup> 1, 2<sup>a</sup>; II. 184<sup>m</sup>, 186<sup>t</sup>, 346<sup>t</sup> 4. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 112.399; 250.204. — *L.* (1): 12.55. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 16.82; 18.84. — *Læce.* (1): 97.34. — *Beov.* (2): 231; 1024. — *Rid.* (1): 57.12. — **I.** (0).
- gestihhian** [-styohhian], *determine, decide*: **U.** (1): *Bede* (1): 218.9 = 168.2. — **I.** (1): *Solil.* (1): 38.1 = 0.
- gestyohhian**: see **gestihhian**.
- geswican**, *stop, cease from*: **U.** (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXIII. 206. — *L.* (1): 5.4. — **I.** (9): *Ælf. Hom.* (5): I. 46<sup>t</sup>, 596<sup>b</sup> 3; II. 126<sup>b</sup>, 156<sup>t</sup>, 206<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXXI. 497, 1049; XXXII. 246. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Neot* (1): 64.
- geswutelian** [-sweet-], *show, explain*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Mat.* (1): 3.7.
- geteohhian**, *think, determine*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (12): *Boeth.* (4): 117.21 = 0; 127.27 = 0; 139.29<sup>a</sup> = 121.10; 143.23 = 0. — *Greg.* (3): 251.24 = 190.22; 419.13 = 340.23; 445.7 = 372.19. — *Solil.* (1): 37.5. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 10.3. — *Wærf.* (1): 54.26 = 188 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 198<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 677.
- geteon**, *determine*: **U.** (1): *Bede* (1): 332.9 = 253.1. — **I.** (0).
- getilian**, *strive for, attempt*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Solil.* (1): 35.17.
- geðafian**, *allow, permit*: **U.** (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 606. — **I.** (3): *Bede* (1): 276.31 = 215.24. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 4<sup>b</sup>, 604<sup>m</sup> 2.
- geðencan**, *think, strive*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Job*, XII (= 6.27). — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 11.
- geðristlæcan** [-y-], *presume, undertake*: **U.** (5): *Laws* (1): 46, *Ælfred*, Intr., c. 49, § 9<sup>c</sup>. — *Wærf.* (1): 207.24 = 253 A. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 277, 645, 745. — **I.** (6): *Laws* (2): 414, *Judicium Dei* VII, c. 13 A<sup>1</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 721. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 11.122. — *Wulf.* (2): 34.14, 15.
- geðrystlæcan**: see **geðristlæcan**.
- geðyrsti(g)an**, *presume, undertake*: **U.** (2): *Bede* (2): 70.16 = 51.8; 78.33<sup>a</sup> = 56.10<sup>a</sup>. — **I.** (0).
- gewil(n)ian**, *desire*: **U.** (7): *Wærf.* (1): 208.14 = 253 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 608<sup>t</sup>; II. 588<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 187. — *Gosp.* (3): *Mat.* (1): 13.17<sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (2): 15.16; 22.15. — **I.** (15): *Chron.* (1): 219<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 45, *Ælfred*, Intr., c. 49, § 3<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (7): I. 550<sup>t</sup>, 552<sup>t</sup>, 556<sup>t</sup>, 596<sup>t</sup>, 612<sup>m</sup>; II. 154<sup>b</sup> 2, 588<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 196.22; XXIII B. 183, 358; XXXVI. 159. — *Mat.* (1): 13.17<sup>a</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 18.17.

- gewunian**, *use, be wont*: **U.** (31): *Bede* (16): 62.4 = 47.13; 172.16 = 142.19; 188.30 = 152.11; 266.12 = 209.14; 272.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 212.19<sup>a, b</sup>; 336.23<sup>a, b</sup> = 255.26; 342.5 = 258.29; 364.3, 4 = 270.5<sup>a, b</sup>; 368.32 = 273.17; 386.29 = 283.2; 442.19<sup>a, b</sup> = 314.6; 442.21 = 314.9. — *Laws* (2): 38, Ælfred, *Intr.*, c. 30; 410, *Jud. Dei IV*, c. 3, § 5. — *Wærf.* (9): 4.19 = 152 A; 181.3, 4 = 217 C<sup>5</sup>; 183.4 = 221 B; 185.24 = 225 B<sup>2</sup>; 201.15 = 245 B<sup>1</sup>; 206.16 = 252 B<sup>2</sup>; 207.4 = 252 C<sup>4</sup>; 242.9 = 296 C<sup>1</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): XXIII B. 164<sup>a, b</sup>, 165; XXXIII. 177. — *I.* (8): *Greg.* (1): 273.17 = 206.14. — *Oros.* (1): 34.5 = 35.3. — *Wærf.* (3): 161.19 = B. 188 C.; 163.37 = B. 190 B<sup>5</sup>; 289.10 = 349 C<sup>2</sup>: no Latin. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 368. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 22.4. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.45.
- gieman** [-e-, -y-], *care*: **U.** (4): *Bede* (4): 364.1 = 0; 412.26 = 298.25; 442.2, 3 = 313.19, 20. — *I.* (3): *Bede* (2): 208.16 = 162.28; 362.10 = 269.16. — *Beow.* (1): 2452.
- giernan** [-y-], *desire, yearn for*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (4): *Bede* (1): 480.11 = 351.21. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 53.25. — *Pr. Gu.* (2): I. 7; II. 93.
- ginnan**, *begin*: **U.** (1): *Bede* (1): 60.23 = 46.32. — **I.** (0).
- gyman**: see *gieman*.
- gyrnan**: see *giernan*.
- habban**, *have*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (7): *Boeth.* (1): 52.27 = 52.10. — *Laws* (1): 106, *Ine*, c. 42. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 78<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Ex.* 16.23; *Judges* 3.20<sup>a</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.149. — *Mat.* (1): 20.22.
- hatan**, *command*: **U.** (1124): *Bede* (66): 36.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 19.6; 38.5 = 20.3; 40.18 = 21.21; 44.8 = 25.10; 46.5<sup>a, b</sup> = 27.19; 50.26 = 31.5; 58.19 = 0; 88.28 = 0; 90.20 = 70.20; 104.4<sup>a, b</sup> = 84.23; 104.22<sup>a, b</sup> = 85.18; 104.26, 27 = 85.26; 110.12 = 90.12; 114.12 = 92.16; 116.7, 8 = 93.12, 13; 116.17 = 93.24; 126.25 = 107.30; 136.12 = 112.25; 140.22 = 115.16; 166.6, 7 = 138.20; 166.28 = 139.16; 168.12<sup>a, b</sup> = 140.4, 5; 172.7, 8 = 142.7, 8; 188.21<sup>a, b</sup> = 152.1; 194.1, 29 = 154.20; 155.27; 196.13 = 156.14; 238.27 = 180.4; 254.5 = 202.11; 308.14 = 237.26; 326.20<sup>a</sup> = 250.12<sup>a</sup>; 344.20 = 0; 344.21, 22 = 260.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 344.34 = 260.29; 366.28 = 272.4; 388.21 = 283.29; 388.25<sup>a, b</sup> = 283.32<sup>a, b</sup>; 388.27 = 284.2; 388.33 = 284.10; 406.5 = 293.3; 416.28<sup>a, b</sup> = 300.23, 24; 418.17, 18 = 301.12, 13; 440.2<sup>a</sup> = 312.16<sup>b</sup>; 456.5 = 325.2; 458.8 = 326.2; 460.5<sup>a, b</sup> = 326.27, 28; 460.30 = 0; 470.19<sup>a, b, c</sup> = 346.6<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 470.21 = 346.8. — *Boeth.* (12): 3.3 = 0; 7.11 = 0; 37.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 41.35; 39.19 = 43.2<sup>a</sup>; 39.22 = 43.2<sup>b</sup>; 66.32, 67.1 = 61.30; 99.8 = 0; 144.30<sup>a, b, c</sup> = 0. — *Greg.* (3): 3.1 = 0; 3.2 = 0; 9.14 = 0; — *Oros.* (81): 1.19 = 0; 3.18 = 0; 5.25 = 0; 44.8 = 45.6; 44.13 = 0; 52.24<sup>a, b</sup> = 53.19; 54.31, 32 = 0; 68.10, 11, 12 = 69.8, 9; 76.31, 32 = 77.19, 20; 80.26 = 0; 84.4 = 83.34; 96.18 = 0; 108.12 = 0; 114.33 = 0; 120.33 = 121.26; 122.1 = 121.27; 126.21 = 127.23; 128.16 = 129.15; 130.17 = 131.15; 132.25 = 133.20; 148.24 = 0; 150.11 = 151.5; 156.7 = 157.3; 164.32, 33 = 165.27; 168.27 = 169.25; 174.15, 16<sup>a, b</sup> = 175.12; 186.19<sup>a, b</sup> = 187.15; 196.31 = 0; 198.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 199.30; 202.23<sup>a, b</sup> = 203.11; 212.10<sup>a, b</sup> = 213.15, 16; 218.12 = 219.12; 218.32<sup>a, b</sup> = 219.31, 32; 224.15, 16 = 225.14; 228.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 229.7; 242.17, 18 = 243.16; 242.23 = 0; 246.1 = 245.32; 246.23 = 247.26; 246.24<sup>a, b</sup> = 247.28; 246.32 = 0; 250.13 = 0; 256.4 = 257.2; 258.3 = 259.2; 260.20 = 261.19; 260.23 = 261.22; 260.30 = 261.29; 264.22 = 265.20; 266.14 = 267.13; 268.22 = 269.19; 268.28 = 269.29; 270.8 = 271.8; 270.13 = 271.13; 274.4 = 275.3; 282.16 = 0; 282.32 = 283.30; 284.7<sup>a, b</sup> = 285.7; 286.30 = 0; 288.12 = 289.8; 290.4 = 0; 290.5<sup>a, b</sup> = 291.2; 290.30 = 291.28; 290.31 = 0. — *Chron.* (58): 12<sup>t</sup>, 449 A<sup>b, c</sup>; 25<sup>m</sup>, 626 E<sup>a, b</sup>; 26<sup>m</sup>, 643 A; 28<sup>b</sup>, 650 E; 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>c</sup>; 39<sup>m</sup>, 685 E; 54<sup>m</sup>, 792 A; 90<sup>m</sup>, 897 A<sup>a</sup>; 90<sup>b</sup>, 897 A<sup>b</sup>; 91<sup>m</sup>, 897 A<sup>c</sup>; 92<sup>t</sup>, 901 A; 94<sup>t</sup>, 905 A; 96<sup>m</sup>, 913 A; 100<sup>m</sup>, 919 A; 101<sup>t</sup>, 921 A<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 103<sup>b</sup>, 922 A<sup>a</sup>; 104<sup>t</sup>, 922 A<sup>b, c</sup>; 104<sup>t</sup>, 923 A<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 104<sup>m</sup>, 924 A<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 112<sup>b</sup>, 952 D<sup>a, b</sup>; 119<sup>t</sup>, 969 E; 121<sup>m</sup>, 975 E<sup>a</sup>; 127<sup>m</sup>, 992 E; 127<sup>b</sup>, 993 E; 128<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>d</sup>; 135<sup>t</sup>, 1002 E; 136<sup>m</sup>, 1006 E<sup>a</sup>; 139<sup>m</sup>, 1009 E<sup>b</sup>; 145<sup>t</sup>, 1014 E<sup>a</sup>; 145<sup>b</sup>, 1014 E<sup>c</sup>; 146<sup>t</sup>, 1015 E<sup>a, b</sup>; 155<sup>t</sup>, 1017 E; 164<sup>b</sup>, 1046 C<sup>a</sup>; 190<sup>b</sup>, 1065 C<sup>a</sup>; 229<sup>m</sup>, 1094 E<sup>c</sup>; 231<sup>t</sup>, 1095 E<sup>a</sup>; 231<sup>m</sup>, 1095 E<sup>b</sup>; 231<sup>b</sup>, 1095 E<sup>c, d, e</sup>; 231<sup>b</sup>, 1095 E<sup>f, g</sup>; 232<sup>t</sup>, 1095 E<sup>h, i</sup>; 232<sup>m</sup>, 1096 E<sup>a, b, c</sup>. — *Laws* (2): 46, Ælfred, *Intr.*, c. 49, § 9<sup>a</sup>; 182, VI Æthelstan, c. 12, § 1. — *Wærf.* (24): 39.10, 11 = 173 D; 50.29, 30 = 185 A; 51.17, 18 = 185 A<sup>2</sup>; 60.33<sup>a</sup> = 192 B<sup>2</sup>; 123.19 = B. 154 B; 158.16 = B. 184 C; 159.14 = 186 A<sup>2</sup>; 182.10 = 220 C; 193.22 = 236 C; 195.17 = 237 C<sup>2</sup>; 198.7, 8, 9 = 241 C<sup>1, 2, 3</sup>; 201.19 = 245 B<sup>2</sup>; 201.25, 26 = 245 B<sup>4</sup>; 202.1 = 245 B<sup>5</sup>; 202.7 = 245 C<sup>1</sup>; 202.13 = 245 C<sup>2</sup>; 240.19 = 293 B<sup>2</sup>; 318.10 = 384 B. — *Bened.* (3): 15.8 = 26.19; 86.15 = 154.17; 88.18 = 156.20. — *Bl. Hom.* (20): 15.21; 95.13; 175.1; 177.2; 177.4<sup>a, b</sup>; 179.29, 30; 183.3, 16, 19, 26, 27; 187.12, 15; 189.20, 33, 35; 243.30; 247.27. — *Pr. Gu.* (2): II. 43; XX. 9. — *Mart.* (145): 4.11; 6.11<sup>a, b</sup>, 13, 14; 10.5, 16<sup>a, b</sup>; 20.1; 22.25, 26<sup>a, b</sup>; 24.19, 22, 23, 27; 26.3, 5, 24; 28.17<sup>a, b</sup>, 24, 28, 30; 30.18; 38.1; 42.7; 46.25; 54.2; 56.17; 58.6, 8, 19; 60.8; 64.22, 23, 24<sup>a</sup>; 66.10, 11<sup>a, b</sup>; 68.3; 70.18, 25, 26, 27; 78.25; 80.25; 82.8, 13; 90.13, 16; 92.4, 19, 20<sup>a, b</sup>; 96.5, 6, 21, 22; 98.23, 24; 100.23, 24; 106.5<sup>b</sup>, 16, 28; 114.10, 24, 26; 118.8, 18, 26; 120.9; 122.23, 24; 124.3, 4; 130.16; 132.6, 7, 8<sup>b</sup>; 134.1, 12; 140.5; 142.2, 3; 144.18, 24; 148.7, 15; 150.20; 152.17,



21; 154.3, 8; 156.1, 12, 13<sup>a, b</sup>; 23; 158.8, 14; 162.6; 166.15<sup>a</sup>, 17, 21; 168.4, 18; 170.27; 172.17; 174.6, 22; 178.8, 9; 188.15; 194.16; 196.14<sup>a, b</sup>, 21, 22; 198.24; 200.7, 8, 11; 202.25, 26; 204.23; 208.20; 210.6, 7; 212.6, 7; 214.7, 8, 9, 14, 30; 216.21<sup>a, b</sup>, 22, 25; 218.6, 7, 17, 23. — *Ælf. Hom.* (153): 1. 32<sup>b</sup>, 58<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 60<sup>m</sup>, 66<sup>b</sup>, 74<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 82<sup>t</sup>, 86<sup>b, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 88<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 142<sup>t</sup>, 152<sup>b</sup>, 186<sup>b</sup>, 190<sup>t</sup>, 208<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 210<sup>t</sup>, 266<sup>b, 2</sup>, 376<sup>t</sup>, 380<sup>t, 2, 3</sup>, 382<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 416<sup>t</sup>, 420<sup>t</sup>, 424<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 426<sup>t</sup>, 426<sup>m</sup>, 426<sup>b, 2</sup>, 428<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 428<sup>m</sup>, 428<sup>b, 2</sup>, 432<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 432<sup>b, 3, 4, 5, 6</sup>, 434<sup>m</sup>, 442<sup>t</sup>, 458<sup>t</sup>, 458<sup>m</sup>, 464<sup>m</sup>, 464<sup>b</sup>, 468<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 470<sup>t</sup>, 478<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 484<sup>t</sup>, 503<sup>b</sup>, 524<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 560<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 570<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 572<sup>m</sup>, 574<sup>t</sup>, 588<sup>t</sup>, 590<sup>t</sup>, 590<sup>b, 2</sup>, 592<sup>b</sup>, 594<sup>m, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 594<sup>b</sup>; II. 20<sup>t, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 40<sup>t, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6</sup>, 122<sup>b</sup>, 144<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 166<sup>t</sup>, 166<sup>m</sup>, 168<sup>t</sup>, 170<sup>b, 4</sup>, 174<sup>b</sup>, 178<sup>b, 3</sup>, 186<sup>b, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 192<sup>t</sup>, 198<sup>b, 2</sup>, 210<sup>m</sup>, 252<sup>b</sup>, 274<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 290<sup>t, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 304<sup>m</sup>, 304<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 304<sup>b, 4</sup>, 308<sup>t</sup>, 308<sup>b, 2, 3, 4</sup>, 310<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 310<sup>b, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 312<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 336<sup>t</sup>, 358<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 376<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 384<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 406<sup>b, 2</sup>, 408<sup>b, 2, 3</sup>, 422<sup>t</sup>, 422<sup>m</sup>, 422<sup>b, 2</sup>, 424<sup>t, 2, 3</sup>, 434<sup>b</sup>, 436<sup>m, 1, 2</sup>, 478<sup>b</sup>, 480<sup>m</sup>, 482<sup>m</sup>, 484<sup>t, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 484<sup>b</sup>, 486<sup>t</sup>, 488<sup>b, 2</sup>, 490<sup>t</sup>, 490<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 502<sup>m</sup>, 514<sup>b</sup>, 572<sup>t</sup>, 572<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (276): 28.74; 30.113; 36.191; 42.298; 46.363, 378; 48.389, 390, 396; 56.94; 58.126; 62.190, 191, 195, 214, 215; 68.297; 74.409; 76.438; 86.606; 96.120, 121; 100.178, 181, 182; 104.243, 249, 251, 263; 106.270; 108.300, 301, 332, 333; 110.334, 353, 363, 364; 112.369, 392, 393; 114.403, 420; 124.134; 128.183; 140.371, 374, 383; 142.410; 144.422, 423, 424; 146.450, 455; 154.112; 156.165; 160.206, 209, 211; 162.237; 174.82, 92; 178.141, 142, 143<sup>b, 2</sup>; 182.218, 219; 184.244; 186.289; 190.365; 194.418<sup>a, b</sup>; 196.9; 198.39, 69; 200.92, 101; 202.112, 113, 122, 123, 128, 129; 204.154, 168, 170; 206.182; 214.81; 216.104, 106, 117, 118, 126; 218.144; 230.169; 238.280, 291; 240.38; 242.54, 63, 66; 244.99, 111; 246.131; 252.245, 246; 254.260; 278.248; 308.8; 310.42, 43, 44, 45, 46<sup>a, b</sup>, 48, 49, 60; 312.83, 84<sup>a, b</sup>, 86, 87, 88<sup>a, b</sup>; 316.131, 152; 388.92; 390.125; 398.233; 402.317; 404.337, 345.350; 406.365, 369, 377, 378<sup>a, b</sup>; 410.430; 414.6; 416.33, 45; 418.74, 82; 422.130; 438.86; 480.135, 136, 137, 142; 484.194, 203; 488.20; 498.178, 179, 191<sup>a, b</sup>; 500.228; 502.264; 504.295; 506.316; 514.444; 534.758, 761; XXIV. 9, 29<sup>a, b</sup>, 40, 41, 47, 51, 63, 133; XXV. 24, 115, 116<sup>a, b</sup>, 117<sup>a, b</sup>, 118, 130, 380, 448, 835; XXVI. 96<sup>a, b</sup>, 162, 163; XXVII. 37, 76; XXVIII. 26, 98; XXIX. 200, 211, 230, 231, 237, 239, 241, 245, 249, 252, 253, 256, 257, 277, 283, 284, 314, 327, 328; XXX. 294, 296, 378, 409<sup>a, b</sup>, 414, 416, 421<sup>a, b</sup>, 422, 456, 458; XXXI. 116, 364, 509, 553, 656, 782, 1176, 1409; XXXII. 122, 215, 234; XXXIII. 41, 208, 264; XXXIV. 204, 211, 215, 217, 280, 308, 343<sup>a, b</sup>; XXXV. 47, 49, 136, 138, 188, 194, 195, 225<sup>a, b</sup>, 226, 227, 294, 311, 312, 324, 325, 326<sup>a, b</sup>, 335, 337; XXXVI. 117, 119, 210, 360, 366, 390, 397; XXXVII. 46, 52, 156, 157. — *Ælf. Hept.* (38): *De V. T.* 8.26; *De N. T.* 15.19, 16.16, 16.17. *Gen.* 12.18, 20.2, 27.42<sup>a</sup>, 27.45<sup>a</sup>, 37.3, 40.19, 40.22, 41.10; *Ex.* 2.5, 4.22, 5.1, 8.1, 9.7, 12.31, 15.25<sup>a</sup>, 16.33<sup>a, b</sup>, 19.23<sup>a, b</sup>, 32.24, 33.7; *Num.* 21.32, 24.10, 25.5, 31.18; *Jos.* 2.1, 2.3, 4.9, 7.2, 8.29, 10.18<sup>a, b</sup>, 10.27. — *Ælf. Minor Prose* (8): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 125.7; *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (7): 101.318<sup>b</sup>, 321<sup>t, 1</sup>, 102.35<sup>t, 1</sup>, 38<sup>t, a, 4</sup>, 41<sup>m</sup>, 42<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (10): *Mat.* (3): 18.25; 27.58; 27.64; — *Mk.* (4): 5.43<sup>b</sup>; 6.17; 8.7; 10.49; — *L.* (3): 8.55<sup>a</sup>; 18.40; 19.15. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (15): 5.132, 157; 7.187; 8.10, 76, 103, 125, 189, 210<sup>a, b</sup>, 223; 9.153<sup>a, b</sup>, 154, 341. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (27): 13.102<sup>a</sup>; 15.14; 15.77<sup>a, b</sup> = 210.68; 15.88<sup>a, b</sup> = 210.80; 15.95, 96 = 210.84; 15.118, 119<sup>a, b</sup> = 211.100<sup>a, b</sup>; 15.152<sup>a, b</sup> = 212.134; 15.153 = 212.135; 15.169 = 212.159; 15.280<sup>a</sup> = 0; 15.282 = 217.312<sup>a</sup>; 15.287<sup>a</sup> = 0; 15.287<sup>b</sup> = 217.320; 15.304 = 218.342; 16.26<sup>a, b</sup>, 230, 236<sup>a, b</sup>, 257, 278. — *Wulf.* (6): 99.8, 25; 148.20, 21; 237.1; 263.2. — *Læce.* (1): 88.7. — *Minor Prose* (50): *Alex.* (25): 151(?), 233<sup>b</sup>, 248, 252, 274, 279<sup>a, b</sup>, 282, 283, 294, 382, 383, 385, 387, 417, 457, 460, 495<sup>a</sup>, 528, 551<sup>a, b, c</sup>, 563, 598(?), 636; — *Apol.* (17): 21.3 = 39<sup>b</sup>; 21.35<sup>a</sup> = 40<sup>t</sup>; 22.17 = 40<sup>b</sup>; 26.2<sup>a</sup> = 43<sup>b</sup>; 27.10, 12<sup>a</sup>, 19, 22 = 44, 45; 28.23, 29.1 = 46<sup>t</sup>; 32.25, 26 = 49<sup>b</sup>; 33.5, 25, 26, 29 = 50; — *Benediktiner-Offizium* (1): 64.23; — *Nic.* (7): 472.2, 9, 15; 474.17; 476.24, 482.19, 514.14. — *Beow.* (18): 199; 386; 391; 674; 1036; 1054; 1115; 1116<sup>a, b</sup>; 1807; 1808; 1920; 2152; 2190; 2337; 2892; 3095; 3110. — *Gen.* (8): 960; 1060; 1856; 1859; 1867; 2455; 2628; 2666. — *Dan.* (11): 53; 126; 225; 229; 242; 511; 512; 514; 519; 521; 704. — *Chr.* (2): 253; 1375. — *El.* (25): 45<sup>a, b</sup>; 80; 104; 106; 107; 108; 109; 129; 276; 279; 510; 691; 692; 862; 864; 876; 1003; 1023; 1025; 1052; 1160; 1174; 1198; 1204. — *Ju.* (23): 142<sup>a, b</sup>; 143; 161; 187; 188; 228<sup>a, b</sup>; 231; 254; 265; 303; 309; 333; 532; 575; 577; 579; 580; 584; 603; 604; 613. — *Gu.* (3): 661; 1344; 1348. — *And.* (8): 587; 1146; 1229; 1230; 1272; 1390; 1633; 1634. — *Jud.* (1): 35. — *Met.* (5): 1.43, 73; 9.9, 24, 30. — *Ps.* (6): 50.18<sup>a, b</sup> (Cot.); 50.21 (Cot.); 54.8; 103.25; 118.138. — *Fates of Apostles* (2): 46; 69. — *Gifts* (1): 60. — *H. L.* (2): 12; 20. — *Maldon* (3): 30; 102<sup>a, b</sup>. — *S. & S.* (5): 173; 275; 277; 278; 458. — *W. C.* (1): 15. — *I.* (0).

heran: see *hieran*.

hieran [-e-, -y-], hear: *U.* (26): *Bede* (4): 190.7 = 152.18; 348.26 = 262.20; 426.3 = 305.16; 430.12 = 307.26. — *Oros.* (3): 138.18 = 139.18; 156.9 = 0; 286.7 = 287.7. — *Chron.* (7): 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>b</sup>; 64<sup>b</sup>, 851 A; 205<sup>t</sup>, 1070 E<sup>b, c</sup>; 207<sup>b</sup>, 1070 E; 245<sup>m</sup>, 1114 E<sup>d</sup>; 267<sup>m</sup>, 1140 E<sup>d</sup>. — *Wærf.* (1): 2.16 = 0. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Cato*, *Zusätze* (1): 53.21. — *Beow.* (4): 38; 273; 582; 875. — *Chr.* (1): 73. — *El.* (2): 671; 853. — *And.* (1): 1176. — *Hil.* (1): 83. — *Partridge* (1): 1. — *I.* (0).

- higian**, *strive for, be intent on*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (3): *Greg.* (1): 105.14 = 72.18. — *Wærf.* (2): 178.3<sup>a, b</sup> = **B.** 204 C<sup>2</sup>.
- hogian** [**hohgian**], *think, intend, determine*: **U.** (6): *Solil.* (1): 35.19. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXVI. 363. — *Gen.* (3): 691; 692<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Jud.* (1): 274. — **I.** (0).
- hohgian**: see **hogian**.
- hyran**: see **hieran**.
- ieldan** [e-, y-], *delay*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (5): *Bede* (3): 132.16 = 110.24; 430.33<sup>a, b</sup> = 308.13<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (1): 119.1 = **B.** 148 C<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 7.33.
- læran**, *teach*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (4): *Bede* (2): 258.8 = 204.20; 276.6<sup>b</sup> = 214.27<sup>b</sup>. — *Boeth.* (1): 79.17 = 0. — *Læce.* (1): 35.10.
- lætan**, *permit, cause*: **U.** (121): *Boeth.* (3): 38.12 = 42.53; 133.25 = 113.142; 134.31 = 114.174. — *Greg.* (2): 229.1 = 172.16; 349.12 = 270.3. — *Oros.* (3): 258.18, 19 = 0; 296.29 = 297.27. — *Chron.* (56): 28<sup>m</sup>, 648 F; 36<sup>b</sup>, 675 E<sup>a</sup>; 37<sup>t</sup>, 675 E<sup>b</sup>; 115<sup>b</sup>, 963 E<sup>a</sup>; 116<sup>t</sup>, 963 E<sup>a</sup>; 157<sup>b</sup>, 1023 C<sup>b</sup>; 158<sup>m</sup>, 1035 C; 159<sup>b</sup>, 1036 D; 162<sup>t</sup>, 1040 C<sup>a, b</sup>; 162<sup>t</sup>, 1041 C; 162<sup>b</sup>, 1043 C; 168<sup>b</sup>, 1049 C<sup>a, b</sup>; 175<sup>m</sup>, 1052 D<sup>b</sup>; 176<sup>t</sup>, 1048 E<sup>a</sup>; 178<sup>m</sup>, 1052 C<sup>a</sup>; 184<sup>m</sup>, 1053 C; 185<sup>b</sup>, 1055 D<sup>a, b</sup>; 186<sup>t</sup>, 1055 C<sup>a</sup>; 186<sup>m</sup>, 1055 C<sup>b</sup>; 192<sup>m</sup>, 1065 C<sup>d</sup>; 204<sup>b</sup>, 1071 D; 209<sup>m</sup>, 1073 D; 211<sup>b</sup>, 1076 D; 212<sup>t</sup>, 1075 E; 214<sup>b</sup>, 1079 D; 215<sup>b</sup>, 1083 E<sup>b</sup>; 216<sup>t</sup>, 1085 E<sup>a, b</sup>; 216<sup>m</sup>, 1085 E<sup>c, d</sup>; 216<sup>b</sup>, 1085 E<sup>a</sup>; 220<sup>b</sup>, 1086 E<sup>d, e</sup>; 225<sup>t</sup>, 1087 E<sup>a</sup>; 229<sup>t</sup>, 1094 E<sup>a</sup>; 233<sup>b</sup>, 1097 E<sup>b</sup>; 236<sup>m</sup>, 1100 E<sup>d, e, f</sup>; 237<sup>b</sup>, 1102 E; 243<sup>b</sup>, 1112 E<sup>a, b</sup>; 244<sup>t</sup>, 1114 E<sup>a</sup>; 246<sup>b</sup>, 1116 E<sup>a</sup>; 250<sup>t</sup>, 1121 E; 251<sup>t</sup>, 1123 E<sup>b</sup>; 253<sup>b</sup>, 1124 E<sup>a</sup>; 254<sup>t</sup>, 1124 E<sup>b</sup>; 256<sup>m</sup>, 1126 E<sup>a</sup>; 256<sup>m</sup>, 1126 E<sup>b, c</sup>; 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 E<sup>a</sup>; 265<sup>m</sup>, 1137 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Wærf.* (1): 341.36 = 416 B. — *Bened.* (1): 110.19 = 0. — *Bl. Hom.* (4): 13.9; 33.10; 33.17<sup>a</sup>; 85.2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 150<sup>b</sup>, 598<sup>m</sup>; II. 488<sup>b, 4</sup>; — *Ælf. L. S.* (8): 106.272; 128.204; 130.213; 512.417; 530.680; XXV. 239; XXXI. 523; XXXIII. 22. — *Ælf. Hept.* (3): *Ex.* 12.23; *Deut.* 32.39; *Judges* 16.18. — *Mat.* (2): 5.45; 27.26. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I.* (4): 8.155, 205, 298; 9.137. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II.* (2): 16.231; 17.29. — *Wulf.* (10): 23.4; 45.25; 110.14, 15; 111.1; 125.13; 195.9; 230.19; 271.5, 7. — *Læce.* (14): 37.36; 47.4; 80.6; 82.6; 86.27<sup>b</sup>; 88.28; 105.24; 106.9; 126.13; 138.2, 3<sup>a, b, c</sup>, 4. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Benediktiner-Offizium* (1): 74.6; — *Chad, Anhang* (1): 5. — *And.* (1): 397. — *Ps.* (1): 103.13. — *Whale* (1): 65. — **I.** (0).
- liefan**: see **liefian**.
- leornian**, *learn*: **U.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 416<sup>b</sup>. — **I.** (7): *Bede* (1): 246.7 = 194.29. — *Greg.* (2): 441.17 = 368.15; 441.28 = 368.25. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 132.242; 344.127<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (2): 1.253<sup>b</sup>, 256.
- liefan**, *allow*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (4): *Greg.* (1): 451.29 = 382.10. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 21.22. — *Mat.* (1): 19.8. — *Wulf.* (1): 174.7.
- lofan**, *praise, but here allow (?)*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Chron.* (1): 185<sup>b</sup>, 1054 D.
- lyfan**: see **liefan**.
- lystan**, *desire*: **U.** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 45.22 = 180 B<sup>1</sup>. — **I.** (0).
- murnan**, *care for, lament*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Laws* (1): 474, *Judex*, c. 3.
- mynnan**, *direct one's course to, intend*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Gu.* (1): 1062. — *And.* (1): 295.
- myntan**, *think, intend*: **U.** (17): *Bede* (1): 392.20 = 286.1. — *Wærf.* (3): 12.11 = 15 A<sup>2</sup>; 123.1 = **B.** 154 A; 254.35 = 312 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (4): 223.7, 11, 16; 225.12. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (3): 13.57, 167, 251. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 334.4. — *Beow.* (3): 713; 763; 764. — *Chr.* (1): 1058. — *Met.* (1): 26.72. — **I.** (1): *Chron.* (1): 265<sup>m</sup>, 1137 E<sup>1</sup>.
- nytan**: see **witan**.
- oferhogian**, *despise*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Laws* (2): 453, *Gerefa*, *Inscr.*, c. 3, § 1<sup>a, b</sup>.
- ofseon**, see: **U.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 184<sup>b</sup>. — **I.** (0).
- ondrædan**, *fear*: **U.** (3): *Bede* (2): 72.9<sup>b</sup> = 52.2; 326.15 = 250.8. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 552. — **I.** (8): *Greg.* (1): 49.18 = 26.23. — *Solil.* (1): 43.3. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 104<sup>b</sup>. — *Mat.* (2): 1.20; 2.22. — *Wulf.* (2): 248.14; 286.27. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 500.15<sup>m</sup>.
- onfon**, *undertake, begin*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (5): *Bede* (2): 334.4, 5 = 254.3. — *Wærf.* (1): 75.33 = 204 A. — *Bened.* (1): 14.17 = 26.1. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 10.550.
- ongietan**, *understand*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 801.
- onginnan** [an-, -y-], *begin, attempt*: **U.** (977): *Bede* (121): 24.23 = 0; 28.17 = 12.10; 34.19 = 18.18; 40.19 = 21.22; 44.10<sup>a, b, c</sup> = 25.25; 48.23 = 29.22; 48.27 = 29.31; 52.17<sup>a, b</sup> = 32.5; 54.9 = 33.8; 56.1 = 42.24; 56.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 42.25; 56.16 = 43.9; 62.6<sup>a, b, c, d</sup>, 7<sup>a, b</sup> = 47.14<sup>a, b, c, d</sup>, 15<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 62.11 = 47.19; 62.14<sup>a, b</sup> = 47.23<sup>b</sup>; 88.2 = 61.13; 98.16, 17 = 81.16; 106.19 = 86.29; 106.25 = 87.6; 106.27<sup>a, b</sup> = 87.8; 112.4 = 91.8; 118.10 = 94.26; 122.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 99.22<sup>a, b</sup>; 122.33 = 99.25; 138.25<sup>a, b</sup> = 114.13; 148.30 = 125.22; 154.34 = 129.11; 172.31 = 143.6; 174.12 = 143.19; 176.3 = 144.9; 178.19<sup>a, b</sup> = 145.31<sup>a, b</sup>; 178.28, 30 = 146.8, 9; 180.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 146.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 180.16<sup>a, b</sup> = 147.3;

180.29 = 147.17; 182.8 = 147.27; 182.30 = 148.24; 184.24, 25<sup>a, b</sup> = 149.23<sup>a, b</sup>; 184.27 = 149.24; 190.14, 15 = 152.28; 198.4, 5 = 157.5, 6; 200.12 = 158.13; 210.21 = 164.11; 242.25 = 193.3; 246.22, 23, 24 = 195.18, 19, 21; 250.10, 11<sup>a, b</sup> = 199.19<sup>a, b</sup>; 256.24 = 203.30; 258.26 = 205.13; 276.6<sup>a</sup> = 214.27<sup>a</sup>; 284.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 219.22; 286.12 = 221.9; 286.22 = 221.21; 286.23 = 221.22; 288.10 = 222.12; 290.14 = 223.19; 294.26 = 226.8; 296.18 = 226.33; 318.12 = 244.5; 326.10 = 250.3; 326.20<sup>b, c</sup> = 250.12<sup>b</sup>; 328.4, 5 = 250.27<sup>a, b</sup>; 342.12 = 259.5; 344.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 260.25; 352.21 = 264.18; 354.33, 356.1 = 265.29, 30; 358.13 = 267.11<sup>a</sup>; 362.29 = 269.33; 390.9 = 284.18; 394.1 = 286.15; 400.1 = 289.23; 400.16 = 290.7; 402.20<sup>b, c</sup> = 291.9; 406.29 = 295.4; 414.3 = 299.3; 426.2 = 305.14; 426.8<sup>b</sup> = 305.22<sup>a</sup>; 428.24 = 307.6; 428.29 = 307.11; 430.11 = 307.25; 438.4 = 311.17; 442.27 = 314.14; 444.5<sup>a, b</sup> = 314.20; 450.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 323.4<sup>a, b</sup>; 454.4 = 324.3; 454.15 = 324.15; 462.17 = 329.4; 466.22 = 331.34. — *Boeth.* (80): 3.6 = 0; 3.22 = 0; 7.17<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 8.5 = 0; 9.9, 10 = 6.48; 9.16 = 0; 9.19 = 0; 9.29 = 0; 14.5 = 22.55; 19.14 = 0; 21.1 = 0; 25.9 = 34.65; 26.22 = 0; 27.15 = 0; 33.21 = 0; 34.11 = 40.30; 39.16 = 0; 41.8 = 0; 45.5 = 46.65; 45.10<sup>a, b</sup> = 46.70; 46.2<sup>a</sup> = 0; 47.4 = 0; 48.22 = 0; 51.27 = 0; 52.16 = 51.2; 57.2 = 0; 57.12, 13 = 55.13, 14; 58.5 = 0; 60.27 = 0; 61.2 = 0; 61.23 = 0; 64.24 = 0; 65.2 = 0; 67.26 = 0; 68.7 = 0; 69.17 = 0; 70.2 = 0; 71.4 = 0; 71.10 = 0; 73.22 = 0; 74.16 = 0; 79.8 = 70.100; 82.19 = 0; 89.5 = 0; 91.2 = 78.39; 94.26 = 0; 94.29 = 81.3; 101.19 = 0; 101.26 = 0; 102.11, 12 = 0; 102.15<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 102.18 = 0; 102.25 = 0; 102.26 = 87.33; 102.28<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 104.31 = 89.34; 105.4 = 0; 107.16<sup>b</sup> = 0; 111.11 = 0; 112.3 = 0; 112.13 = 0; 115.11 = 0; 116.8 = 0; 116.13 = 0; 124.2 = 0; 125.31 = 0; 126.25 = 0; 127.2 = 107.5; 127.33 = 108.20; 135.23 = 0; 137.14 = 0; 141.10 = 0; 147.2 = 0. — *Greg.* (15): 7.18 = 0; 25.20 = 6.9; 67.3, 4<sup>a</sup> = 40.25, 26; 197.10 = 146.31; 213.8 = 160.2; 225.25, 227.1 = 170.25; 227.11<sup>a, b</sup> = 172.3; 333.1 = 256.17; 341.4<sup>a, b</sup> = 262.26; 445.27 = 374.12; 447.4 = 374.22. — *Oros.* (29): 1.3 = 0; 5.12 = 0; 28.27 = 29.26; 52.3 = 0; 56.32<sup>a, b</sup> = 59.1; 60.18 = 61.19; 60.30, 31 = 0; 62.2 = 63.4; 74.9 = 75.9; 94.34 = 0; 106.6 = 0; 110.6 = 111.6; 116.28 = 0; 124.30 = 125.27; 142.1 = 141.33; 144.30 = 145.30; 160.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 164.25 = 0; 182.7 = 183.6; 204.24 = 205.24; 218.14 = 219.15; 222.25 = 223.26; 232.17 = 233.17; 252.11 = 0; 262.16 = 263.17; 288.1 = 0. — *Solil.* (1): 10.6. — *Pr. Ps.* (2): 3.4 = 3.6; 31.3. — *Chron.* (6): 20<sup>m</sup>, 597 A; 28<sup>m</sup>, 654 A; 38<sup>m</sup>, 685 A; 130<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>a</sup>; 135<sup>m</sup>, 1003 E; 175<sup>t</sup>, 1052 D<sup>a</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 306, I Cnut, c. 26, § 1. — *Wærf.* (225): 2.20<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 7.34 = 153 A<sup>a</sup>; 11.14 = 153 C<sup>a</sup>; 11.27<sup>a, b</sup> = 156 A<sup>1</sup>; 14.14 = 157 B; 14.27, 28, 15.1 = 157 C<sup>1</sup>; 16.15 = 160 A; 17.27 = 160 B<sup>a</sup>; 27.3 = 165 C<sup>2</sup>; 28.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 168 B; 31.13 = 169 A; 32.18 = 169 B<sup>2</sup>; 36.18, 19, 20 = 173 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 37.6 = 173 A<sup>5</sup>; 38.4 = 173 B; 38.12 = 173 C<sup>2</sup>; 42.28 = 177 A<sup>2</sup>; 47.3, 4 = 180 C<sup>1, 2</sup>; 53.24 = 188 A; 58.21, 22 = 189 C<sup>3, 4</sup>; 58.33 = 189 C<sup>8</sup>; 64.2, 3 = 193 C<sup>1</sup>; 64.23, 24<sup>a, b</sup> = 193 C<sup>2</sup>, D<sup>1</sup>; 64.34, 65.1 = 196 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 65.10 = 196 A<sup>3</sup>; 68.27 = 197 B<sup>2</sup>; 69.1 = 197 B<sup>3</sup>; 69.18 = 197 C; 72.29 = 201 A; 73.21 = 201 B<sup>1</sup>; 73.25 = 201 B<sup>2</sup>; 74.4 = 201 B<sup>4</sup>; 75.6 = 201 C; 84.10 = 209 A<sup>4</sup>; 84.18 = 209 A<sup>5</sup>; 88.27 = 212 C<sup>2</sup>; 89.3, 4 = 212 C<sup>4</sup>; 89.18 = 213 A; 97.10 = B. 128 A; 99.7 = B. 130 A<sup>1</sup>; 100.19<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 132 B<sup>1</sup>; 102.4 = B. 132 C<sup>1</sup>; 104.11 = B. 136 A; 104.27<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 136 A<sup>2</sup>; 104.29 = B. 136 A<sup>3</sup>; 106.33 = B. 138 A; 111.2<sup>b</sup>, 3<sup>a</sup> = B. 140 C<sup>2, 3</sup>; 111.7 = B. 140 C<sup>3</sup>; 111.20 = B. 142 A; 113.11 = B. 144 A<sup>3</sup>; 114.8 = B. 144 C<sup>3</sup>; 115.33 = B. 146 B; 117.13, 14 = B. 148 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 118.28, 29 = B. 148 B<sup>3, 4</sup>; 123.31<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 154 C<sup>2, 3</sup>; 126.8, 9 = B. 156 C; 130.4<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 160 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 130.28 = B. 160 C<sup>1</sup>; 143.10 = B. 170 C; 144.5, 6 = B. 172 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 144.13<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 172 A<sup>3, 4</sup>; 145.17<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 172 C<sup>2, 3</sup>; 156.15, 16 = B. 182 C<sup>1, 2</sup>; 163.19 = B. 190 B<sup>1</sup>; 164.2<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 190 B<sup>2</sup>; 164.14 = B. 190 C<sup>1</sup>; 164.18 = B. 190 C<sup>4</sup>; 165.17 = B. 192 B<sup>1</sup>; 165.20<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 192 B<sup>2</sup>; 168.9<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 194 D; 196 A<sup>1</sup>; 168.22 = B. 196 A<sup>2</sup>; 181.1, 2, 3 = 217 C<sup>2, 3, 4</sup>; 183.11<sup>a, b</sup>, 12<sup>a, b</sup> = 221 C<sup>1, 2, 3</sup>; 184.5 = 224 B<sup>3</sup>; 184.11 = 224 B<sup>4</sup>; 184.16 = 224 C<sup>1</sup>; 184.18 = 224 C<sup>2</sup>; 185.2 = 225 A<sup>3</sup>; 185.7<sup>a, b</sup> = 225 A<sup>5</sup>; 187.22 = 228 C; 188.24 = 229 B<sup>2</sup>; 189.9 = 229 C; 192.22 = 233 D; 195.4 = 237 B<sup>3</sup>; 200.12, 13 = 244 C<sup>2, 3</sup>; 200.20<sup>a, b</sup> = 244 D; 200.27 = 245 A<sup>1</sup>; 200.29<sup>a, b</sup> = 245 A<sup>2</sup>; 206.28 = 252 C<sup>2</sup>; 207.3 = 252 C<sup>3</sup>; 207.6 = 252 C<sup>5</sup>; 207.10 = 252 C<sup>8</sup>; 211.12 = 257 B<sup>1</sup>; 211.15 = 257 B<sup>2</sup>; 211.16 = 257 C<sup>1</sup>; 213.22 = 260 D; 214.17 = 261 B; 216.14<sup>a, b</sup> = 264 B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 216.21<sup>a, b</sup>, 22 = 264 C<sup>1, 2, 3</sup>; 219.6 = 268 A<sup>1</sup>; 219.10<sup>a, b</sup> = 268 A<sup>3</sup>; 221.23 = 269 D<sup>1</sup>; 221.26, 27 = 272 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 222.22, 28 = 272 B<sup>3</sup>, C<sup>2</sup>; 224.25 = 273 C<sup>2</sup>; 228.18 = 280 B<sup>1</sup>; 229.1 = 280 B<sup>2</sup>; 229.20 = 281 A; 232.14 = 284 B; 234.12 = 285 C<sup>1</sup>; 237.2 = 289 A<sup>2</sup>; 237.23<sup>a, b</sup>, 24 = 289 C<sup>1, 2</sup>; 238.4, 5 = 289 C<sup>3, 4</sup>; 240.12 = 293 B<sup>1</sup>; 242.14 = 296 C<sup>2</sup>; 243.4 = 297 A<sup>1</sup>; 244.8 = 297 C<sup>2</sup>; 245.6 = 300 B<sup>3</sup>; 250.28 = 308 A<sup>2</sup>; 251.18 = 308 B; 255.1 = 312 B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 255.11 = 312 B<sup>3</sup>; 266.28 = 325 B; 276.23<sup>a, b</sup> = 337 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 278.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 340 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 278.11 = 340 A<sup>3</sup>; 279.9 = 340 C; 282.3 = 341 D; 285.9 = 345 C; 286.22, 23 = 348 B<sup>2, 3</sup>; 288.13<sup>a, b</sup> = 349 A<sup>2, 3</sup>; 289.15<sup>a, b</sup> = 349 C<sup>1</sup>; 290.7 = 349 D<sup>2</sup>; 290.9 = 352 A<sup>1</sup>; 292.14 = 353 A; 293.11 = 353 C; 298.18 = 360 C; 298.29 = 360 D; 299.4 = 361 A; 308.20 = 372 C<sup>2</sup>; 308.22 = 372 C<sup>3</sup>; 309.1 = 372 C<sup>4</sup>; 312.3, 4 = 376 C<sup>1, 2</sup>; 314.8 = 380 A<sup>2</sup>; 317.2 = 381 C<sup>1</sup>; 320.12 = 385 B; 321.27 = 388 B<sup>2</sup>; 322.4 = 388 B<sup>3</sup>; 324.20 = 392 A<sup>1</sup>; 324.22, 23<sup>a, b</sup> = 392 A<sup>3, 4</sup>; 325.2 = 392 A<sup>5</sup>; 325.7 = 392 B<sup>1</sup>; 325.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 392 B<sup>2, 3</sup>; 325.29 = 392 C<sup>2</sup>;

325.30, 31<sup>a, b, c, d</sup> = 392 C<sup>a, 4, 5, 6, 7</sup>; 326.12<sup>b</sup>, 13 = 393 A<sup>2</sup>; 331.5 = 397 D; 341.31 = 416 A; 342.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 416 C<sup>1</sup>; 343.34 = 417 C<sup>2</sup>; 344.23<sup>a</sup> = 420 B<sup>1</sup>; 345.18, 19<sup>a, b</sup> = 421 A<sup>3, 4</sup>; 345.20<sup>a, b</sup> = 421 A<sup>5</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (24): 55.10<sup>a, b</sup>; 105.6; 113.15, 31<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 143.8; 149.29, 33; 151.1, 4; 157.18; 165.22; 187.28; 199.19<sup>a</sup>; 201.22; 221.6, 8, 12<sup>a, b</sup>, 18; 229.22; 239.19. — *Pr. Gu.* (10): II. 100, 105; III. 17, 34; IV. 27, 34; XIV. 16; XVII. 13; XX. 33, 45. — *Mart.* (21): 10.24; 26.23; 34.12; 70.16, 24; 80.22; 85.7; 92.27; 98.13; 106.4<sup>a</sup>, 25; 120.11; 140.22; 152.27, 28; 154.15; 170.6; 178.15; 206.22; 214.6. — *Ælf. Hom.* (32): I. 48<sup>t</sup>, 50<sup>t</sup>, 62<sup>b</sup>, 380<sup>m</sup>, 414<sup>t 2, 3, 4, 5</sup>, 428<sup>t 2</sup>, 534<sup>b</sup>; II. 8<sup>t</sup>, 32<sup>b 2</sup>, 130<sup>m 2</sup>, 138<sup>b</sup>, 140<sup>m</sup>, 170<sup>b</sup>, 294<sup>b</sup>, 296<sup>t 1, 2</sup>, 298<sup>b</sup>, 300<sup>m 2</sup>, 300<sup>b</sup>, 414<sup>b</sup>, 472<sup>b</sup>, 488<sup>b 2</sup>, 494<sup>m 1, 2</sup>, 494<sup>b</sup>, 496<sup>t</sup>, 502<sup>b 2</sup>, 514<sup>b 2</sup>, 518<sup>t 2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (47): 32.118; 34.153; 118.48; 49, 51; 124.118; 252.247; 426.199; 488.27; 520.546; XXXIII B. 65, 190, 234, 243, 249, 265, 275, 322, 323<sup>a, b</sup>, 326, 402, 405, 407, 410, 411, 420, 427, 428<sup>a, b</sup>, 508, 532, 615, 687<sup>a, b</sup>, 723, 736, 748, 767, 777; XXVIII. 92; XXXI. 157, 1365; XXXIII. 178, 202, 239, 311. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Gen.* 4.26; *Deut.* 3.23<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (21): 102.35<sup>b 2</sup>. — *Gosp.* (55): *Mat.* (12): 4.2, 17<sup>a, b</sup>; 11.7<sup>a</sup>, 20; 12.1; 16.21<sup>a</sup>; 20.11; 22.15; 26.37<sup>a, b</sup>; 27.3; — *Mk.* (27): 1.45<sup>a, b</sup>; 2.23; 4.1; 5.18, 20; 6.2, 34; 8.11, 31<sup>a</sup>, 32; 10.32, 47<sup>a, b</sup>; 11.15; 12.1; 13.5; 14.19<sup>a, b</sup>, 33<sup>a, b</sup>, 69, 71<sup>a, b</sup>, 72; 15.8, 18; — *L.* (16): 3.8; 4.21; 7.15, 38; 11.38<sup>a, b</sup>, 53<sup>a, b</sup>, 54; 13.26; 14.18; 15.24, 28; 19.37, 45; 20.9. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (17): 10.62, 100, 159, 566, 567; 13.102<sup>b</sup>, 103, 113, 259; 18.152, 160, 225, 271, 311, 330, 331, 345. — *Wulf.* (23): 9.5<sup>a, b</sup>; 44.26, 27; 141.3<sup>a, b</sup>, 20; 191.9; 206.19; 210.15; 213.11, 13; 217.29; 222.2; 236.2, 3; 237.20; 250.17; 255.9; 262.11, 12; 277.18<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Læce.* (3): 14.27; 60.31; 63.36. — *Minor Prose* (14): *Alex.* (5): 535, 536, 640, 641, 728; — *Apol.* (6): 23.35 = 42<sup>t</sup>, 27.12<sup>b</sup>, 14, 28 = 45; 31.28<sup>a, b</sup> = 48<sup>b</sup>; — *Chad.* (1): 1; — *Neot* (2): 58, 59. — *Beow.* (19): 101; 244; 872; 873; 874; 1607; 1985; 2045; 2046; 2112; 2211; 2312; 2313; 2702; 2713<sup>a, b</sup>; 2791; 2879; 3144. — *Gen.* (58): 21; 30; 31<sup>a, b</sup>; 77; 259; 262; 275; 294; 298; 408; 442; 495; 590; 592; 649; 650; 706; 717; 863; 966; 995; 1057; 1118; 1132; 1171; 1228; 1239; 1249; 1302; 1316; 1355; 1413; 1498; 1556; 1557; 1594; 1681; 1823; 1880<sup>a, b</sup>; 1881<sup>a, b</sup>; 1899; 2238; 2241; 2282; 2405; 2635; 2716; 2750; 2811; 2846; 2860; 2866; 2887; 2901<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ex.* (1): 584. — *Dan.* (7): 49; 170; 190; 468; 539; 599; 750. — *Chr.* (2): 1363; 1414. — *El.* (21): 157; 199; 226; 287; 303; 306; 311; 385; 559; 560; 570; 697; 828; 849; 900; 1067; 1093; 1148; 1156; 1163; 1205. — *Ju.* (14): 27; 270; 271; 291; 298; 346; 537<sup>a, b</sup>; 538; 595; 630; 631; 638<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Gu.* (16): 73; 261; 533; 542; 699; 975; 983; 1035; 1083; 1088; 1089<sup>a, b</sup>; 1119; 1130; 1175; 1214. — *And.* (20): 13; 353; 428; 450; 469; 671; 764; 850; 1022; 1127; 1128; 1170; 1315; 1342; 1419; 1556; 1607; 1608; 1698<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Met.* (12): 1.60; 7.1; 8.3; 13.29<sup>a, b</sup>; 14.12; 25.50, 69; 26.73, 80, 84; 28.77. — *Ps.* (25): 68.27; 75.5; 76.1, 6, 9, 10; 77.2, 11; 97.8<sup>t</sup>; 101.6; 104.21, 24; 105.12, 14, 17<sup>a, b</sup>, 27<sup>a, b</sup>; 106.36; 118.145, 148, 161; 128.2; 138.16; 146.7. — *Rid.* (5): 10.4; 23.8; 29.11; 32.9; 55.10. — *Jud.* (6): 42; 81; 270<sup>a, b</sup>; 271; 281. — *Ph.* (3): 188; 189; 225. — *Cal.* (1): 73. — *Charms* (2): VI. 13, 14. — *Doomsday* (1): 97. — *D. R.* (6): 20; 27; 65; 67; 73; 116. — *Fallen Angels* (2): 78; 248. — *F. I.* (4): 33; 44; 60; 76. — *Gnomic Sayings* (1): 52. — *Har.* (2): 279; 280. — *Höl.* (2): 2; 36. — *H. L.* (1): 25. — *Maldon* (8): 12; 17; 86; 90; 91; 228; 261; 265. — *Pharao* (1): 3. — *Prayers* (1): III. 16. — *S. & S.* (1): 451. — *Song of Runes* (2): 92<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Versuchung* (2): 67<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Wald.* A (1): 27. — *W. C.* (1): 11. — *I.* (37): *Boeth.* (1): 127.23 = 108.16. — *Greg.* (1): 423.8 = 344.29. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 48.7; — *Chron.* (2): 30<sup>t</sup>, 656 E<sup>a</sup>; 147<sup>t</sup>, 1016 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 62.5 = 116.9. — *Ælf. Hom.* (13): I. 50<sup>m</sup>, 140<sup>m</sup>, 150<sup>t</sup>, 314<sup>t</sup>, 448<sup>b</sup>; II. 78<sup>b</sup>, 128<sup>b</sup>, 160<sup>t</sup>, 178<sup>b 4</sup>, 486<sup>b 1, 2</sup>, 488<sup>b 3</sup>, 488<sup>b 7</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 228.154; 328.112; 538.820; XXVI. 45. — *Ælf. Hept.* (3): *Jos.* 3.7, 16; *Judges* 13.5. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (5): *Ælf. Gr.* (3): 212.3, 4, 7; — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (2): 102.31<sup>b</sup>, 37<sup>b 2</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 12.143, 146. — *Wulf.* (3): 195.1; 199.8; 200.1. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 476.25.

ongynnann: see onginnan.

onmedan, presume, undertake: U. (1): *Rid.* (1): 56.16. — I. (0).

onscunian, shun, fear: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 346<sup>t 2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 8.26.

reccan, care (for): U. (0). — I. (2): *Laus* (1): 40, *Ælfred, Intr.*, c. 40. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 440.122.

secan, seek: U. (5): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 167.2. — *Gosp.* (2): *Mat.* (1): 12.46; — *L.* (1): 20.19. — *Wald.* A. (2): 18; 20. — I. (11): *Pr. Ps.* (2): 34.4; 36.32. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 2.15. — *Gosp.* (8): *L.* (1): 6.19; — *J.* (7): 5.18; 7.19, 20, 25, 30; 8.37, 40.

sellan [-ie-, -y-], grant, allow: U. (1): *Beow.* (1): 3056. — I. (1): *Schöpf.* (1): 30.

seon, see: U. (2): *Rid.* (2): 14.1; 53.1. — I. (0).

siellan: see sellan.

sirwan, plot: U. (0). — I. (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 31.34 = 48<sup>b 2</sup>.

smeagan [smean], think upon, meditate: U. (0). — I. (3): *Greg.* (1): 55.22 = 32.10. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 18.12 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 146<sup>t</sup>.

smean: see *smeagan*.

swerian, *swear*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Chron.* (2): 268<sup>m</sup>, 1140 E<sup>f</sup> &.

syllan: see *sellan*.

tacan, *take*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Chron.* (1): 263<sup>m</sup>, 1135 E.

tæcan, *teach, direct*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Greg.* (1): 165.10 = 120.12. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 216<sup>b</sup>.

tellan, *account, consider*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 158<sup>b</sup>.

teohhian: see *tih(h)ian*.

teolian: see *tilian*.

teon, *accuse*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 102, Ine B, c. 30.

tih(h)ian [tioh(h)-, teoh(h)-], *think, determine*: U. (0). — I. (8): *Boeth.* (3): 51.6 = 51.15<sup>b</sup>; 116.12 = 0; 143.19 = 0. — *Greg.* (3): 305.4 = 232.12; 305.5 = 232.13; 445.8 = 372.20. — *Solil.* (1): 36.12 = 0. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 39.16 = 39.15.

tiohhian: see *tih(h)ian*.

tilian [teolian], *strive after, attempt*: U. (8): *Bede* (1): 230.26 = 175.23. — *Greg.* (1): 233.22 = 176.20. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 25.5. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 165.31<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 403<sup>a</sup>. — *Met.* (2): 10.22; 11.79. — I. (28): *Bede* (4): 210.32 = 164.23; 372.12 = 275.2; 372.14 = 275.4; 486.13 = 8.17. — *Boeth.* (5): 23.1<sup>b</sup> = 32.22; 31.16 = 37.60; 43.15 = 45.33; 133.14 = 0; 135.5 = 114.180. — *Greg.* (11): 61.18 = 36.20; 273.3<sup>a</sup> = 206.2; 363.1 = 280.19; 363.10 = 282.1; 393.26 = 310.24; 419.24 = 342.8; 423.2, 3 = 344.26; 453.23 = 384.18; 453.26 = 384.21; 463.5 = 398.11. — *Pr. Ps.* (4): 25.3; 34.14<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 48.12. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 219.18. — *Mart.* (1): 104.11. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 686. — Minor Prose (1): *Alex.* (1): 131.

twoegan [tweon], *doubt*: U. (1): *Bede* (1): 308.26 = 238.7. — I. (0).

ðeahti(g)an [smeagan and -], *think upon, meditate*: U. (1): *Greg.* (1): 55.22 = 32.10. — I. (0).

ðencan, *think*: U. (92): *Bede* (2): 36.8 = 19.11; 456.2 = 324.32. — *Boeth.* (3): 93.31 = 80.99; 93.32 = 80.100; 103.20 = 0. — *Greg.* (2): 55.12 = 32.2; 343.21 = 266.1. — *Oros.* (17): 44.32 = 45.30; 54.21 = 55.18; 78.30 = 79.26; 132.12 = 0; 150.12 = 151.7; 182.25 = 183.23; 200.17 = 201.9; 212.3 = 213.5; 230.2 = 0; 236.12 = 0; 242.6 = 0; 258.15 = 259.14; 258.29 = 0; 282.9<sup>b</sup> = 283.8; 286.6 = 0; 292.3 = 293.2; 292.29 = 293.29. — *Wærf.* (1): 239.6 = 292. B<sup>a</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 23.3 = 46.4. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 1059. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 48.17<sup>b</sup>. — *L.* (1): 1.1. — Minor Prose (2): *Benediktiner-Offizium* (1): 62.24; — *Cato* (1): 46. — *Beow.* (8): 355; 448; 541; 739; 800; 801; 964; 1535. — *Gen.* (5): 401; 1274; 1275; 2437; 2891. — *Ex.* (1): 51. — *Ju.* (1): 637. — *El.* (1): 296. — *Gu.* (4): 260; 274; 277; 298. — *And.* (5): 150; 151; 152; 213; 693. — *Met.* (1): 1.12. — *Ps.* (17): 61.4; 63.3; 88.22, 30; 93.20<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 102.13; 107.8; 118.91, 107, 109; 131.15; 141.3; 149.7<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 8<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>. — *Jud.* (2): 59; 208. — *Charms* (2): V. C. 16, 17. — *D. R.* (1): 121. — *Fallen Angels* (5): 183; 184; 208; 209; 364. — *Gnomie Sayings* (1): 116 (Exeter). — *L. P.* (1): II. 25. — *Maldon* (3): 258; 316; 319. — *Seaf.* (1): 52. — *Wald. B.* (2): 5; 7. — I. (34): *Boeth.* (1): 53.11 = 0. — *Greg.* (3): 11.14 = 32.6; 433.31<sup>b</sup> = 360.1; 447.17 = 376.5. — *Oros.* (5): 56.22 = 0; 212.29 = 0; 282.9<sup>a</sup> = 283.8; 292.28<sup>b</sup> = 293.29; 296.4 = 297.6. — *Solil.* (1): 42.23 = 0. — *Chron.* (5): 190<sup>b</sup>, 1065 C<sup>b</sup>; 222<sup>b</sup>, 1087 E<sup>a</sup>; 224<sup>m</sup>, 1087 E<sup>c</sup>; 229<sup>b</sup>, 1094 E<sup>d</sup>; 233<sup>m</sup>, 1097 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 206, IV Edgar, c. 1, § 2. — *Wærf.* (3): 119.9 = B. 148 C<sup>a</sup>; 252.4 = 308 C; 253.7 = 309 A<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 454<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (5): *Gen.* 27.41, 42<sup>b</sup>; 37.18, 21; 48.17<sup>a</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (2): 1.261; 5.30. — *Ps.* (1): 118.59. — *Charms* (6): V. C. 4<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, c, d, 5<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

underfon, *undertake*: U. (0). — I. (6): *Greg.* (4): 77.4 = 50.6; 161.12 = 116.25; 293.3<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 220.26. — *Wærf.* (2): 113.22 = B. 144 C; 325.10 = 392 B<sup>a</sup> (or final?).

understandan [-o-], *understand*: U. (0). — I. (1): Minor Prose (1): *Apol.* (1): 19.19.

wandian, *hesitate, be neglectful*: U. (0). — I. (6): *Chron.* (1): 178<sup>t</sup>, 1052 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 138, I Eadweard, Prol. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 554<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXXI. 699, 1036. — *Wulf.* (1): 191.6.

warenian, *shun*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 474.20 = 348.9.

weddian, *contract, agree*: U. (0). — I. (1): *L.* (1): 22.5.

wenan, *hope, expect*: U. (3): *Beow.* (1): 934. — *Met.* (1): 1.83. — *Ps.* (1): 123.4. — I. (1): *Chron.* (1): 267<sup>b</sup>, 1140 E<sup>a</sup>.

wi(e)nnan, *desist from*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 381.6 = 296.9.

wil(l)nian, *desire*: U. (45): *Bede* (14): 182.17 = 148.9; 208.9 = 162.20; 218.6 = 167.31; 234.1<sup>a</sup> = 176.29; 274.3 = 213.21; 294.23 = 226.6; 324.10 = 246.33; 358.12 = 267.9; 404.20 = 292.15; 406.14 = 294.10<sup>a</sup>; 418.28 = 301.26; 420.5<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 302.2<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 456.8 = 325.5; — *Boeth.* (9): 5.1 = 0; 14.19 = 23.22; 31.24 = 38.66; 52.19 = 52.5; 52.20 = 0; 118.10 = 0; 118.11, 12 = 0; 135.24 = 115.2. — *Greg.* (14): 11.13 = 32.5; 17.19 = 246.11; 27.5 = 6.13; 43.1 = 20.25; 49.16

= 26.21; 55.14 = 32.5; 63.20 = 38.15; 101.22<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 70.10; 129.5 = 90.15; 143.6 = 102.12; 147.22 = 106.21; 149.7 = 108.1; 241.3 = 182.5. — *Solil.* (1): 13.1. — *Pr. Ps.* (2): 13.9 = 13.4; 14.6 = 14.5. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 432<sup>b</sup> 1, 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXIII. 142. — *L.* (1): 23.8. — *Met.* (1): 29.3. — *I.* (76): *Bede* (1): 68.13 = 50.12. — *Boeth.* (26): 41.4, 5 = 0; 42.12 = 44.20; 46.2<sup>b</sup> = 46.1; 53.10 = 0; 53.12 = 0; 55.23 = 53.52; 56.4 = 53.58<sup>b</sup>; 56.19 = 54.67; 56.20 = 54.68; 92.17 = 79.70; 93.27 = 80.96; 93.29 = 0; 94.7 = 80.106; 103.15<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 0; 106.25 = 91.26; 106.31 = 91.32; 107.16<sup>a</sup> = 0; 108.5 = 0; 110.29<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 30 = 95.130; 124.11 = 105.6; 133.15 = 0; 133.17 = 0. — *Greg.* (18): 11.11 = 28.23; 25.9 = 4.8; 53.3 = 28.23; 55.18 = 32.7; 93.26 = 64.12; 145.12 = 104.17; 203.8<sup>b</sup> = 152.6; 247.15 = 186.27; 249.20<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 188.25; 327.25 = 252.29; 333.6 = 256.21; 371.21 = 288.19; 383.29 = 298.28; 399.3 = 316.20; 453.32<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 384.30; 463.36 = 400.18. — *Oros.* (1): 54.16 = 55.16. — *Solil.* (19): 2.22; 31.25; 32.20; 35.6; 37.1; 41.3; 46.7, 18, 19; 49.9; 50.3; 56.5; 57.2; 59.35; 63.15, 18, 26; 67.4, 11. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 40, Intr. = 0. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 223<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; XXXIII. 253. — *Mat.* (1): 20.28<sup>a</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 13.241. — *Minor Prose* (4): *Alex.* (3): 107, 231, 409; — *Cato* (1): 25. — *Met.* (1): 19.44.

**witan** [nytan], know [know nol]: *U.* (0). — *I.* (7): *Oros.* (1): 220.9 = 0. — *Chron.* (1): 224<sup>m</sup>, 1087 E<sup>d</sup>. — *Laws* (2): 166, V Æthelstan, Prol., 3; 180, VI Æthelstan, c. 8, § 8. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 506<sup>b</sup>. — *Gen.* (1): 243. — *Ju.* (1): 557.

**wiðcweðan**, refuse: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 516<sup>b</sup>.

**wiðsacan**, refuse: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Greg.* (1): 383.19 = 298.17.

**wunian**, use, be wont: *U.* (1): *Bede* (1): 230.23 = 175.19. — *I.* (0).

**yldan**: see *ieldan*.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

Given in full in Chapter II, pp. 59–60.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

**aginnan** [-y-], begin (1): *L.* (1): 12.45<sup>d</sup>.

**geearnian**, earn, merit (2): *Bede* (2): 372.34 = 275.21; 406.16 = 294.10<sup>b</sup>.

**gewilnian**, desire, wish (2): *Wærf.* (1): 204.4 = 249 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Mat.* (1): 20.28<sup>b</sup>.

**habban**, have (1): *L.* (1): 12.50.

**onginnan** [-y-], begin (15): *Bede* (3): 88.3 = 61.14; 128.12 = 108.18<sup>a</sup>; 358.14 = 267.11<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (11): 48.6 = 181 B; 74.3 = 201 B<sup>3</sup>; 160.12 = B. 186 C<sup>2</sup>; 175.16 = B. 202 A<sup>1</sup>; 201.6 = 245 A<sup>4</sup>; 206.14 = 252 B<sup>1</sup>; 206.24 = 252 B<sup>3</sup>; 222.13 = 272 B<sup>1</sup>; 222.27 = 272 C<sup>1</sup>; 223.7 = 272 C<sup>3</sup>; 284.23 = 345 B. — *Mk.* (1): 13.4.

**wil(l)nian**, desire, wish (2): *Bede* (1): 234.1<sup>b</sup> = 176.30. — *Greg.* (1): 302.18 = 230.1.

**witan**, know (1): *Bede* (1): 402.24 = 291.13.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

Given in full in Chapter II, p. 72.

## III. Other Substantival Uses of the Infinitive.

Given in full in Chapter III, pp. 73–78.

## IV. The Predicative Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs.

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

#### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

A few illustrative examples of the uninflected predicative infinitive with auxiliary verbs are given in Chapter IV, p. 80; and the examples of the inflected predicative infinitive are given in full in the same chapter, pp. 80–82.

### B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

#### 1. The Infinitive Made Up of "Beon" + a Past Participle.

**cunnan**, know (1): *Greg.* (1): 113.22 = 78.26.

**dear(r)**, dare (2): *Wærf.* (2): 132.17 = B. 162 A<sup>3</sup>; 232.7 = 284 A.

gewunian, be wont (4): *Bede* (3):  $172.28 = 143.3$ ;  $270.33 = 212.9$ ;  $474.14 = 348.4$ . — *Wærf.* (1):  $183.17 = 224$  A.

**magan**, *may*, *can* (269): *Bede* (36): 20.14 = 243.2; 44.34 = 27.12; 50.7 = 30.14; 68.2 = 50.2; 76.2 = 54.17; 76.26 = 55.4; 78.8 = 55.20; 80.28 = 57.18; 90.23 = 70.22; 92.6 = 71.13; 92.11 = 71.19; 114.5, 6 = 92.9, 10; 120.23 = 98.10; 186.25 = 151.3; 230.11 = 175.5; 250.12 = 199.20; 254.21 = 202.28; 254.32 = 203.5; 288.18 = 222.20; 296.30 = 227.15; 300.28, 29 = 230.6, 7<sup>b</sup>; 308.12 = 237.25; 320.26 = 245.19; 328.30 = 251.17; 328.34 = 251.19; 334.18<sup>b</sup> = 254.21; 336.20 = 255.22; 350.17 = 263.14; 366.18 = 271.26; 388.19 = 283.26; 400.26 = 290.16; 428.18 = 306.31; 442.4 = 313.21; 472.10 = 346.31. — *Boeth.* (3): 15.17 = 0; 38.10 = 42.51; 100.31 = 85.96. — *Greg.* (6): 85.20 = 56.27; 87.20 = 58.18; 147.14 = 106.13; 153.23 = 112.2; 225.22 = 170.21; 393.10 = 310.11. — *Oros.* (1): 238.4 = 0. — *Chron.* (1): 229<sup>a</sup>, 1094 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (103): 13.7, 8 = 156 C<sup>2</sup>; 40.17 = 176 B; 54.30 = 188 B<sup>3</sup>; 55.2 = 188 B<sup>4</sup>; 60.20 = 192 B<sup>2</sup>; 60.33<sup>b</sup> = 192 B<sup>4</sup>; 65.19 = 196 B; 78.1 = 204 C; 84.2 = 209 A<sup>2</sup>; 90.23 = 213 B<sup>2</sup>; 90.26 = 213 C<sup>1</sup>; 91.1 = 213 C<sup>2</sup>; 100.21 = B. 132 B<sup>2</sup>; 111.2<sup>a</sup> = B. 140 C<sup>1</sup>; 118.25 = B. 148 B<sup>2</sup>; 123.4 = B. 154 A<sup>2</sup>; 129.5 = B. 158 D<sup>1</sup>; 131.27 = B. 160 D; 134.28 = B. 164 A; 139.24 = B. 166 D<sup>1</sup>; 139.26 = B. 166 D<sup>2</sup>; 145.11 = B. 172 C<sup>1</sup>; 163.13 = B. 190 B<sup>1</sup>; 164.16<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 190 C<sup>2, 3</sup>; 174.8, 9 = B. 200 B; 177.8 = B. 204 A<sup>1</sup>; 184.3 = 224 B<sup>2</sup>; 191.18 = 233 A; 195.5 = 237 B<sup>4</sup>; 210.21 = 257 A; 213.1 = 260 B<sup>1</sup>; 213.8 = 260 C<sup>1</sup>; 219.9 = 268 A<sup>2</sup>; 220.25 = 269 A<sup>3</sup>; 223.25 = 273 A; 226.14 = 276 C; 231.22 = 284 A; 238.8 = 289 D; 239.27<sup>b</sup> = 292 C<sup>3</sup>; 247.10 = 301 C; 256.23 = 313 C; 263.8 = 321 A<sup>3</sup>; 264.7 = 321 B; 268.12 = 328 B; 269.15<sup>a, b</sup>, 16<sup>a</sup> = 329 A<sup>1, 2, 3</sup>; 270.12 = 329 B<sup>2</sup>; 270.17 = 329 B<sup>3</sup>; 290.18 = 352 A<sup>2</sup>; 291.21 = 352 C<sup>2</sup>; 294.26 = 356 C<sup>1</sup>; 295.10 = 356 D; 295.16 = 357 A<sup>1</sup>; 301.24 = 364 C<sup>1</sup>; 303.8 = 365 B<sup>3</sup>; 303.22 = 365 D; 304.1, 3 = 368 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 304.26<sup>a, b</sup> = 368 B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 312.6 = 376 C<sup>3</sup>; 313.22 = 377 B; 314.19 = 380 B<sup>1</sup>; 314.28 = 380 B<sup>3</sup>; 315.1<sup>b</sup> = 380 B<sup>4</sup>; 315.19 = 380 D; 318.5 = 384 A<sup>1</sup>; 319.7 = 384 C; 320.17 = 385 B<sup>2</sup>; 321.15 = 388 B<sup>1</sup>; 321.23 = 388 B<sup>2</sup>; 322.14 = 388 C<sup>1</sup>; 322.25<sup>a</sup> = 388 D<sup>1</sup>; 323.6 = 389 A<sup>1</sup>; 323.12 = 389 B<sup>1</sup>; 326.12<sup>a</sup> = 393 A<sup>1</sup>; 327.12 = 393 C<sup>2</sup>; 327.14 = 393 C<sup>3</sup>; 328.9 = 396 A<sup>2</sup>; 328.10, 11 = 396 B<sup>1</sup>; 328.13 = 396 B<sup>2</sup>; 330.14 = 396 B<sup>3</sup>; 333.12 = 401 A<sup>1</sup>; 336.5 = 404 C<sup>4</sup>; 336.6 = 404 C<sup>5</sup>; 339.13<sup>b</sup>, 14<sup>b</sup> = 412 A<sup>1</sup>; 340.27<sup>a</sup> = 413 A<sup>1</sup>; 340.27<sup>b</sup>, 28 = 413A<sup>3</sup>; 341.1 = 413 B; 344.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 417 C<sup>4</sup>; 344.15 = 420 A<sup>3</sup>; 344.23<sup>b</sup> = 420 B<sup>2</sup>; 345.17<sup>a</sup> = 421 A<sup>2</sup>; 348.31 = 428 A<sup>1</sup>; 348.33 = 428 A<sup>2</sup>; 348.34 = 428 A<sup>3</sup>. — *Bened.* (4): 5.16 = 10.26; 18.19 = 36.8; 65.1 = 122.14; 136.27 = 0. — *Bl. Hom.* (6): 19.22; 69.7<sup>b</sup>, 8; 73.15<sup>b</sup>; 111.1; 161.20. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 266. — *Mart.* (4): 74.13, 14; 110.21; 176.25. — *Ælf. Hom.* (44): I. 26<sup>am</sup>, 48<sup>b</sup>, 94<sup>b</sup>, 130<sup>b</sup>, 176<sup>a</sup>, 236<sup>a</sup>, 280<sup>a</sup>, 282<sup>am</sup>, 286<sup>a</sup>, 286<sup>b</sup>, 292<sup>b</sup>, 314<sup>b</sup>, 320<sup>b</sup>, 342<sup>a</sup>, 346<sup>b</sup>, 500<sup>a</sup>, 544<sup>a</sup> 1<sup>a</sup>, 552<sup>m</sup>, 582<sup>b</sup>, 588<sup>a</sup>, 594<sup>a</sup> 2<sup>a</sup>; II. 28<sup>a</sup>, 48<sup>a</sup>, 120<sup>a</sup>, 204<sup>b</sup>, 234<sup>a</sup>, 236<sup>m</sup>, 268<sup>a</sup>, 284<sup>b</sup>, 336<sup>m</sup>, 344<sup>b</sup>, 362<sup>a</sup>, 366<sup>m</sup>, 388<sup>a</sup> 2<sup>a</sup>, 3, 406<sup>a</sup>, 410<sup>a</sup>, 428<sup>a</sup> 2<sup>a</sup>, 560<sup>m</sup>, 562<sup>a</sup> 3<sup>a</sup>, 576<sup>m</sup>, 590<sup>b</sup>, 606<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (15): 22.207; 98.137; 174.85; 196.31; 198.68; 202.119; 214.71; 282.287; 286.44; 524.604; XXIII B. 722; XXXI. 735, 736, 1213; XXXV. 10. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Deut.* 3.23<sup>b</sup>; — *Lev.* 10.8. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (17): *Ælf. Gr.* (15): 5.12, 12.17, 99.2, 107.10; 130.2, 4; 223.2, 242.11, 246.4<sup>a</sup>, 250.17, 257.17, 267.15, 273.9, 278.1, 280.1; — *Ælf. Int.* (2): 160; 336. — *Gosp.* (11): *Mat.* (4): 5.14; 26.9<sup>a, b</sup>, 54<sup>a</sup>; — *Mk.* (3): 10.38; 14.5<sup>a, b</sup>; — *L.* (1): 8.43; — *J.* (3): 3.4<sup>a, b</sup>; 10.35. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 8.72. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (3): 10.207; 11.54; 13.236. — *Wulf.* (1): 96.8. — *Læce.* (4): 48.5; 52.15; 56.30; 83.40. — *Minor Prose* (6): *Alex.* (3): 34, 55<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Apol.* (1): 23.32; — *Neot* (2): 9<sup>a</sup>, 1<sup>a</sup>.

mot, may, must (24): *Bede* (7): 70.2 = 50.28<sup>b</sup>; 72.11 = 52.6; 74.16 = 53.30; 182.31 = 148.26; 290.2 = 223.7; 290.24 = 223.28; 374.3 = 275.23. — *Boeth.* (1): 121.19<sup>b</sup> = 103.93<sup>b</sup>. — *Greg.* (1): 171.18 = 126.13. — *Wærf.* (3): 35.19 = 172 B<sup>a</sup>; 112.25 = B.144 A<sup>1</sup>; 276.9 = 336 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 185.4. — *Ælf. Hom.* (6): I. 56<sup>t</sup>, 292<sup>b</sup>, 414<sup>a</sup> 2, 546<sup>b</sup>; II. 46<sup>b</sup>, 602<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 270.142. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 246.4. — *Wulf.* (3): 32.9, 10; 228.22.

**sculan**, *shall* (275): *Bede* (37): 18.16 = 219.10; 44.28<sup>a, b</sup> = 27.5; 68.28 = 50.28<sup>a</sup>; 74.1<sup>a, b</sup> = 53.4; 74.11 = 53.26; 74.23 = 54.7; 76.5 = 54.19; 78.2 = 55.15; 78.7 = 55.19; 78.29 = 56.6; 80.21 = 57.13; 80.26<sup>a, b</sup> = 57.17; 84.9 = 59.10; 96.28, 29 = 80.18, 19; 110.32<sup>a, b</sup> = 90.34<sup>a, b</sup>; 156.10 = 129.23; 190.16 = 152.29; 194.30 = 155.28; 230.9 = 175.3; 246.8 = 194.30; 270.8 = 211.14; 288.22 = 222.24; 308.20 = 238.2; 350.15 = 263.12; 354.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 265.26; 374.8 = 275.30; 380.4 = 278.23; 396.20 = 288.9; 396.28<sup>b</sup> = 288.16<sup>b</sup>; 442.23 = 314.12; 468.22 = 333.2. — *Boeth.* (3): 36.32 = 41.34; 43.27 = 45.40; 95.15 = 81.12. — *Greg.* (25): 77.6 = 250.8; 77.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 50.11; 77.11 = 50.13; 81.20, 21 = 54.14; 83.8 = 54.28; 83.22, 24 = 56.10; 91.17 = 62.5; 93.4 = 62.17; 93.7 = 62.20; 107.10 = 74.6; 117.20 = 82.10; 137.13 = 98.14; 161.24, 25 = 118.11; 169.1 = 124.3; 171.15 = 126.10; 251.1 = 190.1; 253.18 = 192.8; 305.9 = 232.17; 308.4 = 236.14; 329.9 = 254.10; 395.22 = 312.29. — *Oros.* (3): 20.33 = 0; 148.23 = 0; 206.4 = 207.2. — *Pr. Ps.*

(5): 22. Intr.; 26. Intr.; 26.2; 28. Intr.; 29. Intr. — *Chron.* (4): 129<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>c</sup>; 145<sup>t</sup>, 1014 E<sup>b</sup>; 181<sup>b</sup>, 1051 F; 261<sup>t</sup>, 1130 E. — *Laws* (3): 106, Ine, c. 40; 448, Rectitudines, c. 5, § 3; 449, Rectitudines, c. 6, § 3. — *Wærf.* (43): 13.6 = 156 C<sup>1</sup>; 33.14 = 169 C; 38.10 = 173 C<sup>1</sup>; 46.4 = 180 B<sup>3</sup>; 54.18 = 188 B<sup>1</sup>; 55.28 = 188 C<sup>1</sup>; 55.34 = 188 C<sup>2</sup>; 118.12 = B. 148 B; 123.30 = B. 154 = 180 B<sup>3</sup>; 181.7 = 220 A<sup>2</sup>; 184.27 = 225 A<sup>1</sup>; 208.12 = 253 C<sup>1</sup>; 213.4 = 260 B<sup>2</sup>; 220.20 = 269 A; 225.2<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 273 C<sup>3</sup>; 227.27 = 277 D<sup>2</sup>; 239.3 = 292 B<sup>1</sup>; 245.5 = 300 B<sup>1</sup>; 253.9 = 309 A<sup>3</sup>; 259.4 = 317 A; 267.22 = 325 D; 282.5 = 344 A; 288.19 = 349 B<sup>1</sup>; 294.14<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 356 B; 297.16 = 360 A<sup>3</sup>; 302.15 = 365 A<sup>2</sup>; 310.4 = 373 B; 314.6 = 380 A<sup>1</sup>; 314.23 = 380 B<sup>2</sup>; 314.29 = 380 B<sup>4</sup>; 315.1<sup>a</sup> = 380 B<sup>5</sup>; 316.17 = 381 B; 317.12 = 381 C<sup>2</sup>; 324.21 = 392 A<sup>2</sup>; 331.22 = 400 A; 335.11 = 404 B; 336.33 = 405 B<sup>1</sup>; 337.16 = 405 C<sup>1</sup>; 338.40, 41 = 409 A; 339.13<sup>a</sup>, 14<sup>a</sup> = 412 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bened.* (12): 6.21 = 72.17; 6.22 = 74.10; 6.23 = 76.1; 31.11 = 58.15; 39.13 = 72.17; 40.3 = 74.10; 40.18 = 76.1; 43.20 = 80.24; 43.25 = 82.2; 112.22<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 180.2; 127.4 = 194.11. — *Bl. Hom.* (25): 5.17, 23; 9.3, 6, 8; 19.14; 21.20; 33.23<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 69.7<sup>a</sup>, 19<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 71.16, 17, 20; 73.16; 85.17; 95.20; 101.20<sup>b</sup>; 163.11; 183.20; 189.27; 191.5, 6, 7. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): XX. 28. — *Mart.* (7): 24.8; 80.15; 96.27; 112.16; 176.23<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 220.1. — *Ælf. Hom.* (39): I. 24<sup>b</sup>, 88<sup>b</sup>, 96<sup>m</sup>, 124<sup>b</sup>, 152<sup>t</sup>, 152<sup>b</sup>, 172<sup>t</sup>, 180<sup>m</sup>, 188<sup>b</sup>, 202<sup>b</sup>, 204<sup>t</sup>, 204<sup>b</sup>, 214<sup>b</sup>, 236<sup>b</sup>, 248<sup>b</sup>, 262<sup>t</sup>, 266<sup>t</sup>, 322<sup>t</sup>, 428<sup>b</sup>, 594<sup>t</sup>, 596<sup>b</sup>, 604<sup>t</sup>; II. 12<sup>b</sup>, 18<sup>t</sup>, 38<sup>b</sup>, 48<sup>b</sup>, 130<sup>m</sup>, 200<sup>t</sup>, 212<sup>t</sup>, 278<sup>t</sup>, 338<sup>b</sup>, 422<sup>b</sup>, 424<sup>m</sup>, 464<sup>b</sup>, 532<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (14): 30.82; 46.372; 176.120<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 204.156; 368.74; 512.428; XXIV. 120; XXX. 20, 21, 198; XXXI. 667, 1160; XXXIV. 98. — *Ælf. Hept.* (3): *De V. T.* 4.29; *Gen.* 27.45<sup>b</sup>; *Lev.* 6.21. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (6): *Ælf. Gr.* (3): 255.12, 14<sup>a</sup>; 279.8; — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (3): 101.315<sup>b</sup>, 102.29<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (3): *Mat.* (1): 3.14; — *Mk.* (1): 2.22; — *L.* (1): 22.37. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (2): 9.408, 409. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (8): 10.560; 11.99<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 12.100, 142; 13.109, 143; 18.266. — *Wulf.* (16): 96.5, 6, 17; 135.21; 141.2; 192.17; 194.6; 196.16; 218.15; 241.3; 248.16; 261.11<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 291.16; 295.15; 300.17. — *Læce.* (5): 58.21; 60.38; 61.18; 89.12; 127.8. — *Minor Prose* (10): *Alex.* (1): 658; — *Neot* (3): 6, 7, 146; — *Nic.* (6): 474.5, 500.23, 504.8; 510.8, 10<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>. — *Chr.* (1): 213.

*ðurfan*, need (9): *Greg.* (2): 83.16 = 56.3; 413.16 = 334.8. — *Wærf.* (4): 222.15 = 272 B<sup>2</sup>; 269.16<sup>b</sup> = 329 A<sup>4</sup>; 336.28 = 405 A; 345.17<sup>b</sup> = 421 A<sup>2</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 135.25. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 48<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 176.130.

*weorðan*, become (1): *Wulf.* (1): 217.9.

*willan* [nyllan], wish [not], will [not] (53): *Bede* (4): 112.12 = 91.16; 112.18 = 91.22; 308.3 = 237.16; 366.5 = 271.12. — *Boeth.* (2): 36.2 = 41.17; 51.8 = 51.15<sup>a</sup>. — *Greg.* (1): 135.26 = 96.29. — *Oros.* (1): 128.5 = 129.3. — *Wærf.* (6): 83.2 = 208 B<sup>2</sup>; 88.34 = 212 C<sup>3</sup>; 110.14 = B. 140 B; 243.22 = 297 B; 279.3 = 340 B<sup>1</sup>; 279.4 = 340 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Bened.* (2): 112.14 = 178.16; 112.16 = 178.20. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 33.13; 217.14. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): XX. 65. — *Ælf. Hom.* (16): I. 32<sup>t</sup>, 34<sup>t</sup>, 62<sup>t</sup>, 80<sup>b</sup>, 84<sup>b</sup>, 196<sup>t</sup>, 480<sup>t</sup>, 484<sup>t</sup>, 522<sup>b</sup>, 598<sup>t</sup>, 604<sup>b</sup>; II. 38<sup>b</sup>, 40<sup>b</sup>, 506<sup>t</sup>, 512<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 444.58; XXXII. 88. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (5): *Ælf. Gr.* (5): 119.3; 143.19, 20; 144.5, 6. — *Gosp.* (5): *Mat.* (3): 2.18; 16.21<sup>b</sup>; 19.21; — *Mk.* (1): 12.38<sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (1): 7.6. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (3): 16.200; 18.134, 297. — *Wulf.* (3): 105.32; 194.3; 277.3.

*wunian*, be accustomed (1): *Bede* (2): 340.7<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 257.10<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

## 2. The Infinitive Made Up of "Weorðan" + a Past Participle.

Given in full in Chapter IV, pp. 84 ff.

## 3. The Infinitive Made Up of "Wesan" + a Past Participle.

Given in full in Chapter IV, pp. 84 ff.

## V. The Predicative Infinitive with Verbs of Motion and of Rest.<sup>1</sup>

Only the uninflected infinitive, active, is found.

### 1. Verbs of Motion.

*becuman* [bi-], come (4):

— *blican*, shine (1): *And.* (1): 789.

— *hlynnan*, resound (1): *Beow.* (1): 2553.

— *rinnan*, run (1): *Chr.* (1): 1114.

<sup>1</sup> In this section, besides the finite verb (the initial word) I cite the infinitive, also.



**becuman sneowan**, *hasten* (1): *And.* (1): 1668.

**bicuman**: see *becuman*.

**cuman**, *come* (70):

— **astigan**, *descend* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.329.

— **blican**, *shine, beam* (4): *Chr.* (1): 903. — *Ju.* (1): 564. — *And.* (1): 838. — *Ph.* (1): 95.

— **drifan** [-y-], *drive* (1): *Bede* (1): 400.28 = 290.19.

— **dryfan**: see *drifan*.

— **faran**, *go* (3): *Beow.* (2): 2915; 2945. — *And.* (1): 1279.

— **feran**, *go* (5): *Gen.* (2): 852; 2759. — *Dan.* (1): 698. — *Jud.* (1): 12. — *Fallen Angels* (1): 110.

— **fleogan**, *fly* (7): *Pr. Gu.* (1): X. 5. — *Mart.* (2): 26.10; 200.12. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.292 = 217.326. — *Gen.* (1): 1479. — *Ps.* (1): 104.35. — *Charms* (1): IV. 53.

— **gan** [gangan, gongan], *go, walk* (16): *Boeth.* (1): 8.16 = 4.2. — *Mart.* (1): 90.14. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.178 = 0. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 29.10. — *Beow.* (6): 324; 711; 1163; 1642; 1644 (or final, as Shearin, *l. c.*, p. 237, holds?); 1974. — *Dan.* (1): 737. — *Ps.* (1): 104.30. — *Rid.* (2): 55.1; 86.1. — *Charms* (2): VI. 9, 15.

— **gengan** [geongan], *go* (2): *And.* (2): 1095; 1311.

— **geongan**: see *gengan*.

— **glidan**, *glide* (1): *Ph.* (1): 102.

— **hweorfan** [-u-], *wander, go* (1): *Dan.* (1): 110.

— **hwurfan**: see *hweorfan*.

— **iernan** [yrnan], *run* (3): *Pr. Gu.* (1): I. 26. — *Mart.* (1): 182.4. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 1039.

— **liðan**, *go by water, sail* (4): *And.* (1): 256. — *Met.* (1): 26.60. — *Rid.* (1): 34.1. — *Gnomic Sayings* (1): 109.

— **lixan**, *shine, glisten* (2): *Ph.* (1): 94. — *Ps.* (1): 76.15.

— **ridan**, *ride* (1): *Rid.* (1): 23.2.

— **sc(e)acan**, *shake, move quickly* (1): *Beow.* (1): 1803.

— **scinan** [-y-], *shine* (2): *Chr.* (1): 901. — *Gu.* (1): 1257.

— **scriðan**, *glide, go* (3): *Beow.* (2): 650; 703. — *Cal.* (1): 77.

— **scynan**: see *scinan*.

— **sigan**, *descend, go* (1): *Chr.* (1): 550.

— **siðian**, *travel, go* (4): *Beow.* (1): 720. — *Gen.* (3): 154; 1577; 1844.

— **slidan**, *slide* (1): *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 7.

— **sneowan**, *hasten* (1): *And.* (1): 242.

— **snican**, *creep* (1): *Charms* (1): IV. 31.

— **stigan**, *descend* (1): *Dan.* (1): 510.

— **swimman** [-y-], *swim* (1): *Beow.* (1): 1624.

— **swymman**: see *swimman*.

— **ðringan**, *crowd, throng* (1): *Gu.* (1): 868.

— **wadan**, *advance, go* (2): *And.* (1): 1271. — *Schöpfung.* (1): 61.

**dælan**, *distribute* (1):

— **scinan**, *shine* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2192 (or final?).

**fleon**, *fly* (1):

— **slincan**, *creep* (1): *Doomsday* (1): 240.

**gewitan**, *go* (49):

— **drefan**, *stir up (water)* (1): *Beow.* (1): 1904 (or final?).

— **faran**, *go* (3): *Beow.* (1): 124. — *S. & S.* (1): 501<sup>b</sup>. — *Schöpfung.* (1): 69.

— **feran**, *go* (12): *Wærf.* (1): 63.28 = 193 B<sup>4</sup>. — *Beow.* (2): 27; 301. — *Gen.* (5): 1211; 1731; 1779; 2398; 2849. — *And.* (1): 786; — *Rid.* (2): 30.11; 40.6. — *W. C.* (1): 9<sup>a</sup>.

— **ferian**, *carry* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2154 (or final?).

— **fleogan**, *fly* (2): *Gen.* (1): 1471. — *Ph.* (1): 163.

— **gan** [gangan, gongan], *go, walk* (13): *Wærf.* (2): 84.20 = 209 A<sup>4</sup>; 84.25 = 209 A.<sup>7</sup> — *Gen.* (6): 858; 1050; 1345; 1487; 2574; 2592. — *Az.* (1): 180. — *Chr.* (1): 533. — *And.* (2): 238; 1059. — *Finns.* (1): 45.

— **glidan**, *glide* (2): *And.* (2): 1248; 1304.

— **lecgan lastas**, *travel* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2850.

— **ridan**, *ride* (2): *Beow.* (2): 234; 855.

— **sc(e)acan**, *shake, move quickly* (3): *Gen.* (1): 135. — *And.* (1): 1594. — *Jud.* (1): 291.

— **scriðan**, *glide, go* (2): *Beow.* (1): 2569. — *And.* (1): 1457.

- gewitan scyndan, *hasten* (2): *Beow.* (1): 2570. — *Doomsday* (1): 238.  
 — siðian, *travel, go* (3): *Gen.* (2): 2018; 2161. — *Dan.* (1): 632.  
 — ðringan, *throng* (1): *Rid.* (1): 4.61.  
 — wadan, *go* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2886.

## 2. Verbs of Rest.

- licgan, *lie* (1):  
 — slapan, *sleep* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 512.417.  
 standan, *stand* (3):  
 — geomrian, *mourn* (1): *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 274<sup>b</sup>.  
 — reotan, *weep* (1): *And.* (1): 1712.  
 — wepan, *weep* (1): *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 274<sup>a</sup>.

## VI. The Predicative Infinitive with “(W)uton.”

Only the uninflected infinitive is found.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

- acerran: see *acierran*.  
 acierran [-e-], *turn, go* (1): *Fallen Angels* (1): 217.  
 acraeftan, *devise* (1): *Oros.* (1): 82.1 = 0.  
 acsian [ahsian], *ask* (3): *Bened.* (1): 3.13 = 6.16. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 318<sup>t</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 150.14<sup>c</sup>.  
 acwellan, *kill* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 149.34<sup>b</sup>.  
 adon, *destroy* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 95.27<sup>a</sup>.  
 adylgian [-i-], *destroy* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.106<sup>c</sup>.  
 ælan, *burn* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 11.3<sup>b</sup>.  
 ændian: see *endian*.  
 afierran [-y-], *remove* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 95.28.  
 agan, *own* (1): *Fallen Angels* (1): 253.  
 agifan [-y-], *give* (2): *Boeth.* (1): 103.5 = 87.42. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.151.  
 ahebban, *raise, lift* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 124<sup>m</sup>.  
 ahieldan [-y-], *bend, incline* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.150.  
 ahsian: see *acsian*.  
 alesan: see *aliesan*.  
 aliesan [-e-, -y-], *release* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.9; 209.6.  
 alysan: see *aliesan*.  
 andbidian, *expect, wait for* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 9.219.  
 andettan, *confess* (3): *Laws* (1): 298, I Cnut, c. 18, § 1. — *Wulf.* (2): 115.12; 150.9.  
 arisan, *arise* (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 149.34<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 534.747.  
 ascunian, *shun* (3): *Wulf.* (3): 115.11<sup>b</sup>; 145.33<sup>b</sup>; 188.15.  
 asendan, *send* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* 488.32.  
 asettan, *set aside* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 125.6.  
 aspendan, *spend* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 52.51.  
 astandan, *stand up* (1): *Bened.* (1): 2.4 = 4.9.  
 awendan, *turn* (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 124<sup>b</sup> 1. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 260.362; XXVIII. 174.  
 aweorpan [-worp-, -wurp-, -wyrp-], *throw away, reject* (7): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 2.3<sup>b</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 269, IX Æthelred, Expl<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 602<sup>t</sup> 2, 604<sup>t</sup> 1, 3. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 11.112. — *Wulf.* (1): 272.29<sup>b</sup>.  
 aworpan } : see *aweorpan*.  
 awurpan }  
 axian: see *acsian*.  
 bebyrian, *bury* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.11; 209.8.  
 began: see *biegan*.  
 begitan, *get, acquire* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 85<sup>b</sup>.  
 behawian, *look carefully* (1): *Bened.* (1): 40.21. = 76.4.  
 behealdan, *behold, consider* (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 160<sup>b</sup> 3; II. 240<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 18.123.  
 belucan, *lock up* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 70.328.  
 beon, *be* (22): *Laws* (1): 300, I Cnut, c. 20<sup>b</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (3): 95.26, 28<sup>b</sup>; 131.1. — *Ælf. Hom.*

- (7): I. 414<sup>b</sup>; II. 22<sup>b</sup> 1, 36<sup>m</sup>, 50<sup>t</sup>, 292<sup>b</sup> 4, 328<sup>b</sup>, 408<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.105. — *Wulf.* (10): 109.12; 112.1; 119.3, 4, 12<sup>b</sup>; 129.10<sup>b</sup>; 145.33<sup>c</sup>; 182.2<sup>b</sup>; 209.1; 268.30<sup>b</sup>.
- beorgan** [beorhgan], *preserve, protect* (8): *Wulf.* (7): 94.11<sup>a</sup>; 144.25; 145.17; 166.2; 167.7; 178.6<sup>b</sup>; 188.12<sup>a</sup>. — *Chr.* (1): 771.
- beorhgan**: see *beorgan*.
- besceawian**, *consider* (2): *Bened.* (1): 45.9 = 84.10. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 84<sup>t</sup> 2.
- betan**, *amend* (5): *Laus* (1): 298, I Cnut, c. 18, § 1<sup>d</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 125.4. — *Wulf.* (3): 115.13<sup>a</sup>; 166.5<sup>a</sup>; 303.5.
- bidan**, *abide, await* (1): *Bede* (1): 348.16 = 262.9.
- biddan**, *ask, pray* (37): *Bede* (2): 98.27<sup>a</sup> = 81.29<sup>a</sup>; 154.30 = 129.8. — *Solil.* (1): 64.27. — *Laws* (1): 246, V Æthelred, c. 35<sup>c</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (5): 125.5; 159.32; 205.29; 209.26; 211.7. — *Ælf. Hom.* (15): I. 158<sup>b</sup> 2, 3, 204<sup>b</sup> 2, 364<sup>t</sup>, 434<sup>b</sup>, 500<sup>b</sup>, 556<sup>m</sup>, 562<sup>t</sup>, 564<sup>m</sup>, 598<sup>b</sup>; II. 302<sup>b</sup>, 380<sup>m</sup> 2, 444<sup>b</sup> 3, 498<sup>m</sup>, 518<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 80.516; 390.107; XXVI. 20. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 10.700; 11.114<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (6): 80.6; 115.7; 142.13; 175.2; 299.17<sup>b</sup>; 306.7. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Neot* (1): 217. — *Chr.* (1): 774.
- began**: see *biegan*.
- biegan** [-e-], *bend* (1): *Bede* (1): 154.29 = 129.6.
- blissian**, *rejoice* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 292<sup>b</sup> 2.
- bringan**, *bring* (2): *Bede* (1): 234.30<sup>b</sup> = 177.26. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 116<sup>b</sup> 3.
- brucan**, *enjoy* (2): *Oros.* (1): 86.1 = 85.33. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 618<sup>b</sup> 1.
- bugan**, *bow* (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 52.52. — *Wulf.* (1): 272.26<sup>a</sup>.
- cestian** [ciest-, cyst-], *put in coffin* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.10; 209.7<sup>b</sup>.
- cierran** [-y-], *turn* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 265.4<sup>b</sup>.
- ciestian**: see *cestian*.
- cigean**, *call* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 247.3<sup>a</sup>.
- clænsian**, *cleanse, purify* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 144.23; 167.4.
- clipian** } : see *clypian*.
- clipigan** }
- clypian** [clip-, -igan], *cry out* (4): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 452<sup>b</sup>; II. 84<sup>t</sup> 3. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 242.81; XXV. 349.
- cuman**, *come* (6): *Greg.* (1): 415.6 = 336.4. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 11.7. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 11.114<sup>a</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 494.8<sup>b</sup>. — *Ps.* (2): 73.8<sup>a</sup>; 82.4.
- cunnian**, *try* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 450<sup>m</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 70.10.
- cweman**, *please* (2): *Laws* (1): 368, II Cnut, c. 84, § 3. — *Ps.* (1): 94.1<sup>a</sup>.
- cweðan**, *say, speak* (3): *Bened.* (1): 31.16 = 58.20. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 247.3<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.153<sup>b</sup>.
- cyrran**: see *cierran*.
- cystian**: see *cestian*.
- cyðan**, *make known* (1): *Fallen Angels* (1): 298.
- dælan**, *deal out, distribute* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 241.22.
- don**, *do, make, cause* (47): *Boeth.* (1): 75.16<sup>a</sup> = 68.22. — *Laws* (3): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 43<sup>a</sup>; 300, I Cnut, c. 20<sup>a</sup>; 354, II Cnut, c. 68<sup>a</sup>. — *Bened.* (2): 21.9 = 42.7; 40.4 = 0. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 205.28; 241.21<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 180<sup>b</sup> 1, 2; II. 52<sup>b</sup>, 100<sup>b</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 362.364; XXX. 368. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 37.20<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 13.199<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (31): 20.1<sup>a</sup>; 28.20<sup>a</sup>; 29.2<sup>b</sup>; 38.14<sup>a</sup>; 40.23; 94.10; 109.5<sup>a</sup>, 11; 112.1<sup>a</sup>, 14; 115.13<sup>a</sup>; 119.12; 122.4<sup>a</sup>; 124.11<sup>a</sup>; 125.17<sup>a</sup>; 127.9<sup>a</sup>; 129.10<sup>a</sup>; 134.24<sup>a</sup>; 136.26<sup>a</sup>, 28<sup>a</sup> 1, 2; 143.19; 150.10<sup>b</sup>; 152.2; 166.1, 3; 169.9; 178.6<sup>a</sup>; 182.1<sup>a</sup>; 189.1<sup>a</sup>; 268.30<sup>a</sup>.
- earnian**, *earn, merit* (2): *Wulf.* (1): 155.30. — *Partridge* (1): 13<sup>b</sup>.
- efstan**, *hasten* (7): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 109.9. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 526<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (4): 40.24<sup>b</sup>; 75.21; 141.29<sup>b</sup>; 145.7. — *Beow.* (1): 3101.
- endian** [ændian], *end, finish* (1): *Solil.* (1): 49.10<sup>a</sup>.
- etan**, *eat* (1): *L.* (1): 15.23<sup>a</sup>.
- fadian**, *arrange* (3): *Wulf.* (3): 143.22; 144.22; 167.3.
- fægñian**, *rejoice* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 292<sup>b</sup> 3.
- faran**, *go* (13): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 422<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXX. 85<sup>a</sup>, 160<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (4): *Gen.* 33.11; *Ex.* 5.8<sup>a</sup>; 14.5<sup>b</sup>; *Num.* 13.31<sup>a</sup>. — *Gosp.* (4): *Mat.* (1): 26.46; — *Mk.* (1): 4.35; — *L.* (1): 2.15<sup>a</sup>; — *J.* (1): 11.7. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.106<sup>a</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 488.27<sup>b</sup>.
- feallan**, *fall, bow* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVI. 19<sup>a</sup>.
- feligian**: see *folgian*.

- feogan [feon], *hate* (1): *Partridge* (1): 13<sup>a</sup>.  
 feohtan, *fight* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 661.  
 feran, *go* (1): *Beow.* (1): 1380.  
 fleon, *fly* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 124<sup>m</sup> 1.  
 folgian [feligian, fyljan, fyligean], *follow* (6): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 169.17. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 160<sup>b</sup> 4. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 13.2<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (3): 143.21<sup>c</sup>; 146.2<sup>c</sup>; 166.6<sup>b</sup>.  
 fon, *seize upon, begin* (3): *Solil.* (1): 55.4<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 114<sup>b</sup>, 148<sup>b</sup>.  
 forbugan, *avoid, turn away from* (3): *Wulf.* (3): 112.2<sup>b</sup>; 134.24; 188.14.  
 fordrencan, *intoxicate* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 19.32<sup>a</sup>.  
 forfleon, *avoid* (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 602<sup>b</sup> 1. — *Wulf.* (2): 115.8; 145.19.  
 forgeofan: see *forgiefan*.  
 forgiefan [-geofan], *give up* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 13.201<sup>b</sup>.  
 forhradian, *hasten* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 124<sup>m</sup> 4.  
 forlætan, *leave, forsake* (7): *Solil.* (1): 49.12. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 247.2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 380<sup>m</sup> 3. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 13.201<sup>a</sup>; 14.112. — *Wulf.* (2): 141.28<sup>a</sup>; 166.4<sup>b</sup>.  
 forstandan, *oppose, withstand* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 336<sup>t</sup> 2.  
 frefrian, *comfort* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.8<sup>a</sup>; 209.5.  
 friðian, *protect* (1): *Laws* (1): 280, I Cnut, c. 2<sup>b</sup> (*uton* to be supplied).  
 fyljan } : see *folgian*.  
 fyligean }  
 gan [gangan], *go* (18): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 247.1. — *Mart.* (1): 166.3. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 534.748. — *Ælf. Hept.* (4): *Gen.* 4.8; *Deut.* 13.2<sup>a</sup>, 6<sup>a</sup>; *Judges* 3.20<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (6): *Mat.* (1): 21.38<sup>a</sup>; — *Mk.* (2): 6.37<sup>b</sup>; 14.42; — *J.* (3): 11.15, 16<sup>a</sup>; 14.31. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Nic.* (2): 494.4, 8<sup>a</sup>. — *Beow.* (1): 2648. — *Gen.* (1): 839. — *And.* (1): 1356.  
 gangan: see *gan*.  
 geagnian [geahnian], *possess* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 13.31<sup>b</sup>.  
 geahnian: see *geagnian*.  
 gearcian, *prepare* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 606<sup>b</sup>.  
 gebeodan, *offer* (1): *Ps.* (1): 94.1<sup>a</sup>.  
 gebeorgan, *protect* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 141.26.  
 gebetan, *amend* (1): *Solil.* (1): 55.4<sup>a</sup>.  
 gebiddan, *pray* (3): *Solil.* (1): 45.22<sup>a</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* 139.30. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 22<sup>b</sup> 2.  
 gebliissian, *rejoice* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 496.26.  
 gebugan, *turn, incline* (5): *Wulf.* (5): 112.3<sup>a</sup>; 129.11<sup>b</sup>; 155.30<sup>a</sup>; 166.4<sup>a</sup>; 268.31.  
 geceosan, *choose* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* 488.27<sup>a</sup>.  
 gec(e)rran [-y-], *turn* (4): *Laws* (1): 298, I Cnut, c. 18, § 1<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 14.4<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 115.6; 174.29.  
 gecnawan, *know* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 189.3.  
 gecuman, *come* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 126<sup>t</sup> 2.  
 gecyrran: see *gecierran*.  
 gedon, *do, cause* (3): *Wulf.* (1): 188.13. — *Gen.* (1): 404<sup>b</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 136.7.  
 geearnian, *earn, merit* (7): *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 294<sup>t</sup>, 618<sup>b</sup> 2; II. 332<sup>t</sup>. — *Wulf.* (4): 76.3; 112.14; 144.26; 167.8.  
 geedlæcan, *repeat* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 380<sup>m</sup> 4.  
 geefenlæcan, *imitate* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 52<sup>b</sup>, 158<sup>b</sup> 1.  
 gefaran, *go* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 40<sup>t</sup> 1.  
 gefremman, *assist* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 602<sup>b</sup> 2.  
 gegearwian, *prepare* (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 11.107.  
 gehealdan, *keep, preserve* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 253.3.  
 gehienan [-y-], *oppress* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 1.10.  
 gehieran [-y-], *hear* (4): *Bl. Hom.* (2): 83.28; 165.16. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 280<sup>t</sup> 2; II. 272<sup>b</sup>.  
 gehyran: see *gehieran*.  
 geïnseglian, *seal* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 70.329.  
 gelædan, *lead* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 494.9<sup>a</sup>.  
 gelæstan, *perform, pay* (3): *Wulf.* (3): 38.14<sup>b</sup>; 116.1; 144.21<sup>b</sup>.  
 geliefan [-y-], *believe* (3): *Solil.* (1): 55.6. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 134<sup>t</sup> 1, 228<sup>b</sup>.  
 gemunan, *remember* (5): *Bl. Hom.* (2): 125.3, 7. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 84<sup>t</sup>, 124<sup>m</sup> 2. — *Wulf.* (1): 283.18.  
 geneosian, *visit* (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.9<sup>b</sup>; 209.7<sup>a</sup>.  
 geniman, *take* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 149.34<sup>a</sup>.

- geoffrian, offer (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 116<sup>b</sup> 1.  
 geomrian, mourn (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 348<sup>b</sup> 3.  
 gereccan, account, consider (1): *Boeth.* (1): 75.16<sup>b</sup> = 68.22.  
 gesceawian, see, examine (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 167.4.  
 gescieldan [-y-], protect (1): *Wulf.* (1): 145.17.  
 gescyldan: see *gescieldan*.  
 geseon, see (4): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 40<sup>t</sup> 2, 40<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (2): *Mat.* (1): 27.49; — *L.* (1): 2.15<sup>b</sup>.  
 gesettan, provide (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 14.4<sup>a</sup>.  
 geswican, cease, desist from (10): *Laws* (1): 298, I Cnut, c. 18, § 1<sup>c</sup>. — *Wulf.* (9): 29.4; 112.2<sup>a</sup>; 115.13<sup>b</sup>; 129.11<sup>a</sup>; 130.7; 150.10<sup>a</sup>; 174.30<sup>a</sup>; 188.12<sup>b</sup>; 268.30<sup>b</sup>.  
 geðencan [-ðencean], think, consider (19): *Laws* (1): 146, I Æthelstan, c. 2<sup>a</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (6): 83.29; 91.13, 18; 97.1; 115.5<sup>a</sup>, 20. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 13.262; 14.113. — *Wulf.* (9): 109.14; 112.6; 135.14, 19; 136.9, 26<sup>b</sup>; 144.20; 182.2; 272.29<sup>b</sup>. — *Har.* (1): 278.  
 geðencan: see *geðencan*.  
 geðeodan, attack, join (1): *Wulf.* (1): 147.19.  
 gewistfullian, feast (1): *L.* (1): 15.23<sup>b</sup>.  
 gewitnian, punish (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 124<sup>m</sup> 3.  
 gewrecan, avenge (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.106<sup>b</sup>.  
 gewyrcean, make, do (3): *Laws* (1): 300, I Cnut, c. 20<sup>d</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 16<sup>t</sup>, 288<sup>t</sup>.  
 gi(e)man [-y-], take care (of), observe (2): *Laws* (1): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 43, § 1<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 112.15.  
 gladian, rejoice (2): *Wulf.* (2): 112.12; 169.10<sup>a</sup>.  
 griðian, protect (1): *Laws* (1): 280, I Cnut, c. 2<sup>a</sup> (uton to be supplied).  
 gyman: see *gi(e)man*.  
 habban, have (17): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 512<sup>b</sup> 2; II. 46<sup>m</sup>. — *Mat.* (1): 21.38<sup>c</sup>. — *Wulf.* (13): 28.20<sup>b</sup>; 101.23; 112.12<sup>b</sup>; 122.4<sup>b</sup>; 124.11<sup>b</sup>; 125.17<sup>b</sup>; 127.9<sup>b</sup>; 137.20; 151.9; 167.5; 282.5; 299.17<sup>a</sup>; 306.8. — *Ps.* (1): 73.8<sup>b</sup>.  
 halsian, entreat (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 494.9<sup>b</sup>.  
 healdan, hold (16): *Boeth.* (1): 138.5 = 118.30. — *Laws* (4): 181, VI Æthelstan, c. 8, § 5; 246, V Æthelred, c. 35<sup>a</sup>; 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 44, § 1; 269, IX Æthelred, Expl<sup>c</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXV. 21. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 13.199<sup>a</sup>. — *Wulf.* (8): 20.2; 29.2<sup>a</sup>; 144.24<sup>a</sup>; 152.3<sup>b</sup>; 167.5; 169.10<sup>a</sup>; 189.2; 272.27<sup>b</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 117.25<sup>b</sup>.  
 hebban, raise (1): *Boeth.* (1): 146.26 = 0.  
 helpan, help (8): *Laws* (1): 354, II Cnut, c. 68<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (6): 40.24<sup>a</sup>; 94.11<sup>b</sup>; 119.5; 129.13; 155.29; 209.2. — *Beow.* (1): 2649.  
 heran: see *hieran*.  
 herian [herigea], praise, honor (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 380<sup>m</sup> 1. — *Ps.* (1): 94.1<sup>b</sup>.  
 herigea: see *herian*.  
 hieran [-e-, -y-], hear (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 115.22<sup>a</sup>.  
 hiertan [-y-], encourage (1): *Wulf.* (1): 119.8<sup>b</sup>.  
 hleotan, cast lots (1): *J.* (1): 19.24.  
 hliewan [-y-], warm (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.6<sup>a</sup>; 209.3<sup>a</sup>.  
 hlywan: see *hliewan*.  
 hogian, reflect, consider (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 38<sup>b</sup>.  
 hyccan, reflect, consider (3): *Har.* (1): 229. — *Predigtbruchstück über Psalm 28* (1): 44<sup>a</sup>. — *Seaf.* (1): 117.  
 hyhtan, hope (1): *Predigtbruchstück über Psalm 28* (1): 44<sup>b</sup>.  
 hyran: see *hieran*.  
 iecan [ecan], increase (1): *Boeth.* (1): 75.15 = 68.21.  
 lætan, allow, leave (3): *Boeth.* (1): 88.32<sup>a</sup> = 0. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 14.5<sup>d</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 145.33<sup>a</sup>.  
 latian, delay (1): *Wulf.* (1): 75.22<sup>b</sup>.  
 libban [-y-], live (1): *Wulf.* (1): 150.13<sup>b</sup>.  
 licgan, lie, recline (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 19.32<sup>b</sup>.  
 lufian, love (22): *Laws* (2): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 43, § 1<sup>a</sup>; 269, IX Æthelred, Expl<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 52<sup>b</sup> 2; II. 316<sup>b</sup> 3. — *Wulf.* (17): 20.2<sup>b</sup>; 29.1; 94.13; 109.6; 115.11<sup>a</sup>; 124.12; 127.10; 143.4, 20; 145.32; 146.2<sup>a</sup>; 150.13<sup>a</sup>; 152.3<sup>a</sup>; 166.6<sup>a</sup>; 189.1<sup>b</sup>; 239.6; 272.26<sup>b</sup>. — *Hymn* (1): 3.  
 lybban: see *libban*.  
 niman, take (4): *Laws* (1): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 43<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 164<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 160<sup>a</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 174.9.

- oferhogian, *despise* (1): *Laws* (1): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 44<sup>b</sup>.  
oferhyccan, *despise* (1): *Fallen Angels* (1): 252.  
offrian, *offer* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 116<sup>b</sup> 2. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 5.8<sup>b</sup>.  
ofslean, *slay* (5): *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Gen.* 37.20<sup>a</sup>; *Ex.* 14.5<sup>c</sup>. — *Gosp.* (3): *Mat.* (1): 21.38<sup>b</sup>; — *Mk.* (1): 12.7; — *L.* (1): 20.14.  
oliccan, *please* (1): *Partridge* (1): 12.  
oncnawan, *know, understand* (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 115.5.<sup>b</sup> — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 254<sup>b</sup>.  
ondrædan, *fear* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 136.28<sup>b</sup>.  
onettan, *hasten* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 141.29<sup>a</sup>.  
oðwendan, *take away* (1): *Gen.* (1): 403<sup>a</sup>.  
ræran, *raise* (2): *Laws* (1): 300, I Cnut, c. 20<sup>c</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 119.14<sup>a</sup>.  
rihtan, *rectify* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 75.22<sup>a</sup>.  
rihtlæcan, *correct* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 174.30<sup>b</sup>.  
sceawian, *examine* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 58<sup>t</sup> 1.  
sceofan [scufan], *shove, push* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 300<sup>m</sup> 2.  
sceotan, *refer* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 338<sup>b</sup> 2.  
scieldan [-y-], *shield, guard* (3): *Laws* (1): 368, II Cnut, c. 84, § 3<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 115.10; 134.19.  
scyldan: see *scieldan*.  
scyndan, *hasten* (1): *Reimlied* (1): 84.  
secan [secean], *seek* (6): *Laws* (1): 280, I Cnut, c. 2<sup>c</sup> (*uton* to be supplied). — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 10.450. — *Wulf.* (2): 146.2<sup>b</sup>; 150.14<sup>a</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 94.2. — *Whale* (1): 87.  
secean: see *secan*.  
secgan, *say* (4): *Solil.* (1): 49.10<sup>b</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 115.22<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 330<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 37.20<sup>c</sup>.  
seglian, *sail* (1): *L.* (1): 8.22.  
sellan [-y-], *give* (5): *Bede* (1): 234.30<sup>a</sup> = 177.26. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 31.44. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.153<sup>a</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 119.7; 209.4.  
sendan, *send, put* (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 241.20. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 1.22.  
settan, *set* (1): *Ps.* (1): 117.25<sup>a</sup>.  
singan, *sing* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 126<sup>t</sup> 3.  
smeagan [smeagean], *reflect, consider* (4): *Laws* (2): 254, VI Æthelred, c. 31; 314, II Cnut, c. 8. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 348<sup>b</sup> 2. — *Wulf.* (1): 169.11.  
smeagean: see *smeagan*.  
spirian: see *spyrian*.  
sprecan, *speak* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 216<sup>b</sup> 2.  
spurian: see *spyrian*.  
spyrian [-i-, -u-], *follow* (2): *Solil.* (1): 45.22<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 130.11.  
standan, *stand, arise* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 126<sup>t</sup> 1.  
staðelian, *establish* (1): *Chr.* (1): 864.  
suwian, *be silent* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 348<sup>b</sup> 1.  
sweltan, *die* (1): *J.* (1): 11.16<sup>b</sup>.  
syllan: see *sellan*.  
teolian: see *tilian*.  
teon, *draw* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 241.21<sup>a</sup>.  
tilian [teolian, tiligeaen], *strive, attempt* (6): *Bl. Hom.* (2): 111.18<sup>b</sup>; 129.36. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 13.197, 265. — *Wulf.* (1): 109.5<sup>b</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 138.17.  
tiligeaen: see *tilian*.  
timbrian, *build* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 11.4<sup>a</sup>.  
tobrecan, *break, destroy* (1): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 2.3<sup>a</sup>.  
todælan, *confound* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 11.7<sup>b</sup>.  
toweorpan [-wurp-, -wyrp-], *disperse, destroy* (2): *Ps.* (2): 73.8<sup>c</sup>; 82.4<sup>b</sup>.  
towurpan } : see *toweorpan*.  
towyrpan }  
tylian: see *tilian*.  
ðencan, *think* (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVIII. 119. — *Wulf.* (1): 232.20.  
ðeowian, *serve* (2): *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Deut.* 13.2<sup>c</sup>, 6<sup>b</sup>.  
ðingian, *intercede* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 130.8.  
understandan, *understand* (7): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 160<sup>b</sup> 1; II. 58<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Wulf.* (5): 38.8; 112.3<sup>b</sup>; 144.24<sup>b</sup>; 167.6, 11.

- upastigan**, ascend (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 300<sup>m</sup> 1.  
**wæfan**, clothe (2): *Wulf.* (2): 119.6<sup>b</sup>; 209.3<sup>b</sup>.  
**warnian**, take warning, beware of (4): *Wulf.* (4): 80.4; 130.14; 147.18; 188.11.  
**wendan**, wend, turn (3): *Wulf.* (3): 141.27; 142.9; 265.4<sup>a</sup>.  
**wenian**, accustom, train (1): *Wulf.* (1): 76.1.  
**weorðan**, become (1): *Wulf.* (1): 169.11<sup>b</sup>.  
**weorðian** [wurð-], honor (7): *Laws* (2): 268, VIII Æthelred, c. 44<sup>a</sup>; 269, IX Æthelred, Expl<sup>a</sup>.  
 — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 446<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 260.363. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 11.4<sup>p</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 143.21<sup>a</sup>; 272.27<sup>a</sup>.  
**werian**, defend (2): *Laws* (1): 246, V Æthelred, c. 35<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 143.22<sup>b</sup>.  
**wilnian**, wish, desire (1): *Chr.* (1): 773.  
**wircean**: see *wyrcean*.  
**wistfullian**, feast, delight (1): Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Ælf. Gr.* 263.16.  
**wiðstandan**, withstand (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 604<sup>t</sup> 4.  
**wuldrian**, honor, glorify (1): *Hymn* (1): 1.  
**wurcæn**: see *wyrcean*.  
**wurðian**: see *weorðian*.  
**wynsumian**, rejoice (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 91.8.  
**wyrcean** [-i-, -u-, -cean], work, make, do (21): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 160<sup>b</sup> 2. — *Ælf. Hept.* (6): *Pref.* to *Gen.* 23.25, 26; — *De V. T.* 11.41; — *Gen.* 1.26; 2.18<sup>b</sup>; 11.3<sup>a</sup>. — Ælfric's Minor Prose (4): *Ælf. Int.* (4): 163, 169, 170, 173. — *Gosp.* (3): *Mat.* (1): 17.4<sup>b</sup>; — *Mk.* (1): 9.5; — *L.* (1): 9.33. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 7.322. — *Wulf.* (6): 41.1; 94.14; 109.7; 119.14<sup>b</sup>; 124.13<sup>b</sup>; 127.11.  
**wyrcean**: see *wyrcean*.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

Given in full in Chapter VI, p. 95.

Note 1. "Ute" and the Infinitive: given in full in Note 4 to Chapter VI, p. 96.

Note 2. "(W)uton" with the Infinitive to Be Supplied: see Note 6 to Chapter VI, p. 96.

## VII. The Predicative Infinitive with "Beon" ("Wesan").

### A. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES NECESSITY OR OBLIGATION.

#### I. THE INFINITIVE PASSIVE IN SENSE.

Sporadically the infinitive is uninflected, but normally it is inflected.

##### 1. The Infinitive Uninflected.

Given in full in Chapter VII, p. 98.

##### 2. The Infinitive Inflected.

- aberan**, bear with: P.<sup>1</sup> (1): *Wærf.* (1): 108.32<sup>a</sup> = B. 138 C<sup>1</sup>. — I. (0).  
**ademan**, judge: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 430.32<sup>a</sup> = 308.12<sup>a</sup>. — I. (0).  
**adreogan**, tolerate: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 108.32<sup>b</sup> = B. 138 C<sup>1</sup>. — I. (0).  
**agietan**, consider: P. (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.31. — I. (0).  
**ahabban**, abstain: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 82.6 = 57.31.  
**ahsian**, ask, inquire: P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 22.1 = 44.5. — I. (0).  
**aleogan**, deny: P. (1): *Laws* (1): 46, Ælfred, c. I, § 1. — I. (0).  
**aliesan** [-y-], redeem: P. (2): *Laws* (2): 14, Wihtraed, c. 28<sup>c</sup>; 98, Ine, c. 20<sup>c</sup>. — I. (0).  
**alysan**: see *aliesan*.  
**anlætan**, continue: P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 66.1 = 124.10. — I. (0).  
**anscunian**: see *onscunian*.  
**apinsian**, ponder, weigh: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 245.9<sup>b</sup>.  
**aræfnan**, tolerate: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 72.7 = 51.34. — I. (0).  
**aræran**, raise, erect: P. (2): *Bened.* (1): 23.4 = 46.5. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 498<sup>t</sup> 1. — I. (0).

<sup>1</sup> Throughout this section, P. indicates that the subject is personal; I., that the subject is impersonal.

- areccan, relate: P. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 330. — I. (0).
- arian, honor: P. (3): *Boeth.* (2): 72.25 = 0; 72.27<sup>a</sup> = 0. — *Wærf.* (1): 98.27 = 244 A. — I. (0).
- arisan, arise: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bened.* (1): 32.12 = 60.9.
- arweorðian [-wurð-], honor: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 13.25<sup>a</sup> = 157 A.<sup>1</sup> — I. (0).
- arwurðian: see *arweorðian*.
- asmeagan, consider: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 86.23 = 61.1. — I. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 245.9<sup>a</sup>.
- aðwean, wash: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 84.31 = 59.32. — I. (0).
- baðian [beðian], bathe: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 62.11. — I. (0).
- bebeorgan, avoid: P. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 63.32. — I. (0).
- begangan: see *began*.
- began [-gangan, -gongan], practise, exercise: P. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 100<sup>b</sup>. — *S. & S.* (1): 54. — I. (0).
- beginnan, begin: P. (3): *Bened.* (3): 33.2 = 0; 33.7 = 0; 37.10 = 70.7. — I. (0).
- begongan: see *began*.
- behealdan, consider: P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 75.11 = 142.19. — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 139.4 = 100.1.
- belean, forbid, destroy: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 203.9 = 152.7. — I. (0).
- bemænian, lament: P. (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.119. — I. (0).
- beran, bear, carry: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 84.1 = 209 A.<sup>1</sup>. — I. (0).
- besceawian, consider: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 63.22<sup>a</sup>. — I. (2): *Bened.* (1): 116.16 = 184.2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 486<sup>m</sup>.
- besceawigan: see *besceawian*.
- bescerian [bi-, -scyrian, -igan], deprive: P. (2): *Bede* (2): 70.31 = 51.24; 72.6 = 51.33. — I. (0).
- bescyrian: see *bescerian*.
- betan, improve, correct: P. (1): *Laws* (1): 474, *Judex*, c. 2<sup>a</sup>. — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 274, *Cnut*, c. 14 (or with adjective?).
- beðian: see *baðian*.
- biddan, pray, request, seek: P. (2): *Solil.* (1): 30.8 = 0. — *Bened.* (1): 55.19 = 104.12. — I. (0).
- biscergan: see *bescerian*.
- blinnan, cease: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 178.1 = B. 204 C<sup>1</sup>.
- blissian [-igan], rejoice: P. (0). — I. (2): *Greg.* (1): 409.11 = 328.21. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 82<sup>t</sup>.
- blissigan: see *blissian*.
- bodian, announce: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 120.3 = B. 150 A.
- bregan, terrify: P. (2): *Greg.* (2): 181.7 = 134.22; 183.3<sup>b</sup> = 136.15. — I. (0).
- celan, cool: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 25.30<sup>a</sup>. — I. (0).
- clænsian [-igan], cleanse: P. (4): *Bede* (1): 430.32<sup>b</sup> = 308.12<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 552<sup>t</sup> <sup>2</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.123. — *Læce.* (1): 78.19. — I. (0).
- clænsigan: see *clænsian*.
- cuman, come: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 185.19 = 225 B<sup>1</sup>.
- cweðan, say, call: P. (4): *Bede* (1): 370.16 = 274.6. — *Bened.* (2): 6.25 = 78.4; 41.19 = 78.4. — *Wulf.* (1): 185.7. — I. (4): *Bede* (2): 88.23 = 62.1; 334.28 = 254.28. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 228.133. — *Wulf.* (1): 158.16.
- cyðan, make known: P. (3): *Greg.* (3): 187.16 = 140.11; 263.9 = 198.12; 287.3 = 216.19. — I. (17): *Greg.* (17): 189.1 = 140.20; 201.15 = 150.15; 201.18 = 150.18; 201.19 = 150.19; 253.8 = 192.4; 281.23 = 212.25; 299.2 = 226.4; 299.5 = 226.5; 301.14 = 228.6; 305.13 = 232.21; 305.15 = 232.23; 305.18 = 232.25; 306.2 = 234.2; 311.14 = 238.27; 315.20 = 242.27; 349.5 = 268.27; 441.11 = 368.8.
- deman, judge: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 78.34 = 56.11. — I. (0).
- don, do: P. (26): *Bede* (10): 50.10<sup>a</sup> = 30.16; 72.26 = 0; 112.27 = 91.32; 124.20 = 100.12; 124.23<sup>a</sup> = 100.15 (or with adjective?); 128.13 = 108.18<sup>b</sup> (or with adjective?); 132.18 = 110.26 (or with adjective?); 162.30 = 137.10; 216.11 = 167.4; 248.5 = 196.7. — *Chron.* (1): 215<sup>t</sup>, 1083 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 368, II *Cnut*, c. 84<sup>a</sup>. — *Bened.* (2): 15.4 = 26.14; 39.5 = 72.12. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 199.30. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 314<sup>b</sup> <sup>2</sup>, 502<sup>b</sup>, 506<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXVI. 206. — *Wulf.* (5): 51.20<sup>a</sup>; 57.15; 123.15<sup>a</sup>; 150.15; 290.4<sup>a</sup>. — *Læce.* (2): 9.27; 62.21. — I. (2): *Bede* (1): 68.7 = 50.7. — *Wulf.* (1): 173.4.
- drohtnigan, pass life, live: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 130<sup>b</sup>.
- eadgian, bless: P. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 11.11<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).
- efstan, hasten: P. (0). — I. (4): *Bede* (1): 98.30 = 81.32. — *Bened.* (1): 5.8<sup>a</sup> = 10.16<sup>a</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.135. — *Wulf.* (1): 36.1.
- eri(g)an, plough: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Minor Prose: Ælf. Gr.* (1): 135.5.
- fæstan, fast: P. (1): *Mart.* (1): 72.24. — I. (0).



- findan, find:** P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 8.6 = 153 A<sup>2</sup>. — I. (0).  
**fleogan, flee:** P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 9.19. — I. (0).  
**fleon, flee:** P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 63.31. — I. (0).  
**forbeodan, forbid:** P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 63.28. — I. (0).  
**forberan, bear with, tolerate:** P. (2): *Bede* (1): 70.11 = 51.3. — *Greg.* (1): 153.1 = 110.8. — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 151.10<sup>b</sup> = 108.21.  
**forbugan, avoid:** P. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 234<sup>m</sup>. — I. (0).  
**foreseon, foresee:** P. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 66.4<sup>b</sup> = 49.8<sup>b</sup>.  
**foreswigan:** see *forswigan*.  
**forgan, forego:** P. (11): *Laws* (1): 368, II Cnut, c. 84<sup>b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 123.15<sup>b</sup>. — *Læce.* (9): 5.27; 44.20<sup>a</sup>, 21; 48.44; 50.20<sup>b</sup>, 38; 63.17, 24; 76.35. — I. (0).  
**forgiefan [-y-], forgive:** P. (1): *Laws* (1): 474, *Judex*, c. 2<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).  
**forgietan [-y-], forget:** P. (1): *Chron.* (1): 220<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>c</sup>. — I. (0).  
**forgyfan:** see *forgiefan*.  
**forgytan:** see *forgietan*.  
**forlætan, pass over:** P. (15): *Bede* (3): 70.12 = 51.3; 82.21<sup>b</sup> = 58.27; 292.14 = 224.20. — *Greg.* (1): 23.1 = 388.21. — *Wærf.* (3): 23.18 = 164. B<sup>2</sup>; 67.3 = 196 C<sup>2</sup>; 109.18 = B. 140 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Pr. Gu.* (2): XVII. 1; XIX. 1. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 463. — *Wulf.* (3): 51.20<sup>b</sup>; 57.16<sup>b</sup>; 290.4<sup>b</sup>. — *Læce.* (2): 5.28; 60.12. — I. (0).  
**forseon, despise:** P. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 75.12 = 67.18. — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 56.3 = 53.58<sup>a</sup>.  
**forseon, foresee, provide:** P. (1): *Bede* (1): 76.24 = 55.1. — I. (0).  
**forswigan [fore-, -u-, -y-], pass over in silence:** P. (8): *Bede* (4): 96.3 = 79.25; 326.2 = 249.23; 380.28 = 279.19; 398.14 = 289.6. — *Wærf.* (4): 157.2 = B. 184 A; 248.10 = 304 B; 301.15 = 364 B; 344.3 = 420 A<sup>1</sup>. — I. (2): *Bede* (2): 182.9 = 147.30; 308.5 = 237.18.  
**forswigan:** see *forswigan*.  
**forþyldigan, bear patiently:** P. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 552<sup>b</sup> 2. — I. (0).  
**forwiernan [-y-], forbid:** P. (0). — I. (1): *Læce.* (1): 16.12.  
**forwyrrnan:** see *forwiernan*.  
**frefran, comfort:** P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 181.6<sup>a</sup> = 134.22. — I. (0).  
**fyrgan, follow:** P. (1): *Bede* (1): 98.29 = 81.31. — I. (0).  
**gan, go:** P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 113.  
**gebeodan, offer:** P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 130.12 = 200.20. — I. (0).  
**gebeoran:** see *geberan*.  
**geberan [-beoran], bring:** P. (1): *Bede* (1): 76.25<sup>a</sup> = 55.2. — I. (0).  
**gebetan, reform:** P. (2): *Bede* (1): 74.3 = 53.5. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 635. — I. (0).  
**gebiddan, pray:** P. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 197.24<sup>a</sup>. — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 336.2 = 404 C<sup>2</sup>.  
**gebindan, bind:** P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 275.11 = 208.6. — I. (0).  
**gefaran, travel:** P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 5.22 = 12.2. — I. (0).  
**geferan, go, travel:** P. (0). — I. (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 603.  
**gefremman, perform, administer:** P. (2): *Bede* (2): 76.25<sup>b</sup> = 55.2; 86.10<sup>b</sup> = 60.8. — I. (0).  
**gegearwian, prepare:** P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 130.11 = 200.20. — I. (0).  
**gehælan, heal:** P. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 498<sup>t</sup> 2. — I. (0).  
**gehealdan, observe:** P. (1): *Wulf.* (1): 102.13. — I. (0).  
**geheran:** see *gehieran*.  
**gehieran [-e-, -y-], hear:** P. (4): *Greg.* (1): 315.23 = 244.1. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 302<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælfrio's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 255.13. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 1.101. — I. (4): *Wærf.* (1): 177.9 = B. 204 A<sup>2</sup>. — *Greg.* (1): 439.31 = 366.16. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 518<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 540.831.  
**gehycgan, think, consider:** P. (0). — I. (2): *Wærf.* 63.4 = 193 B<sup>1</sup>; 348.9<sup>b</sup> = 425 C.  
**gehyran:** see *gehieran*.  
**gelæstan, perform, do:** P. (1): *Laws* (1): 46, *Ælfred*, c. 1, § 1<sup>b</sup> (or with adjective?). — I. (0).  
**gelefan:** see *geliefan*.  
**geleoran, depart, die:** P. (2): *Bede* (2): 286.29 = 221.30; 318.27 = 244.20. — I. (0).  
**geliefan [-e-, -y-], believe:** P. (5): *Bede* (2): 224.22 = 172.6; 372.27 = 275.16. — *Boeth.* (1): 84.2 = 73.32. — *Wærf.* (1): 328.6 = 396 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 100.176. — I. (21): *Bede* (2): 228.23 = 174.9; 234.13 = 177.4. — *Chron.* (1): 158<sup>b</sup>, 1036 C. — *Wærf.* (11): 146.2 = B. 174 A; 246.19<sup>b</sup> = 301 A<sup>2</sup>; 275.18 = 336 A<sup>2</sup>; 288.21 = 349 B<sup>2</sup>; 288.23 = 349 B<sup>2</sup>; 303.5 = 365 B<sup>2</sup>; 303.17 = 365 C; 327.20 = 393 C<sup>4</sup>; 328.14 = 396 B<sup>2</sup>; 332.10 = 400 C<sup>1</sup>; 333.13 = 401 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (3): 29.15; 31.2; 209.18. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 442<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXII B. 108. — *A. S. Hom. L. S. II* (1): 11.66 — *Seizure and Death of Alfred* (1): 13.

**gelyfan**: see *geliefan*.

**geopenian**, *reveal*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 104.

**geortiewan** [-y-], *despair of*: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 316.26 = 243.19. — I. (0).

**gerestan**, *rest*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 178.2 = B. 204 C<sup>1</sup>.

**gerihtan**, *correct*: P. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 634. — I. (0).

**geswencan**, *mortify*: P. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 408<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

**geðafian**, *allow, tolerate*: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 135.21 = 96.24. — I. (0).

**geðencan**, *think, consider*: P. (7): *Boeth.* (1): 52.2 = 0. — *Greg.* (2): 29.6 = 0; 385.24 = 302.1. — *Bl. Hom.* (3): 19.31; 27.26; 29.2. — *Rid.* (1): 42.8. — I. (16): *Bede* (1): 84.3<sup>b</sup> = 59.5. — *Boeth.* (1): 76.1 = 0. — *Greg.* (4): 53.17 = 30.15; 59.21<sup>a</sup> = 34.27; 119.3 = 82.17; 302.20 = 230.3. — *Wærf.* (6): 239.27<sup>a</sup> = 292 C<sup>2</sup>; 270.11 = 329 B<sup>1</sup>; 328.26 = 396 C<sup>1</sup>; 348.9<sup>a</sup> = 425 B; 349.19 = 428 B; 349.27<sup>b</sup> = 428 C. — *Bl. Hom.* (4): 31.20; 33.25; 35.10; 39.1.

**gewiscan**: see *gewyscan*.

**gewitan**, *know*: P. (0). — I. (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 538<sup>b</sup> <sup>2</sup>; II. 556<sup>b</sup>, 562<sup>b</sup>.

**gewyscan** [-i-], *wish, desire*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 612<sup>b</sup>.

**gieman** [-y-], *take care*: P. (0). — I. (3): *Greg.* (3): 123.24 = 86.17; 455.10 = 386.15; 455.28 = 388.7.

**gi(e)rnan**, *yearn for*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 90.13 = 77.20.

**gyman**: see *gieman*.

**habban**, *have, keep*: P. (7): *Boeth.* (1): 68.26 = 63.17. — *Greg.* (2): 249.7 = 188.11; 351.16 = 272.4. — *Wærf.* (1): 8.7 = 153 A<sup>3</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 2<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 270.131.

— *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 255.14<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

**haldan**: see *healdan*.

**halgian** [haligian], *hallow, consecrate*: P. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 29.5. — I. (0).

**halsian** [heals-], *supplicate*: P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 45.17 = 84.19. — I. (0).

**healdan** [haldan], *hold, preserve*: P. (28): *Bede* (3): 68.15<sup>b</sup> = 50.14; 124.23<sup>b</sup> = 100.16; 132.19 = 110.27. — *Greg.* (1): 119.2<sup>a</sup> = 82.16. — *Bened.* (17): 6.16 = 64.10; 6.17 = 66.1; 6.18 = 68.13; 6.19 = 70.1; 6.20 = 72.9; 7.4 = 90.13; 12.18 = 0; 34.5 = 64.10; 35.1 = 66.1; 36.9 = 68.13; 37.4 = 70.1; 37.5 = 70.4; 39.2 = 72.9; 48.14 = 90.13; 49.3 = 92.1; 60.11 = 112.14; 110.5 = 176.11. — *Mart.* (1): 74.3. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 6. — *Wulf.* (3): 270.16; 282.7; 295.7. — *Læce.* (2): 49.1; 63.18. — I. (0).

**helan**, *conceal*: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 278.22 = 340 B<sup>1</sup>. — I. (0).

**herian** [herigan], *praise*: P. (8): *Bede* (1): 78.33<sup>b</sup> = 56.10<sup>b</sup>. — *Boeth.* (2): 32.28 = 39.89; 69.3 = 0. — *Greg.* (2): 237.7 = 178.22; 353.25 = 274.6. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 63.21<sup>a</sup>; 223.27. — *Wulf.* (1): 197.24<sup>b</sup>. — I. (2): *Boeth.* (1): 64.19 = 60.44. — *Greg.* (1): 53.19 = 30.17.

**hiersumian** [-y-], *obey, serve*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bened.* (1): 1.15 = 4.3.

**hogian**, *think, consider*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 558<sup>m</sup>.

**hopi(g)an**, *hope*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Int.* (1): 270.

**hradian**, *hasten*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bened.* (1): 5. 8<sup>a</sup> = 10.16<sup>a</sup>.

**hyccan**, *think, consider*: P. (2): *Rid.* (2): 29.12; 32.23. — I. (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.2.

**hyrsumian**: see *hiersumian*.

**ieldan** [yldan], *delay*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 350<sup>m</sup>.

**lacnian**, *treat medically*: P. (3): *Læce.* (3): 25.30<sup>b</sup>; 73.36<sup>a</sup>; 78.22. — I. (0).

**læran**, *teach*: P. (9): *Greg.* (9): 25.15 = 6.1; 119.2<sup>b</sup> = 82.17; 179.21 = 134.24; 205.21 = 154.13; 233.23 = 176.21; 277.3 = 208.21; 341.15 = 264.7; 409.24 = 330.3; 441.6 = 368.1. — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 127.25 = 108.15.

**lætan**, *let (blood)*: P. (4): *Læce.* (4): 26.1; 44.20<sup>b</sup>; 76.26; 77.3. — I. (0).

**laðian**, *invite*: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 263.4 = 321 A<sup>1</sup>. — I. (0).

**lean**, *blame*: P. (2): *Laws* (1): 254, VI Æthelred, c. 29<sup>a</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 63.21<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

**libban** [lifigan], *live*: P. (0). — I. (2): *Bede* (1): 424.4 = 304.14. — *Wærf.* (1): 317.15 = 381 D.

**liefan** [-y-], *believe*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 11.12.

**lifigan**: see *libban*.

**luðian**, *love*: P. (12): *Bede* (2): 66.24, 25 = 49.29. — *Boeth.* (2): 108.21 = 0; 113.14 = 97.25. — *Greg.* (2): 133.15 = 94.18; 441.15 = 368.12. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 18.9 = 18.11. — *Laws* (1): 254, VI Æthelred, c. 29<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 310.38<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 144.11. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 3.573. — *Wulf.* (1): 73.8<sup>a</sup>. — I. (0).

**mærsian** [-igan], *glorify, praise*: P. (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 161.6<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 324<sup>a</sup>. — I. (0).

**manian** [**monian**], *admonish*: P. (243): *Bede* (2): 70.26 = 51.19; 72.4 = 51.31. — *Greg.* (241): 13.20, 22, 24 = 130.6, 8, 9; 15.1, 3, 5, 7, 9, 11, 14, 16, 18, 20, 22 = 130.10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20; 17.3, 6, 8, 10, 12, 14, 17, 20, 24 = 130.23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 132.1, 3, 6; 19.1, 3, 7, 12, 17, 20, 23 = 132.7, 8, 11, 15, 18, 20, 21; 21.1, 4, 7, 11, 15, 18 = 132.23, 25, 27, 29, 134.1, 3; 177.11 = 132.8; 179.14, 15, 19 = 134.10, 14; 181.3, 5 = 134.20, 21; 187.12, 14 = 140.8, 9; 189.12, 14 = 142.2, 3; 191.12, 16, 19, 21 = 142.21, 23, 24; 195.15, 25 = 146.13, 22; 197.4 = 146.26; 201.7, 9, 10, 11, 13 = 150.8, 9, 10, 11, 13; 203.3, 5, 6, 8<sup>a</sup> = 152.2, 3, 4, 5; 205.19 = 154.12; 209.1, 4 = 156.13, 14; 215.3, 5 = 162.2, 3; 220.18 = 166.28; 229.3, 10, 12, 13 = 172.19, 26, 27, 28; 231.15 = 174.24; 237.4, 6, 14 = 178.20, 21, 23; 247.3, 5, 6, 11, 14 = 186.17, 18, 19, 24, 27; 251.20 = 190.20; 253.23 = 192.12; 255.13 = 192.25; 257.19 = 194.19; 261.1 = 196.15; 263.1, 6, 7, 14 = 198.7, 9, 10, 17; 265.14 = 200.10; 271.6, 9 = 204.12, 13; 273.2 = 206.1; 275.2 = 206.23; 281.16, 18, 19, 21 = 212.20, 21, 22, 23; 287.20, 22 = 218.5, 6; 289.4 = 218.11; 291.3, 4 = 218.26, 220.2; 299.1, 3 = 226.2, 3; 302.13, 15 = 228.27, 28; 305.10, 12 = 232.19, 20; 307.4, 7, 19 = 234.21, 24, 236.8; 308.13, 16 = 236.21, 33; 313.6, 18 = 240.21, 29; 315.8 = 242.15; 319.11, 14, 16 = 246.11, 13, 15; 321.5 = 246.26; 227.12, 24 = 252.18, 29; 335.1, 5, 9 = 258.13, 16, 19; 337.5 = 260.16; 339.6, 22, 24 = 262.7, 21; 341.8 = 262.29; 345.4, 6, 7 = 266.8, 9, 10; 349.18 = 270.10; 351.3, 18 = 270.20, 272.6; 355.8, 11 = 274.14, 16; 357.12, 14, 15 = 276.18, 19, 20; 361.5 = 278.30; 363.8 = 280.27; 365.1, 5, 7, 13 = 282.16, 18, 20, 26; 369.1, 22, 25 = 286.3, 24, 27; 371.28 = 286.27, 288.7; 375.12, 17, 21, 22 = 292.2, 5, 7, 8; 383.20, 31, 34 = 298.19, 27, 30; 387.1, 5, 8, 16 = 302.16, 18, 21, 304.1; 389.28 = 306.16; 393.13, 20, 22, 23 = 310.13, 20, 21, 22; 395.31 = 314.7; 397.8 = 314.20; 399.36 = 318.23; 401.1 = 318.23; 401.22, 31 = 320.12, 21; 403.7, 10, 11, 18, 27 = 322.5, 7, 8, 15, 24; 405.7 = 324.10; 407.19, 22, 27 = 326.25, 27, 328.3; 409.22, 28 = 330.3, 8; 411.20 = 332.4; 413.3, 5, 6, 14, 22, 32 = 332.21, 23, 24, 334.6, 15, 26; 415.8 = 336.6; 417.3, 31 = 338.8, 340.5; 419.17, 20, 22 = 342.2, 4, 6; 421.24, 36 = 344.13, 23; 423.29 = 346.23; 427.8, 11, 12, 17, 20 = 350.13, 16, 18, 23, 25; 429.2, 7, 29, 33 = 352.18, 24, 354.19, 21; 431.1, 11 = 354.23, 356.4; 433.31<sup>a</sup> = 360.1; 435.29 = 362.6; 437.1, 5, 7, 23, 32, 33 = 362.11, 14, 17, 364.14; 439.7, 9, 17 = 364.21, 366.2; 441.1, 4 = 366.25, 27; 445.4, 26 = 372.17, 374.11; 447.22, 26, 28, 31 = 376.10, 12, 15, 18; 449.11, 20, 22 = 378.7, 19. — I. (0).

**manigan** } : see *manian*.  
**manigean** }

**metan**, *measure, compare*: P. (3): *Boeth.* (2): 29.4 = 36.28; 72.12 = 0. — *Met.* (1): 21.42 (or absolute?). — I. (0).

**midligan**, *bridle*: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 275.10 = 208.5. — I. (0).

**monian**: see *manian*.

**myndgian**, *remind*: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 303.7 = 230.5. — I. (0).

**nemnan**, *name*: P. (1): *Bened.* (1): 139.29 = 0. — I. (0).

**niman**, *take*: P. (1): *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 5. — I. (0).

**oferbugan**, *deceive*: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 295.21 = 224.2. — I. (0).

**offrian** [-*igan*], *offer*: P. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 310.38<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

**offrian**: see *offrian*.

**onbærnan**, *incite*: P. (1): *Bede* (1): 74.2 = 53.5. — I. (0).

**ondrædan**, *dread, fear*: P. (8): *Bede* (1): 86.9 = 60.7. — *Greg.* (1): 105.25 = 72.26. — *Wærf.* (1): 63.14 = 193 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 322<sup>b</sup><sup>1</sup>, 522<sup>b</sup><sup>1</sup>, 592<sup>b</sup><sup>1, 2</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 18.283. — I. (2): *Greg.* (2): 139.3 = 98.31; 383.26 = 298.24.

**ongean**: see *ongietan*.

**ongietan** [-*eo-*, -*y-*], *understand, consider*: P. (5): *Bede* (3): 224.24 = 172.7; 230.21 = 175.13; 440.30 = 313.16. — *Wærf.* (2): 295.22 = 357 A<sup>2</sup>; 322.25<sup>b</sup> = 388 D<sup>2</sup>. — I. (8): *Greg.* (1): 377.22 = 294.6. — *Wærf.* (5): 66.26 = 196 C<sup>1</sup>; 245.21 = 300 C<sup>1</sup>; 270.10 = 329 B<sup>1</sup>; 323.7 = 389 A<sup>2</sup>; 342.18 = 416 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 81.20. — *Læce.* (1): 61.32.

**ongitan**: see *ongietan*.

**ongytan**: see *ongietan*.

**onherian**, *imitate*: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 13.25<sup>b</sup> = 157 A<sup>2</sup>. — I. (0).

**onscunian** [*an-*], *shun*: P. (3): *Boeth.* (1): 41.9 = 44.4. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 65.13. — *Wulf.* (1): 242.2. — I. (0).

**profian**, *assume to be*: P. (2): *Laws* (2): 14, *Wihtræd*, c. 28<sup>a</sup>; 98, *Ine*, c. 20<sup>a</sup>. — I. (0).

**rædan**, *read*: P. (0). — I. (2): *Chron.* (1): 128<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 135.6.

**reccan** [-*cean*], *give, direct, explain*: P. (2): *Bede* (1): 66.11<sup>a</sup> = 49.15. — *Greg.* (1): 265.22 = 200.16. — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 441.12 = 368.9.

reccean: see *reccan*.

retan, cheer: P. (2): *Greg.* (2): 181.6<sup>b</sup> = 134.23; 181.19 = 136.6. — I. (0).

rihtan, correct: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 263.3<sup>a</sup> = 320 D. — I. (0).

sceawian, consider, seek: P. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 122.21 = B. 152 C<sup>2</sup>. — I. (2): *Wærf.* (2): 239.26 = 292 C<sup>2</sup>; 349.27<sup>a</sup> = 428 C.

secan [-cean], seek: P. (6): *Bede* (2): 50.10<sup>b</sup> = 30.17; 78.24 = 56.2. — *Greg.* (1): 171.8 = 126.5. — *Laws* (1): 320, II Cnut, c. 17, § 1. — *Wærf.* (1): 91.17<sup>a</sup> = 216 A. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 120<sup>t</sup>. — I. (2): *Greg.* (1): 151.11<sup>a</sup> = 108.22. — *Wærf.* (1): 245.23 = 300 C<sup>2</sup>.

secean: see *secan*.

secgan, say: P. (5): *Boeth.* (1): 41.3 = 0. — *Wærf.* (1): 139.32 = B. 168 A. — *And.* (1): 1481. — *Gu.* (2): 502; 510. — I. (14): *Bede* (3): 208.32 = 163.17; 298.12 = 228.6; 334.30 = 254.31. — *Boeth.* (1): 39.10 = 42.63. — *Greg.* (8): 215.6 = 162.4; 215.12 = 162.9; 220.24 = 168.5; 231.4 = 174.11; 231.10 = 174.18; 233.16 = 176.14; 235.10 = 178.2; 261.3 = 196.16. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 63.16. — *Wulf.* (1): 204.2.

sellan [-ie-, -y-], give, distribute: P. (9): *Bede* (1): 66.11<sup>b</sup> = 49.15. — *Bened.* (1): 55.18 = 104.11. — *Mat.* (2): 17.22; 20.23<sup>b</sup>. — *Læce.* (5): 62.22, 28; 63.33; 64.2; 68.31. — I. (1): *Læce.* (1): 63.22<sup>b</sup>.

sendan, send, put: P. (1): *L.* (1): 6.38. — I. (0).

singan, sing: P. (4): *Greg.* (1): 409.10 = 328.21. — *Bened.* (3): 6.15 = 62.1; 33.6 = 62.1; 33.12 = 62.10.

siellan: see *sellan*.

slean, slay: P. (2): *Laws* (2): 14, Wihtræd, c. 28<sup>b</sup>; 98, Ine, c. 20<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

smeagan [-gean], consider, weigh: P. (6): *Greg.* (1): 153.13 = 110.20. — *Bened.* (1): 16.9 = 28.20. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 254<sup>t</sup>, 340<sup>b</sup>; II. 280<sup>m</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 185.6<sup>a</sup>. — I. (10): *Bede* (1): 84.3<sup>a</sup> = 59.5. — *Greg.* (1): 59.21<sup>b</sup> = 34.27. — *Bened.* (1): 15.6 = 26.16. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 33.17. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 308<sup>m</sup>, 328<sup>b</sup>, 342<sup>m</sup>; II. 276<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 282.284. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 12.1.

smi(e)rwān, anoint: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 73.36<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

sorgian, lament: P. (2): *Bede* (1): 86.10<sup>a</sup> = 60.8. — *Wulf.* (1): 185.6<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).

sparian, spare: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 141.9 = 100.29. — I. (0).

sprecan, speak: P. (4): *Bede* (1): 66.8 = 49.14. — *Greg.* (1): 59.7 = 34.17. — *Wærf.* (1): 263.6 = 321 A<sup>2</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 19.16. — I. (0).

stillan, make calm: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 54.4. — I. (0).

swingan, chastise: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 265.16 = 200.10. — I. (0).

syllan: see *sellan*.

tæcan, teach: P. (0). — I. (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 151.12.

tælan, blame: P. (0). — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 64.18 = 60.44.

talian, consider: P. (2): *Boeth.* (1): 56.7 = 54.61. — *Wulf.* (1): 25.6. — I. (0).

tellan, account, reckon: P. (6): *Boeth.* (5): 54.11 = 53.34; 56.66 = 53.60; 56.10 = 54.63; 110.20 = 95.125; 111.2 = 0. — *Bened.* (1): 77.5 = 144.23. — I. (0).

teweorpan [to-], cast aside: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 443.33 = 372.10. — I. (0).

tilian, strive: P. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 349.6 = 428 A<sup>4</sup>.

trahtnigan, expound: P. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 332<sup>t</sup> 2. — I. (0).

trymman, strengthen: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 203.10 = 152.8. — I. (0).

twoegian, doubt: P. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 234.12 = 177.4.

ðafian, allow: P. (1): *Laws* (1): 128, Ælfred and Guthrum, c. 5. — I. (0).

ðencan, think, consider: P. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 16.19 = 26.43. — I. (4): *Bede* (1): 66.4<sup>a</sup> = 49.8<sup>a</sup>. — *Greg.* (2): 275.17 = 208.11; 463.32 = 400.14. — *Laws* (1): 146, I Æthelstan, c. 3.

ðiggan, take, eat: P. (7): *Læce.* (7): 50.20<sup>a</sup>, 37; 63.27, 34; 74.7; 76.34; 79.17. — I. (0).

ðrañian, reprove, correct: P. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* 151.12 = 108.23.

ðreagean, rebuke: P. (4): *Greg.* (3): 157.24 = 114.15; 159.17 = 116.1; 265.15 = 200.10. — *Wærf.* (1): 263.3<sup>b</sup> = 320 D. — I. (0).

ðreagian: see *ðreagean*.

ðreatian [-gan]: P. (1): *Greg.* (1): 183.3<sup>a</sup> = 136.15. — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 151.11<sup>b</sup> = 108.22.

ðreatigan: see *ðreatian*.

underfon, receive: P. (2): *Bede* (1): 182.25 = 148.19. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 336.222. — I. (0).

undersecan [-cean], investigate: P. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 209.12 = 156.21.

understandan, understand: P. (17): *Bened.* (1): 23.7 = 46.9. — *Ælf. Hom.* (14): I. 92<sup>m</sup>, 262<sup>b</sup> 1, 2, 3, 264<sup>b</sup>; II. 80<sup>t</sup>, 210<sup>t</sup>, 244<sup>m</sup>, 270<sup>b</sup> 1, 2, 362<sup>b</sup>, 554<sup>t</sup>, 564<sup>b</sup>, 566<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Int.* (1): 17<sup>c</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 192.21. — I. (9): *Ælf. Hom.* (5): I. 132<sup>b</sup>, 492<sup>b</sup>;

- II. 204<sup>t</sup>, 458<sup>t</sup>, 538<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (3): *Ælf. Int.* (3): 18, 145, 152. — *Wulf.* (1): 113.8.
- wafian**, *wonder at*: P. (5): *Wærf.* (5): 82.24 = 208 B<sup>1</sup>; 120.12 = B. 150 B; 172.22 = B. 198 C; 187.8 = 228 B; 240.24 = 293 C<sup>2</sup>. — I. (0).
- wanian**, *reduce*: P. (1): *Læce.* (1): 153.1. — I. (0).
- warnian**, *take care*: P. (0). — I. (9): *Laws* (1): 444, *Wifmannes Beweddung*, c. 9. — *Bened.* (2): 25.18 = 50.15; 129.4 = 198.12. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 536<sup>t</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (4): 11.24, 62, 119; 12.90. — *Wulf.* (1): 147.9.
- wenan**, *expect, hope*: P. (2): *Boeth.* (2): 39.9 = 42.62; 148.27 = 0. — I. (3): *Boeth.* (1): 37.30 = 42.43. — *Solil.* (1): 65.25. — *Ps.* (1): 77.10.
- weorðian** [wurð-], *honor*: P. (10): *Boeth.* (3): 72.27<sup>c</sup> = 0; 75.13 = 67.18; 75.14 = 0. — *Greg.* (1): 181.20 = 136.6. — *Oros.* (1): 126.32 = 0. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 161.6<sup>b</sup>; 197.5<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 462. — *Wulf.* (2): 73.8<sup>b</sup>; 197.24<sup>c</sup>. — I. (0).
- weotan**: see *witan*.
- wiernan** [-y-], *forbid*: P. (0). — I. (1): *Læce.* (1): 100.37.
- wilnian**, *wish, desire*: P. (2): *Boeth.* (1): 31.3 = 37.53. — *Wærf.* (1): 91.17<sup>b</sup> = 216 A. — I. (2): *Boeth.* (2): 39.11 = 43.64; 110.25 = 95.128.
- witan** [weotan], *know*: P. (5): *Bede* (1): 76.10 = 54.23. — *Wærf.* (1): 329.4 = 396 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 129.26. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 11.86; 12.140. — I. (46): *Bede* (1): 334.26 = 254.27. — *Greg.* (8): 135.15 = 96.13; 151.8<sup>a</sup> = 108.18; 157.14 = 114.9; 269.19 = 204.1; 293.14 = 222.4; 306.18 = 234.16; 306.20 = 234.16; 459.6 = 392.4. — *Laws* (1): 442, *Wifmannes Beweddung*, *Inscr.*, c. 2. — *Wærf.* (6): 281.3 = 341 B<sup>1</sup>; 291.24 = 352 D; 323.25 = 389 C; 339.1 = 409 B<sup>1</sup>; 348.4 = 425 B; 349.18 = 428 B. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 63.35; 209.19. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 110<sup>t</sup>; II. 292<sup>b</sup>, 546<sup>t</sup>, 608<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (7): 424.155; 458.284; 460.307; 466.403; 470.464; XXV. 812; XXVII. 143. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Pref. to Gen.* 24.16. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (10): *Ælf. Gr.* (10): 18.20; 31.15; 60.2; 75.4; 113.13; 118.18; 154.1; 179.6, 16; 198.4. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (3): 11.49; 12.21, 33. — *Wulf.* (2): 201.23; 218.6. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Neot* (1): 195.
- wiðmeotan**: see *wiðmetan*.
- wiðmetan** [-meotan], *compare*: P. (5): *Bede* (1): 408.5 = 295.24. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 486<sup>b</sup> 1, 2, 596<sup>b</sup>; II. 230<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).
- wuldrian**, *glorify*: P. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 197.5<sup>b</sup>. — I. (0).
- wundrian** [wynd-], *wonder at, admire*: P. (13): *Bede* (2): 178.11 = 145.23; 188.2 = 151.16. — *Boeth.* (2): 72.27<sup>b</sup> = 0; 104.4 = 88.12. — *Oros.* (2): 34.31 = 0; 134.24 = 0. — *Solil.* (1): 12.24. — *Wærf.* (3): 67.31 = 197 A; 90.19 = 213 B<sup>1</sup>; 240.23 = 293 C<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 33.12. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 18.322. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 26. — I. (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Nic.* (1): 492.30.
- wyndrian**: see *wundrian*.
- wyrcan**, *work, make*: P. (2): *Læce.* (2): 5.30; 70.28. — I. (0).
- wyrnan**: see *wiernan*.
- yldan**: see *ieldan*.

## II. THE INFINITIVE ACTIVE IN SENSE.

Given in full in Chapter VII, pp. 102–104.

## B. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES FUTURITY.

Given in full in Chapter VII, pp. 104–105.

## C. THE INFINITIVE DENOTES PURPOSE.

Given in full in Chapter VII, pp. 105–106.

## VIII. The Predicative Infinitive with Accusative Subject.

## AS OBJECT.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Normally the infinitive is uninflected, but sporadically it is inflected.

## 1. Uninflected.

**æteawan**, show, demonstrate (1): *Bede* (1): 84.2 = 59.4.

**afindan**, find (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 9.364.

**alætan**, allow, permit (2): *Beow.* (1): 2666. — *Dan.* (1): 591.

**andettan**: see *ondettan*.

**bebeodan** [bi-], command (16): *Pr. Ps.* (2): 41.9<sup>a</sup>; 43.6. — *Ex.* (6): 217<sup>a, b</sup>; 218<sup>a, b</sup>; 219<sup>a, b</sup>. — *El.* (1): 980. — *And.* (7): 729; 730; 773; 775<sup>a, b</sup>; 777; 779.

**began** [began], urge, force (1): *Ps.* (1): 143.14 (?).

**behealdan** [bi-], behold, see (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 32<sup>m</sup>.

**bibeodan**: see *bebeodan*.

**biddan**, bid, request, command (12): *Bede* (1): 6.13 = 16.3. — *Chron.* (1): 173<sup>t</sup>, 1048 E<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 76.439, 440; 266.70. — *Gen.* (1): 2031. — *Dan.* (2): 359; 542. — *El.* (1): 1101. — *Gu.* (1): 1133. — *And.* (1): 1614. — *Maldon* (1): 170.

**bihealdan**: see *behealdan*.

**cweðan**, say (1): *Wærf.* (1): 203.23 = 248 D.

**don**, make, cause (14): *Bede* (1): 98.27<sup>b</sup> = 81.29<sup>b</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 410, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 4, § 1. — *Ælf. Hom.* (9): I. 64<sup>m</sup>, 468<sup>m, 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>; II. 216<sup>m</sup>, 296<sup>b</sup>, 442<sup>b</sup>, 600<sup>m</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 196.1, 2. — *Ps.* (1): 103.30.

**eowan**, show (1): *Wærf.* (1): 200.14 = 244 C<sup>t</sup>.

**findan**, find, discover (10): *Oros.* (1): 128.14 = 129.12. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 452<sup>t</sup>. — *L.* (1): 19.32. — *Beow.* (5): 119; 1268; 1415; 2271; 3034. — *Jul.* (1): 364. — *Jud.* (1): 278.

**forbeodan**, forbid (1): *Mat.* (1): 19.14.

**foresecgan**, foretell, predict (1): *Bede* (1): 406.21 = 294.23.

**forlætan**, allow, permit (53): *Bede* (1): 318.4 = 243.28. — *Greg.* (1): 467.11 = 404.1. — *Oros.* (1): 212.17 = 213.22. — *Solil.* (3): 5.6; 21.22; 62.27. — *Chron.* (1): 5<sup>t</sup>, *Intr. E.* — *Wærf.* (1): 294.5 = 356 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (6): 59.29; 75.26; 87.14; 127.22; 227.21; 249.15. — *Mart.* (1): 156.21. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): II. 192<sup>t, 2</sup>, 194<sup>t</sup>, 396<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (6): 144.429; XXXIII B. 389, 703; XXXI. 1062; XXXIII. 304; XXXIV. 355. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Judges* 3.21. — *Ælf. Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.38<sup>t</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 9.101. — *Wulf.* (5): 232.17; 254.21; 256.4<sup>a, b</sup>, 5. — *Beow.* (1): 3167. — *Gen.* (2): 1406; 1450. — *El.* (2): 598; 794. — *Ju.* (1): 489. — *Gu.* (1): 1148. — *And.* (2): 836; 1589. — *Rid.* (2): 39.4<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 124.3. — *D. R.* (1): 62. — *F. I.* (1): 75. — *Maldon* (3): 150; 156; 322. — *Prayers* (1): IV. 49. — *S. & S.* (1): 456. — *Schöpfung.* (1): 101.

**geacsian** [geaxian], learn by asking (4): *Bl. Hom.* (2): 109.2<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Wulf.* (2): 2.2, 5.

**geaxian**: see *geacsian*.

**gecyðan**, make known (1): *Wærf.* (1): 137.7 = B. 166 A.

**gedon**, make, cause (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 239.16. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXIII. 316.

**gefelan**, feel, perceive (2): *Bede* (1): 156.32 = 130.30. — *Wærf.* (1): 236.1 = 288 B.

**gefrigan**: see *gefrignan*.

**gefrignan** [gefrigan], learn by inquiry, hear (41): *Beow.* (9): 1012; 1029; 1970; 2485; 2695; 2754<sup>a, b</sup>; 2773; 2775. — *Gen.* (5): 1961; 2060; 2242; 2483; 2540. — *Ex.* (3): 7; 99; 286. — *Dan.* (6): 1; 2; 3; 57; 459; 739. — *Chr.* (1): 79. — *And.* (1): 1706. — *Rid.* (5): 46.1, 2<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 49.1. — *Jud.* (4): 8; 9; 247; 249. — *Har.* (1): 161. — *Fallen Angels* (1): 226. — *Finns.* (2): 40; 41. — *S. & S.* (2): 179; 181. — *Wids.* (1): 10.

**gehatan**, promise (4): *Bede* (3): 122.34 = 99.25; 316.29 = 243.22; 394.27 = 287.15. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXIII B. 693.

**gehawian**, see (1): *Wærf.* (1): 250.26 = 305 C.

**geheran**: see *gehieran*.

**gehieran** [-e-, -y-], hear (53): *Bede* (11): 156.21 = 130.19; 174.17 = 143.22; 212.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 164.31; 264.21 = 208.22; 264.28 = 208.29; 322.3 = 245.28; 352.10<sup>a, b</sup> = 264.7, 8; 400.18 = 290.8; 470.17 = 346.3. — *Wærf.* (3): 117.22 = B. 148 A<sup>3</sup>; 153.22 = B. 180 B; 329.9 = 396 D. — *Bl. Hom.* (4): 15.15; 19.18; 73.36; 75.1. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): XX. 74. — *Ælf.*

*Hom.* (4): I. 142<sup>b</sup>, 314<sup>m</sup>, 420<sup>m</sup>; II. 518<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXXI. 80, 1397. — *Mk.* (1): 14.58. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (3): 10.371; 15.297 = 217.337; 18.381. — *Minor Prose* (5): *Chad* (5): 103; 105; 111; 142; 145. — *Beow.* (2): 786; 787. — *Gen.* (3): 508<sup>a, b</sup>; 2409. — *Chr.* (2): 797; 798. — *El.* (2): 443<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ju.* (2): 609; 629. — *Ps.* (1): 61.11<sup>a</sup>. — *Met.* (2): 9.15; 13.47. — *Fallen Angels* (1): 134. — *Fates of Apostles* (1): 24. — *H. L.* (1): 22. — *S. & S.* (2): 425<sup>a, b</sup>.

**gehihtan**: see *gehyhtan*.

**gehyhtan** [-i-], *hope* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 557.

**gehyran**: see *gehieran*.

**gelefan**: see *geliefan*.

**geliefan** [-e-, -y-], *believe* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 207.25 = 253 B.

**gelyfan**: see *geliefan*.

**gemetan**, *meet, find* (26): *Bede* (2): 386.3 = 282.5; 398.19 = 289.12. — *Boeth.* (1): 61.18 = 58.7. — *Greg.* (1): 415.23 = 336.22. — *Chron.* (1): 124<sup>b</sup>, 982 C. — *Wærf.* (6): 99.23 = B. 130 B; 124.11 = B. 154 C<sup>4</sup>; 156.10 = B. 182 B<sup>2</sup>; 206.6 = 252 A<sup>4</sup>; 330.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 397 B<sup>1, 2</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 237.18; 239.23. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): XX. 49. — *Mart.* (1): 112.5. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 502<sup>m</sup>; II. 180<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXX. 164; XXXIII. 185. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (2): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (2): 102.31<sup>t</sup>, 31<sup>m</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Apol.* (1): 22.28; *Nic.* (1): 494.18. — *And.* (3): 145; 247; 1062.

**gemittan**, *meet, find* (2): *Gen.* (1): 2426. — *Spirit of Men* (1): 46.

**gemunan**, *remember, recall* (4): *Bede* (1): 322.19 = 246.9. — *Wærf.* (2): 281.9 = 341 B<sup>2</sup>; 283.1 = 344 B. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 48<sup>m</sup>.

**geseon**, *see* (319): *Bede* (25): 102.32 = 84.7; 112.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 91.10, 11; 128.16 = 108.22; 144.4 = 117.13; 174.7 = 143.14; 174.18 = 143.26; 184.33 = 149.30; 214.14 = 166.7; 270.24 = 211.32; 270.25 = 211.33; 296.6 = 226.21; 340.9 = 257.12; 342.23 = 259.16; 354.2 = 264.28; 418.11 = 301.7; 426.8<sup>a</sup> = 305.22<sup>b</sup>; 426.33<sup>a, b</sup> = 306.15; 430.31 = 308.11; 432.24<sup>a, b</sup> = 308.19<sup>a, b</sup>; 434.2 = 309.14; 474.19<sup>a, b</sup> = 348.10<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Boeth.* (4): 97.18 = 0; 105.27 = 90.30; 106.16 = 91.17; 111.13 = 95.1. — *Greg.* (3): 101.19 = 70.7; 255.24, 25 = 194.5. — *Oros.* (11): 3.24 = 0; 3.26<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 42.33 = 43.33; 44.2 = 43.33; 142.15 = 143.15; 154.5 = 155.2; 162.6, 7 = 163.5; 188.25 = 189.23; 262.27 = 263.27. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 48.8 = 48.11. — *Wærf.* (30): 26.25 = 165 C<sup>1</sup>; 95.15 = B. 126 A; 101.13 = B. 132 B<sup>4</sup>; 116.15 = B. 146 C; 119.6<sup>a, b</sup> = B. 148 C<sup>2</sup>; 122.11 = B. 152 C<sup>1</sup>; 156.28 = B. 182 C<sup>3</sup>; 171.2, 4 = B. 198 B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 181.22<sup>a, b</sup> = 220 B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 217.1 = 264 C<sup>4</sup>; 225.21, 22 = 276 B; 250.27 = 308 A<sup>1</sup>; 267.27<sup>a</sup> = 328 A<sup>1</sup>; 271.24 = 332 B<sup>1</sup>; 273.10 = 333 A<sup>1</sup>; 273.15 = 333 A<sup>2</sup>; 275.16 = 336 A<sup>1</sup>; 280.5 = 340 D; 286.21 = 248 B<sup>1</sup>; 288.10 = 349 A<sup>1</sup>; 289.15<sup>a</sup> = 349 C<sup>2</sup>; 298.6 = 360 B; 304.7 = 368 A<sup>3</sup>; 322.18 = 388 C<sup>2</sup>; 325.28 = 392 C<sup>1</sup>; 347.8 = 424 C. — *Bened.* (1): 25.20 = 50.18. — *Bl. Hom.* (19): 129.5, 7, 22; 177.15<sup>a, b, c</sup>, 16<sup>a, b</sup>, 17<sup>a, b</sup>; 187.34; 191.23; 199.19<sup>b</sup>, 26; 217.21; 227.24; 237.23; 239.21; 245.17. — *Pr. Gu.* (11): II. 55, 56, 57; V. 181, 196, 198, 273; VIII. 4; IX. 8; XI. 17; XXI. 23. — *Mart.* (18): 2.13, 15; 8.1; 16.25; 24.16, 18; 38.21<sup>a, b</sup>; 56.9, 10, 19; 70.15; 82.11; 84.11; 96.9; 158.21; 168.20; 172.5. — *Ælf. Hom.* (29): I. 42<sup>b</sup>, 48<sup>t</sup>, 48<sup>b</sup>, 68<sup>t</sup>, 72<sup>t</sup>, 72<sup>b</sup>, 74<sup>b</sup>, 238<sup>m</sup>, 310<sup>t</sup>, 330<sup>m</sup>, 422<sup>m</sup>, 562<sup>t</sup>, 578<sup>b</sup>, 584<sup>b</sup>, 584<sup>b</sup>, 584<sup>b</sup>; II. 28<sup>b</sup>, 150<sup>b</sup>, 272<sup>m</sup>, 304<sup>t</sup>, 468<sup>t</sup>, 468<sup>m</sup>, 514<sup>t</sup>, 516<sup>t</sup>, 518<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (20): 64.242; 80.503; 184.250; 394.164; 518.508; XXXIII B. 174, 180, 401, 773; XXVI. 156; XXVII. 92; XXXI. 357, 682, 1091, 1184, 1314, 1315, 1364; XXXIII. 303; XXXIV. 272. — *Ælf. Hept.* (10); *Gen.* 28.12<sup>a</sup>; 37.25; 41.2, 3, 5; — *Ex.* 2.13; 20.18; 23.5; — *Jos.* 5.13; 8.20. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (2): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 150.16; *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.34<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (16): *Mat.* (1): 20.3; — *Mk.* (5): 5.15; 7.2; 13.14; 14.62<sup>a</sup>; 16.14; — *L.* (3): 21.1, 2; 24.39; — *J.* (7): 5.6, 19; 6.19; 20.5, 6, 12; 21.9. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (3): 2.115; 3.476; 5.134. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (7): 10.228; 13.127; 15.129, 130 = 211.116, 117; 15.207; 18.361, 376. — *Wulf.* (4): 140.12; 187.11<sup>a, b</sup>; 199.14. — *Minor Prose* (7): *Alex.* (2): 255, 642; — *Apol.* (3): 18.19; 24.15, 36; — *Chad* (1): 214; — *Nic.* (1): 504.30. — *Beow.* (18): 222; 729; 1348; 1426; 1427; 1517; 1586; 1662; 2545; 2546; 2605; 2758; 2760; 2767; 2824; 3040; 3128; 3129. — *Gen.* (13): 109; 134; 548; 669; 773; 1321; 1822; 2088; 2403; 2578; 2778; 2877; 2927. — *Ex.* (7): 104; 156; 157<sup>a, b</sup>; 160<sup>a, b</sup>; 571. — *Dan.* (8): 22; 23; 24; 545; 553; 602; 603; 727. — *Chr.* (10): 498; 507; 513; 522; 741; 925; 1129; 1249; 1253; 1291. — *El.* (5): 244<sup>a, b</sup>; 245; 246; 1111. — *Gu.* (2): 28<sup>a, b</sup>. — *And.* (9): 495; 849; 882; 993; 1006; 1448; 1494; 1502; 1691. — *Rid.* (6): 30.2; 37.1; 57.2; 69.1; 75.1; 76.1. — *Jud.* (1): 137. — *Ps.* (1): 127.7. — *D. R.* (6): 5; 15; 22; 34; 36; 52. — *Fates of Men* (1): 47. — *Hil.* (2): 51; 53. — *S. & S.* (2): 235<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Versuchung* (1): 51. — *Wald. A.* (3): 15<sup>a, b</sup>; 16. — *Wand.* (3): 47<sup>a, b</sup>; 48.

**getreowan**: see *getriewan*.

getriewan, *trust, hope* (1): *Bede* (1): 190.30 = 153.14.

geðafian, *allow* (4): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 45.19. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 92<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 108.323, 324.

geðolian [gi-], *allow* (1): *Laws* (1): 412, *Judicium Dei V*, c. 2, § 4<sup>b</sup>.

geunnan, *grant* (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Æthelw.* (1): 53.

gewitan, *perceive, observe* (1): *And.* (1): 802<sup>a</sup>.

giðolian: see geðolian.

habban, *have* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 440<sup>m</sup>.

hatan, *command, order* (448): *Bede* (26): 34.25<sup>a, b</sup> = 18.25; 58.9 = 45.17; 58.20 = 45.29; 58.28 = 46.5; 118.8, 9 = 94.22; 138.11<sup>a, b</sup> = 113.19<sup>a, b</sup>; 186.4<sup>a, b</sup> = 150.6, 7; 232.8 = 176.1; 260.32 = 206.27; 266.2 = 209.5; 320.3, 4 = 244.31; 340.23 = 257.28; 350.30 = 263.27; 366.17 = 271.24; 388.24 = 283.31; 388.28 = 284.3; 388.31 = 0; 392.28 = 286.8; 398.8 = 288.27<sup>b</sup>; 438.2 = 311.15; 462.19 = 329.5. — *Boeth.* (2): 36.21 = 41.26; 136.26 = 116.39. — *Greg.* (1): 279.19 = 210.26. — *Oros.* (9): 3.13 = 0; 68.23 = 0; 80.30 = 0; 202.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 201.32, 33; 202.8 = 203.1; 212.6 = 213.10; 222.3 = 0; 280.12 = 281.13. — *Solil.* (1): 49.1 = 0. — *Chron.* (9): 12<sup>t</sup>, 449 A<sup>a</sup>; 22<sup>m</sup>, 616 A<sup>a, b</sup>; 104<sup>t</sup>, 923 A<sup>d, e, f</sup>; 121<sup>b</sup>, 975 D; 130<sup>m</sup>, 995 F<sup>f</sup>; 130<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>w</sup>. — *Wærfl.* (12): 2.7 = 0; 10.4 = 0; 34.22 = 172 B<sup>t</sup>; 58.13 = 189 C<sup>t</sup>; 58.17 = 189 C<sup>2</sup>; 59.3 = 189 D; 80.13 = 205 C<sup>t</sup>; 144.20 = B. 172 A<sup>5</sup>; 175.18 = B. 202 A<sup>2</sup>; 297.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 360 A<sup>1, 2</sup>; 337.37 = 408 A. — *Bened.* (1): 70.18 = 134.7. — *Bl. Hom.* (10): 21.30; 41.34; 139.13; 173.11; 181.5; 217.26; 219.16<sup>a, b</sup>; 229.15; 247.26. — *Mart.* (25): 24.29; 32.5; 58.14, 15; 80.1<sup>a, b</sup>; 82.6<sup>a</sup>; 94.3; 96.14; 108.19, 20, 25; 114.20<sup>a, b</sup>; 118.9; 120.4; 132.8<sup>a</sup>; 136.16; 166.15<sup>b</sup>; 170.13; 184.23<sup>a, b</sup>; 214.10; 216.23, 24. — *Ælf. Hom.* (61): I. 28<sup>t</sup>, 58<sup>t</sup>, 234<sup>m</sup>, 450<sup>b</sup>, 460<sup>b</sup>, 466<sup>m</sup>, 526<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>; II. 32<sup>t</sup>, 32<sup>b</sup>, 36<sup>t</sup>, 66<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 106<sup>m</sup>, 136<sup>t, 1, 2, 3</sup>, 146<sup>b</sup>, 162<sup>t</sup>, 168<sup>b, 3</sup>, 170<sup>b</sup>, 178<sup>t, 2</sup>, 178<sup>m</sup>, 178<sup>b, 2</sup>, 180<sup>b, 2, 3</sup>, 190<sup>b</sup>, 196<sup>t</sup>, 196<sup>m</sup>, 198<sup>b</sup>, 234<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 242<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 244<sup>t, 2</sup>, 246<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 248<sup>m</sup>, 304<sup>b, 3</sup>, 310<sup>b, 4</sup>, 330<sup>t</sup>, 338<sup>t</sup>, 346<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 384<sup>m, 1, 2</sup>, 388<sup>b, 2</sup>, 390<sup>b</sup>, 398<sup>b</sup>, 416<sup>t</sup>, 440<sup>t</sup>, 470<sup>b</sup>, 474<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 476<sup>b</sup>, 486<sup>t, 2</sup>, 500<sup>b, 2</sup>, 510<sup>b</sup>, 516<sup>m, 1, 2</sup>, 548<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (94): 38.215; 46.361; 64.235; 78.465, 474; 84.577; 94.66; 96.112; 98.142; 104.230; 108.329; 114.409; 116.14; 146.464<sup>a, b</sup>; 147; 148.13; 190.357<sup>a, b</sup>, 360; 194.411; 234.241, 242, 245<sup>a, b</sup>; 236.258; 240.15; 302.277; 308.24; 310.56; 314.104<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 320.12, 13, 16, 17; 344.127<sup>a</sup>, 128; 354.262; 388.72; 390.96; 392.145; 394.163<sup>a, b</sup>; 406.375<sup>a, b</sup>; 462.342; 506.308; XXIV. 16, 62<sup>a, b</sup>, 170<sup>b</sup>, 174; XXV. 21, 23, 135, 217, 218<sup>a, b</sup>, 689, 792, 848; XXVIII. 41, 55<sup>a, b</sup>, 65, 105; XXIX. 79; XXX. 410; XXXI. 214, 538, 541, 554, 632, 914, 1044, 1110, 1133, 1156<sup>a, b</sup>; XXXII. 52; XXXIV. 59, 86, 222, 223, 352; XXXV. 172<sup>a</sup>, 277, 308, 309; XXXVI. 229; XXXVII. 122. — *Ælf. Hept.* (21): *De V. T.* 8.30, 38; *Gen.* 15.5; 22.6; — *Ex.* 7.25; 14.5<sup>t</sup>; 32.5<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Num.* 13.28; 25.4; 31.17; — *Jos.* 1.11<sup>a</sup>; 4.3; 8.4<sup>a, b</sup>; 23.2; — *Judges* 4.22<sup>b</sup>; 7.16<sup>a, b</sup>; 16.21, 25. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (11): *Ælf. Gr.* (3): 125.3<sup>a, b</sup>; 227.8; — *Ælf. Int.* (3): 493, 494<sup>a, b</sup>; — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (5): 101.321<sup>t</sup> (or objective?), 321<sup>b</sup>; 102.36, 37<sup>b, 1</sup> (?), 38<sup>t, 2</sup>. — *Gosp.* (9): *Mat.* (8): 8.18; 14.19, 22<sup>a, b</sup>, 28; 20.28<sup>a, d</sup>, 22.34; — *Mk.* (1): 8.6. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (13): 1.123, 124, 241, 253<sup>a</sup>, 257, 2.84; 8.129; 9.19, 266, 267, 268, 291, 303. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (5): 10.217; 15.49; 16.274, 280; 18.101. — *Wulf.* (3): 2.19; 235.16; 287.24. — *Læce.* (3): 55.25<sup>a, b</sup>; 126.9. — *Minor Prose* (22): *Alex.* (13): 186; 187; 212<sup>a, b</sup>; 237; 253; 276; 388; 485; 495<sup>b</sup>; 496<sup>a, b</sup> (?); 558; — *Apol.* (3): 18.14 = 37<sup>m</sup>; 26.2<sup>b</sup> = 43<sup>b</sup>; 33.13 = 50<sup>m</sup>; — *Nic.* (6): 472.1, 13; 476.22; 478.21; 480.3; 510.32. — *Beow.* (8): 69; 71; 296; 1045; 1869<sup>a, b</sup>; 2802; 2812. — *Gen.* (28): 39; 45; 122; 145; 158; 346<sup>a, b</sup>; 517; 525; 537<sup>a, b</sup>; 538; 830; 832; 865; 942; 943; 1047; 2040; 2228; 2234; 2370; 2506<sup>a, b</sup>; 2508; 2783; 2785; 2799. — *Ex.* (3): 65; 177; 254. — *Dan.* (4): 79; 431; 515; 516. — *Az.* (1): 183. — *Chr.* (8): 295; 297; 888; 1024; 1026; 1227; 1342; 1343. — *El.* (4): 215; 216; 999; 1006. — *Ju.* (6): 60; 76<sup>a, b</sup>; 77<sup>a, b</sup>; 523. — *Gu.* (1): 676. — *And.* (16): 330; 365; 366; 367; 792; 795; 796; 809; 810; 822; 824; 931; 1467; 1576<sup>a, b</sup>; 1623. — *Rid.* (4): 7.5; 41.8, 39; 91.11. — *Jud.* (5): 54; 149; 150; 173; 174. — *Met.* (1): 1.71. — *Ps.* (7): 77.25<sup>a, b</sup>, 68; 80.12; 104.34, 36; 118.4. — *Har.* (3): 156; 158; 237. — *Creed* (1): 32. — *D. R.* (1): 31. — *Gnomic Sayings* (1): 165 (Ex.). — *Maldon* (7): 2; 3<sup>a, b</sup>; 4; 62<sup>a, b</sup>; 74. — *W. C.* (1): 27.

heran: see hieran.

hieran [-e-, -y-], *hear* (13): *Bede* (1): 190.1 = 152.15. — *Chron.* (1): 258<sup>m</sup>, 1127 E<sup>h</sup>. — *Beow.* (3): 1346; 1843; 2023. — *El.* (2): 241; 540. — *Ju.* (1): 1. — *Met.* (1): 8.32. — *Cal.* (1): 102. — *Panther* (3): 9; 11<sup>a, b</sup>.

hyran: see hieran.

læran, *teach* (4): *Bede* (1): 460.3 = 326.27. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 14.108<sup>a, b</sup>. — *L.* (1): 11.1.

lætan, *allow, permit* (occasionally *cause*) (414): *Bede* (2): 156.30 = 130.28; 256.29 = 204.4. — *Boeth.* (14): 6.10 = 0; 8.23 = 5.39; 23.7 = 33.31; 23.9 = 0; 26.7 = 34.83; 49.27 = 0; 49.30



= 0; 72.19 = 65.17; 88.32<sup>b, c</sup> = 0; 104.2 = 88.11; 117.6 = 100.4; 123.27 = 104.137; 136.9 = 0.  
 — *Greg.* (17): 65.14 = 0; 139.8 = 100.4; 139.13 = 100.9; 139.25 = 100.20; 141.1 = 100.25;  
 171.1 = 124.24; 193.25 = 144.29; 279.14 = 210.22; 283.14 = 214.11; 287.12 = 216.26; 289.2  
 = 218.9; 306.9 = 234.6; 321.13 = 248.6; 327.6 = 252.12; 457.13 = 390.3; 457.23 = 390.15;  
 469.5 = 0. — *Oros.* (3): 126.15 = 0; 168.24 = 0; 290.23 = 0. — *Solil.* (5): 14.2; 48.19; 53.16;  
 59.23; 67.10. — *Pr. Ps.* (8): 15.10<sup>a, b</sup>; 29.1 = 29.2; 30.21 = 30.20; 35.11 = 35.12; 37. Intr. = 0;  
 41.11 = 41.10; 42.2. — *Chron.* (9): 133<sup>t</sup>, 999 E; 139<sup>t</sup>, 1009 E<sup>a</sup>; 161<sup>b</sup>, 1038 D; 163<sup>b</sup>, 1043 D;  
 164<sup>b</sup>, 1046 C<sup>b</sup>; 199<sup>m</sup>, 1066 D; 216<sup>m</sup>, 1085 E<sup>c</sup>; 241<sup>m</sup>, 1106 E; 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Lawes* (4): 160,  
 II Æthelstan, c. 20, § 6; 236, V Æthelred, c. 1, § 1; 270, X Æthelred, c. 2; 454, Gerefa, c. 7. —  
*Wærf.* (10): 24.13 = 164 C; 132.29 = B. 162 B; 188.21 = 229 B<sup>1</sup>; 206.1 = 252 A<sup>1</sup>; 234.3<sup>a, b</sup>  
 = 285 B; 239.20<sup>a, b</sup> = 292 C; 276.3 = 336 C; 289.26 = 349 D. — *Bened.* (1): 120.8 = 186.13.  
 — *Bl. Hom.* (10): 23.15; 51.3; 67.31; 69.11, 17; 75.31; 159.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 181.33, 34. — *Pr. Gu.* (2):  
 V. 153<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Mart.* (2): 8.3; 10.25. — *Ælf. Hom.* (17): I. 10<sup>m</sup>, 12<sup>b, 1, 2</sup>, 20<sup>m</sup>, 276<sup>t</sup>, 292<sup>b, 3</sup>, 406<sup>b, 2</sup>,  
 522<sup>b</sup>; II. 208<sup>b</sup>, 358<sup>b, 2</sup>, 408<sup>t</sup>, 416<sup>b, 2</sup>, 426<sup>b</sup>, 466<sup>t</sup>, 486<sup>m</sup>, 508<sup>b</sup>, 594<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (34): 18.147;  
 20.173; 70.353, 354; 120.80; 130.231, 232<sup>a, b</sup>, 233, 234; 176.113, 114; 250.187; 348.167, 168,  
 176, 177; 402.290; 530.681; XXVII. 72; XXVIII. 112; XXX. 134, 433, 442; XXXI. 387, 1004,  
 1452; XXXIII. 120, 293; XXXIV. 70; XXXV. 265, 275; XXXVI. 192; XXXVII. 48. —  
*Ælf. Hept.* (24): *De N. T.* 17.10; — *Gen.* 30.25; 38.16; 44.33; 45.24; — *Ex.* 5.17<sup>a, b</sup>; 6.10, 27;  
 7.13; 8.15; 9.24; 14.5<sup>t</sup>; 22.18; 23.11; — *Lev.* 1.15; 19.29; 23.10; — *Num.* 11.24; — *Deut.* 15.13;  
*Jos.* 2.18; 7.3; *Judges* 4.18<sup>a</sup>; 7.2. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1):  
 102.39. — *Gosp.* (13): *Mat.* (2): 8.22; 13.30<sup>a</sup>; — *Mk.* (4): 1.34; 5.37; 7.12; 10.14; — *L.* (5):  
 8.51; 9.60, 61; 10.40; 18.16; — *J.* (2): 11.44; 18.8. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 8.233. —  
*A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (5): 15.67<sup>a, b</sup>, 68 = 209.56, 57; 15.97 = 0; 15.176 = 213.172. — *Wulf.*  
 (12): 10.7, 8; 14.3<sup>a, b</sup>, 12; 84.11<sup>a, b</sup>; 185.14; 213.30; 224.16; 272.24<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Læce.* (96): 6.31, 36;  
 7.5; 8.26, 36; 11.1, 4, 16, 23; 12.2, 6, 16; 13.2<sup>a, b</sup>; 14.20; 16.31; 21.3, 9; 23.20; 24.14; 27.21;  
 31.7; 32.18, 22; 33.28, 29; 35.36; 36.18, 31; 37.1; 38.8; 41.1<sup>a</sup>, 37; 43.27; 54.16; 57.31; 61.15;  
 61.20<sup>a</sup>; 62.20; 65.36; 72.19; 79.42; 81.6, 16, 18, 30; 82.10; 86.19; 87.26; 94.29; 95.7; 95.25;  
 97.22; 99.23<sup>a</sup>, 30; 100.2; 101.18; 102.27, 34<sup>a</sup>, 104.1; 105.7, 34; 106.1, 3; 108.3, 11, 13; 121.7,  
 13; 122.1; 127.19, 20, 34; 128.12, 19; 129.9, 22<sup>a</sup>, 27<sup>a</sup>, 29; 130.5; 131.8, 19; 135.22; 136.8, 15,  
 26; 138.5; 140.5; 141.21; 142.7; 144.30; 145.5, 21; 146.26; 150.15; 151.22. — *Minor Prose* (6):  
*Apol.* (1): 25.13; — *Cato* (2): 38, 69; — *Chad* (Anhang) (1): 21; *Nic.* (2): 480.18, 490.27.  
 — *Beow.* (16): 48; 397; 864; 865; 1490; 1728; 1996; 2389; 2390; 2551; 2980; 3082; 3083; 3084;  
 3132; 3133. — *Gen.* (19): 239; 253; 258; 438<sup>a</sup>; 955; 1198; 1349; 1373; 1375<sup>a</sup>, 1441; 2111; 2112<sup>a, b</sup>;  
 2130; 2167; 2231; 2471; 2664; 2796. — *Dan.* (2): 683; 722. — *Chr.* (3): 159; 344; 1596.  
 — *El.* (3): 237; 253; 820. — *Ju.* (3): 200; 275; 622. — *Gu.* (7): 336; 491; 749; 921; 924; 1029;  
 1030. — *And.* (9): 832; 833; 957; 1099; 1181; 1293; 1295; 1331; 1503. — *Rid.* (10): 4.39;  
 4.46<sup>b</sup>, 56; 14.11<sup>a</sup>; 21.14; 35.8, 9<sup>a, b, c</sup>; 51.10. — *Jud.* (1): 221. — *Met.* (4): 1.67; 4.50; 5.31;  
 11.80. — *Ps.* (6): 65.8; 77.21, 46; 104.12; 118.126; 140.4. — *Brun.* (2): 60; 63. — *Fates of*  
*Apostles* (1): 95. — *Fates of Men* (1): 83. — *F. I.* (3): 72; 83; 85. — *Har.* (2): 42; 78. — *Höl.*  
 (1): 125. — *H. L.* (2): 23; 24. — *L. P.* (5): I. 9; III. 104, 105<sup>a, b</sup>; 112. — *Maldon* (3): 7;  
 109; 140. — *Prayers* (5): III. 56, 57, 58; IV. 44, 52. — *Ruin* (1): 43. — *S. & S.* (2): 100;  
 130. — *Song of Runes* (1): 33. — *Spirit of Men* (4): 11; 38; 41; 42. — *Wald. A.* (2): 7<sup>a, b</sup>.

niedan [-y-], compel, force (1): *Mk.* (1): 6.45.

nydan: see niedan.

ofseon, see (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 508<sup>m</sup>.

ondettan, confess, declare (1): *Bede* (1): 84.17 = 59.16.

onfindan, find (1): *Beow.* (1): 2842.

ongietan, understand, perceive (7): *Bede* (2): 178.32 = 146.12; 266.27 = 209.30. — *Wærf.* (4):  
 74.20 = 201 B<sup>5</sup>; 130.6 = B. 160 A<sup>3</sup>; 139.14 = B. 139 C; 285.1 = 345 B. — *Beow.* (1):  
 1432.

sceawian, see (2): *Wærf.* (2): 206.27<sup>a, b</sup> = 252 C<sup>1</sup>.

secgan, say, relate (3): *Bede* (2): 340.20, 22 = 257.24, 27. — *L.* (1): 24.23.

seon, see (14): *Mart.* (3): 2.18, 19; 144.4. — *Rid.* (11): 20.3; 32.3; 33.3, 4<sup>a, b</sup>; 43.2; 52.2; 54.1;  
 60.2; 65.1, 2.

tali(g)an, consider, account (2): *Minor Prose* (2): *Alex.* (2): 39<sup>a, b</sup>.

tellan, tell, consider (1): *Bede* (1): 82.4 = 57.29.

todælan, distribute (2): *Oros.* (2): 46.16, 17 = 47.16, 17 (but the infinitive phrase is probably  
 used absolutely; hence I have put these, also, in Chap. XII).

wenan, hope, expect (3): *Bede* (1): 430.24 = 308.4. — *Wærf.* (1): 181.25 = 220 B<sup>3</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.*  
 (1): I. 590<sup>b</sup>.

**witan**, *know* (10): *Bede* (2): 36.17 = 19.19; 408.21 = 296.13. — *Læce*. (1): 105.32. — *Ju*. (1): 92. — *Gu*. (1): 1312. — *And*. (1): 183. — *Rid*. (3): 50.1; 55.2; 59.1. — *Wids*. (1): 102.

## 2. Inflected.

Given in full in Chapter VIII, pp. 118–119.

### B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

**bebeodan**, *command* (2): *Bede* (2): 14.13 = 0; 172.9 = 142.8<sup>b</sup>.  
**biddan**, *request* (1): *Bede* (1): 38.31 = 21.1.  
**cweðan**, *say, maintain* (1): *Bede* (1): 64.24 = 49.1.  
**don**, *make, cause* (1): *Wulf*. (1): 196.2.  
**forlætan**, *allow* (2): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 33.11. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 18.237.  
**gefelan**, *feel, perceive* (1): *Bede* (1): 378.24 = 278.14.  
**gefeon** [and *blissian*], *rejoice* (2): *Bede* (2): 470.24, 25 = 346.12<sup>a, b</sup>.  
**gehieran** [-i-, -y-], *hear* (2): *Bede* (1): 310.4 = 238.28. — *Minor Prose* (1): — *Chad* (1): 112.  
**geleornian**, *learn* (1): *Bede* (1): 90.16 = 70.13.  
**geliefan** [-e-, -y-], *believe* (1): *Bede* (1): 208.1 = 162.10.  
**gemetan**, *meet, find* (2): *Bede* (1): 354.17 = 265.10. — *Wærf*. (1): 68.24 = 197 B<sup>1</sup>.  
**gemunan**, *remember* (3): *Bede* (3): 440.24, 25, 26 = 313.11, 12, 13.  
**geomrian**, *lament* (1): *Bede* (1): 88.15 = 61.23.  
**geseon**, *see* (16): *Bede* (9): 24.4 = 311.1; 34.17 = 18.16; 80.33 = 57.23; 340.12 = 257.16; 386.9 = 282.11; 440.21 = 313.9; 444.2 = 314.17; 444.3 = 314.19; 444.8 = 314.24. — *Wærf*. (6): 171.22 = B. 198 B<sup>3</sup>; 204.24, 25 = 249.B<sup>1, 2</sup>; 272.15 = 332 C<sup>1</sup>; 319.17 = 385 A; 335.23 = 404 B<sup>2</sup>. — *Mart*. (1): 186.9.  
**hatan**, *command* (2): *Bede* (1): 18.2 = 204.11. — *Wærf*. (1): 194.18 = 237 B<sup>1</sup>.  
**lætan**, *allow* (7): *Wærf*. (1): 294.6 = 356 A<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 250.215; XXX. 443. — *Mk.* (1): 7.27<sup>a</sup>. — *Læce*. (1): 101.12. — *Gen*. (1): 2194. — *Gu*. (1): 1235.  
**ongietan**, *understand* (3): *Bede* (2): 330.16 = 252.3; 340.15 = 257.19. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 485.  
**secgan**, *say, relate* (1): *Bede* (1): 398.15 = 289.7.  
**twoeg(e)an** [twyg(e)an], *doubt* (2): *Bede* (2): 190.22<sup>a, b</sup> = 153.5, 6.  
**twyg(e)an**: see *twoeg(e)an*.  
**willan**, *wish, desire* (1): *Bede* (1): 322.21 = 246.10.

### AS SUBJECT.

Given in full, both active and passive, in Chapter VIII, pp. 124–125.

## IX. The Predicative Infinitive with Dative Subject.

See Chapter IX, pp. 127 ff.

## X. The Final Infinitive.<sup>1</sup>

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

#### 1. With Active Finite Verb.

The infinitive is found both uninflected and inflected.

**abiddan**, *request*: *U*. (1): — **ondrincan**, *drink* (1): — *Bede* (1): 392.32 = 286.13. — *I*. (0).  
**æcan**: see *iecan*.  
**æteawan**: see *æteowan*.  
**æteowan** [-ea-], *show, appear*: *U*. (0). — *I*. (4): *Bede* (1): 270.4 = 211.10. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 235.4, 24. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 230<sup>b</sup>.  
**ætwindan**, *escape, fly away*: *U*. (0). — *I*. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 84<sup>b, 3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> In this section, besides the finite verb (the initial word) I give the infinitive when uninflected, but not when inflected.

- afaran**, *travel, go*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Greg.* (1): 385.9 = 300.15.
- agi(e)fan** [-y-], *give*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Jud.* (1): 131.
- agyfan**: see *agi(e)fan*.
- alædan**, *lead away*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De N. T.* 21.20.
- alefan**: see *aliefan*.
- aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *allow*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 254.9 = 309 C<sup>3</sup> (or objective?).
- aliesan** [-e-, -y-], *release*: **U.** (1): — **gemunan**, *remember* (1): *L.* (1): 1.72<sup>b</sup>. — **I.** (1): *L.* (1): 1.72<sup>a</sup>.
- alyfan**: see *aliefan*.
- alysan**: see *aliesan*.
- aræcan**, *reach, hand*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 88<sup>3</sup>.
- aræran**, *disseminate*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXV. 111.
- arisan**, *arise*: **U.** (2): — **neosan** [-io-], *visit* (1): *And.* (1): 830. — — **siði(ge)an**, *go* (1): *And.* (1): 829. — **I.** (6): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 26.4 = 26.3. — *Wærf.* (3): 201.23 = 245 B<sup>3</sup>; 227.4 = 277 B; 240.3 = 293 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 40.11 = 74.19. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 456.233.
- asendan**, *send*: **U.** (1): — **drincan**, *drink* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Judges* 15.18. — **I.** (13): *Ælf. Hom.* (6): I. 388<sup>m</sup>, 402<sup>b</sup>; II. 74<sup>2</sup>, 74<sup>b</sup> 2, 372<sup>2</sup>, 452<sup>4</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *De N. T.* 19.36; — *Job VII*<sup>c</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 104.236; 400.266; XXXVI. 20, 35. — *Mk.* (1): 3.14.
- astigan**, *ascend*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 388<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 284.13.
- aweccan**, *bring to life*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Greg.* (1): 443.10 = 370.14.
- awendan**, *translate*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 2<sup>t</sup>.
- beciepan** [-y-], *sell*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 21.7.
- becuman**, *come*: **U.** (2): — **fremman**, *perform* (1): *Ermahnung* (1): 53. — — **neos(i)an** [nios(i)an], *visit*: (1): *Beow.* (1): 2366. — **I.** (3): *Bede* (3): 22.26 = 296.3; 486.8<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 8.10<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.
- becypan**: see *beciepan*.
- befæstan**, *entrust, commit*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (9): *Chron.* (1): 80<sup>m</sup>, 886 A. — *Wærf.* (3): 111.3<sup>b</sup>, 4<sup>a</sup> = B. 140 C<sup>4</sup>; 254.1 = 309 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 554<sup>4</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXVI. 76. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 10.453; 15.16 = 0. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 32.4 = 49<sup>t</sup>.
- belæfan**, *leave*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 90<sup>2</sup>.
- beodan**, *commit, entrust, offer*: **U.** (1): — **drincan**, *drink* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 254<sup>m</sup>. — **I.** (1): *Bede* (1): 114.19 = 92.22.
- beran**, *bear*: **U.** (2): — **drincan**, *drink* (2): *Bede* (1): 396.8 = 287.26. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 180<sup>t</sup>. — **I.** (8): *Bede* (1): 440.2<sup>b</sup> = 312.16<sup>a</sup>. — *Wærf.* (2): 128.11 = B. 158 C; 186.24 = 228 A. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 189.8. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): I. 60<sup>t</sup>, 66<sup>m</sup>, 512<sup>b</sup>; II. 60<sup>b</sup>.
- betæcan**, *entrust, commit*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (16): *Oros.* (2): 292.28<sup>a</sup> = 293.28; 296.2 = 297.4. — *Chron.* (4): 127<sup>t</sup>, 992 E; 157<sup>t</sup>, 1023 C<sup>a</sup>; 253<sup>t</sup>, 1123 E<sup>d</sup>, e. — *Bened.* (1): 90.2 = 158.2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 380<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (5): 118.33; 152.67; 484.222; XXXVI. 50, 105. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 39.4. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (2): 8.294; 9.383.
- beðurfan**, *need*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Boeth.* (1): 97.1 = 83.30.
- biddan**, *request*: **U.** (2): — **drincan**, *drink* (2): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Judges* 4.19. — **I.** (1): 4.9. — **I.** (0).
- bi(e)gan**, *bend, turn*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Wærf.* (2): 218.4<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 265 B.
- bindan**, *bind*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Mat.* (1): 13.30<sup>b</sup>.
- brecan hine**, *retch*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (4): *Chron.* (1): 135<sup>m</sup>, 1003 E. — *Læce.* (3): 51.22; 53.2; 81.8.
- bringan**, *bring*: **U.** (0). — **I.** (6): *Bede* (3): 108.16 = 0; 294.21 = 226.4; 366.24 = 0. — *Wærf.* (1): 11.16 = 153 C<sup>3</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Gen.* 43.21; — *Lev.* 1.3.
- cuman**, *come*: **U.** (35): — **acsian**, *ask* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2453. — — **asynðrian**, *separate* (1): *Mat.* (1): 10.35. — — **biddan**, *ask, request* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 251.9 = 308 A<sup>2</sup>. — — **clypian**, *call* (1): *L.* (1): 5.32. — — **don**, *make* (1): *L.* (1): 19.10<sup>b</sup>. — — **geci(e)gan**, *call* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Chad* (1): 148. — — **gefon**, *seize* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 49<sup>b</sup>. — — **geflyllan**, *fulfill* (1): *Mat.* (1): 5.17<sup>c</sup>. — — **gehuntian**, *hunt* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 49<sup>a</sup>. — — **gretan**, *greet* (3): *Beow.* (2): 1646; 2010. — *Gen.* (1): 2104. — — **lædan**, *lead, bring* (2): *Beow.* (1): 239 (or predicative?). — *Gen.* (1): 1774 (or predicative?). — — **metan**, *measure, lay out* (1): *Ex.* (1): 92. — — **neosan** [neos(i)an, niosian], *visit* (7): *Bede* (1): 296.10 = 226.24. — *Beow.* (2): 2074; 2671. — *Ex.* (1): 474. — *Gu.* (1): 321. — *El.* (1): 152. — *And.* (1): 1389. — — **ræran**, *raise* (1): *Gu.* (1): 157. — — **sceawian**, *see, examine* (1): *Gen.* (1): 1679. — — **scyððan** [sceððan], *injure* (1): *And.* (1): 1047. — — **sec(e)an**, *seek* (3): *L.* (1): 19.10<sup>a</sup>. — *Beow.* (2): 268; 1597. — — **secgan**, *say* (1): *Gen.* (1): 438<sup>b</sup>. — — **sendan**, *send* (1): *L.* (1): 12.51. — — **stenan** [stænan], *adorn* (1): *El.* (1): 151. — — **styrān** [-ie-],

- restrain* (1): *Ex.* (1): 416 (or predicative?). — *towurpan* [-*weorpan*], *destroy* (2): *Mat.* (2): 5.17<sup>a, b</sup>. — *— ymsniðan, circumcise* (1): *L.* (1): 1.59. — *I.* (80): *Bede* (8): 22.18 = 292.9; 96.8 = 79.30; 158.28 = 132.19; 158.31 = 132.25; 208.21 = 163.4; 220.13 = 169.15; 388.10 = 283.15; 422.14 = 303.17. — *Greg.* (4): 185.17 = 138.19; 187.7 = 140.1; 307.17<sup>a, b</sup> = 236.6, 7. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 41.9<sup>b</sup>. — *Chron.* (4): 12<sup>b</sup>, 448 F<sup>a, b</sup>; 18<sup>t</sup>, 565 A; 238<sup>m</sup>, 1103 E. — *Laws* (3): 42, Ælfred, Intr., c. 49<sup>b, c, d</sup>. — *Wærf.* (5): 46.2 = 180 B<sup>2</sup>; 113.16 = B. 144 B; 235.2 = 285 C<sup>2</sup>; 236.24 = 288 C; 343.30 = 418 C<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.*, (3): 11.3; 71.26; 113.19. — *Mart.* (1): 72.19. — *Ælf. Hom.* (15): I. 142<sup>b, 2</sup>, 320<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>, 548<sup>b</sup>, 582<sup>t, 1, 2</sup>; II. 12<sup>m</sup>, 236<sup>b</sup>, 388<sup>m</sup>, 454<sup>m</sup>, 470<sup>b, 2</sup>, 578<sup>t</sup>, 586<sup>t</sup>, 596<sup>b</sup>, 598<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 625; XXIV. 182; XXIX. 44. — *Ælf. Hept.* (5): *De N. T.* 13.43; — *Gen.* 42.12; — *Ex.* 2.16; — *Num.* 22.6; — *Job* XI. — Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.45. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (4): 1.78; 4.11, 92, 156. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 18.222. — *Gosp.* (16): *Mat.* (9): 2.2; 8.29; 9.13; 10.34<sup>a, 2</sup>; 12.42; 18.11; 20.13; 26.55; — *Mk.* (3): 1.24; 14.8; 15.36<sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (2): 4.34; 11.31; — *J.* (2): 9.39; 12.47. — *Wulf.* (4): 201.26; 219.26; 222.22; 294.11. — Minor Prose (1): *Apol.* (1): 30.34 = 47<sup>b</sup>. — *Ps.* (1): 97.8<sup>b</sup>.
- cyðan, make known* (1): *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 205.32.
- don, do, make, put:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (6): *Bede* (1): 330.30 = 252.19. — *Chron.* (2): 256<sup>b</sup>, 1127 E<sup>c, d</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 450<sup>b, 1</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVI. 202. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Job* VII<sup>a</sup>.
- efstan, hasten:* *U.* (2): — *sec(e)an, seek* (1): *Beow.* (1): 3103<sup>b</sup>. — — *seon, see* (1): *Beow.* (1): 3103<sup>a</sup>. — *I.* (6): *Bede* (2): 376.6<sup>a, b</sup> = 276.25. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 130<sup>m, 2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 312.91 = 312.90; XXIII. B. 784; XXXV. 221.
- eowian, show, expose:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Greg.* (1): 277.17 = 210.2. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 522.568.
- faran, go:* *U.* (5): — *cunnian, try, test* (1): Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.35<sup>b, 5</sup>. — — *fandian, try* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 372<sup>b, 2</sup>. — — *huntian, hunt* (1): Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 134.12<sup>b</sup>. — — *lufian, love* (1): Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 134.12<sup>a</sup> (or futurity?). — — *sec(e)an, seek* (1): *Met.* (1): 26.14. — *I.* (15): *Greg.* (1): 89.21 = 60.13. — *Oros.* (1): 46.17<sup>c</sup> = 47.16. — *Wærf.* (1): 237.11 = 289 B. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 229.4; 233.17. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 372<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 330.138; 398.237; XXV. 402. — *Ælf. Hept.* (4): *Gen.* 38.13; — *Deut.* 11.29; 28.63; 32.47. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.91. — Minor Prose (1): *Apol.* (1): 31.37.
- feran, go, depart:* *U.* (7): — *gebiddan, pray* (1): *L.* (1): 6.12. — — *gefon, seize, take* (1): *Mk.* (1): 14.48. — — *geseon, see* (2): *L.* (2): 7.24, 26. — — *sceawi(g)an, see* (2): *Beow.* (2): 840; 1391. — — *streonan, beget* (1): *And.* (1): 331. — *I.* (19): *Bede* (4): 372.11<sup>a, b</sup> = 274.30; 410.19 = 297.14; 410.29 = 297.24. — *Wærf.* (2): 28.18 = 168 A; 63.29 = 193 B<sup>5</sup>. — *Mart.* (1): 216.17. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 88<sup>m</sup>, 90<sup>t, 3</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (5): 404.327; XXVIII. 58; XXXI. 645, 965; XXXV. 329. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Ex.* 3.4; *Jos.* 7.4. — Ælfric's Minor Prose (2): *Ælf. Int.* (2): 155<sup>a, b</sup>. — *L.* (1): 7.25.
- findan, find:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXV. 52.
- flegan:* see *fleogan*.
- fleogan* [flegan], *fly:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Bede* (3): 116.32<sup>a, b, c</sup> = 94.10, 11<sup>a, b</sup>.
- forestihtian, predestinate:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Pr. Gu.* (1): III. 67.
- forgi(e)fan [-y-], give:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (6): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 190<sup>t</sup>, 364<sup>t, 2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (3): *Gen.* 15.7; 23.6; — *Deut.* 32.49. — Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.35<sup>m</sup>.
- forgyfan:* see *forgi(e)fan*.
- forlætan, leave:* *U.* (2): — *neosan, visit* (1): *Ju.* (1): 554. — — *weardian, guard, protect* (1): *Beow.* (1): 971. — *I.* (1): *Bede* (1): 138.28 = 114.16.
- forsendan, send:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Chron.* (1): 188<sup>m</sup>, 1057 D.
- fundian, set out:* *U.* (4): — *dreogan, perform* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2270. — — *secan, seek* (2): *Beow.* (1): 1820. — *D. R.* (1): 104. — — *witan, know* (1): *Spirit of Men* (1): 16. — *I.* (9): *Boeth.* (1): 98.4 = 83.49. — *Greg.* (2): 93.24 = 64.10; 127.21 = 90.8. — *Solil.* (1): 63.20. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 93.4<sup>a, b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 6.10. — *Læce.* (2): 6.15; 46.17.
- gadrian, gather:* *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 474<sup>b, 2</sup>.
- gan* [gangan, gongan], *go:* *U.* (40): — *ahyrian, hire* (1): *Mat.* (1): 20.1. — — *cyðan, make known* (2): *Jud.* (2): 56; 243. — — *don, do* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 917<sup>b</sup>. — — *drincan, drink* (1): Ælfric's Minor Prose (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 134.14. — — *feccan, feich* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 176. — — *gearwian, prepare* (1): *L.* (1): 1.76. — — *gegearwian, prepare* (1): *L.* (1): 1.17. — — *geseon, see* (4): *Mat.* (3): 11.7<sup>b</sup>, 8, 9. — *Beow.* (1):

396. — *gesittan*, sit (1): *Bede* (1): 186.30 = 151.8. — *gretan*, greet (2): *Gen.* (1): 2430. — *Rid.* (1): 5.6. — *hladan*, load (1): *Wærf.* (1): 115.7 = B. 146 A<sup>2</sup>. — *leornian*, learn (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 134.13<sup>a</sup>. — *neosan*, visit (2): *Beow.* (1): 1786. — *Jud.* (1): 63. — *onlihtan*, illumine (1): *L.* (1): 1.79<sup>a</sup>. — *plegean*, play (1): *Greg.* (1): 309.14 = 238.10. — *rædan*, read (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 134.13<sup>b</sup>. — *reccan*, narrate (1): *Dan.* (1): 159. — *sceawian*, see, examine (4): *Greg.* (2): 415.14 = 336.13; 415.19 = 336.18. — *Beow.* (2): 2744; 3032. — *secan*, seek (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Apol.* (1): 28.18 = 45<sup>b</sup>. — *seon*, see (2): *Beow.* (2): 387; 920. — *sittan*, sit (6): *Bede* (1): 198.2 = 157.3. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 242<sup>b</sup> <sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 404.348. — *Beow.* (2): 493; 641. — *Jud.* (1): 15. — *slapan*, sleep (2): *Læce.* (2): 58.5; 68.29. — *tæcan*, teach (2): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (2): 150.18 (?); 151.14 (?). — *I.* (20): *Bede* (3): 76.12 = 54.24; 162.7 = 136.17; 362.18 = 269.22. — *Greg.* (1): 165.25 = 122.1. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 165.3, 15. — *Ælf. Hom.* (4): II. 428<sup>t</sup>, 428<sup>m</sup>, 444<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXXI. 917<sup>a</sup>; XXXVI. 327. — *Ælf. Hept.* (2): *Gen.* 2.10; 22.5. — *Gosp.* (4): *Mat.* (1): 13.3; — *Mk.* (1): 4.3; — *L.* (2): 1.77, 79<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 9.276. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 15.50 = 209.40.

*gangan* [-o-]: see *gan*.

*gearcian*, prepare: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 570<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 126.151. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Jos.* 1.11<sup>b</sup>.

*gearwian*, make ready, prepare: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bede* (1): 296.17 = 226.32.

*gebindan*, bind: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Wærf.* (3): 316.2, 4, 11 = 381 A<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup>.

*gebredan*, draw, hence, to feign (reflexive): *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Chron.* (1): 134<sup>m</sup>, 1003 F.

*gebugan*, turn, go: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Oros.* (1): 54.1 = 53.34.

*gebycgan*, buy: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Bede* (1): 274.9 = 213.25. — *Mat.* (1): 27.7.

*geceosan*, choose: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 157.1. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIV. 127. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 2.87.

*gecierran* [-y-], turn, go: *U.* (2): — *benemnan*, declare, certify (1): *H. L.* (1): 49. — *beran*, bear, carry (1): *And.* (1): 1079 (or predicative?). — *I.* (1): *Bede* (1): 12.8 = 92.12.

*gecuman*, come: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIV. 179.

*gedon*, commit (?): *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Cato* (1): 10 (?).

*geemtigian* [-æmtigian], keep oneself free: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 52.9 = 185 B<sup>1</sup>.

*gefreogan* [-freon], free: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bede* (1): 236.25 = 178.26.

*gefultumian*, help: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Bede* (2): 124.30, 31 = 107.3<sup>a</sup> <sup>b</sup>.

*gegripan*, seize: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 167.1.

*gehwi(e)rfan*, turn: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Greg.* (2): 373.8, 9 = 290.2.

*gelæcan*, seize: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 4.39.

*gelædan*, lead: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Wærf.* (1): 301.27 = 364 C<sup>3</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 46<sup>b</sup> <sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 80.

*gelefan*: see *geliefan*.

*geliefan* [-e-, -y-], believe: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 64<sup>b</sup> (or objective?).

*gelogian*, arrange: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Int.* (1): 286.

*gemearcian*, mark, plan: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Gen.* (1): 364.

*genægan*, approach: *U.* (1): — *betan*, improve, revise: (1): *Ex.* (1): 131. — *I.* (0).

*genealæcan*, approach: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 26.3 = 26.2. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 82<sup>b</sup>.

*gengan*, go: *U.* (1): — *sceawian*, see, examine (1): *Beow.* (1): 1413. — *I.* (0).

*geniman*, take, accept: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Wærf.* (1): 98.29 = B. 130 A. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 420<sup>t</sup>.

*gesamnian* [-o-], assemble: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Bede* (2): 132.6 = 110.14; 362.25 = 269.29.

*gescieppan*, create, make: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Greg.* (1): 319.1 = 246.1. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 18.

*Intr.* — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 2.3.

*gesecan*, seek: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 110<sup>m</sup>.

*gesellan* [-ie-, -y-], give, offer: *U.* (1): — *drincan*, drink (1): *Oros.* (1): 136.16 = 137.10. — *I.*

(5): *Bede* (2): 124.3 = 99.30; 306.26 = 237.9. — *Oros.* (2): 54.11 = 55.3; 108.28 = 0.

— *Laws* (1): 10, Hlothære and Eadric, c. 6.

*gesettan*, set, establish: *U.* (0). — *I.* (6): *Bede* (2): 66.23 = 49.28; 114.15 = 92.18. — *Greg.* (1): 131.15 = 92.22<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXV. 403. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 3.24. — *Chr.*

(1): 1390.

*gesiellan*: see *gesellan*.

*gesittan*, sit: *U.* (1): — *eahti(g)an*, consider (1): (or predicative?): *And.* (1): 1162. — *I.* (0).

*gesomnian*: see *gesamnian*.

gestandan, *stand, stand up*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 109.12 = B. 138 C<sup>3</sup>.

gesyllan: see *gesellan*.

geteon [-tion], *draw, attract*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Boeth.* (1): 28.28 = 36.21.

getion: see *geteon*.

geðafian, *grant, give*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 43.13 = 43.12.

geunnan, *grant, give*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Oros.* (1): 64.26 = 0.

gewendan, *wend, go*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 424<sup>b</sup>.

gewitan, *depart, go*: U. (54): — *beran, bear, carry* (1): *Beow.* (1): 291 (or predicative?). — *feran, go, journey* (1): *Gen.* (1): 1746<sup>a</sup> (or predicative?). — *fleon, flee* (2): *Beow.* (1): 1264. — *Gen.* (1): 2262. — *geseon, see* (2): *Beow.* (2): 1126; 1275. — *geðafian, endure* (1): *Dan.* (1): 633. — *lædan, lead, carry* (7): *Gen.* (6): 1357; 1649; 1746<sup>b</sup>; 1767; 2621; 2870 (or all predicative?). — *And.* (1): 1044. — *neos(i)an [niosian], visit* (6): *Beow.* (6): 115; 125; 1125; 1339; 2388; 3045. — *nerg(e)an, save, rescue* (2): *Gen.* (2): 2000; 2509. — *niosian: see neos(i)an*. — *sceawian, see, examine* (4): *Beow.* (1): 2402. — *Gen.* (3): 1780; 1920; 2593. — *seccan: see secean*. — *sec(e)an, seek* (22): *Beow.* (2): 2820; 2950. — *Gen.* (8): 1461; 1818; 1966; 2006; 2020; 2099; 2266; 2293. — *Dan.* (1): 441. — *And.* (4): 226; 698; 977; 1677. — *Ph.* (1): 320. — *Rid.* (3): 3.2; 17.2; 93.9. — *Brun.* (1): 55. — *S. & S.* (1): 204. — *Wife's Compl.* (1): 9<sup>b</sup>. — *seon, see* (2): *Gen.* (2): 1743; 2084. — *sigan, descend* (1): *Gen.* (1): 1461<sup>b</sup> (or predicative?). — *tredan, traverse* (2): *Beow.* (1): 1964 (or predicative?). — *Rid.* (1): 14.11<sup>b</sup>. — *wlitan, look* (1): *Gen.* (1): 1794. — I. (0).

gewyrcean, *make*: U. (1): — *gefegan, join* (1): *Gifts of Men* (1): 66 (?). — I. (0).

gi(e)fan, *give*: U. (1): — *drincan, drink* (1): *Ps.* (1): 79.5. — I. (4): *Bede* (3): 236.1 = 177.30; 242.7 = 192.17 (or with noun?); 262.8 = 207.4. — *Chron.* (1): 117<sup>m</sup>, 963 E<sup>a</sup>.

habban [nabban], *have [not]*: U. (0). — I. (19): *Bede* (1): 420.2 = 301.28. — *Greg.* (2): 121.18 = 84.24; 127.19 = 90.6. — *Laws* (5): 38, *Ælfred, Intr.*, c. 36<sup>a, b</sup> (or with noun?); 116, *Inc.*, c. 60; 366, *II Cnut*, c. 79<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 88.12 = 156.14. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 430<sup>b</sup>, 534<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXIII B. 354; XXXI. 655 (or both with noun?). — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 1.30. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 215.14 (or with noun?) — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 3.520. — *L.* (1): 14.28. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Apol.* (2): 24.21, 24 = 42<sup>b 1, 2</sup>.

healdan, *hold, keep*: U. (0). — I. (2): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 10.56. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 60.163.

hladan, *load*: U. (2): — *drincan, drink* (2): *Greg.* (1): 469.7 = 0. — *Wærf.* (1): 220.22 = 269 A<sup>2</sup>. — I. (0).

iecan [æcan], *increase*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ps.* (2): 50.90, 91 (Cot.).

iernan, *run*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Int.* (1): 217.

ingan [-gangan, -gongan], *go in*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Bede* (2): 438.14, 15 = 311.25, 26.

ingangan  
ingongan } : see *ingan*.

lædan, *lead*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Bede* (1): 356.31 = 266.27. — *Mart.* (1): 64.24<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 418.85. — *Mat.* (1): 27.31.

læfan, *leave, entrust*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): II. 90<sup>t</sup>, 450<sup>b 2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Job VII*<sup>b</sup>.

lænan, *lend*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 358.328. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 135.8.

lætan, *leave*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Boeth.* (1): 24.11 = 33.46. — *Oros.* (1): 46.22 = 47.20.

lecegan, *lay*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 143.14 = 102.21.

libban, *live*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Bede* (3): 66.5<sup>a, b</sup> = 49.10<sup>a, b</sup>; 408.17 = 296.9.

licgan, *lie, recline*: U. (1): — *ætflutan, hide from* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Judges* 4.18<sup>b</sup> (or predicative?). — I. (0).

li(e)htan, *light*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Chron.* (1): 266<sup>m</sup>, 1140 E<sup>a</sup>.

logian, *arrange, frame*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 454<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Job XII* (= 6.26).

lufian, *love*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 340<sup>m</sup>.

nabban: see *habban*.

niman, *take*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 381.24 = 296.25.

niðerastigan, *descend*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Greg.* (1): 105.11 = 72.16.

onðfon, *receive*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 98.18 = 81.17.

onfindan(?), *receive*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 16.9 = 0.

- onfon**, receive, undertake: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 265.11 = 324 A.
- onginnan**, begin: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 10.448.
- onlænan**, lend, grant: **U.** (0). — **I.** (2): *Boeth.* (2): 19.22, 23 = 0.
- onsendan**, send: **U.** (1): — **ondrincan**, drink (1): *Bede* (1): 398.1 = 288.20. — **I.** (2): *Bede* (1): 150.8 = 126.4. — *Dan.* (1): 76.
- ontynan**, open: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Greg.* (1): 349.19 = 270.11.
- ræcan**, reach, seize: **U.** (0). — **I.** (3): *Chr.* (3): 1621<sup>a</sup>, b. 1622.
- reccan**, care: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Ælf. Hepf.* (1): *De V. T.* 6.27.
- sceawian**, grant: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Chron.* (1): 176<sup>t</sup>, 1048 E<sup>d</sup>.
- scieppan**, create, make: **U.** (1): — **healdan**, hold, preserve (1): *Gnomic Sayings* (1): 129. — **I.** (0).
- scyndan**, hasten: **U.** (0). — **I.** (1): *Bede* (1): 62.14<sup>c</sup> = 47.23<sup>a</sup>.
- secan**, seek: **U.** (0). — **I.** (5): *Bede* (2): 50.11<sup>a</sup>, b = 30.17<sup>a</sup>, b. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 73.15<sup>a</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 368.78. — *Mat.* (1): 2.13.
- sellan** [-ie-, -y-], give: **U.** (257): — **cyssan**, kiss (1): *Laus* (1): 387, *Ordal*, c. 4, § 1. — **drincan**, drink: (203): *Bede* (5): 30.7 = 13.4; 156.7 = 129.18; 178.8 = 145.20; 192.14 = 153.32; 204.33 = 161.8. — *Greg.* (2): 329.3<sup>b</sup> = 254.4; 459.18<sup>a</sup> = 392.16. — *Oros.* (1): 136.1 = 135.35. — *Wærf.* (1): 161.5 = B. 188 A<sup>1</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 229.9, 14. — *Mart.* (2): 44.8; 94.20. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 574<sup>t</sup>, 582<sup>b</sup>; II. 108<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 312.70, 77. — *Ælf. Hepf.* (2): *Gen.* 21.19; — *Ex.* 2.19. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 111.6. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 16.55, 224<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (7): *Mat.* (4): 25.35<sup>b</sup>, 42<sup>b</sup>; 27.34, 48; — *Mk.* (1): 15.36<sup>a</sup>; — *J.* (2): 4.7, 10. — *Wulf.* (1): 288.32. — *Læce.* (170): 8.21; 9.6; 18.24, 26, 29, 30, 31; 19.15, 17, 18, 32, 33, 36; 20.1, 4, 15, 26, 33, 34; 21.10; 24.21; 28.5, 7, 10, 13, 18, 23, 25, 27; 30.20, 23, 26; 31.24; 33.17, 39; 34.3, 5, 8, 15, 16; 35.27; 37.23, 29, 31, 33, 37, 39; 38.22, 29; 41.1<sup>b</sup>; 42.28; 56.9, 10, 33, 36, 37, 41; 57.4, 7, 11, 22, 39; 61.8, 20, 31; 62.24; 64.13, 19, 25, 28, 30, 33, 38; 65.1, 4, 6; 66.3; 68.40; 69.3, 10, 16, 22, 24; 70.30; 71.19, 25, 27, 31, 36, 40; 72.1, 14, 22, 32; 75.6, 7, 9<sup>a</sup>, b, 22, 36; 76.5; 77.15; 80.2, 17, 30, 31; 81.33; 82.19; 83.10, 18, 20, 21; 86.22; 87.2, 7; 96.14; 97.27, 31; 98.2<sup>a</sup>, 5, 10, 38; 99.10, 23<sup>b</sup>, 26; 100.9, 19, 35, 36; 101.6; 102.10, 29, 34<sup>b</sup>; 103.1; 104.11, 31; 108.23; 109.3, 11; 123.17; 125.35<sup>b</sup>; 127.37; 128.13; — 129.14, 22<sup>b</sup>, 27<sup>b</sup>; 130.6, 25<sup>b</sup>, 32; 131.7, 9; 135.14, 18; 136.3, 16, 19; 140.33; 141.10; 142.16, 26; 143.12, 23; 144.14; 146.5, 8, 18; 151.17, 33; 152.3, 20, 22. — *Rid.* (2): 13.5; 72.7. — **etan**, eat (40): *Greg.* (2): 329.3<sup>a</sup> = 254.3; 459.18<sup>b</sup> = 392.16. — *Mart.* (1): 82.6<sup>b</sup>. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 16.224<sup>a</sup>. — *Gosp.* (9): *Mat.* (3): 14.16<sup>b</sup>; 25.35<sup>a</sup>, 42<sup>a</sup>; — *Mk.* (3): 5.43<sup>a</sup>; 6.37<sup>a</sup>, c; — *L.* (2): 8.55<sup>b</sup>; 9.13; — *J.* (1): 6.31. — *Læce.* (27): 21.39; 28.6; 39.26; 54.27; 79.37; 80.22; 95.38; 96.16, 20, 30; 97.29; 98.2<sup>b</sup>; 99.5; 100.28<sup>a</sup>; 101.4<sup>a</sup>; 103.7; 109.9; 128.28, 31; 130.25<sup>a</sup>, 27; 131.3, 15; 141.12; 143.26; 145.18; 149.30. — **gewundigean**, wound (1): *Ælf. Hepf.* (1): *Jos.* 11.6. — **supan**, sup, drink: *Læce.* (8): 37.19; 81.11; 82.26; 100.28<sup>b</sup>; 101.4<sup>b</sup>; 103.3; 143.15, 27. — **ðicgan**, take (food, medicine), drink, eat (4): *Læce.* (4): 55.34; 69.21<sup>a</sup>, b; 150.6. — **I.** (76): *Bede* (15): 16.14 = 0; 76.30<sup>b</sup> = 55.10; 76.34 = 55.13; 104.29 = 85.29; 158.29 = 132.21; 232.25 = 176.18; 272.9 = 212.21; 396.4 = 287.21; 438.24 = 312.5; 454.9<sup>a</sup>, b = 324.9; 456.19 = 325.15; 464.5 = 329.23; 480.29, 30 = 357.11. — *Greg.* (1): 369.14 = 286.17. — *Oros.* (1): 42.29 = 43.29. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 38.10 = 38.9. — *Chron.* (2): 34<sup>t</sup>, 669 A; 72<sup>b</sup>, 874 A. — *Laus* (3): 14, *Wihtræd*, c. 22, 23; 48, *Ælfred*, c. 1, § 2<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (6): 201.1 = 245 A<sup>3</sup>; 206.5<sup>b</sup> = 252 A<sup>3</sup>; 253.13 = 309 B<sup>1</sup>; 253.14 = 309 B<sup>2</sup>; 253.28 = 309 C<sup>1</sup>; 336.3 = 404 C<sup>3</sup>. — *Mart.* (1): 54.22. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 244<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 330.149; XXVI. 264. — *Ælf. Hepf.* (6): *Gen.* 28.20<sup>a</sup>, b (or with noun?); — *Ex.* 6.8; 16.15; *Num.* 11.4 (or with noun?); *Deut.* 1.27. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.42<sup>t</sup>. — *Gosp.* (5): *Mat.* (1): 27.26<sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (1): 20.20; — *J.* (3): 6.52<sup>b</sup>; 17.4; 19.16. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (2): 10.547; 18.238. — *Læce.* (25): 8.24; 8.27; 9.2; 17.11; 54.36<sup>a</sup>; 56.39; 57.14; 65.8; 65.26, 29; 66.11; 69.13; 71.13, 30; 72.12; 75.1, 35; 79.15; 80.25; 85.7, 21; 86.20, 26; 87.8, 10. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Chad* (1): 235. — *Beow.* (1): 1731 (or with noun?). — *Ps.* (1): 54.6. — *Wids.* (1): 134 (or with noun?).
- sendan**, send: **U.** (8): — **bodian**, preach (4): *Bede* (2): 54.31 = 42.22; 226.11 = 172.26. — **I.** (2): 4.18<sup>a</sup>, 19. — **gecegan** [-ie-], call (1): *Bede* (1): 250.21 = 199.26. — **gehælan**, heal (2): *L.* (2): 4.18<sup>b</sup>; 9.2<sup>b</sup>. — **gretan**, greet (1): *Bede* (1): 2.1 = 5 (heading). — **I.** (47): *Bede* (13): 2.3<sup>a</sup>, b, 4<sup>a</sup>, b = 5.3<sup>a</sup>, b, 4<sup>a</sup>, b; 10.2 = 42.10; 10.14 = 63.1; 104.14 = 85.6; 142.23 = 116.28; 172.17<sup>a</sup>, b = 142.19, 20; 244.30 = 194.20; 250.20 = 199.25; 468.30 = 333.12. — *Greg.* (3): 49.3 = 26.9; 49.17 = 26.22; 49.34 = 326.4. — *Oros.* (4): 96.12 = 0; 138.8 = 139.5; 188.10, 11 = 189.7. — *Chron.* (5): 20<sup>b</sup>, 604 A; 32<sup>b</sup>, 656 E<sup>a</sup>; 222<sup>b</sup>, 1086 E<sup>s</sup>; 227<sup>m</sup>, 1092 E<sup>a</sup>, b. — *Laus* (1): 42, *Ælfred*, Intr., c. 49, § 1<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (8): I. 206<sup>b</sup>, 372<sup>b</sup>, 380<sup>t</sup>, 520<sup>t</sup>, 578<sup>t</sup>; II. 74<sup>b</sup>, 1, 202<sup>b</sup>, 372<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 436.76; XXV. 470; XXIX. 163. — *Ælf. Hepf.* (2): *Gen.*

46.5; *Num.* 13.17. — *Ælfric's Minor Prose* (3): *Ælf. Int.* (2): 377, 473; — *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 101.319<sup>m</sup>. — *Gosp.* (3): *L.* (1): 9.2<sup>a</sup>; — *J.* (2): 1.33<sup>a</sup>; 4.38. — *Wulf.* (2): 295.32<sup>a, b</sup>.

**settan**, *set, place*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Chron.* (1): 115<sup>b</sup>, 963 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 404<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 16.33<sup>o</sup>.

**siellan**: see *sellan*.

**sittan**, *sit*: *U.* (1): — **bidan**, *await* (1): *Gen.* (1): 842 (or predicative?). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 542<sup>m</sup>.

**siðian**, *travel, go*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 222.39.

**sniðan**, *cut open*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Greg.* (1): 367.15 = 284.22.

**standan** [-o-], *U.* (1): — **healdan**, *hold, keep* (1): *Gen.* (1): 526. — *I.* (3): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 48<sup>m</sup> 2. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 27.13. — *Mk.* (1): 11.25.

**stician**, *stick*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Greg.* (1): 171.7 = 126.3.

**stondan**: see *standan*.

**syllan**: see *sellan*.

**teon**, *make, create*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ps.* (1): 143.1.

**tocuman**, *come, come to*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 59.11.

[**todælan**, *distribute*: *U.* (2): *Oros.* (2): 46.15, 16<sup>b</sup> = 47.16. But the infinitives more probably are absolute: see Chapter XII, p. 169. — *I.* (0).]

**toferan**, *separate, disperse*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Laws* (1): 42, *Ælfred*, *Intr.*, c. 49, § 1<sup>a</sup>.

**toferan**, *separate, disperse*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 21.6.

**tosendan**, *send*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 232<sup>t</sup>.

**ðrowian**, *suffer, endure*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXIII B. 418, 419.

**ðurfan**, *need*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Solil.* (1): 45.5.

**utgan** [-gangen, -o-], *go out*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 114.27 = B. 146 A<sup>1</sup>.

**utgangen** [-o-]: see *utgan*.

**wegan**, *carry, manifest*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Gen.* (1): 2349.

**wendan**, *wend, go*: *U.* (1): — **secan**, *seek* (1): *S. & S.* (1): 20. — *I.* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVII. 13.

**weorpan**, *throw, cast*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 194.20 = 237 B<sup>2</sup>.

**wil(l)nian**, *desire, wish*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Boeth.* (1): 40.25 = 43.3 (or with noun?).

**winnan**, *struggle, strive*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Greg.* (1): 77.21 = 50.22. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVI. 23.

**wunian**, *dwelt, remain*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Bede* (1): 388.8 = 283.14.

**wyrcean**, *make, do*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (5): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 4<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXV. 351. — *Wulf.* (1): 306.29. — *Læce.* (2): 8.25 (?); 56.35.

## 2. With Passive Verbs.

The infinitive is found both uninflected and inflected.

**aliefan** [-e-, -y-], *allow*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Gosp.* (3): *Mat.* (1): 12.4; — *Mk.* (1): 2.26. — *L.* (1): 6.4.

**asendan**, *send*: *U.* (2): — **sprecan**, *speak* (1) and **bodian**, *preach* (1): *L.* (2): 1.19<sup>a, b</sup>. — *I.* (6): *Chron.* (1): 11<sup>b</sup>, 430 E. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 194<sup>b</sup> 1; II. 488<sup>b</sup> 5, 6. — *Ælf. L. S.* (2): XXIV. 170<sup>a</sup>, XXXII. 146.

**befæstan**, *entrust*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Wærf.* (1): 275.26 = 336 B. — *Mart.* (1): 114.15. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 554<sup>t</sup> 6.

**beran**, *bear, give birth*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 162.256. — *Wulf.* (1): 293.23.

**betæcan**, *commit, entrust*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Chron.* (1): 223<sup>m</sup>, 1087 E<sup>b</sup>. — *Bened.* (2): 56.4 = 104.19; 84.21 = 152.24.

**bringan**, *bring*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 183.26 = 224 B<sup>1</sup>.

**ceosan**, *choose*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXII. 223. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De V. T.* 7.7.

**forgiefan**, *give*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (4): *Ælf. L. S.* (4): 16.100, 107, 108; 218.138.

(ge)**beodan**, *offer*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Greg.* (1): 43.23 = 22.21.

(ge)**bringan**, *bring*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 104.34 = B. 136 A<sup>4</sup>.

(ge)**gadrian**, *gather together*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (3): *Greg.* (1): 347.6 = 268.7. — *Oros.* (2): 284.1<sup>a, b</sup> = 285.3.

(ge)**gearwian**, *prepare*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 11.12 = 153 C.

(ge)**halsian** [-gi-, -healsian], *request*: *U.* (0). — *I.* (1): *Laws* (1): 409, *Judicium Dei* IV, c. 2<sup>a</sup>.



- (ge)healdan, *keep, preserve*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 58.124.  
 (ge)lædan, *lead*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Wærf.* (1): 301.25 = 364 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 254<sup>b</sup>.  
 (ge)laðian, *invite*: U. (0). — I. (2): *Bede* (2): 394.19 = 287.6; 396.14 = 288.2.  
 (ge)rædan, *advise*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 182.4 (?).  
 (ge)samnian [-o-], *assemble*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 315.6 = 380 C.  
 (ge)sellan, *give*: U. (0). — I. (6): *Wærf.* (2): 324.24 = 392 A<sup>5</sup>; 325.1 = 392 A<sup>6</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 534<sup>m</sup>. — *Mat.* (3): 20.19<sup>a, b, c</sup>.  
 (ge)settan, *set, place, appoint*: U. (1): — bodian, *preach* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 157.35. — I. (7): *Bede* (1): 396.28<sup>a</sup> = 288.16<sup>a</sup>. — *Greg.* (2): 321.7 = 248.1; 321.11 = 248.5. — *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 178<sup>m</sup>, 540<sup>t</sup>; II. 198<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 100.  
 (ge)smyrian, *anoint*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Mat.* (1): 26.12.  
 (ge)somnian: see *gesamnian*.  
 (ge)tacnian, *signify, mean*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 196.15 = 240 B.  
 (ge)wealdan, *govern, instruct*: U. (1): — asettan, *arrange* (1): *Gifts of Men* (1): 47. — I. (0).  
 (ge)wyrcean, *make, build*: U. (0). — I. (3): *Bede* (2): 354.19<sup>a, b</sup> = 265.13<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Ælf. Gr.* Minor Prose (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 101.314<sup>m</sup>.  
 gierwan, *prepare*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 302.10 = 365 A<sup>1</sup>.  
 iecan [-y-], *increase*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Az.* (1): 37.  
 nacian, *make naked*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Wærf.* (1): 287.3 = 348 B<sup>4</sup>.  
 onfon, *receive*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bede* (1): 232.5 = 175.32.  
 onsendan, *send*: U. (0). — I. (4): *Bede* (2): 16.21 = 0; 16.30 = 201.1. — *Greg.* (2): 429.15 = 354.3; 441.30 = 368.27.  
 ontendan, *kindle*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Laws* (1): 36, *Ælfred, Intr.*, c. 27.  
 sellan, *give*: U. (0). — I. (5): *Bede* (2): 480.26, 27 = 357.9. — *Wærf.* (3): 309.2<sup>a, b</sup> = 372 D<sup>1, 2</sup>; 327.9 = 393 C<sup>1</sup>.  
 sendan, *send*: U. (0). — I. (9): *Bede* (7): 108.23 = 89.5; 160.7 = 135.18; 260.12 = 205.3; 260.13 = 206.1; 272.25<sup>a, b</sup> = 213.9; 420.15 = 302.14. — *Chron.* (1): 55<sup>t</sup>, 785 E. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 137.25.  
 todrifan, *drive*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 5.12.  
 ycan: see *iecan*.  
 ymbsellan, *surround*: U. (0). — I. (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 11.25.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

No clear example has been found.

## XI. The Infinitive with Adjectives.

## A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Normally the infinitive is inflected, but sporadically it is uninflected.

## 1. Uninflected.

- fus, *ready, prepared* (2): *Gu.* (2): 1051; 1053.  
 gearo [-u], *ready* (3): *Bede* (1): 56.21 = 43.21. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 534<sup>b, 3</sup>; II. 130<sup>t, 2</sup>.  
 wierðe [-u-, -y-], *worthy* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 138.353<sup>p</sup>.  
 wurðe } see *wierðe*.  
 wyrðe }

## 2. Inflected.

- æmetig, *at leisure, free* (1): *Greg.* (1): 191.24 = 144.2.  
 æðele, *excellent, valuable* (1): *Læce.* (1): 89.18.  
 ana, *only one* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 182.225.  
 andrysnlic, *terrible* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 33.5.  
 arwyrdlic, *venerable* (1): *Bede* (1): 144.17<sup>a</sup> = 117.29<sup>a</sup>.  
 bealdra, *bolder* (1): *Greg.* (1): 361.14 = 280.6.  
 behydgist, *most solicitous* (1): *Bede* (1): 466.26 = 332.4.  
 betere, *better* (4): *Greg.* (3): 457.7 = 388.21; 459.9<sup>a, b</sup> = 392.7, 8. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. II* (1): 14.16.

- betst, best (3): *Wulf.* (1): 49.21 (or predicative with *beon*?). — *Læce.* (2): 5.33 (?); 44.29.
- biterre [— and grimre], bitter (and distasteful) (1): Minor Prose (1): *Alex.* (1): 189<sup>a</sup>.
- deafic [defic], suitable (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De V. T.* 7. 41.
- defic: see *deaflic*.
- deop, deep, profound (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 448<sup>t</sup> 2. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Pref. to Gen.* 23.3.
- digle, mysterious (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 188<sup>t</sup> 2.
- earfeð(e): see *earfoð(e)*.
- earfoð(e) [earfeð(e)], difficult (9): *Boeth.* (4): 81.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 0; 92.24 = 79.77; 147.23 = 0. — *Chron.* (2): 218<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>a</sup>; 222<sup>m</sup>, 1086 E<sup>t</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 138.27 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 188<sup>t</sup> 1; II. 542<sup>b</sup>.
- earfoðest, most difficult (1): *Boeth.* (1): 127.3 = 107.6.
- feald [god and —], difficult (1): *Chron.* (1): 186<sup>b</sup>, 1056 C.
- eatolice, terribly (1): *Bede* (1): 240.21 = 191.29 (or predicative with *beon*?).
- eaðe: see *ieðe*.
- eaðelic: see *ieðelic*.
- egeful, terrible (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 182<sup>b</sup> 2.
- egeslic, terrible (1): *Chr.* (1): 919<sup>a</sup>.
- eðe: see *ieðe*.
- fæger, fair, beautiful (3): *Oros.* (2): 32.14<sup>a</sup> = 0; 74.13 = 75.11. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 113.22.
- feald [god and —], suitable (?) (2): *Læce.* (2): 87.15, 16.
- feorr, far (1): *And.* (1): 424.
- freora, freer (2): *Greg.* (1): 131.16 = 92.22<sup>b</sup>. — *Solil.* (1): 36.11.
- from, energetic (2): *Bede* (2): 410.4<sup>a</sup>, 5<sup>a</sup> = 296.28.
- frymful, beneficial (1): *Læce.* (1): 146.28.
- fus, ready, eager (1): *Beow.* (1): 1805.
- gearo: see *gearu*.
- gearu [-o], ready (34): *Bede* (2): 60.29 = 47.6; 98.4 = 80.28. — *Boeth.* (1): 107.32 = 93.69. — *Greg.* (6): 45.9 = 22.28; 173.5, 81<sup>1</sup> 2 = 126.24, 26; 203.12 = 152.10; 423.28 = 346.21. — *Solil.* (1): 11.11. — *Pr. Ps.* (1): 7.13. — *Chron.* (1): 139<sup>b</sup>, 1009 E<sup>c</sup>. — *Laws* (1): 166, V *Æthelstan*, Prol., 1. — *Wærf.* (1): 80.27 = 205 C<sup>2</sup>. — *Ælf. Hom.* (8): I. 128<sup>m</sup>, 128<sup>b</sup>, 190<sup>t</sup> 2, 406<sup>b</sup>, 534<sup>b</sup> 2; II. 32<sup>t</sup>, 122<sup>t</sup>, 130<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (7): 228.144; XXIII B. 468; XXV. 113<sup>a, b</sup>, 605; XXXVI. 171; XXXVII. 110. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 15.40. — *A. S. Hom.* & *L. S. II* (1): 15.104 = 210.90. — *L.* (1): 22.33. — *Dan.* (1): 129. — *And.* (1): 73.
- gecopic, fit, suitable (1): *Wærf.* (1): 49.9 = 184 A.
- gecweme, agreeable (1): *Wulf.* (1): 280.5<sup>a</sup>.
- gedyrstig, daring, audacious (1): *Pr. Gu.* (1): XX. 73.
- gehendast, most convenient (1): *Oros.* (1): 116.7 = 117.2.
- gehyð, convenient (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 783.
- gemyndig, mindful (1): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 9.12 = 9.13.
- geornful(1) [giorn-], eager, desirous (3): *Boeth.* (1): 51.9 = 50.14. — *Greg.* (2): 281.5<sup>b</sup> = 212.9<sup>a</sup>; 381.19 = 296.21.
- geornost, most eager (1): *Laws* (1): 280, I *Cnut*, c. 2, § 1<sup>b</sup>.
- geris(e)ne, suitable (1): *Bede* (1): 274.7 = 213.24.
- gesom, agreed (1): *Rid.* (1): 88.29.
- getrewe: see *getriewe*.
- getriewe [-trowe], true, safe (1): *Boeth.* (1): 16.13<sup>a</sup> = 25.36.
- geðancol, thankful (1): *Ps.* (1): 50.7 (Cot.).
- gewuna, accustomed (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 614 (?).
- gifre, eager (2): *Boeth.* (2): 50.24<sup>a, b</sup> = 50.8.
- giornfull: see *geornfull*.
- glæd, bright, clear (1): *Boeth.* (1): 14.14 = 23.12.
- glæshlut(1)or, clear as glass (1): *Boeth.* (1): 14.13 = 23.8.
- god, good (7): *Bened.* (1): 127.7<sup>a</sup> = 194.13. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 3.6. — *Læce.* (5): 29.21; 32.36; 34.10; 74.26; 88.3.
- grimlic [— and egeslic], terrible (1): *Chr.* (1): 919<sup>b</sup>.
- grimre [bittere and —], distasteful (1): Minor Prose (1): *Alex.* (1): 189<sup>b</sup>.
- hal, whole (1): *Solil.* (1): 28.1.
- halwende, beneficial (1): *Bede* (1): 214.24 = 166.16.
- hræd [— and geornfull], quick, ready (2): *Greg.* (1): 281.5<sup>a</sup> = 212.9. — *Wulf.* (1): 148.2<sup>b</sup>.
- hræð, quick (1): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 13.6 = 13.3.

- ieðe [eaðe, eðe, yðe], *easy* (3): *Boeth.* (2): 16.13<sup>b</sup> = 25.38; 92.27 = 79.79. — *Beow.* (1): 2416.
- ieðelic, *easy* (3): *Greg.* (1): 419.10 = 340.22. — *Wærf.* (2): 27.8, 9 = 165 C<sup>3</sup>.
- ieðre, *easier* (6): *Greg.* (3): 239.10, 11 = 180.21; 277.25 = 210.10. — *Oros.* (3): 80.11, 12<sup>a, b</sup> = 81.8<sup>a, b</sup>.
- læne, *fleeing, deceptive* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 189.4.
- læt, *slow* (2): *Greg.* (1): 281.6 = 212.9<sup>b</sup>. — *L.* (1): 24.25.
- lang [-o-], *long, tedious* (3): *Mart.* (1): 130.11. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 302<sup>m</sup>. — *Wulf.* (1): 298.22.
- langsum [-o-], *long, tedious* (6): *Ælf. Hom.* (3): II. 170<sup>b 1, 2</sup>, 536<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 98.139. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De V. T.* 10.4. — *A. S. Hom. & L. S. I* (1): 7.243.
- latheort, *slow of heart* (1): *Ælfric's Minor Prose: Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.34<sup>t</sup>.
- leof, *dear* (2): *Bede* (2): 450.3<sup>a, b</sup> = 322.8, 9.
- leofost, *dearest* (3): *Bl. Hom.* (3): 55.18; 111.26<sup>a, b</sup>.
- leofra, *dearer* (3): *Oros.* (2): 286.8<sup>a, b</sup> = 287.8<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 195.8.
- leoht, *light, easy* (1): *Greg.* (1): 23.13 = 2.3.
- leohtest, *most light, most active* (1): *Wids.* (1): 72.
- licwierðe [-u-], *pleasing, acceptable* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 280.5<sup>b</sup>.
- licwurðe: see *licwierðe*.
- listhendig, *skillful* (1): *Gifts of Men* (1): 96.
- liðe, *pleasant* (1): *Chr.* (1): 914.
- long  
longsum } : see *lang, langsum*.
- lustbære, *pleasant, desirous* (3): *Boeth.* (1): 50.10 = 50.1. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 130<sup>m</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 96.117.
- lustbærre, *more pleasant* (1): *Greg.* (1): 303.9 = 0.
- lustfull, *desirous* (1): *Oros.* (1): 100.27 = 0.
- lustfullic, *pleasant* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 129.7 = B. 158 D<sup>2</sup>.
- lustlic, *pleasant* (1): *Oros.* (1): 120.9.
- lustlicre, *more pleasant* (1): *Bened.* (1): 3.3 = 6.7.
- lustumlic [— and fæger], *pleasant* (1): *Oros.* (1): 32.14<sup>b</sup> = 0.
- lytel, *little, insignificant* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 140<sup>b</sup>. — *Doomsday* (1): 9.
- mære, *glorious, famous* (1): *Dan.* (1): 321.
- manigfeald [menig-, monig-], *manifold* (2): *Oros.* (1): 102.23 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 448<sup>t 1</sup>.
- manigfealdlicor, *more manifoldly* (1): *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 66 (?).
- menigfeald: see *manigfeald*.
- micel, *wonderful* (2): *Oros.* (1): 82.3 = 81.24. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *De N. T.* 14.10.
- mi(e)htig, *mighty, powerful* (2): *Greg.* (2): 91.15<sup>a, b</sup> = 62.3, 4.
- monigfeald: see *manigfeald*.
- myrige, *pleasant* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 182<sup>t</sup>, 182<sup>b 1</sup>.
- nedðearf: see *niedðearf*.
- nedðearflic: see *niedðearflic*.
- niedbeðearfost, *most necessary* (1): *Greg.* (1): 7.7 = 0.
- niedðearf [ned-], *necessary, useful* (2): *Greg.* (1): 283.25 = 214.20 (or subjective?). — *Laws* (1): 44, *Ælfred, Intr.*, c. 49, § 5 (or subjective?).
- niedðearflic [ned-], *necessary, useful* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 225.26.
- nyt(t)wierðe [-y-], *useful* (2): *Greg.* (2): 275.14, 15 = 208.8.
- nyt(t)wierðlic [-y-], *useful* (1): *Greg.* (1): 255.12 = 192.23.
- nyt(t)wyrðe: see *nyt(t)wierðe*.
- nyt(t)wyrðlic: see *nyt(t)wierðlic*.
- onderslic, *terrible* (1): *Bede* (1): 144.18<sup>b</sup> = 117.29.
- open, *open* (1): *Greg.* (1): 431.9 = 356.2<sup>b</sup>.
- ræðlicost, *most advisable* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 305.34 (or predicative with *beon*?).
- reow [reoh], *fierce* (1): *Gu.* (1): 377.
- rihtlic, *just, proper* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 345.14 = 421 A<sup>1</sup>.
- scearp, *sharp, eager* (2): *Bede* (2): 410.4<sup>b</sup>, 5<sup>b</sup> = 296.28.
- scir, *white* (1): *J.* (1): 4.35.
- selast } : see *selost*.
- selest }

- selost [-ost, -est], *best* (3): *Laws* (2): 280, I Cnut, c. 2, § 1<sup>a</sup>; 470, Grið, Inscr., c. 1. — *Beow.* (1): 257.
- sefra, *better* (2): *Beow.* (1): 1851. — *S. & S.* (1): 406.
- soðlic, *true* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): 182.226.
- strang [-o-], *strong, given to* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 322<sup>m</sup>.
- strengra, *stronger* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 207.24.
- swete, *sweet, pleasing* (2): *Boeth.* (1): 51.5 = 0. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 59.10.
- swift [— and hræd], *swift* (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 296<sup>b</sup> 2. — *Wulf.* (1): 148.2<sup>a</sup>.
- til, *excellent* (1): *Gifts of Men* (1): 76.
- towearð, *toward, coming* (6): *Bede* (2): 224.21 = 172.5; 270.2 = 211.7. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 81.35, 36. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 190<sup>b</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Chad* (1): 188.
- trum, *firm, strong* (1): *Greg.* (1): 249.6 = 188.10.
- ðearlic, *painful* (1): *And.* (1): 1136.
- ðurhwæccendlic, *very vigilant* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 44.
- unaberendlicre, *more intolerable* (1): *Greg.* (1): 343.11 = 264.23.
- uneaðe: see *unieðe*.
- ungearu [-o], *unready* (1): *Greg.* (1): 173.11 = 126.28.
- ungeliefedlic, *incredible* (1): *Oros.* (1): 74.14 = 75.12.
- ungewunelic, *unusual* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 17.28 = 160 B<sup>2</sup>.
- unieðe [-eaðe], *difficult* (5): *Greg.* (3): 385.10, 11 = 300.16; 409.20 = 230.1. — *Bl. Hom.* (1): 59.15. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Alex.* (1): 30.
- unrihtlic, *wrong, wicked* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 209.23<sup>a</sup> = 256 C<sup>1</sup>.
- unscende, *honorable* (1): *Wald. B.* (1): 21.
- unwerodre, *more unsweet* (1): *Greg.* (1): 447.19 = 376.9.
- unwynsum, *unwinsome* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 184<sup>t</sup>.
- weorðe: see *wierðe*.
- wered [-od], *sweet* (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 15.25<sup>b</sup>.
- wierðe [-u-, -y-], *worthy* (8): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 163.14. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): 138.353<sup>a</sup>; 180.196; XXVII. 119. — *Mat.* (1): 3.11. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Alex.* (2): 22, 75. — *Gen.* (1): 622.
- wierðelic [-y-], *worthy* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 230.16 = 281 B.
- wierðost [-u-, -y-], *most worthy* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 637.
- winsum  
winsumre } : see *wyn-*.
- wrætlic, *wonderful* (1): *Rid.* (1): 40.25.
- wundorlic, *wonderful* (1): *Wulf.* (1): 15.14.
- wurðe  
wurðelic  
wurðost } : see *wierð-*.
- wynsum [-i-], *winsome, pleasant* (6): *Bede* (1): 346.4 = 260.32. — *Solil.* (1): 51.11. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 315. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 2.9. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Neot* (1): 48. — *Met.* (1): 21.19.
- wynsumre [-i-], *more winsome, more pleasant* (1): *Boeth.* (1): 52.8 = 0.
- wyrðe  
wyrðelic } : see *wierð-*.
- yðe: see *ieðe*.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

Given in full in Chapter XI, p. 158.

## XII. Other Adverbial Uses of the Infinitive.

Given in full in Chapter XII, pp. 160 ff.

## XIII. The Infinitive with Nouns.

### A. THE ACTIVE INFINITIVE.

Normally the infinitive is inflected, but sporadically it is uninflected.

## 1. Uninflected.

**anweald**, power, authority (1): *L.* (1): 12.5.

**myne**, purpose, intention (1): *And.* (1): 1538.

**neod**, need (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 372<sup>m</sup> 2. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.35<sup>b</sup> 4.

## 2. Inflected.

**æcer**, field (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 135.7 (or final?).

**æht**, property, possessions (3): *Bened.* (2): 55.7 = 102.19; 104.8 = 170.17. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 580<sup>b</sup> 2.

**æðelo**, habit (?) (1): *Boeth.* (1): 91.20 = 79.56.

**andefn**: see *ondefn*.

**andgit**, intellect (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 344<sup>m</sup>.

**anweald**, authority, power (12): *Ælf. Hom.* (4): XXXIV. 322<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>, 328, 329. — *Gosp.* (8): *Mat.* (1): 9.6; — *Mk.* (3): 2.10; 3.15<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; — *L.* (2): 5.24; 10.19; — *J.* (2): 10.18<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

**að**, oath (1): *Chron.* (1): 242<sup>m</sup>, 1109 E.

**aht**, ought (1): *Boeth.* (1): 13.14 = 22.35.

**bewerenis**, prohibition (2): *Bede* (2): 86.13<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 60.12<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

**bieldo** [-y-], boldness (2): *Wærf.* (2): 243.10 = 296 A<sup>2</sup>; 295.3 = 356 C<sup>2</sup>.

**bisn** [bysn], example (1): *Greg.* (1): 307.9 = 234.27.

**bliss**, bliss, joy (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 368<sup>m</sup>.

**cild**, child (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Ælf. Gr.* (1): 151.13 (or final?)

**cyre**, free-will (2): *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 212<sup>t</sup>; II. 490<sup>m</sup>.

**drenc**, drink (1): *Læce.* (1): 42.1.

**drinc** [-y-], drink (1): *And.* (1): 23.

**drync**: see *drinc*.

**eage**, eye (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 29.4<sup>a</sup>.

**ealdorlicnes**, authority (1): *Bede* (1): 206.13 = 161.22.

**eare**, ear (8): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Deut.* 29.4<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.32<sup>t</sup>. — *Gosp.* (6): *Mat.* (3): 11.15; 13.9, 43. — *Mk.* (2): 4.9, 23; — *L.* (1): 14.35.

**fæc**, period of time, interval (1): *Bede* (1): 190.26 = 153.10.

**fela**, much (4): *Greg.* (1): 237.13 = 178.28. — *J.* (3): 8.26<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>; 16.12.

**feoh**, money (2): *Oros.* (1): 116.15 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 178<sup>t</sup>.

**fierst** [-y-], period of time (3): *Wærf.* (1): 53.16 = 185 D. — *Wulf.* (2): 202.1<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

**flæsc**, flesh (1): *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Ex.* 16.12.

**forebeacen**, portent (1): *Mk.* (1): 13.22.

**fultum**, assistance (2): *Solil.* (2): 39.15, 16.

**fyrst**: see *fierst*.

**gast**, spirit (1): *Greg.* (1): 263.21 = 198.22.

**gealdor**, charm (1): *Læce.* (1): 93.22.

**gelærednes**, learning, skill (1): *Bede* (1): 362.28<sup>b</sup> = 269.32.

**genog** [onoh], sufficiency (1): *Chron.* (1): 264<sup>m</sup>, 1137<sup>a</sup>.

**genoh**: see *genog*.

**geornfulnes**, eagerness, desire (2): *Bede* (2): 206.11, 12 = 161.21<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

**gesceadwisnes**, intelligence, discernment (1): *Solil.* (1): 16.21.

**getydnnes**, skill (1): *Bede* (1): 362.28 = 269.32.

**geðoht**, thought, intention (1): *Greg.* (1): 71.22 = 46.1.

**geðyld**, patience (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 135.

**geweald**, power, authority (3): *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 227. — *Gen.* (1): 281. — *Ermahnung* (1): 36.

**giefu**, gift (1): *Bede* (1): 20.22 = 258.25.

**giemen** [gimen], care (1): *Bede* (1): 482.1 = 357.13.

**gierd** [-y-], rod (2): *Greg.* (1): 127.1 = 88.14. — *Wærf.* (1): 20.27 = 161 C.

**gimen**: see *giemen*.

**gleawnes**, intelligence (2): *Bede* (2): 206.10<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup> = 161.20<sup>a</sup>, <sup>b</sup>.

**God**, God (2): *Ælf. L. S.* (2): 478.93; XXXV. 117.

**god**, good (1): *Boeth.* (1): 94.24 = 80.107.

**gryre**, horror (1): *Bede* (1): 364.5 = 270.6.

**gyrd**: see *gierd*.

- heafod** [hæfed], *head* (2): *Chron.* 258, 1127 E<sup>1</sup>, g.  
**hiht**: see *hyht*.  
**hlaf**, *bread* (1): *Mk.* (1): 3.20.  
**hol**, *hole, cave* (1): *Boeth.* (1): 19.8 = 29.14.  
**hwæt**, *anything* (1): *Oros.* (1): 142.25 = 0.  
**hyht** [-i-], *hope* (1): *Bede* (1): 366.32 = 272.7<sup>b</sup>.  
**ielden** [yiden], *respite* (1): *Bede* (1): 190.30<sup>a</sup> = 153.13.  
**intinga**, *cause, sake* (5): *Bede* (3): 82.19, 21<sup>a</sup> = 58.22, 24; 120.7 = 97.21. — *Mart.* (2): 86.5<sup>a</sup>, b.  
**lac**, *offering* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): I. 584<sup>m</sup>.  
**læcedom**, *remedy, medicine* (3): *Læce.* (3): 4.41; 48.8; 52.37.  
**læcning**, *medicine* (2): *Læce.* (2): 49.32; 70.33.  
**lamb** [-o-], *lamb* (1): *Bl. Hom.* (1): 23.26.  
**land** [-o-], *land* (1): *Boeth.* (1): 40.21 = 0.  
**lar**, *instruction, advice* (1): *Bede* (1): 160.8 = 135.21.  
**leaf**, *leave, permission* (16): *Boeth.* (1): 120.28 = 102.76. — *Greg.* (1): 397.26 = 316.8. — *Chron.* (1): 260<sup>b</sup>, 1129 E. — *Laws* (1): 483, Wilhelm I, c. 1<sup>b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (7): 10.2 = 0; 31.27 = 169 B<sup>1</sup>; 198.17 = 241 C<sup>4</sup>; 200.4 = 244 C<sup>1</sup>; 211.20<sup>a</sup>, b = 257 C<sup>2</sup>; 295.4 = 356 C<sup>3</sup>. — *Bened.* (1): 21.17 = 42.17. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 442; XXXI. 384, 385. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Gen.* 42.34.  
**leafnes** [-nis], *leave, permission* (7): *Bede* (7): 62.8<sup>a</sup>, b, 9 = 47.16, 17<sup>a</sup>, b; 112.6 = 91.9; 256.10<sup>b</sup> = 203.15; 400.8<sup>a</sup>, b = 289.29.  
**lomb**: see *lamb*.  
**lond**: see *land*.  
**lufu**, *love* (1): *Bede* (1): 82.25 = 58.29.  
**lustbærnes**, *desire* (1): *Boeth.* (1): 74.7 = 66.16.  
**mæg(e)n**, *power, strength* (4): *Greg.* (1): 399.21 = 318.6. — *Oros.* (1): 174.12 = 0. — *Wærf.* (2): 178.4 = B. 204 C<sup>3</sup>; 244.1 = 297 C<sup>1</sup>.  
**mæl**, *time* (1): *Beow.* (1): 316.  
**mæð**, *power* (1): *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 456<sup>b</sup>.  
**mare** [more], *more* (1): *Chron.* (1): 264<sup>b</sup>, 1137 E<sup>b</sup>.  
**meaht**: see *miht*.  
**mete**, *meat* (1): *J.* (1): 4.32.  
**miht** [meaht], *might, power* (11): *Bede* (1): 146.22 = 120.20. — *Pr. Gu.* (1): V. 212. — *Ælf. Hom.* (6): I. 322<sup>b</sup>, 560<sup>t</sup>, 1, 2, 588<sup>b</sup>, 1, 2; II. 244<sup>t</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 484. — *J.* (2): 19.10<sup>a</sup>, b.  
**mildheortnes**, *mercy* (1): *Bede* (1): 206.14 = 161.24.  
**mod**, *mind, mood* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXIII B. 540.  
**more**: see *mare*.  
**naht**, *naught* (1): *Wærf.* (1): 290.21 = 352 A<sup>3</sup>.  
**nanwiht** [-wuht], *naught* (3): *Boeth.* (1): 24.16 = 33.49. — *Solil.* (2): 12.12; 46.6.  
**nanwuht**: see *nanwiht*.  
**neod**, *need* (9): *Laws* (1): 256, VI Æthelred, c. 42. — *Bened.* (2): 94.16 = 0; 127.7<sup>b</sup> = 194.14. — *Ælf. Hom.* (1): II. 372<sup>m</sup>, 1. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 70, 220, 222. — *Ælf. Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.35<sup>b</sup>, a. — *Mat.* (1): 14.16<sup>a</sup>.  
**niedðearf** [nyd-], *need* (1): *Pr. Ps.* (1): 15.1.  
**nydðearf**: see *niedðearf*.  
**ondefin** [an-], *capacity* (1): *Greg.* (1): 95.1 = 64.12.  
**onlegen**, *medicinal application* (2): *Læce.* (2): 54.36<sup>b</sup>, 37.  
**onoh**: see *genoh*.  
**pening**, *peny* (1): *Greg.* (1): 327.18 = 252.22.  
**petraoleum**, *petroleum* (2): *Læce.* (2): 52.30, 31.  
**riht**, *right, reason* (1): *Bede* (1): 470.11 = 345.31.  
**rod**, *rood* (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXVII. 118.  
**rum**, *space of time, opportunity* (1): *Jud.* (1): 314.  
**son**, *musical sound* (1): *Bede* (1): 258.24 = 205.11.  
**sorg**, *sorrow, grief* (1): *Greg.* (1): 431.8 = 356.2<sup>a</sup>.  
**sped**, *opportunity* (1): *Bede* (1): 256.10<sup>a</sup> = 203.15.  
**spell**, *matter, material* (1): *Oros.* (1): 94.16 = 95.16.  
**spræc**, *speech* (1): *Greg.* (1): 197.2 = 146.24.

- stæf, stick** (1): *Greg.* (1): 127.2 = 88.15.  
**stow, place** (7): *Bede* (4): 230.17 = 175.13; 238.24 = 180.1; 436.7, 8 = 310.23<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Wærf.* (2): 226.23 = 277 A; 231.14 = 281 C. — *Minor Prose* (1): *Neot* (1): 43.  
**strengð(o), strength** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 214.28 = 261 C.  
**tid, time** (10): *Bede* (4): 262.21<sup>a, b</sup> = 207.19, 20; 366.31 = 272.7<sup>a</sup>; 444.7 = 314.23. — *Mart.* (1): 42.13. — *Ælf. L. S.* (3): XXIII B. 403<sup>b</sup>, 478<sup>a, b</sup>. — *Minor Prose* (2): *Chad* (2): 71, 72.  
**tima, time** (9): *Ælf. Hom.* (7): I. 602<sup>t, 1, 4</sup>; II. 340<sup>t</sup>, 360<sup>b, 1, 2, 3, 4</sup>. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (2): *Ælf. Gr.* (2): 135.3, 151.11.  
**tol, tool** (1): *Boeth.* (1): 40.16 = 0.  
**ðæt, which** (1): *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (1): *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 102.40<sup>b</sup>.  
**ðearf [ðerf], need** (13): *Greg.* (1): 67.4<sup>b</sup> = 40.26. — *Solil.* (1): 14.17. — *Laws* (2): 68, *Ælfred*, c. 34; 256, VI *Æthelred*, c. 42, § 2. — *Wærf.* (1): 79.6 = 205 A. — *Bl. Hom.* (2): 63.5; 97.17. — *Wulf.* (5): 52.3<sup>a, b</sup>; 78.9; 179.19; 308.22. — *Gen.* (1): 279.  
**ðearfa, poor man** (1): *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXXI. 924.  
**ðeaw, custom** (3): *Bede* (2): 258.31 = 205.18; 472.27 = 347.18. — *Beow.* (1): 1941.  
**ðegnung [ðenung], service, office** (3): *Bede* (3): 300.30 = 230.7<sup>a</sup>; 402.30<sup>a, b</sup> = 291.18<sup>a, b</sup>.  
**ðenung**: see *ðegnung*.  
**ðerf**: see *ðearf*.  
**ðing, thing** (11): *Ælf. Hom.* (3): I. 222<sup>t</sup>; II. 178<sup>b</sup>, 500<sup>b</sup>. — *Ælf. L. S.* (1): XXX. 167. — *Ælf. Hept.* (1): *Num.* 11.6. — *Ælfrie's Minor Prose* (3): *Ælf. Gr.* (2): 119.10<sup>a, b</sup>; *Napier's Ad. to Th.* (1): 101.316<sup>b</sup>. — *Gosp.* (3): *L.* (2): 7.40; 24.41; — *J.* (1): 4.11.  
**wegnest, provisions for a journey** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 338.1<sup>a</sup> = 408 A<sup>2</sup>.  
**wela, wealth, riches** (1): *And.* (1): 1160.  
**wen, hope, expectation** (1): *Wærf.* (1): 114.1 = B. 144 C<sup>2</sup>.  
**weorc, work** (1): *Bede* (1): 418.27 = 301.23.  
**willa, will, desire** (4): *Boeth.* (2): 107.13 = 0; 111.7 = 0. — *Ælf. Hom.* (2): I. 394<sup>t</sup>, 580<sup>t</sup>.  
**wundor, wonder** (1): *Bede* (1): 164.27 = 138.9.  
**yiden**: see *ielden*.

## B. THE PASSIVE INFINITIVE.

No example has been found.

*Note.* — *Less Regular Examples of the Inflected Infinitive Modifying a Noun* are given in Chapter XIII, pp. 180–181.

*Note: Doubtful Passages.* — Owing to the corruptness of the text, it is impossible for me to classify the infinitive in the following: — (1) in the prose: *Pr. Ps.* 26.5<sup>a, b</sup>: *geseon* and *on-gitan*; *Chron.* 128<sup>b</sup>, 995 F<sup>b, c</sup>: *sprytan* and *wyrcan*; *Bl. Hom.* 179.31: *sellan* [*syllan*]; — (2) in the poetry: *Gen.* 2038: *feallan* (or should be *feollon*, as Grein gives it?); *Ju.* 289: *sellan* [*syllan*]; *Chr.* 24: *sprecan*; *And.* 1025: *neosan*. — The context shows that we probably have a finite verb, not an infinitive, in the following passages: *Solil.* 14.2: *gecyrran*; *Lace.* 128.7: *teon* (should be *teo*?); *Pr. Ps.* 16.14<sup>b</sup>: *healdan* (though it is possible that *healdan* may be an infinitive of purpose).

## APPENDIX B.

### BIBLIOGRAPHY.

#### I. Texts Read.

##### a. ANGLO-SAXON.

- Ælf. Æthelw.* = Breck, E.: *Fragment of Ælfric's Translation of Æthelwold's De Consuetudine Monachorum*, Leipsic Dis., 1887.
- Ælf. de V. et N. Test.* = Grein, C. W. M.: *Ælfric de Veteri et de Novo Testamento, Pentateuch, Josua, Buch der Richter, und Hiob*, vol. I of Grein's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Prosa*, Cassel, 1872.
- Ælf. Gr.* = Zupitza, J.: *Ælfrics Grammatik und Glossar*, Berlin, 1880.
- Ælf. Hept.*<sup>1</sup> = *Ælf. de V. et N. T.*
- Ælf. Hom.* = Thorpe, B.: *The Homilies of Ælfric*, 2 vols., London, 1844, 1846.
- Ælf. Int.* = MacLean, G. E.: "Ælfric's Version of Alcuini *Interrogationes Sigewulfi in Genesin*," in *Anglia*, VI, 1883, pp. 425-473; VII, 1884, pp. 1-59; also as Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1883.
- Ælf. L. S.* = Skeat, W. W.: *Ælfric's Lives of Saints* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, nos. 76, 82, 94, 114), London, 1881, 1885, 1890, 1900. [Vols. I and II are cited simply by page and line; vols. III and IV, by number of homily and of line.]
- Alex.* = Baskervill, W. M.: "The Anglo-Saxon Version of the *Epistola Alexandri ad Aristotelem*," in *Anglia*, IV, 1881, pp. 139-167; also as Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1881.
- And.* = Krapp, G. P.: *Andreas and the Fates of the Apostles*, Boston, 1906.
- Apol.*<sup>1</sup> = Zupitza, J., and Napier, A. S.: "Apollonius of Tyre," in *Herrig's Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, XCVII, 1896, pp. 17-34.
- A. S. Hom. & L. S.* = Assman, B.: *Angelsächsische Homilien und Heiligenleben*, vol. III of Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Prosa*, Kassel, 1889. [Subdivided into I = nos. 1-9, by Ælfric; and II = nos. 10-19, not by Ælfric.]
- Bede*<sup>1</sup> = Miller, T.: *The Old English Version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History of the English People* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, nos. 95-96, 110-111), London, 1890, 1891, 1898.
- Bened.*<sup>1</sup> = Schröer, A.: *Die Angelsächsischen Prosabearbeitungen der Benedictinerregel*, vol. II of Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Prosa*, Kassel, 1885, 1888.
- Bened. Of.* = Feiler, E.: *Das Benediktiner-Offizium, Ein Altenglisches Brevier aus dem 11. Jahrhundert* (= *Anglistische Forschungen*, no. 4), Heidelberg, 1901.
- Bl. Hom.* = Morris, R.: *The Blickling Homilies of the Tenth Century* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, nos. 58, 63, 73), London, 1874, 1876, 1880.
- Boeth.*<sup>1</sup> = Sedgefield, W. J.: *King Alfred's Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae*, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Poesie*.]
- Cato* = Nehab, J.: *Der Altenglische Cato, Eine Uebertragung und Bearbeitung der Disticha Catonis*, Goettingen Dis., Berlin, 1879.
- Chad* = Napier, A. S.: "Ein Altenglisches Leben des Heiligen Chad," in *Anglia*, X, 1888, pp. 131-156 (with an *Anhang*, pp. 154-156).
- Chr.* = Cook, A. S.: *The Christ of Cynewulf*, Boston, 1900.
- Chron.* = Plummer, C., and Earle, J.: *Two of the Saxon Chronicles Parallel*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1892, 1899.
- Gosp.*<sup>1</sup> = Bright, J. W.: *The Gospel of Saint Matthew in West-Saxon, The Gospel of Saint Mark in West-Saxon, The Gospel of Saint Luke in West-Saxon, The Gospel of Saint John in West-Saxon*, Boston, 1904-1906.
- Greg.*<sup>1</sup> = Sweet, H.: *King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, nos. 45, 50), London, 1871, 1872.
- Jud.* = Cook, A. S.: *Judith*, Boston, 1904.



Missing Page

- ALBRECHT, C.: *De Accusativi cum Infinitivo Coniuncti Origine et Usu Homericō*, Leipzig Dis., 1871; also in *Studien zur Griechischen und Lateinischen Grammatik*, ed. by G. Curtius, vol. IV, pp. 1-58, Leipzig, 1871.
- ALLEN, H. F.: *The Infinitive in Polybius Compared with the Infinitive in Biblical Greek*, Chicago, 1907.
- ALLEN, J. H.: see Greenough.
- APELT,<sup>1</sup> O.: "Ueber den Accusativus cum Infinitivo im Gothischen," in *Germania*, XIX, 1874, pp. 280-297.
- APELT,<sup>2</sup> O.: "Bemerkungen über den Accusativus cum Infinitivo im Althochdeutschen und Mittelhochdeutschen," in *Weimar Jahresbericht*, 1875, pp. 1-23.
- ARMSTRONG, J. L.: "The Gerund in Nineteenth-Century English," in *Publications of Modern Language Association of America*, VII, 1892, pp. 200-211.
- BALDWIN, C. S.: *The Inflections and Syntax of the Morte d'Arthur of Sir Thomas Malory*, Boston, 1894.
- BARTLETT, HELEN: *The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter*, Bryn Mawr Dis., Baltimore, 1896.
- BARZ, R.: *Das Participle im Iwein und Nibelungenliede*, Riga Prog., 1880.
- BECH, F.: *Beispiele von der Abschleifung des Deutschen Participle Præsens und von Seinem Ersatz durch den Infinitiv*, Zeitz Prog., 1882.
- BECKER, K. F.: *Ausführliche Deutsche Grammatik*, 3 vols., Frankfurt, 1836, 1837, 1839.
- BEER, A.: *Kleine Beiträge zur Gotischen Syntax*, Prag, 1904.
- BEHAGHEL,<sup>1</sup> O.: *Die Modi im Heliand*, Paderborn, 1876.
- BEHAGHEL,<sup>2</sup> O.: *Die Deutsche Sprache*, Leipzig, 1887.
- BEHAGHEL,<sup>3</sup> O.: *Die Syntax des Heliand*, Wien, 1897.
- BELDEN, H. M.: *The Prepositions In, On, To, For, Fore, and Æt in Anglo-Saxon Prose*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1897.
- BENHAM, A. R.: "The Clause of Result in Old English Prose," in *Anglia*, XXXI, 1908, pp. 197-255.
- BENNETT, C. E.: *Syntax of Early Latin*, Vol. I, "The Verb," Boston, 1910.
- BERNHARDT,<sup>1</sup> E.: "Zur Gotischen Syntax," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, IX, 1878, pp. 383-384.
- BERNHARDT,<sup>2</sup> E.: *Kurzgefasste Gotische Grammatik*, Halle, 1885.
- BLACKBURN,<sup>1</sup> F. A.: *The English Future: Its Origin and Development*, Leipzig Dis., 1892.
- BLACKBURN,<sup>2</sup> F. A.: *Exodus and Daniel*, Boston, 1907.
- BLAIN, H. M.: *Syntax of the Verb in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle*, University of Virginia Dis., New York, 1901.
- BLATZ, F.: *Neuhochdeutsche Grammatik*, 2 Bde., 3. Aufl., Karlsruhe, 1895-1896.
- BLUME,<sup>1</sup> R.: *Ueber den Ursprung und die Entwicklung des Gerundiums im Englischen*, Jena Dis., Bremen, 1880.
- BLUME,<sup>2</sup> R.: *Die Sprache der Paston Letters*, Bremen Prog., 1882.
- BODTKER, A. T.: "The Split Infinitive," in *Modern Language Notes*, XXVII, 1912, pp. 229-230.
- BÖHME, W.: *Die Temporalsätze in der Uebergangszeit vom Angelsächsischen zum Altenglischen*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1903.
- BORST,<sup>1</sup> E.: "Split-Infinitive," in *Englische Studien*, XXXVII, 1906, pp. 386-393.
- BORST,<sup>2</sup> E.: "Pro-Infinitive," in *Englische Studien*, XXXIX, 1908, pp. 413-418.
- BRADHERING, H.: *Das Englische Gerundium*, Emden Prog., 1895.
- BRADLEY, C. B.: "Shall and Will: An Historical Study," in *Transactions of the American Philological Association*, XLII, 1911, pp. 5-32.
- BRADLEY, H.: "Must as a Past Tense," in *Englische Studien*, XXVI, 1899, pp. 151-152.
- BRANDT, H. C. G.: *German Grammar*, 4th ed., Boston, 1888.
- BRANHOFFER, I.: *Gebrauch des Genetiv im Nibelungenliede*, Weisskirchen Prog., 1886.
- BRIGHT,<sup>1</sup> J. W.: *The Gospel of Saint Luke in Anglo-Saxon*, Oxford, 1893.
- BRIGHT,<sup>2</sup> J. W.: "An Idiom of the Comparative in Anglo-Saxon," in *Modern Language Notes*, XXVII, 1912, June, pp. 181-183.
- BRIGHT, J. W., and RAMSAY, R. L.: "Notes on the 'Introductions' of *The West-Saxon Psalms*," in *The Journal of Theological Studies*, XIII, 1912, July, pp. 520-558.
- BRINKMANN, F.: *Syntax des Französischen und Englischen*, 2 vols., Braunschweig, 1884-1885.
- BRODFÜHRER, E.: *Beiträge zur Syntax Willirams*, Halle Dis., 1906.

- BRUCE, J. D.: "The Paris Psalter," in *Publications of Modern Language Association of America*, IX, 1894, pp. 43-164; also in a reprint as Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1894.
- BRÜHL, C.: *Die Flexion des Verbums in Ælfrics Heptateuch und Buch Hiob*, Marburg Dis., 1892.
- BRÜLL, H.: *Die Altenglische Lateinische Grammatik des Ælfric*, Berlin Dis., 1900.
- BRUGMANN,<sup>1</sup> K.: *Griechische Grammatik*, 3rd ed., München, 1900.
- BRUGMANN,<sup>2</sup> K.: *Kurze Vergleichende Grammatik der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, Strassburg, 1904.
- BRUGMANN, K., and DELBRÜCK, B.: *Grundriss der Vergleichenden Grammatik der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, Zweite Bearbeitung, 2. Bd., Zweiter Teil, Strassburg, 1911.
- BUCHTENKIRCH, E.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitiv in Occleve's De Regimine Principum*, Jena Dis., Braunschweig, 1889.
- BURTON, E. D.: *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses in New Testament Greek*, 4th ed., Chicago, 1900.
- CALLAWAY,<sup>1</sup> M., Jr.: *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1889.
- CALLAWAY,<sup>2</sup> M., Jr.: "The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon," in *Publications of Modern Language Association of America*, XVI, 1901, pp. 141-360.
- CAPELLE, C.: "Zur Lehre vom Infinitiv und von den Zeitformen des Verbs," in *Philologus*, XXXVII, 1877, pp. 89-129.
- CARR, J.: *Ueber das Verhältnis der Wiclifischen und der Purveys'schen Bibelübersetzung zur Vulgata und zu Einander*, Leipzig Dis., 1902.
- CLASSEN, J.: *Beobachtungen über den Homerischen Sprachgebrauch*, Frankfurt, 1867.
- COCKAYNE, O.: *Leechdoms, Wortcunning, and Starcraft of Early England*, 3 vols., London, 1864, 1865, 1866.
- CONRADI, B.: *Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1886.
- COOK, A. S.: *Biblical Quotations in Old English Prose Writers*, 2 vols., London, 1898-1903.
- COSIJN, P. J.: *Altwestsächsische Grammatik*, Haag, 1888.
- CRENSHAW, J. B.: *The Present Participle in Old High German and Middle High German*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, dated 1893 but not issued till 1901.
- CURME,<sup>1</sup> G. O.: *A Grammar of the German Language*, New York, 1905.
- CURME,<sup>2</sup> G. O.: "Is the Gothic Bible Gothic?" in *The Journal of English and Germanic Philology*, X, 1911, pp. 151-190, 335-377.
- CURTJUS,<sup>1</sup> G.: *Griechische Schulgrammatik*, 9th ed., Prag, 1870.
- CURTJUS,<sup>2</sup> G.: *Erläuterungen zu Meiner Griechischen Schulgrammatik*, 3rd ed., Prag, 1875.
- DAHLSTEDT,<sup>1</sup> A.: *Rhythm and Word-Order in Anglo-Saxon and Semi-Saxon*, Lund, 1901.
- DAHLSTEDT,<sup>2</sup> A.: *The Word-Order of The Ancræn Riwe, with Special Reference to the Word-Order in Anglo-Saxon and Modern English*, Sundsvall, 1903.
- DANIELS, A. J.: *Kasussyntax zu den Predigten Wulfstans*, Leiden Dis., 1904.
- DEECKE, W.: *Beiträge zur Auffassung der Lateinischen Infinitiv-, Gerundial-, und Supinum-Konstruktionen*, Mülhausen Prog., 1890.
- DEGGAU, G.: *Ueber Gebrauch und Bedeutungs-Entwicklung der Hilfs-Verben "Können" und "Mögen"*, Giessen Dis., Wiesbaden, 1907.
- DELBRÜCK,<sup>1</sup> B.: *Vergleichende Syntax der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, 3 vols., Strassburg, 1893-1900.
- DELBRÜCK,<sup>2</sup> B.: *Synkretismus: Ein Beitrag zur Germanischen Kasuslehre*, Strassburg, 1907.
- DELBRÜCK,<sup>3</sup> B.: "Das Gotische du und das Westgermanische Gerundium," in *Indogermanische Forschungen*, XXI, 1907, pp. 355-357.
- DELBRÜCK,<sup>4</sup> B.: *Germanische Syntax*, II. Teil: "Zur Stellung des Verbums," Leipzig, 1911.
- DENECKE, A.: *Der Gebrauch des Infinitivs bei den Althochdeutschen Uebersetzern des 8. und 9. Jahrhunderts*, Leipzig Dis., 1880.
- DETHLOFF, R.: *Darstellung der Syntax im Angelsächsischen Gedicht Daniel*, Rostock Dis., 1907.
- DEWITZ, A.: *Alfreds Westsächsische Uebersetzung der Cura Pastoralis Gregors und Ihr Verhältnis zum Originale*, Breslau Dis., Bunzlau, 1889.
- DIELS, P.: *Die Stellung des Verbums in der Älteren Althochdeutschen Prosa (= Palaestra, no. 59)*, Berlin, 1906.
- DIETZ, C.: *Die Lateinische Vorlage des Althochdeutschen Tatian*, Leipzig Dis., 1893.
- DORFELD, K.: *Die Function des Prafixes Ge- in der Composition mit Verben*, Th. I., Giessen, 1885.
- DOUSE, T. L. M.: *An Introduction to the Gothic of Ulfilas*, London, 1886.

- DRAAT, P. F. VAN: "The Infinitive *with and without Preceding To*," in his *Rhythm in English Prose* (= *Anglistische Forschungen*, no. 29), pp. 73-96, Heidelberg, 1910.
- DRAEGER, A.: *Historische Syntax der Lateinischen Sprache*, 2nd ed., 2 vols., Leipzig, 1878-1881.
- DRAKE, A.: *The Authorship of the West Saxon Gospels*, Columbia Univ. Dis., New York, 1894.
- DRESER, W.: *Studien über die Aktive Französische Partizipialkonstruktion mit Berücksichtigung des Lateinischen und im Vergleiche mit dem Englischen*, Jena Dis., Speyer, 1874.
- DRUVE, H.: *Der Absolute Infinitiv in den Dramen der Vorgänger Shakespeares*, Kiel Dis., 1910.
- DUBISLAW, DR.: *Beiträge zur Historischen Syntax des Englischen*, Charlottenburg Jahresbericht, 1909.
- DÜNTZER, H.: "Ueber Goethe's Gebrauch Abgebogener Vorangehender oder Nachtreten-der Participien," in *Euphorion*, IV, 1897, pp. 55-61.
- EBISCH, W.: *Zur Syntax des Verbs im Altenglischen Gedicht Eule und Nachtigall*, Leipzig Dis., 1905.
- ECKERT, V.: *Beiträge zur Geschichte des Gerundivs im Deutschen*, Heidelberg Dis., 1909.
- EINENKEL,<sup>1</sup> E.: *Streifzüge durch die Mittelenglische Syntax*, Münster, 1887.
- EINENKEL,<sup>2</sup> E.: "Der Infinitiv im Mittelenglischen," in *Anglia*, XIII, 1891, pp. 79-104.
- EINENKEL,<sup>3</sup> E.: "Syntax," pp. 1071-1151 in Kluge's "Geschichte der Englischen Sprache," Paul's *Grundriss der Germanischen Philologie*, 2nd ed., Strassburg, 1899.
- ELLINGER,<sup>1</sup> J.: "Syntaktische Untersuchungen zu der Sprache der Mittelenglischen Romanze von Sir Perceval of Gales," in *Troppau Jahresbericht*, 1893, pp. 1-39.
- ELLINGER,<sup>2</sup> J.: *Vermischte Beiträge zur Syntax der Neueren Englischen Sprache*, Leipzig, 1909.
- ELLINGER,<sup>3</sup> J.: "Gerundium, Infinitiv, und That-Satz als Adverbiale oder Adnominale Ergänzung," in *Anglia*, XXXIII, 1910, pp. 480-522.
- ELLINGER,<sup>4</sup> J.: "Die Englischen Verba und Adjektiva, die statt eines Infinitivs ein Gerundium als Objekt Verlangen," in *Germanisch-Romanische Monatsschrift*, III, 1911, pp. 224-230.
- ENGLISH, G.: "De Infinitivo Homérico," in *Schrimm Jahresbericht*, 1868, pp. 1-37.
- ERCKMANN, L.: *Infinitive and Gerund as a Means of Abbreviating Substantive Sentences in the English Language*, Rostock Dis., Lüneberg, 1875.
- ERDMANN, A.: *The History of the Verbal Forms in -ing: Part I. Old Anglo-Saxon Period*, Uppsala Dis., Stockholm, 1871.
- ERDMANN,<sup>1</sup> O.: *Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Otfrids*, 2 vols., Halle, 1874, 1876. [When no volume is designated, volume I is intended.]
- ERDMANN,<sup>2</sup> O.: *Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax*, I, Stuttgart, 1886; II, by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.
- EXTER, O.: "Beon" und "Wesan" in *Alfred's Uebersetzung des Boethius, der Metra, und der Soliloquien, Eine Syntaktische Untersuchung*, Kiel Dis., 1912.
- FAK, H., og Torp, A.: *Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling*, Kristiania, 1900.
- FARRAR, T. J.: *The Gerund in Old English*, Washington and Lee University Dis., Baltimore, 1902.
- FAY,<sup>1</sup> E. W.: "The Origin of the Gerundive," in *Transactions of the American Philological Association*, XXIX, 1898, pp. 5-30.
- FAY,<sup>2</sup> E. W.: "Infinitas It," in *American Journal of Philology*, XX, 1899, pp. 149-168.
- FAY,<sup>3</sup> E. W.: "The Latin Dative: Nomenclature and Classification," in *The Classical Quarterly*, V, 1911, pp. 185-195.
- FEHLAUER, F.: *Die Englischen Uebersetzungen von Boethius' De Consolatione Philosophiae* (= *Normannia*, no. 2), Berlin, 1909.
- FEW, W. P.: "Verbal Nouns in -inde in Middle English and the Participial -ing Suffix," in *Harvard Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature*, V, 1896, pp. 269-276.
- FLAMME, J.: *Syntax der Blickling Homilies*, Bonn Dis., 1885.
- FÖRSTER, K.: *Der Gebrauch der Modi im Althochdeutschen Tatian*, Kiel Dis., Einbeck, 1895.
- FÖRSTER,<sup>1</sup> M.: *Ueber die Quellen von Ælfric's Homiliae Catholicae*, Berlin Dis., 1892.
- FÖRSTER,<sup>2</sup> M.: "Ueber die Quellen von Ælfric's Exegetischen Homiliae Catholicae," in *Anglia*, XVI, 1894, pp. 1-61.
- FRAATZ, P.: *Darstellung der Syntaktischen Erscheinungen in den Angelsächsischen Walderebruchstücken*, Rostock Dis., 1908.

- FRANK, T.: "On Constructions of Indirect Discourse in Early Germanic Dialects," in *Journal of English and Germanic Philology*, VII, 1908, pp. 64-81.
- FRANZ,<sup>1</sup> W.: *Shakespeare-Grammatik*, 2nd ed., Heidelberg, 1909.
- FRANZ,<sup>2</sup> W.: "Prosarhythmus, Wortform, und Syntax," in *Festschrift: Wilhelm Vietor*, pp. 157-158, Marburg, 1910.
- FRITSCHKE, P.: *Darstellung der Syntax in dem Altenglischen Menologium*, Rostock Dis., Berlin, 1907.
- FUNKE, O.: *Kasus-Syntax bei Orm und Layamon*, München Dis., Wien, 1907.
- FURKERT, M.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in Guthlac*, Leipzig Dis., 1889.
- GAAF,<sup>1</sup> W. van der: "Some Remarks on *Ʒencan* and its Middle English and Modern English Representatives," in *Englische Studien*, XXXIV, 1904, pp. 52-62.
- GAAF,<sup>2</sup> W. van der: *The Transition from the Impersonal to the Personal Construction in Middle English* (= *Anglistische Forschungen*, no. 14), Heidelberg, 1904.
- GABELENTZ, H. C. von der, and Löbe, J.: *Ulfilas*, Bd. II, 2: "Grammatik," Leipzig, 1846.
- GAERTNER, G.: *Zur Sprache von Ralph Robynsons Uebersetzung von Thomas Mores Utopia*, Rostock Dis., 1904.
- GARDINER, J. H.: "The Father of English Prose Style," in *Atlantic Monthly*, LXXXV, 1900, pp. 684-692.
- GASNER, E.: *Beiträge zur Entwicklungsgang der Neuenglischen Schriftsprache auf Grund der Mittenglischen Bibelversionen, wie Sie auf Wyclif und Purvey Zurückgehen Sollen*, Göttingen Dis., Nürnberg, 1891.
- GERIKE, F.: *Das Partizipium Præsentis bei Chaucer*, Kiel Dis., Potsdam, 1911.
- GERING, H.: "Ueber den Syntaktischen Gebrauch der Participia im Gotischen," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, V, 1874, pp. 294-324, 393-433.
- GESENIUS, F. W.: *English Syntax*, translated from his *Grammatik der Englischen Sprache*, 4th ed., revised by G. P. Thistlethwaite, Halle, 1909.
- GILDERSLEEVE,<sup>1</sup> B. L.: "Contributions to the History of the Articular Infinitive," in *Transactions of the American Philological Association*, IX, 1878, pp. 5-19.
- GILDERSLEEVE,<sup>2</sup> B. L.: "The Articular Infinitive in Xenophon and Plato," in *The American Journal of Philology*, III, 1882, pp. 193-202.
- GILDERSLEEVE,<sup>3</sup> B. L.: "The Consecutive Sentence in Greek," in *The American Journal of Philology*, VII, 1886, pp. 161-175.
- GILDERSLEEVE,<sup>4</sup> B. L.: "The Articular Infinitive Again," in *The American Journal of Philology*, VIII, 1887, pp. 329-337.
- GILDERSLEEVE,<sup>5</sup> B. L.: *Syntax of Classical Greek*, 2 vols., New York, 1900, 1911.
- GILDERSLEEVE, B. L., and LODGE, G.: *Latin Grammar*, 3rd ed., New York, 1896.
- GÖCKING, W.: *Das Partizipium bei Notker*, Strassburg Dis., 1905.
- GOLLANCZ,<sup>1</sup> I.: *Cynewulf's Christ*, London, 1892.
- GOLLANCZ,<sup>2</sup> I.: *The Exeter Book: An Anthology of Anglo-Saxon Poetry* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, no. 104), London, 1895.
- GOODWIN,<sup>1</sup> W. W.: *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses of the Greek Verb*, rev. ed., Boston, 1890.
- GOODWIN,<sup>2</sup> W. W.: *Greek Grammar*, rev. ed., Boston, 1895.
- GORRELL, J. H.: "Indirect Discourse in Anglo-Saxon," in *Publications of Modern Language Association of America*, X, 1895, pp. 342-485.
- GRAEF, A.: "Das Futurum und die Entwicklung von *Schal* und *Wil* zu Futurischen Tempus-bildnern bei Chaucer," *Flensburg Jahresbericht* for 1893.
- GRANDGENT, C. H.: *An Introduction to Vulgar Latin*, Boston, 1908.
- GREENOUGH, J. B.: *Allen and Greenough's Latin Grammar for Schools and Colleges, Founded on Comparative Grammar*, Revised and Enlarged by J. B. Greenough, Assisted by G. L. Kittredge, Boston, 1900.
- GRIMBERG, C.: "Undersökningar om Konstruktioner Accusativ med Infinitiv i den Äldre Fornsvenskan," in *Arkiv för Nordisk Filologi*, XXI, 1905, pp. 205-235, 311-357.
- GRIMM, J.: *Deutsche Grammatik*, 4 vols., ed. by Röhre and Schröder, Gütersloh, 1897-1898.
- HALE, W. G.: "The Harmonizing of Grammatical Nomenclature, with Especial Reference to Mood-Syntax," in *Publications of Modern Language Association of America*, XXVII, 1912, pp. 419-460.
- HALE, W. G., and BUCK, C. D.: *A Latin Grammar*, Ginn and Company, Boston, 1903.
- HALL,<sup>1</sup> F.: "On the Origin of *Had* Rather *Go*, and Analogous or Apparently Analogous Locutions," in *The American Journal of Philology* II, 1881, pp. 281-322.

- HALL,<sup>2</sup> F.: "On the Separation, by a Word or Words, of *To* and the Infinitive Mood," in *The American Journal of Philology*, III, 1882, pp. 17-24.
- HALL,<sup>3</sup> F.: "On the English Perfect Participle Used Infinitivally," in *The American Journal of Philology*, III, 1882, pp. 297-316.
- HANDKE, R.: *Ueber das Verhältnis der Westsächsischen Evangelienübersetzung zum Lateinischen Original*, Halle Dis., 1896.
- HARRIS, L. M.: *Studies in the Anglo-Saxon Version of the Gospels*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1901.
- HARTMANN, R.: *Ueber den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Deutschen und im Französischen*, Heilbronn Prog., 1896.
- HATTEMER, H.: *Denkmähe des Mittelalters, St. Gallens Alteutsche Sprachschätze*, Vol. I, pp. 15-130: "Kero's Benediktiner-Regel," St. Gallen, 1844.
- HEAD, SIR E. W.: "*Shall*" and "*Will*," or *Two Chapters on Future Auxiliary Verbs*, London, 1856.
- HENK, O.: *Die Frage in der Altenglischen Dichtung* (= *Kieler Studien zur Englischen Philologie*, no. 5), Heidelberg, 1904.
- HERFORD, E.: "Ueber den Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv im Deutschen," in *Thorn Program*, 1881.
- HERTEL, B.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Crist*, Leipzig Dis., 1891.
- HERZOG, E.: "Die Syntax des Infinitivs," in *Neue Jahrbücher für Philologie und Paedagogik*, CVII, 1873, pp. 1-33.
- HESSE, H.: *Perfektive und Imperfektive Aktionsart im Altenglischen*, Münster Dis., 1906.
- HEWLETT, E. G. W.: "On the Articular Infinitive in Polybius," in *The American Journal of Philology*, XI, 1890, pp. 267-290, 440-470.
- HICKES, G.: *Institutiones Grammaticae Anglo-Saxonicae*, Oxoniae, 1689; — *Thesaurus Grammatico-Criticus*, Oxoniae, 1703-1705.
- HIRZEL, C. C. F.: *Duodecim Theses de Natura ac Vi Accusativi cum Infinitivo*, Maulbronn Prog., Stuttgart, 1851.
- HOEFER,<sup>1</sup> A.: "Zu Particp und Gerundium," in *Germania*, XV, 1870, pp. 53-61.
- HOEFER,<sup>2</sup> A.: "Das Participium Präteriti bei Niederdeutschem *Laten*, *Heten*," in *Germania*, XVIII, 1873, pp. 308-309.
- HOEFER, K. G. A.: *Vom Infinitiv Besonders im Sanskrit*, Berlin, 1840.
- HÖNNCHER, E.: "Quellen der Angelsächsischen Genesis," in *Anglia*, VIII, 1885, pp. 41-84.
- HÖSER, J.: *Die Syntaktischen Erscheinungen in Be Domes Dage*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1889.
- HOFFMANN, F.: *Das Partizipium bei Spenser*, Berlin Dis., 1909.
- HOLLACK, E.: *Vergleichende Studien zu der Hereford-Wiclifs'chen und Purveys'chen Bibelübersetzung und der Lateinischen Vulgata*, Leipzig Dis., 1903.
- HOLTHAUSEN,<sup>1</sup> F.: *Altisländisches Elementarbuch*, Weimar, 1895.
- HOLTHAUSEN,<sup>2</sup> F.: *Altsächsisches Elementarbuch*, Heidelberg, 1900.
- HULME, W. H.: "The Old English Gospel of Nicodemus," in *Modern Philology*, I, 1904, pp. 579-614.
- HUMBOLDT, W. VON: "Ueber den Infinitiv," in *Zeitschrift für Vergleichende Sprachforschung*, II, 1853, pp. 242-251.
- JACOBSEN, R.: *Darstellung der Syntaktischen Erscheinungen im Wanderer*, Rostock Dis., 1901.
- JESPERSEN,<sup>1</sup> O.: *Progress in Language*, London, 1894.
- JESPERSEN,<sup>2</sup> O.: *Growth and Structure of the English Language*, Leipzig, 1905; 2nd ed., 1912.
- JESPERSEN,<sup>3</sup> O.: "For + Subject + Infinitive," in *Festschrift: Wilhelm Viëtor*, Marburg, 1910, pp. 85-89.
- JOHNSON, O.: "Notes on Anglo-Saxon Syntax," in *Englische Studien*, XLVI, 1912, pp. 1-8.
- JOHNSON, H.: *Gab es Zwei von Einander Unabhängige Altenglische Uebersetzungen der Dialoge Gregors?* Berlin Dis., 1884.
- JOHNSON, W. S.: "Translation of the Old English *Exodus*," in *The Journal of English and Germanic Philology*, V, 1903, pp. 44-57.
- JOLLY, J.: *Geschichte des Infinitivs im Indogermanischen*, München, 1873.
- JOST, K.: *Beon und Wesan, Eine Syntaktische Untersuchung* (= *Anglistische Forschungen*, no. 26), Heidelberg, 1909.
- KAHL, W.: "Die Bedeutungen und der Syntaktische Gebrauch der Verba *Können* und *Mögen* im Altdeutschen, Ein Beitrag zur Deutschen Lexikographie," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, XXII, 1890, pp. 1-60.

- KAHLE, B.: *Altisländisches Elementarbuch*, Heidelberg, 1900.
- KEHREIN, J.: "Beiträge zur Deutschen Grammatik des 15. Jahrhunderts:" "Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv," in *Herrig's Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, VIII, 1850, pp. 382-383.
- KELLNER,<sup>1</sup> L.: *Zur Syntax des Englischen Verbums, mit Besonderer Berücksichtigung Shakespeare's*, Wien, 1885.
- KELLNER,<sup>2</sup> L.: "Caxton's Syntax and Style," in his *Blanchardyn and Eglantine* (= *Early English Text Society's Publications*, Extra Series, no. 58), London, 1890.
- KELLNER,<sup>3</sup> L.: *Historical Outlines of English Syntax*, London, 1892.
- KELLNER,<sup>4</sup> L.: "Abwechselung und Tautologie," in *Englische Studien*, XX, 1895, pp. 1-24.
- KEMPF, E.: *Darstellung der Syntax in der Sogenannten Caedmons'chen Exodus*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1888.
- KENYON, J. S.: *The Syntax of the Infinitive in Chaucer* (= *Chaucer Society's Publications*, 2nd Series, no. 44), London, 1909.
- KINARD, J. P.: *A Study of Wulfstan's Homilies: Their Style and Sources*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1897.
- KITTREDGE, G. L.: see Greenough.
- KLAEBER,<sup>1</sup> F.: "Zur Altenglischen Bedäübersetzung," in *Anglia*, XXV, 1902, pp. 257-315; XXVII, 1904, pp. 243-282, 399-435.
- KLAEBER,<sup>2</sup> F.: "Studies in the Textual Interpretation of Beowulf," in *Modern Philology*, III, 1905-1906, pp. 235-266, 445-466.
- KOCH, C. F.: *Historische Grammatik der Englischen Sprache*, 2nd ed., 3 vols., Cassel, 1878-1891.
- KOCH, K.: *Zum Gebrauch des Infinitivs in der Homerischen Sprache*, Braunschweig Prog., 1871.
- KÖHLER,<sup>1</sup> A.: "Ueber den Syntaktischen Gebrauch des Dativs im Gothischen," in *Germania*, XI, 1866, pp. 261-305; XII, 1867, pp. 63-64.
- KÖHLER,<sup>2</sup> A.: "Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Gothischen," in *Germania*, XII, 1867, pp. 421-462.
- KÖHLER, K.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs und Particips im Beowulf*, Münster, 1886.
- KOEPPEL, E.: "Zur Chronologie der Uebersetzungen des Königs Alfred," in *Beiblatt zur Anglia*, XIX, 1908, pp. 330-332.
- KOLKOWITZ, M.: *Das Satzgefüge in Barber's Bruce und Henry's Wallace*, Halle Dis., 1893.
- KRÄMER, E.: *Die Altenglischen Metra des Boethius* (= *Bonner Beiträge zur Anglistik*, no. 8), Bonn, 1902.
- KRICKAU, C.: *Der Accusativ mit dem Infinitiv in der Englischen Sprache, Besonders im Zeitalter der Elisabeth*, Göttingen Dis., 1877.
- KRÜGER,<sup>1</sup> G.: "Die Partizipiale Gerundialfügung: Ihr Wesen und Ihr Ursprung," in *Englische Studien*, XXXVII, 1906, pp. 375-385.
- KRÜGER,<sup>2</sup> G.: *Syntax der Englischen Sprache*, Dresden und Leipzig, 1904.
- KRÜGER, K. W.: *Griechische Sprachlehre*, 5th ed., Berlin, 1873.
- KRUISINGA, E.: *A Grammar of Present-Day English*, 2 vols., Utrecht, 1909, 1911.
- KUBE, E.: *Die Wortstellung in der Sachsenchronik* (Parker Manuscript), Jena Dis., 1886.
- KÜHN, P. T.: *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfric's Heiligenleben*, Leipzig Dis., 1889.
- KUNTZEMÜLLER, A.: "Zur Geschichte des Substantivierten Infinitivs im Neuhochochdeutschen," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Wortforschung*, IV, 1903, pp. 58-94.
- KURRELMMEYER, H.: *The Historical Development of the Forms of the Future Tense in Middle High German*, Strassburg, 1904.
- KURRELMMEYER, W.: "Ueber die Entstehung der Konstruktion *Ich habe sagen hören*," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Wortforschung*, XII, 1910, pp. 157-173.
- LACHMUND, A.: *Ueber den Gebrauch des Reinen und des Präpositionalen Infinitivs im Altfranzösischen*, Rostock Dis., Schwerin, 1877.
- LANE, G. M.: *A Latin Grammar for Schools and Colleges*, New York, 1898.
- LANGE, F.: *Darstellung der Syntaktischen Erscheinungen im Angelsächsischen Gedichte von Byrhtnoð's Tod*, Rostock Dis., 1906.
- LANGE, H.: *Das Zeitwort in den Beiden Handschriften von Layamon's Brut*, Strassburg Dis., 1906.
- LIEROW, H. G. H.: *Beiträge zur Syntax des Verbums in der Mecklenburgischen Mundart*, Oschats Prog., 1904.

- LINDSKOG, C.: "Zur Erklärung der Accusativ-mit-Infinitiv-Construction im Latein," in *Eranos*, I, 1896, pp. 121-135.
- LJUNGGREN, W. P. F.: *On the Auxiliaries "Shall" and "Will" in the English Language, Especially with Regard to Modern English*, I and II, Carlskrona, 1893, 1894.
- LÖFFLER, K.: *Das Passiv bei Otfrid und im Heliand, Besonders im Verhältnis zu den Lateinischen Quellen*, Tübingen Dis., Borna-Leipzig, 1905.
- LÖHE, J. J.: *Be Domes Dæge*, Bonn Dis., Halle, 1906.
- LORZ, A.: *Aktionsarten des Verbums im Beowulf*, Würzburg Dis., 1908.
- LÜTTGENS, C.: *Ueber Bedeutung und Gebrauch der Hilfsverba im Frühen Altenglischen: "Sculan" und "Willan"*, Kiel Dis., Wismar, 1888.
- LUND, G. F. V.: *Oldnordisk Ordføjningslære*, Kopenhagen, 1862.
- LYE, E.: "Grammatica Anglo-Saxonica," in Junius's *Etymologicum Anglicanum*, Londini, 1743.
- MÄTZNER, E.: *Englische Grammatik*, 3 vols., 3rd ed., Berlin, 1880-1885.
- MAHN, E.: *Darstellung der Syntax in dem Sogenannten Angelsächsischen Physiologus*, I, Rostock Dis., Neubrandenburg, 1903; II, Neubrandenburg Prog., 1905.
- MANNING, O.: "Grammatica Anglo-Saxonica & Mæso-Gothica," in Lye's *Dictionarium Saxonico- et Gothico-Latinum*, I, Chapters I-XV, Londini, 1772.
- MANTHEY, W.: *Syntaktische Beobachtungen an Notker's Uebersetzung des Martianus Capella*, Berlin Dis., 1903.
- MARCH, F. A.: *A Comparative Grammar of the Anglo-Saxon Language*, New York, 1873.
- MATHER, F. J.: *The Conditional Sentence in Anglo-Saxon*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Munich, 1893.
- MATTHIAS, T.: "Zur Geschichte der Deutschen Mittelwortfügungen," in *Zeitschrift für Deutschen Unterricht*, XI, 1897, pp. 681-708.
- MAYEN, DR.: *Ueber die Entwicklung der Französischen Konjunktion Que und des Deutschen Akkusativs mit dem Infinitiv aus dem Lateinischen*, Konitz Prog., 1902.
- McKNIGHT, G. H.: "The Primitive Teutonic Order of Words," in *The Journal of Germanic Philology*, I, 1897, pp. 136-219.
- MEER, M. J. van der: *Gotische Casussyntaxis*, Leiden, 1901.
- MEIERHEIM, C.: *De Infinitivo Homeric Capita III*: I, Göttingen Dis., 1875; II, Lingen Prog., 1876.
- MERKES, P.: *Beiträge zur Lehre vom Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Neuhochochdeutschen*, Leipzig, 1896.
- MEYER, E.: *Darstellung der Syntaktischen Erscheinungen im Angelsächsischen Gedicht Christ und Satan*, Rostock Dis., 1907.
- MEYER, K.: *Zur Syntax des Participium Praesentis im Althochdeutschen*, Marburg Dis., 1906.
- MICHEL, V.: *Mittelhochdeutsches Elementarbuch*, 2nd ed., Heidelberg, 1912.
- MIKLOSICH,<sup>1</sup> F.: "Ueber den Accusativus cum Infinitivo," in *Sitzungsberichte der Kaiserlichen Akademie der Wissenschaften, Phil.-Hist. Klasse*, Bd. 60 for 1868, pp. 483-508, Wien, 1869.
- MIKLOSICH,<sup>2</sup> F.: *Vergleichende Grammatik der Slavischen Sprachen*, Vol. IV, "Syntax," Wien, 1883.
- MILROY, W. M.: *The Participle in the Vulgate New Testament*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1892.
- MOHRBUTTER, A.: *Darstellung der Syntax in den Vier Echten Predigten des Angelsächsischen Wulfstan*, Münster Dis., Lübeck, 1885.
- MONSTERBERG-MÜNCKENAU,<sup>1</sup> S. VON: *Der Infinitiv in den Epen Hartmanns von Aue (= Germanistische Abhandlungen, no. 5)*, Breslau, 1885.
- MONSTERBERG-MÜNCKENAU,<sup>2</sup> S. VON: "Der Infinitiv nach *Wellen* und den Verba Praeterito-Praesentia in den Epen Hartmanns von Aue," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, XVIII, 1886, pp. 1-54, 144-185, 301-320.
- MORRIS, E. P.: *On Principles and Methods in Latin Syntax*, New York, 1901.
- MOUREK,<sup>1</sup> V. E.: *Zur Syntax des Althochdeutschen Tatian*, Prag, 1894.
- MOUREK,<sup>2</sup> V. E.: *Weitere Beiträge zur Syntax des Althochdeutschen Tatian*, Prag, 1894.
- MÜLLER, A.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedichte Judith*, Leipzig Dis., 1892.
- MÜLLER, H.: *Ueber die Angelsächsischen Versus Gnomici*, Jena, 1893.
- MÜLLER, T.: *Angelsächsische Grammatik*, Göttingen, 1883.



- NADER, E.: "Tempus und Modus im Beowulf," in *Anglia*, X, 1888, pp. 542-564; XI, 1889, pp. 444-499.
- NAPIER, A. S.: *Ueber die Werke des Allenglischen Erzbischofs Wulfstan*, Göttingen Dis., Weimar, 1882.
- NYGAARD, M.: *Norŕøn Syntax*, Kristiania, 1906.
- ÖBERG, A. B.: *Ueber die Hochdeutsche Passivumschreibung mit "Sein" und "Werden"*, Lund, 1907.
- OGDEN, C. J.: *De Infinitivi Finalis vel Consecutivi Constructione apud Priscos Poetas Graecos* (= *Columbia University Studies in Classical Philology*), New York, 1909.
- OLDENBURG, K.: *Untersuchungen über die Syntax in dem Allenglischen Gedicht Judith*, Rostock Dis., 1907.
- ONIONS, C. T.: *An Advanced English Syntax*, 3rd ed., London, 1911.
- ORTMANN, F. J.: *Formen und Syntax des Verbs bei Wycliffe und Purvey*, Berlin, 1902.
- OTT, J. H.: *Ueber die Quellen der Heiligenleben in Ælfric's Lives of Saints*, I, Halle Dis., 1892.
- OWEN,<sup>1</sup> E. T.: "Hybrid Parts of Speech," in *Transactions of the Wisconsin Academy of Sciences, Arts, and Letters*, XVI, 1908, pp. 108-252.
- OWEN,<sup>2</sup> E. T.: "The Relations Expressed by the Passive Voice," in *Transactions of the Wisconsin Academy of Sciences, Arts, and Letters*, XVII, 1910, pp. 1-71.
- OWEN, W. B.: "The Influence of the Latin Syntax on the Anglo-Saxon Gospels," in *Transactions of American Philological Association*, XIII, 1882, pp. 59-64.
- PAUL, H.: *Mittelhochdeutsche Grammatik*, 8th ed., Halle, 1911.
- PERSSON, P.: *De Origine ac Vi Primigenia Gerundii et Gerundivi Latini*, Upsala, 1900.
- PESSLS, C.: *The Present and Past Periphrastic Tenses in Anglo-Saxon*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Strassburg, 1896.
- PINGEL, L.: *Untersuchungen über die Syntaktischen Erscheinungen in dem Angelsächsischen Gedicht von den Wundern der Schöpfung*, Rostock Dis., 1905.
- PITSCHEL, E.: *Zur Syntax des Mittlenglischen Gedichtes William of Palerne*, Marburg Dis., 1890.
- PLANER, J.: *Ueber den Syntaktischen Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedicht vom Phoenix*, Leipzig Dis., 1892 (?).
- POUTSMA, H.: *A Grammar of Late Modern English*, Groningen, 1904, 1905.
- PRATJE, H.: "Syntax des Heliand, I. Das Verbum," in *Jahrbuch des Vereins für Niederdeutsche Sprachforschung* für 1885, XI, 1886, pp. 1-84.
- PRIMER, S.: "The Factitive in German," in *Publications of the Modern Language Association of America*, I, 1885, pp. 37-56.
- PÜTTMANN, A.: "Die Syntax der Sogenannten Progressiven Form im Alt- und Frühmittelenglischen," in *Anglia*, XXXI, 1908, pp. 405-452; also as Marburg Dis., 1908.
- RANNOV, M.: *Der Satzbau des Althochdeutschen Isidor im Verhältniss zur Lateinischen Vorlage*, Berlin, 1888.
- RAHTS, G.: *Bemerkungen über den Gebrauch der Englischen Participien auf -ing*, Rastenburg Prog., 1859.
- REDEPENNING, H.: *Syntaktische Kapitel aus der Ancren Riwle*, Rostock Dis., Berlin, 1906.
- REIFFERSCHIED, A.: "Ge- bei Infinitiven," in his "Lexicalisch-Syntactische Untersuchungen über die Partikel Ge-," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, Ergänzungsband, 1874, pp. 319-446.
- REUL, P. DE: *The Language of Caxton's Reynard the Fox, A Study in Historical English Syntax*, London, 1901.
- REUSCH, J.: *Die Alten Syntaktischen Reste im Modernen Slang*, Münster Dis., 1894.
- REUSSNER, H. A.: *Untersuchungen über die Syntax in dem Angelsächsischen Andreas*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1889.
- RICK, K.: *Das Prädikative Participium Praesentis im Althochdeutschen*, Bonn Dis., 1905.
- RIES,<sup>1</sup> J.: *Was Ist Syntax?* Marburg, 1894.
- RIES,<sup>2</sup> J.: *Die Wortstellung im Beowulf*, Halle, 1907.
- RIGGERT, G.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs in der Allenglischen Poesie*, Kiel Dis., 1909.
- RITZENFELDT, E.: *Der Gebrauch des Pronomens, Artikels, und Verbs bei Thomas Kyd*, Kiel Dis., 1889.
- ROBERTSON, W. A.: *Tempus und Modus in der Allenglischen Chronik*, Marburg Dis., 1906.
- RÖMSTEDT, H.: *Die Englische Schriftsprache bei Caxton*, Göttingen Dis., 1891.
- RÖTTEKEN, H.: *Der Zusammengesetzte Satz bei Berthold von Regensburg* (= *Quellen und Forschungen*, no. 53), Strassburg, 1884.
- ROHS, A.: *Syntaktische Untersuchungen zu Bacon's Essays*, Marburg Dis., 1889.

- ROSE, A.: *Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulfs Crist*, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1890.
- ROSSMANN, B.: *Zum Gebrauch der Modi und Modalverba in Adverbialsätzen im Frühmittelenglischen*, Kiel Dis., 1908.
- RUSTEBERG, F. G. A.: *Historical Development of the Gerund in the English Language*, Leipzig Dis., Göttingen, 1874.
- SAINTSBURY, G.: *A History of English Prose Rhythm*, London, 1912.
- SATTLER, W.: "Noch Einmal (to) Dare," in *Englische Studien*, XXVI, 1899, pp. 41-59.
- SCHIFFER, J.: *Alfreds Uebersetzung von Bedas Kirchengeschichte*, vol. IV of Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der Angelsächsischen Prosa*, Leipzig, 1897-1899.
- SCHMIDT, A.: *Untersuchungen über Ælfreds Bedauübersetzung*, Berlin Dis., 1889.
- SCHMIDT, F.: *Studies in the Language of Pecoock*, Upsala Dis., 1900.
- SCHMIDT, W.: *Abhandlung über die Englische Verbalform auf -ing*, Königsberg, 1872.
- SCHÖMANN,<sup>1</sup> G. F.: "Zur Lehre vom Infinitiv," in *Neue Jahrbücher für Philologie und Paedagogik*, KCIX, 1869, pp. 209-239.
- SCHÖMANN,<sup>2</sup> G. F.: "Ueber den Accusativus cum Infinitivo von Franz Miklosich," in *Neue Jahrbücher für Philologie und Paedagogik*, CI, 1870, pp. 187-192.
- SCHOLZ, E.: *Der Absolute Infinitiv bei Shakespeare*, Berlin Dis., 1908.
- SCHRADER, B.: *Studien zur Ælfricschen Syntax*, Jena, 1887.
- SCHÜCKING, L. L.: *Die Grundzüge der Satzverknüpfung im Beowulf* (= Morsbach's *Studien zur Englischen Philologie*, no. 15), Halle, 1904.
- SCHÜNEMANN, M.: *Die Hilfszeitwörter in den Englischen Bibelübersetzungen der Hezapla (1388-1611)*, Berlin, 1902.
- SCHÜRMANN, J.: *Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulfs Elene*, Paderborn, 1884.
- SEEDORF, H.: *Ueber Syntaktische Mittel des Ausdrucks im Althochdeutschen Isidor und den Verwandten Stücken*, Göttingen Dis., Paderborn, 1888.
- SEILER, F.: "Die Althochdeutsche Uebersetzung der Benediktinerregel," in Paul and Braune's *Beiträge zur Geschichte der Deutschen Sprache und Literatur*, I, 1874, pp. 402-485; II, 1876, pp. 168-171.
- SEYFARTH, H.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedicht von der Genesis*, Leipzig Dis., 1891.
- SHEARIN,<sup>1</sup> H. G.: *The Expression of Purpose in Old English Prose* (= *Yale Studies in English*, no. 18), New York, 1903.
- SHEARIN,<sup>2</sup> H. G.: "The Expression of Purpose in Old English Poetry," in *Anglia*, XXXII, 1909, pp. 235-252.
- SHEARIN,<sup>3</sup> H. G.: "The Expression of Purpose in the Authorized Version of the Bible," in Herrig's *Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, CXXI, 1908, pp. 296-315.
- SHEFFIELD, A. D.: *Grammar and Thinking: A Study of the Working Conceptions in Syntax*, New York, 1912.
- SHEPHERD, H. E.: "On the Position of the Rhematic To," in *The American Journal of Philology*, II, 1881, pp. 458-460.
- SHIPLEY, G.: *The Genitive Case in Anglo-Saxon Poetry*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1903.
- SIDEY, T. K.: *The Participle in Plautus, Petronius, and Apuleius*, University of Chicago Dis., 1909.
- SIEVERS,<sup>1</sup> E.: *Tatian*, Paderborn, 1872.
- SIEVERS,<sup>2</sup> E.: *Angelsächsische Grammatik*, 3rd ed., Halle, 1898.
- SMITH,<sup>1</sup> C. A.: *The Order of Words in Anglo-Saxon Prose*, Johns Hopkins Dis., Baltimore, 1893; also in *Publications of the Modern Language Association of America*, VIII, 1893, pp. 210-244.
- SMITH,<sup>2</sup> C. A.: *An Old English Grammar*, new ed., Boston, 1898.
- SMITH,<sup>3</sup> C. A.: *Studies in English Syntax*, Boston, 1906.
- SMITH, H.: "Syntax der Wycliffe-Purveyschen Übersetzung und der 'Authorized Version' der Vier Evangelien," in *Anglia*, XXX, 1907, pp. 413-500.
- SMITH, J.: *Bedae Historia Ecclesiastica a . . . Anglo-Saxonum Rege Alfredo Saxonice Reddita*, Cambridge, 1722.
- SMITH, R.: *Participle and Infinitive in -Ing* (= *Bulletin of the University of South Carolina*, no. 27), Columbia, 1911.
- SÖRGEL, J.: "Ueber den Gebrauch des Reinen und des Präpositionalen Infinitivs im Altfranzösischen," in *Romanische Forschungen*, XIV, 1903, pp. 215-310.
- SOHRAUER, M.: *Kleine Beiträge zur Altenglischen Grammatik*, Berlin Dis., 1886.

- SOLMSEN, F.: "Zur Geschichte des Dativs in den Indogermanischen Sprachen," in *Zeitschrift für Vergleichende Sprachforschung*, XLIV, 1911, pp. 161-223.
- SOLTMANN, H.: *Der Infinitiv mit der Präposition à im Altfranzösischen*, Erlangen Dis., Altenburg, 1881.
- SONNENSCHNIG, E. A., Chairman: "Report of the Joint Committee on Grammatical Terminology," in *Proceedings of the Classical Association*, VIII, 1911, pp. 144-182.
- SPAETH, J. D.: *Die Syntax des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedicht Daniel*, Leipzig Dis., 1893.
- STEIG, R.: "Ueber den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altniederdeutschen," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, XVI, 1884, pp. 307-345, 470-501.
- STIEGER, F.: *Untersuchungen über die Syntax in dem Angelsächsischen Gedicht vom Jüngsten Gericht*, Rostock Dis., 1902.
- STOFFEL,<sup>1</sup> C.: "Der Accusativus cum Infinitivo mit *for* im Englischen," in *Herrig's Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, LXII, 1879, pp. 209-216.
- STOFFEL,<sup>2</sup> C.: *Studies in English, Written and Spoken*, Zutphen, 1894.
- STOFFEL,<sup>3</sup> C.: "Must in Modern English," in *Englische Studien*, XXVIII, 1900, pp. 294-309.
- STOLZ, F., and SCHMALZ, J. H.: *Lateinische Grammatik*, 4th ed., München, 1910.
- STOLZENBURG, H.: "Die Uebersetzungstechnik des Wulfila," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, XXXVII, 1905, pp. 145-193, 352-392.
- STOSSBERG, F.: *Die Sprache des Altenglischen Martyrologiums*, Bonn, 1905.
- STREITBERG,<sup>1</sup> W.: *Die Gotische Bibel*, 2 vols., Heidelberg, 1908, 1910.
- STREITBERG,<sup>2</sup> W.: *Gotisches Elementarbuch*, Dritte und Vierte Verbesserte Aufl., Heidelberg, 1910.
- SWAEN, A. E. H.: "To Dare," in *Englische Studien*, XX, 1895, pp. 266-292.
- SWEET, H.: *A New English Grammar*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1892, 1898.
- TANGER, G.: "Englisch to be to im Vergleich mit *I shall*," in *Herrig's Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, CV, 1900, pp. 311-324.
- THOMAS, C.: *A Practical German Grammar*, 4th ed., New York, 1905.
- THOMAS, F. W.: "Some Remarks on the Accusative with Infinitive," in *Classical Review*, XI, 1897, pp. 373-382.
- THORPE, B.: *Analecta Anglo-Saxonica*, A New Edition with Corrections and Improvements, London, 1868.
- TILLEY, M. P.: *Zur Syntax Wærferths*, Leipzig Dis., 1903.
- TOBLER, A.: "Absolute Infinitive," in his *Vermischte Beiträge zur Französischen Grammatik*, 2nd ed., III, Leipzig, 1908, pp. 150-159.
- TODT, A.: "Die Wortstellung im Beowulf," in *Anglia*, XVI, 1893, pp. 226-260.
- TORP: see Falk.
- TRAUTMANN, R.: "Zur Gotischen Bibelübersetzung," in *Zeitschrift für Deutsche Philologie*, XXXVII, 1905, pp. 253-256.
- TUPPER, F., Jr.: "The Cynewulfian Runes of the First Riddle," in *Modern Language Notes*, XXV, 1910, pp. 235-241.
- VERNALEKEN, T.: *Deutsche Syntax*, 2 vols., Wien, 1861, 1863.
- VINCENTI, A. R. VON: *Die Englischen Dialoge von Salomon und Saturn*, Erster Teil (= *Münchener Beiträge zur Romanischen und Englischen Philologie*, no. 31), Leipzig, 1904.
- VOGEL, E.: *Zur Flexion des Altenglischen Verbums im 11. und 12. Jahrhundert*, Berlin, 1903.
- VONDRAK, W.: *Vergleichende Slavische Grammatik*, 2 vols., Goettingen, 1906, 1908.
- VON JAGEMANN, H. C. G.: *Elements of German Syntax*, New York, 1892.
- WACHSMUTH, W.: *De Accusativo cum Infinitivo Disputatio*, Halle, 1815.
- WACK, G.: *Ueber das Verhältnis von König Ælfreds Uebersetzung der Cura Pastoralis zum Original*, Colberg, 1889.
- WALTER, L.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Verbums in dem Angelsächsischen Gedichte Christ und Satan*, Rostock Dis., 1907.
- WANDSCHNEIDER, W.: *Zur Syntax des Verbs in Langley's Vision of William Concerning Piers the Plowman*, Kiel Dis., Leipzig, 1887.
- WEBER, W. L.: "The English Gerund," in *Proceedings of Modern Language Association of America* for 1899, pp. lxxv-lxxvi.
- WEGENER, W.: *Abhandlung über die Englische Verbalform auf -ing*, Königsberg Jahresbericht, 1872.

- WEINHOLD, K.: *Mittelhochdeutsche Grammatik*, 2nd ed., Paderborn, 1883.
- WENDT, G.: *Syntax des Heutigen Englisch*, I. Teil, Heidelberg, 1911.
- WESTERN,<sup>1</sup> A.: *De Engelske Bisætrninger, En Historisk-Syntaktisk Studie*, Kristiania, 1893.
- WESTERN,<sup>2</sup> A.: *Om de med Hjælpeverbet Be og Nutids Particip Omskrevne Verbalformer i Engelsk*, Christiania, 1896.
- WEYEL, F.: *Der Syntaktische Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Ormulum*, Meiderich Prog., 1896.
- WHITNEY, W. D.: *A Compendious German Grammar*, 5th ed., no date
- WHITNEY, W. D.: *A Sanskrit Grammar*, Boston, 1879.
- WICHMANN, J.: *Ælfred's Angelsächsische Uebersetzung der Psalmen*, I-LI, Leipzig Dis., Halle, 1888; also in *Anglia*, XI, 1889, pp. 37-96.
- WILHELMUS, E.: *De Infinitivi Linguarum Sanscritae, Bactricae, Persicae, Graecae, Oscæ Umbricae, Latinae, Goticae Forma et Usu*, Isenaci, 1872.
- WILLERT,<sup>1</sup> H.: "Vom Gerundium," in *Englische Studien*, XXXV, 1905, pp. 372-382.
- WILLERT,<sup>2</sup> H.: "Vom Infinitiv mit To," in *Englische Studien*, XLIII, 1910, pp. 100-104.
- WILLIAMS, C. B.: *The Participle in The Book of Acts*, University of Chicago Dis., 1909.
- WILMANN, W.: *Deutsche Grammatik*, Dritte Abtheilung, 1. Hälfte, Strassburg, 1906.
- WINKLER, H.: *Germanische Casussyntax*, I, Berlin, 1896.
- WOHLFAHRT, T.: *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfric's Uebersetzung des Heptateuch und des Buches Hiob*, Leipzig Dis., München, 1885.
- WOLFF, A.: *Zur Syntax des Verbums im Altenglischen Lay of Havelock the Dane*, Leipzig Dis., Weida, 1909.
- WOLFF,<sup>1</sup> F.: *Die Infinitive des Indischen und Iranischen*, Erster Teil: "Die Ablativisch-Genetivischen und die Accusativischen Infinitive," Gütersloh, 1905.
- WOLFF,<sup>2</sup> F.: "Zur Frage des Accusativs mit dem Infinitiv," in *Zeitschrift für Vergleichende Sprachforschung*, n. s., XIX, 1906, pp. 490-500.
- WRIGHT, JOSEPH and ELIZABETH MARY: *Old English Grammar*, London, 1908.
- WRIGHT, JOSEPH: *Grammar of the Gothic Language*, Oxford, 1910.
- WÜLFING,<sup>1</sup> J. E.: Review of Monographs by Furkert, Hertel, Lehmann, Müller, Planer, Reussner, and Seyfarth, in *Englische Studien*, XIX, 1894, pp. 116-121.
- WÜLFING,<sup>2</sup> J. E.: *Die Syntax in den Werken Alfreds des Grossen*, 2 pts., Bonn, 1894-1901.
- WUNDERLICH,<sup>1</sup> H.: *Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius*, Berlin Dis., 1883 (?).
- WUNDERLICH,<sup>2</sup> H.: *Der Deutsche Satzbau*, 2 Aufl., 2 vols., Stuttgart, 1901.
- WYATT, A. J.: *Old English Riddles*, Boston, 1912.
- ZEITLIN,<sup>1</sup> J.: *The Accusative with Infinitive and Some Kindred Constructions in English* (= *Columbia University Studies in English*, Series II, vol. III, no. 3), New York, 1908.
- ZEITLIN,<sup>2</sup> J.: "For + Subject + Infinitive," in *The Journal of English and Germanic Philology*, X, 1911, pp. 649-650.
- ZETHRÆUS, A. G.: *Om Användandet af Participium i Engelskan*, Stockholm, 1860.
- ZICKNER, B.: *Syntax und Stil in R. Pecock's Repressor*, Greifswald Dis., Berlin, 1900.
- ZUMPT, C. G.: *Lateinische Grammatik*, 13th ed., revised by A. W. Zumpt, Berlin, 1874.
- ZUPITZA,<sup>1</sup> J.: "Zur Lehre vom Englischen Infinitiv," in *Herrig's Archiv für das Studium der Neueren Sprachen und Literaturen*, LXXXIV, 1890, pp. 117-122.

## APPENDIX C.

### ADDENDA.

Just as the preceding pages were about to go to press, two articles appeared that call for an additional note.

In the latest issue of *Englische Studien* (vol. XLVI, p. 8), Mr. Olaf Johnsen has the following note concerning the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon:

"In Anglo-Saxon I have come across one instance of the infinitive mark *to* being used elliptically, that is with the infinitive understood from the foregoing: 7 gif us hwa abylgð, ðonne beo we sona yrre, 7 willað ðæt gewrecaþ gif we magon, ðeah we beotiað *to*, 'though we threaten to' (*Blick. 33*)."

Possibly, as claimed by Mr. Johnsen, we have here an elliptical infinitive; if so, it stands alone in Anglo-Saxon literature so far as my observation goes. As the editor of the *Blickling Homilies*, Dr. Richard Morris, indicates, the text of the passage in question is defective. The earliest examples hitherto cited of the elliptical infinitive are centuries later: see Borst,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, pp. 413-418; Jespersen,<sup>2</sup> *l. c.*, § 211; and the *New English Dictionary*, as cited below. With Professor Toller, in his "Supplement" to Bosworth-Toller's *Anglo-Saxon Dictionary*, sub *v. beotian*, I consider that *to* belongs to *beotiað*, not to an infinitive to be supplied from the preceding part of the sentence.

The second article is that on *to* in the most recently published fascicle of the *New English Dictionary* (*Ti-Tombac*), "B. *To* before an infinitive (or gerund)," pp. 87-90.

Concerning the differentiation of the uninflected infinitive and the inflected infinitive and the subsequent confusion of the two forms, there is given this interesting statement, under "History," p. 87:

"Originally, *to* before the dative infinitive had the same meaning and use as before ordinary substantives, i. e. it expressed motion, direction, inclination, purpose, etc., toward the act or condition expressed by the infinitive; as in 'he came *to help* (i. e. to the help of) his friends,' 'he went *to stay* there,' 'he prepared *to depart* (i. e. for departure),' 'it tends *to melt*,' 'he proceeded *to speak*,' 'looking *to receive* something.' But in process of time this obvious sense of the preposition became weakened and generalized, so that *to* became at last the ordinary link expressing any prepositional relation in which an infinitive stands to a preceding verb, adjective, or substantive. Sometimes the relation was so vague as scarcely to differ from that between a transitive verb and its object. This was especially so when the verb was construed both transitively and intransitively. There were several verbs in Old English in this position, such as *onginnan* to begin, *ondrædan* to dread, *bebeodan* to bid, order, *bewerian* to forbid, prevent, *geliefan* to believe, *ðencean* to think, etc.; these are found construed either with the simple (accusative) infinitive, or with *to* and the dative infinitive. There was also a special idiomatic use (sense 13a) of the infinitive with *to* as an indirect nominative, where logically the simple infinitive might be expected. From these beginnings, the use of the infinitive with *to* in place of the simple infinitive, helped by the phonetic decay and loss of the inflexions and the need of some mark to distinguish the infinitive from other parts of the verb and from the cognate substantive, increased rapidly during the late Old English and early Middle English period, with the result that in modern English the infinitive with *to* is the ordinary form, the simple infinitive surviving only in particular connexions, where it is very intimately connected with the preceding verb (see below). To a certain extent, therefore, i. e. when the infinitive is the subject or direct object, *to* has lost all its meaning, and become a mere 'sign' or prefix of the infinitive. But after an intransitive verb, or the passive voice, *to* is still the preposition. In appearance, there is no difference between the infinitive in 'he proceeds *to speak*,' and 'he chooses *to speak*;' but in the latter *to speak* is the equivalent of *speaking* or *speech*, and in the former of *to speaking* or *to speech*. In form, *to speak* is the descendant of Old English *to specanne*; in sense, it is partly the representative of this and largely of Old English *specan*."

With this general statement should be compared the section on "the Differentiation of the Two Infinitives" in my several chapters, especially that in Chapter II on the Objective Infinitive, pp. 60 ff.

I am glad to see that the explanation of the differentiation of the two infinitives as subject is substantially identical with that offered by me, pp. 20 ff. above. Under 13*a*, p. 89, "with infinitive as subject, or as object with complement, introduced by *it* or an impersonal verb, in quotations c. 1205 without *it*," we read:

"Here the infinitive apparently originally depended on the adjective or substantive in the *it* clause (as in sense 9), or on the impersonal verb, and was therefore put in the form with *to*. Thus *hwilum ða leohtan scylda bioð beteran to forlætenne*, 'sometimes the slight sins are better to let alone' (K. Ælf. Pa. C. 457), might also be expressed *hwilum hit is betre ða leohtan scylda to forlætenne* (cf. *hit is god godne to herianne*, quotation c. 890), 'sometimes it is better to let alone the slight sins;' and this easily passed into the later 'to let alone the slight sins is sometimes better,' where the infinitive clause becomes the subject as in *b*."

Under 14, p. 89, "with infinitive as direct object of a transitive verb," we read:

"Old English normally had the simple infinitive, like modern German. . . . Many of the verbs which in Old English took the simple infinitive could also be followed by *to* with the dative infinitive. But the auxiliary verbs (see *History* above) have always been followed by the simple infinitive; e. g. *Hwæt can ic sprecan?* 'What can I speak?' *We magon gehyran*, 'We may hear.'"

But see Chapter IV, pp. 79 ff., where I have tried to demonstrate that the inflected infinitive is occasionally found with auxiliary verbs in Anglo-Saxon.

In 15*a*, p. 89, two examples are given of the inflected infinitive as the predicate of a subject accusative in Anglo-Saxon, one after *tæcan*, 'teach,' and another after *læran*, 'teach.' See section IV, p. 338, below.

As to the syntactical uses of the infinitive, the classification, given at the end of "History," p. 87, tallies in the main with that given by me:

"The infinitive with *to* may be dependent on an adjective, a substantive, or a verb, or it may stand independently. To an adjective it stands in adverbial relation: *ready to fight* = ready for fighting; to a substantive it stands in adjectival or sometimes adverbial relation: *a day to remember* = a memorable day; to a verb it may stand in an adverbial or substantival relation: *to proceed to work* = to proceed to working; *to like to work* = to like working."

It is clear that, in the large, these groups correspond respectively to the adverbial, the adjectival, and the substantival uses as given in my "Introduction," pp. 2 ff. Later, on p. 89, the *Dictionary* gives a fourth use, "with infinitive equivalent to a finite verb or clause," which in part corresponds to my predicative (or more verbal) use of the infinitive.

But several noteworthy differences appear when we come to the delimitation of the several groups. Under "I. With infinitive in adverbial relation," the differences are fewer and less significant than under the remaining three groups. The subdivisions given under I in the *Dictionary* are as follows:—

"\* Indicating purpose or intention," in which we have the inflected infinitive occasionally modifying a noun, though regularly modifying a verb or an adjective. Here, too, the *Dictionary* puts the "absolute or independent construction, usually introductory or parenthetical," of which the earliest example given is c. 1305, from *St. Kenelm*, 266: "& to telle hit wiðoute rym ðuse wordes rigt hit were." See Chapter XII, pp. 169 ff., where I have given several examples of the absolute use of the infinitive in Anglo-Saxon.

"\*\* Indicating objectivity," in which the inflected infinitive is "dependent on various verbs, chiefly transitive, passive, or reflexive, with weakened sense of purpose," on various adjectives, and on various abstract substantives (as nouns of action).

"\*\*\* Indicating appointment or destination," in which the infinitive is dependent on verb, adjective, or substantive. No example is given from Anglo-Saxon, the earliest in the *Dictionary* dating from 1380.

"\*\*\*\* Indicating result or consequence," especially after *so*, *such*, *enough*, *too*. No example is given from Anglo-Saxon;<sup>1</sup> but see Chapter XII, pp. 162 ff. above, where numerous examples are given of the consecutive infinitive in Anglo-Saxon.

"\*\*\*\*\* Indicating occasion or condition," which corresponds to my infinitive of cause and my infinitive of specification: see Chapters XII and XI, pp. 160 f. and 149 ff. The *Dictionary's* earliest example of the causal infinitive is from the fourteenth century (*The Seven Sages* and Chaucer). Under this heading, the *Dictionary* includes, also, the conditional use of the infinitive, of which, however, no example has been found in Anglo-Saxon by the author of the article on *to* or by myself: see p. 171 above.

Clearly the chief difference between the classification of the *Dictionary* and of the present monograph, in group I, arises from the inclusion by the former of certain infinitives modifying substantives, concerning which this explanation is offered on p. 88 (1c): "The adverbial use may be explained as qualifying the adjective 'intended, adapted' before *to*." While not denying the permissibility, perhaps even the desirability, of this subdivision, I am inclined to believe that, in some of the Anglo-Saxon examples quoted, the infinitive is adjectival rather than adverbial in use.

But, under "II. With infinitive in adjectival relation" (pp. 88-89), the *Dictionary* includes not only the infinitive immediately modifying a noun, as in *Greg.* 127.1, 2 (gif ðær ðonne sie *gierd* mid *to ðreageanne*, sie ðær eac *stæf* mid *to wreðianne*), but also the infinitive used "as predicate after the verb *to be*" and "expressing duty, obligation, or necessity," as in *Chron.* 215,<sup>†</sup> 1083 E (ða munecas . . . nyston hwet heom *to donne wære*). As was stated on p. 5 above, the infinitive of necessity is by most scholars<sup>2</sup> put under the predicative (or more verbal) use; nor does the *Dictionary* seem to me to justify its departure here from the general custom. The subdivisions of group II, as given by the *Dictionary*, are:—

"a. Expressing intention or appointment (cf. I, 6), and hence simple futurity (thus equivalent to a future participle)," as in *Greg.* 127.1, 2 above. See, too, Chapter XIII, pp. 173 ff., above.

"b. Expressing duty, obligation, or necessity," as in *Chron.* 215,<sup>†</sup> 1083 E above.

"c. Expressing possibility or potential action," of which the following is given as an example in Anglo-Saxon:—*Ælf. Hept.: Gen.* 28.20: Gif Drihten . . . sylð me *hlaf* *to etenne* and *reaf* *to werigenne*.

"d. Expressing quality or character," of which no example is given from Anglo-Saxon, the earliest in the *Dictionary* belonging to the fifteenth century.

"12. With infinitive equivalent to a relative clause with indicative; chiefly

<sup>1</sup> The earliest example in the *Dictionary* is from 1300 (*A Samrun*).

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Onions, however, *l. c.*, § 169, puts this infinitive under the adverbial use.

after *first*, *last*, or the like (in this case = *in* with gerund): as *the first to come* = 'the first in coming,' 'the first who comes or came.'" The earliest example given is from Coverdale (1535): *2 Sam.* 19.11: "Why wyl ye be the last to fetch the kynge agayne unto his house?"

Under "III. With infinitive in substantival relation," the *Dictionary* gives two larger subdivisions:—

"13a. With infinitive as subject, or as object with complement, introduced by *it* or an impersonal verb; in quotations *c.* 1205 without *it*:" see the paragraph on the differentiation of the two infinitives as subject, in the present note.

"b. With infinitive as direct subject or predicate, or in apposition with a substantive or pronoun, or after *than*: often replaceable by the gerund or verbal substantive in *-ing*." Of this use no example is given from Anglo-Saxon, but see Chapter I, pp. 7 ff., and Chapter III, pp. 73 ff., above, where examples are given from Anglo-Saxon.

"14a. With infinitive as direct object of a transitive verb," of which examples are unnecessary here. See the paragraph on the differentiation of the two infinitives as object, in the present note, and Chapter II, pp. 28 ff., above. The *Dictionary* puts here, allowably, the infinitive with auxiliary verbs, while I have put this under the predicative use: see p. 79 above.

"b. Rarely as object of another preposition, instead of the verbal substantive or gerund. (Probably imitating French use.)" No example is given from Anglo-Saxon; nor have I found any clear example. But see Chapter III, p. 78, above.

Under "IV. With infinitive equivalent to a finite verb or clause," we have these subdivisions in the *Dictionary*:—

"15. With infinitive as complement to a substantive or pronoun, forming a compound object or substantive phrase, corresponding to the 'accusative and infinitive' construction in Latin and Greek."

The *Dictionary* states that the prepositional infinitive is found in this construction (a) "after verbs of commanding, teaching, desiring, causing, allowing, or the like; equivalent to a *that*-clause with the substantive or pronoun governing a verb in the subjunctive;" also "after the passive of such verbs, the substantive or pronoun then becoming the subject;" (b) "after verbs of saying, thinking, knowing, perceiving, or the like; equivalent to a *that*-clause with verb in the indicative;" also "after the passive of such verbs, and after intransitive verbs of like meaning, as *seem*, *happen*, etc." The *Dictionary* gives only two examples from Anglo-Saxon, one after *læran*, 'teach,' and one after *tæcan*, 'teach.' But see Chapter VIII, pp. 118–119, above, where these and other examples are given. The *Dictionary* states, also, that more commonly, after each of these groups of verbs, the simple infinitive occurs in this construction in Anglo-Saxon.

"16. With infinitive after a dependent interrogative or relative; equivalent to a clause with *may*, *should*, etc. (Sometimes with ellipsis of *whether* before or in an alternative dependent question.)"

No example is given from Anglo-Saxon, but the following is given from Chaucer's *Man of Law's Tale*, 358: "She hath no wight to whom to make hir mone."



"17. In absolute or independent construction, with subject expressed (in nominative) or omitted: in exclamations expressing astonishment, indignation, sorrow, or (after *O* or other interjections) longing."

Again, no example is given from Anglo-Saxon, but compare my comment on *Oros.* 45.15-16, p. 169 above. The earliest example given by the *Dictionary* is dated 1450, and is from the *Coventry Mysteries*, viii. 77: "I to bere a childe that xal bere alle mannys blyss . . . ho mythe have joys more?"

"18. With infinitive immediately following the subject, in vivid narrative, equivalent to a past tense indicative; almost always with *go* and verbs of like meaning."

No example is given from Anglo-Saxon, but the following is from Layamon's *Brut*, 21655: "Ah Arður com sone mid selere strengðe, And Scottes to fleonne feor of ðan ærde." See my note concerning supposed examples of the historical infinitive in Anglo-Saxon, p. 6, above.

As implicitly stated already, I should put under group IV the infinitive with auxiliary verbs and the infinitive of necessity with *beon* (*wesan*), although the *Dictionary* puts the former under the substantival (objective) use and the latter under the adjectival use.

Besides these four chief groups, the *Dictionary* has another group, "V. Peculiar constructions," subdivided as follows:—

"19. *To* was formerly often used with the second of two infinitives when the first was without it, especially after an auxiliary, with words intervening between the infinitives. (See also note s. v. *than*, conj.<sup>1</sup>)"

The earliest example given is from Layamon's *Brut*, 1220: "Swa he gon sloonnen & ðer æfter to slepen." For a somewhat similar phenomenon in Anglo-Saxon, see pp. 77 and 147 above.

"20. Occasionally an adverb or adverbial phrase (formerly sometimes an object or predicate) is inserted between *to* and the infinitive, forming the construction now usually (but loosely) called 'split infinitive.' (See Onions, *Advanced English Syntax*, 177.)"

The earliest example given is from the *Cursor Mundi*, 8318 (Cott. & Fair.): "To temple make he sal be best." See p. 148 above, where I have given a brief note on this construction in Anglo-Saxon.

"21. Used absolutely at the end of a clause, with ellipsis of the infinitive, which is to be supplied from the preceding clause. *Rare* before 19th century; now a frequent colloquialism."

The earliest example given is from the fourteenth-century *Minor Poems from Vernon Manuscript*, xxxiii. 74: "Ðe soules of synners, . . . ðer to take and resseyue so As ðei on eorðe deserueden to." See, at the beginning of the present note, the quotation from Mr. Olaf Johnsen and my comment thereon.

"22. Instead of the dative infinitive, the gerund in *-ing* was sometimes used after *to*: probably originating in a phonetic confusion of *-en* and *-in(g)*, but later perhaps with the notion of a future action (cf. 11a); as *to coming* = 'to come,' or 'coming:' see also *come*, v., 32 β (after c). Obsolete."

The earliest example given is from Wyclif, *Num.* 32.7: "Thei doren not passe into the place that the Lord is to gyuyng to hem."

M. C., JR.



### 1. IN PROSE.

USE:	Total in Prose and in Poetry.		Total in Prose.		Total in Poetry.		Bede.		Boeth.		Greg.		Oros.		Solil.		Summary of Alfred.		Pr. Ps.		Chron.		Laws.		Werf.		Bened.		Bl. Hom.		Pr. Gu.	
	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.
Subjective	104	252	96	226	8	26	9	8	8	11	2	22	1	17	11	18	31	76	..	2	..	10	..	7	12	9	2	6	2	1	3	1
Objective	2709	529	2218	512	491	17	262	26	110	42	39	59	134	9	4	26	549	163	7	12	137	26	12	22	276	19	5	11	71	6	14	2
Other Substantival Uses:																																
(1) As an Appositive	44	15	41	15	3	..	6	1	2	1	..	2	7	1	..	4	15	6	..	1	3	2	12	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	
(2) As a Predicate Nominative	9	13	9	11	..	2	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	
Predicative with Auxiliary Verbs*		38		36	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Predicative with Verbs of Motion and Rest	129	..	20	..	109	..	1	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	..	5	..	
Predicative with ( <i>Wuton</i> )	614	..	572	..	42	..	6	..	8	..	1	..	2	..	9	..	26	..	2	..	..	..	33	..	..	..	7	..	44	..	..	
Predicative with <i>Beon</i> ( <i>Wesan</i> ): **																																
(1) Of Necessity, Passive in Sense	654	240	646	238	8	2	62	19	30	10	291	56	3	..	2	1	387	86	1	..	2	2	16	4	37	41	41	8	17	13	2	..
(2) Of Necessity, Active in Sense		23		23	..	..	2	..	1	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	5	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	2	..
(3) Of Futurity	17	..	17	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
(4) Of Purpose	11	1	10	1	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	1	..	..	2	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Predicative with Accusative Subject:																																
(1) As Object	1512	15	1037	15	475	..	88	4	21	1	23	1	27	1	9	..	168	7	11	..	22	2	6	..	77	2	3	..	55	1	15	..
(2) As Subject	7	..	7	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Final	442	541	323	526	119	15	15	88	..	7	8	28	2	13	..	2	25	138	..	7	..	24	1	14	4	36	..	3	2	17	..	1
Infinitive with Adjectives	6	241	4	217	2	24	1	17	..	17	..	37	..	14	..	4	1	89	..	3	..	4	..	5	..	9	..	3	..	12	..	1
Other Adverbial Uses:																																
(1) Absolute Use	2	17	2	16	..	1	..	..	..	9	..	..	2	..	..	..	2	9	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
(2) Of Cause	6	7	4	6	2	1	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..
(3) Of Result, with Adjectives	..	29	..	27	..	2	..	1	..	1	..	2	..	1	..	3	..	8	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	5	..	..
(4) Of Result, with Verbs	..	46	..	45	..	1	..	5	..	1	..	3	..	..	..	..	9	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	4	..	..	..	1	..	..	
(5) Of Specification, with Verbs	..	4	..	4	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Infinitive with Nouns	4	242	3	234	1	8	..	47	..	11	..	13	..	4	..	6	..	81	..	1	..	6	..	4	..	20	..	5	..	3	..	2

\* The Uninflected Infinitive with Auxiliary Verbs has not been tabulated.

Subjective . . . . .	9	39	9	38	..	1	7	1	..	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	7	5	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	3	..	1	..	1	..	..
Objective . . . . .	19	6	18	6	1	..	6	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	6	2	..	..	1	..	4	..	4	1	..	..	..	..	..	..
Predicative with Quasi-Auxiliary . . . . .	..	3	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..
Predicative with Accusative Subject:																																
(1) As Subject . . . . .	..	1	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Final . . . . .	4	81	3	80	1	1	..	17	..	..	..	6	..	2	..	..	..	25	..	..	..	3	..	2	..	14	..	2	1	2	..	..
Other Adverbial Uses:																																
(1) Of Result . . . . .	..	17	..	15	..	2	..	3	..	..	..	6	..	1	..	..	..	10	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..
(2) Of Specification . . . . .	..	2	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..

[illegible][illegible]

## APPENDIX D.

### The Active Infinitive with Active Verbs in Anglo-Saxon: Synoptic Table of the Uses of.

Pr. Pa.		Chron.		Laws.		Warrt.		Reened.		Bl. Hom.		Pr. Gu.		Mart.		Ælf. Hom.		Ælf. Hept.		Ælf. L. S.		A. S. Hom. and L. S., f.		Ælfrie's Minor Prose.		Summary of Ælfrie.		A. S. Hom. and L. S., II.		G		os		De		Is:		Summary of Gospels.		Wulf.		Læce.	
																														Mat.		Mk.		L.		J.							
U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.
7	12	137	26	12	22	276	19	2	6	2	1	3	1	168	1	217	71	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71	6	14	2	2	1	4	5	51	42	374	60	20	9	11	2	20	64	62	7	21	9	34	2	39	2	1	7	17	14	3	26	4	2
1	3	2	12	12	22	12	19	5	11	71																																	

\*\* In this block, the first column gives the total of Personal Subject; the second, of the Impersonal Subject;—each with the infinitive.

**The Active Infinitive with Passive Verbs in Anglo-Saxon: Synoptic Table of the Uses of.**

[illegible]

### The Passive Infinitive with Active Verbs in Anglo-Saxon: Synoptic Table of the Uses of.

[illegible]

### The Passive Infinitive with Passive Verbs in Anglo-Saxon: Synoptic Table of the Uses of.

[illegible]

## 2. IN POETRY.

Summary of Gospels.		Wulf.		Læce.		Minor Prose.		Beow.		Gen.		Ex.		Dan.		Az.		Chr.		El.		Jul.		Gu.		And.		Rld.		Ph.		Jud.		Ps.		Met.		Minor Poems.	
U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.	U.	I.
17 94	14 20	3 56	26 19	4 20	2 2	2 76	6 13	1 58	6 2	1 74	1 1	.. 4	.. ..	.. 18	.. 1	.. ..	.. ..	.. 6	.. 1	.. 52	.. ..	.. 40	.. 1	.. 24	.. 1	.. 43	.. 1	.. 9	.. ..	.. 3	.. ..	.. 10	.. ..	.. 52	6 1	6 23	1 1	76 7	
3	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	
..	1	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
..	..	..	15	..	..	..	..	1	..	25	..	..	..	5	..	1	..	5	..	..	..	1	..	2	..	17	..	7	..	4	..	2	..	3	..	1	..	14	..
24	..	230	..	..	..	10	..	4	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	14	..	..	..	16	..		
3	..	24	10	46	4 3	2	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	1	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	1	1	..	1	1		
11	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..		
1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..		
44 7	..	28	..	100	..	44	..	65	..	72	..	19	..	23	..	1	..	24	..	20	..	15	..	13	..	50	..	41	..	..	..	12	..	18	..	8	..	94	..
42	37	1	8	211	32	2	7	37	1	34	2	4	..	3	1	..	..	..	4	2	..	1	..	2	..	12	..	7	..	1	..	4	1	1	5	1	..	10	1
..	4	..	10	..	11	..	8	..	4	..	1	..	..	2	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	2	1	..	3	..	2	..	..	..	..	1	..	1	..	6	
..	..	..	3	..	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..		
..	..	..	1	..	2	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	
..	..	..	2	..	7	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	
1	26	..	7	..	10	..	3	..	2	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	2	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	

Subject;— each with the infinitive inflected. For the few instances of *Beon* (*Wesan*) followed by the uninflected infinitive, see Chapter VII.

[illegible][illegible][illegible]









